HISTORY OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY: NEW YORK, INCLUDING MORRISANIA, ...

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

IRM
Digitized by Google

HISTORY

of

WESTCHESTER COUNTY, NEW YORK

including

Morrisania, Kings Bridge and West Farms

which have been annexed to

New York City

by

J.Thomas Scharf, A.M., LL.D.

Volume 1
Part 2

Philadelphia:

L.E. Preston & Co.
1886

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

Ch. T. Crommun

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF THE LATE WM. P. VAN RENSSELAER,
MANURSING ISLAND, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

W. P. van Rensselaer

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHARLES THORN CROMWELL.

Mr. Cromwell is a descendant of the famous family whose history was for so many years identified with that of the British Empire. Among his ancestry are enrolled the names of Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, Secretary of State to Henry VIII., who was beheaded July 28, 1540; Sir Henry Cromwell, of Hinchinbrook, surnamed, for his munificence, the Golden Knight; Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector of England, and many others.[1]

Two nephews of the Lord Protector came to this country; one settled in South Carolina and the other in Westchester County. It is from the Westchester branch of the family that Charles Thorn Cromwell is descended. His father, John I. Cromwell, who married Elizabeth Thorn, of Glen Cove, L. I., was a wholesale dry-goods merchant in New York City until the war was declared, in 1812, with Great Britain.

At that time he gave up his business, and, raising a company of volunteers, marched with it to the northern frontier, becoming actively engaged there in most of the battles which took place. He was appointed second lieutenant of artillery and was in command of a company at the battle of Plattsburg, where he also acted as quartermaster. His bravery won for him the respect and esteem of his superior officers, and he was brevetted first lieutenant as a reward of merit. Many flattering letters from the generals under whom he served, from time to time, are still in the possession of his son, notable among which is an autograph note from Major-General McComb.

At the close of the war his name was honorably mentioned in general orders and the government offered him a position upon the peace establishment, which he declined, in order that he might retire from active life, which he did. Removing to Glen Cove, he purchased a farm and resided upon it until his death, in 1824.

Charles Thorn Cromwell, his third child, was born in New York, May 8, 1808. After attending private schools at Jamaica and Flushing, L. I., he entered Union College, graduating in 1829. While there, with three others, all of whom are now dead, he organized the "Sigma Phi Society." After his graduation he entered the law-office of Minott Mitchell, at White Plains, N. Y., and remained with him two years, when, with two friends, he made a tour of Europe. He spent a year in most interesting and profitable diversion, and then returned to New York and was admitted to the bar.

He opened an office in the city, where he remained for many years, building up for himself an extensive and lucrative practice. Twenty years ago he retired from business, though his name is still connected with the legal firm which he organized, and whose office is at No. 21 Park Row.

[1] For a full account of the Cromwell family, see "Foster's British Statesmen," vi. 2; also, "Carlyle's Letters and Speeches of Cromwell," i. 32–40.

During his active career Mr. Cromwell handled many prominent cases with such skill as to win for himself not only a high reputation in commercial centres, but also the regard and respect of the entire profession.

For many years he has lived in his beautiful residence on Manersing Island, near Port Chester, spending his winters in New York.

He is a member of Christ Church (Episcopal) and was formerly one of its vestrymen, having contibuted largely toward its erection. He married Henrietta Amelia Brooks, daughter of Benjamin Brooks, of Bridgeport, Conn. She is a descendant of Colonel John Jones and Theophilus Eaton, first Governor of the colony of New Haven. There were three children, one of whom (the eldest son) was drowned from a yacht in Long Island Sound. Those surviving are Oliver Eaton and Henrietta, who married John De Ruyter.

Mr. Cromwell, though well along in life, still retains his strength, and his name continues to be associated with every progressive and benevolent movement in and about the village which is the home of his choice. He is at present one of the oldest living members of the St. Nicholas Club.

WILLIAM PATTERSON VAN RENSSELAER.

Mr. Van Rensselaer was the second son of the patroon, Stephen Van Rensselaer, of Albany, and was born March 6, 1805. His mother was a daughter of Judge William Paterson, of New Jersey. After graduating at Yale College, in 1824, he was commissioned aid-de-camp to Governor De Witt Clinton, with the title of colonel, which post he soon relinquished, and from 1826 spent four years in Europe, traveling extensively and pursuing legal studies in Edinburgh.

Upon his return he entered the office of Peter A. Jay, then a well-known lawyer in New York. For a number of years afterward he resided in Albany and Rensselaer County, but the last twenty years of his life were spent at his home at Manursing Island, near Rye, Westchester County. He died in New York, November 13, 1872.

He inherited from his distinguished father many noted characteristics. Conspicuous among these was a true simplicity. Free from all pretension and eminently unselfish, he found his happiness in a life of retirement and in unobtrusive but earnest endeavors to do good. A genuine sympathy with works of Christian benevolence was another inherited trait. He was an attentive observer of the great and philanthropic movements of the day and a most liberal supporter of every worthy cause whose claims were brought to his notice.

A man of noble impulses and clear convictions, he was no less decided in the rebuke of injustice and iniquity that in the approval of that which was good.

The uprightness and elevation, the kindliness and generosity of his nature, his fine intellectual gifts and

Digitized by Google

high culture, and with all an unaffected humility, the fruit of true religion, made him the marked example of a Christian gentleman.

SAMUEL JONES TILDEN.

In an old-fashioned frame dwelling-house still standing, though considerably older than our Federal Constitution, Mr. Tilden was born on the 9th of February, 1814. The old homestead, where four generations of the family have been reared, fronts upon the long street which constitutes the back-bone of the village of New Lebanon, in the county of Columbia, in the State of New York.

Mr. Tilden's ancestry may be traced back to the latter part of the sixteenth century and to the county of Kent, in England, where the name is still most honorably associated with the army, the navy and the church. In 1634 Nathaniel Tilden was among the Puritans who left Kent to settle in America. Eleven years previous he had been mayor of Tenterden. He was succeeded in that office by his cousin John, as he had been preceded by his uncle John in 1585 and 1600. He removed with his family to Scituate, in the colony of Massachusetts, in 1634. He was one of the commissioners to locate that town, and the first recorded conveyance of any of its soil was made to him. His brother Joseph was one of the merchant adventurers of London who fitted out the "Mayflower." This Nathaniel Tilden married Hannah Bourne, one of whose sisters married a brother of Governor Winslow and another a son of Governor Bradford. Among the associates of Joseph Tilden in fitting out the "Mayflower" was Timothy Hatherby, who afterward married the widow of Nathaniel Tilden, and was a leading citizen of Scituate until expelled from public life for refusing to prosecute the Quakers.

Governor Tilden's grandfather, John Tilden, settled in Columbia County, since then uninterruptedly the residence of this branch of the Tilden family. The Governor's mother was descended from William Jones, Lieutenant-Governor of the colony of New Haven, who, in all the histories of Connecticut, is represented to have been the son of Col. John Jones, one of the regicide judges of Charles the First, who is said to have married a sister of Oliver Cromwell and a cousin of John Hamden. The Governor's father, a farmer and merchant of New Lebanon, was a man of notable judgment and practical sense and the accepted oracle of the county upon all matters of public concern, while his opinion was also eagerly sought and justly valued by all his neighbors, but by none more than by the late President Van Buren, who, till his death, was one of his most cherished and intimate personal friends.

Samuel J., after a suitable preparatory education at Williamstown, Massachusetts, was entered at Yale College in the class of 1833, where, however, in consequence of ill health, he was not able to complete the course. He concluded his collegiate studies at the New York University, and then took the course of law in that institution, at the same time entering the law-office of the late John W. Edmunds, then a prominent member of the New York bar. While yet in his teens he was a watchful student of the political situation, and tradition has preserved many interesting stories of his triumphs, both of speech and pen, in the political arena. Young and obscure as he then was, Presidents Jackson and Van Buren had few more effective champions in this State of the great measures of their respective administrations than this stripling from New Lebanon.

He was admitted to the bar in 1841. Four years before, and when only twenty-three years of age, he delivered a speech in Columbia County on the subject of "Prices and Wages," which not only attracted the attention and won the admiration of the leading political economists of that time, but is to-day one of perhaps the half-dozen most profound, comprehensive and instructive papers on that complicated subject now in print in any language.

Upon his admission to the bar, Mr. Tilden opened an office in Pine Street, in the city of New York, which will be remembered by his acquaintances of that period as a favorite resort for the leading Democrats, whether resident or casually on a visit to that city.

In 1844, in anticipation and preparation for the election which resulted in making James K. Polk President, and Silas Wright Governor of the State of New York, Mr. Tilden, in connection with John L. O'Sullivan, founded the newspaper called the *Daily News*, by far the ablest morning journal that had up to that time been enlisted in the service of the Democratic party. Its success was immediate and complete, and to its efficiency was largely due the success of the Democratic ticket that year. As Mr. Tilden did not propose to enter into journalism as a career, and had embarked in this enterprise merely for its bearing upon the Presidential campaign of 1844, he retired from it soon after the election, presenting his entire interest in the property to his colleague.

In the fall of 1845 he was sent to the Assembly from the city of New York, and while a member of that body was elected to the convention for remodeling the Constitution of the State, which was to commence its sessions a few weeks after the Legislature adjourned. In both of these bodies he was a conspicuous authority, and left a permanent impression upon the legislation of the year, and especially upon all the new constitutional provisions affecting the finances of the State and the management of its system of canals. In this work he was associated, by personal and political sympathy, most intimately with Governor Wright, Michael Hoffman and with Azariah C. Flagg, then the controller of the State, who had all learned to value very highly his counsel and co-operation.

The defeat of Mr. Wright in the fall of 1846, and

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Samuel J. Tilden

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"GRAYSTONE."

RESIDENCE OF HON. SAMUEL J. TILDEN.

VIEWS AT "GRAYSTONE."

YONKERS, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

"GRAYSTONE"

Digitized by Google

VIEW FROM VERANDA LOOKING NORTH
VIEW FROM VERANDA LOOKIN SOUTH
VIEW OF THE CONSERVATORIES

VIEWS AT "GRAYSTONE,"

YONKERS, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

the coolness which had grown up between the friends of President Polk and the friends of the late President Van Buren, resulted fortunately for Mr. Tilden, if not for the country, in withdrawing his attention from politics and concentrating it upon his profession. He inherited no fortune, but depended upon his own exertions for a livelihood. Thus far his labor for the State, or in his profession, had not been lucrative, and, despite his strong tastes and pre-eminent qualifications for political life, he was able to discern at that early period the importance, in this country at least, of a pecuniary independence for the successful prosecution of a political career. With an assiduity and a concentration of energy which has characterized all the transactions of his life, he now gave himself up to his profession. It was not many years before he became as well known at the bar as he had before been known as a politician. His business developed rapidly, and though he continued to take more or less interest in political matters, they were not allowed after 1857 to interfere with his professional duties.

From that time until 1869, when he again consecrated all his personal and professional energies to the reform of the municipal government of New York City, a period of about twenty years, his was nearly or quite the largest and most lucrative practice in the country conducted by any single barrister. During what may be termed the professional parts of his career he has associated his name imperishably with some of the most remarkable forensic struggles of our time.

It was, however, during this period of Mr. Tilden's life, in which he was devoting himself almost exclusively to his profession, that his name figures prominently in one of the most important political transactions in American history. The convention held in 1848 at Baltimore for the selection of a Presidential ticket to be supported by the Democratic party presumed to deny to the regular delegates from New York State, of whom Mr. Tilden was one, admission to their body upon equal terms with the delegates from other States, assigning as a reason that the convention which chose them had declared that the immunity from slavery contained in the Jeffersonian ordinance of 1787 should be applied to all the Territories of the Northwest, so long as they should remain under the government of Congress. Mr. Tilden was selected by his colleagues of the delegation to make their report to their constituents,—a report which helps to make the Utica Convention of June, 1848, one of the most momentous in the history of the country.

"With this intolerant proscription of the New York Democracy began the disastrous schism which was destined to rend in twain both the great parties of the country and practically to annihilate the political organization which had given a wise and beneficent government to the country for half a century. Then, too, and there were laid the foundations of the political conglomerate, which in 1860 acquired, and for a quarter of a century retained, uninterrupted control of our Federal Government. . . .

"Just twenty-eight years after the delegate from New York, who had been selected by his colleagues for the purpose, broke to their outraged constituents the story of their State's humiliation, that same delegate received the suffrages of a large majority of his countrymen for the highest honor in their gift; and to-day, through that delegate's influence, another citizen of New York who was nominated by a Democratic National Convention, which imposed no sectional tests, and who was elected without the vote of a single slaveholder, becomes the chief magistrate and most honored citizen of the Republic.

'The wheel is come full circle.'

and the bones of the Democratic party that were broken upon the cross of slavery in 1848, now, after an interval of thirty-six years, are once more knit together, and the traditions and the doctrines inherited from the golden age of the Republic are about to resume, not merely their official, but their moral supremacy in the nation." [1]

The four years from 1869 to 1873 were mainly devoted by Mr. Tilden to the overthrow of what was known as the Tweed Ring, which had thoroughly debauched every branch of the New York City government, legislative, executive and judicial, and was threatening the State government also with its foul embrace.

"The total surrender of my professional business during that period," he has said in one of his published communications, "the nearly absolute withdrawal of attention from my private affairs, and from all enterprises in which I am interested, have cost me a loss of actual income, which, with expenditures and contributions the contest has required, would be a respectable endowment of a public charity.

"I do not speak of these things," he adds, "to regret them. In my opinion, no instrumentality in human society is so potential in its influence on the well-being of mankind as the governmental machinery which administers justice and makes and executes laws. No benefaction of private benevolence could be so fruitful in benefits as the rescue of this machinery from the perversion which had made it a means of conspiracy, fraud and crime against the rights and the most sacred interests of a great community."

When Mr. Tilden thus wrote he had not experienced nor could he have foreseen the legal consummation of his labors in the arrest, imprisonment or flight of all the parties who, only a few months before, seemed to hold the wealth and power of the Empire State in the hollow of their hands, nor the condemnation of Tweed to the striped jacket and cell of a felon, nor the recovery of verdicts which promised to restore to the city treasury many millions of ill-gotten plunder.

Nor could he have foreseen, among the most direct and immediate results of his labors for the purification of the New York City and State governments, his election as Governor in the fall of 1874, by a majority of more than fifty thousand over General Dix, the Republican candidate.

The talents and public virtues which, as a municipal reformer, won the confidence of the people of his native State and made him Governor, on this new and wider theatre won the confidence and admiration of the nation and made him its choice by a considerable popular majority for the Presidency in 1876. It was not, however, in the order of Providence that he or the people were to enjoy the legitimate fruits of this latter victory.

When Congress convened in the winter of 1876–77, and proceeded to discharge its constitutional

[1] "Writings and Life of Samuel J. Tilden," edited by John Bigelow. Pub., Harper & Brothers, 1885.

Digitized by Google

duty of counting the electoral votes for President and Vice-President, it appeared that there were one hundred and eighty-four uncontested electoral votes for Samuel J. Tilden for President and for Thomas A. Hendricks for Vice-President, one hundred and sixty-five uncontested electoral votes for Rutherford B. Hayes for President and William A. Wheeler for Vice-President, and twenty votes in dispute. One hundred and eighty-five votes were necessary for a choice; consequently, one additional vote to Tilden and Hendricks would have elected them, while twenty additional votes were required for the election of the rival candidates. The whole election, therefore, depended upon one electoral vote. This gave to the mode of counting the vote an importance which it had never possessed at any of the twenty-one previous elections in the history of our government.

The provisions of the Constitution relating to the mode of counting the vote were sufficiently vague to furnish a pretext for some diversity of opinion upon the subject, wherein the temptation to find one was so great. A majority of the Senate being Republicans and a majority of the House of Representatives being Democrats, that the Senate would not agree to to count any one of these twenty votes for Tilden and Hendricks was assumed; and to avoid a conflict of jurisdiction, which was thought by some to threaten the peace of the country, a special tribunal, to consist of members of Congress and of the Supreme Court, fifteen in number, was created, upon which the duty of counting the electoral vote was devolved by an act of Congress. One of the members of this tribunal was classified as an Independent, seven as Republicans and seven as Democrats. The Republicans voted to count all the votes of the three contested States for Hayes, and the Independent, voted with them, and the candidate elected to the Presidency by a considerable popular majority was compelled to give place to the candidate of a minority.

The circumstances under which Mr. Tilden was deprived of the Presidency made it inconvenient, indeed impossible, to obey the counsels and warnings of declining health to lay down the leadership of the great party whose unexampled wrong was represented in his person, until he could surrender it into the hands of its proper national representatives. As soon, however, as the National Democratic Convention assembled in 1880, he felt constrained to address to the chairman of the New York delegation the memorable letter in which he proclaimed his well-considered intention to retire from public life, for the labors of which he had long felt his health and strength were unequal. In 1884 he was obliged to repeat his resolution, to prevent his nomination by the delegates to the National Convention, who were almost unanimously chosen because of their avowed partiality for Mr. Tilden as their candidate, notwithstanding his impaired and failing health. Finding it impossible to obtain his consent to run, the convention accepted a candidate of his choice from the State which he had served so long and faithfully, and his choice was ratified by the nation at the general election.

Mr. Tilden is now enjoying the repose he has so fully earned, and such health as repose only could confer, at his princely home of Greystone on the banks of the Hudson, now the pilgrim's shrine of the reinstated party, which Jefferson planted and which Jackson and Van Buren watered.

"He is one of the few surviving statesmen who had the good fortune to receive early political training in the golden age of the Democratic party, when public measures were thoroughly tested by the Constitution and by public opinion, and when by ample debate the voters of the whole nation were educated, not only to embrace, but also to comprehend, the principles upon which their government was conducted,—a training to which his subsequent political career bears continual testimony. Whatever heresies of doctrine have crept into our public policy since those days, the responsibility for them will not rest with him. In all the papers and speeches with which from time to time he has endeavored to enlighten his countrymen, it will be difficult to find a line or a thought not in harmony with the teachings of the eminent statesmen who, during the first fifty years of our national history, traced the limits and defined the functions of constitutional Democracy in America. From that epoch to this there has been scarcely a question of public concern having its roots in the Constitution which Mr. Tilden has not carefully considered and more or less thoroughly treated. He was a champion of the Union and of President Jackson against the Nullifiers and Mr. Calhoun. He denounced the American system of Mr. Clay as unconstitutional, inequitable and sectional. He vindicated the removal of the government deposits from the United States Bank by President Jackson, and exploded the sophistical doctrine of its lawyers that the Treasury is not an executive department. He vindicated President Van Buren from the charge made by William Leggett of unbecoming subserviency to the Slaveholding States in his Inaugural Address. He was among the first to insist upon free banking under general laws, thus opening the business equally to all, and abolishing the monopoly which was a nearly universal superstition. He exposed the perils of banking upon public funds. He advocated the divorce of bank and State, and the establishment of a sub-treasury. He asserted the supervisory control of the Legislature over corporations of its own creation. He exposed the enormities of Mr. Webster's scheme to pledge the public lands for the payment of the debts of the States. He drew and vindicated in a profoundly learned and able report the Act which put an end to the discontents of the New York 'Anti-renters.' He wrote the protest of the Democracy of New York against making the nationalization of slavery a test of party fealty. He was the first, we believe, to assign statesmanlike reasons for opposing coercive temperance legislation. He pointed out, as no one had done before, the danger of sectionalizing the government. He planned the campaign, he secured the requisite legislation, he bore much the largest share of the expense, and, finally, he led the storming-party which drove Tweed and his predatory associates to prison or into exile. He purified the judiciary of the city and State of New York by procuring the adoption of measures which resulted in the removal of one judge by impeachment and of two judges by resignation. He induced the Democratic Convention of 1874 to declare, in no uncertain tone, for a sound currency, when not a single State Convention of either party had yet ventured to take a stand against the financial delusions begotten of the war, which for years had been sapping the credit of the country. It was at his instance that the Democratic party of New York, in the same Convention, pronounced against third-term Presidents, and effectively strengthened the exposed intrenchments which the country, for eighty years and more, had been erecting against the insidious encroachments of dynasticism. During his career as Governor Mr. Tilden applied the principles of the political school in which he had been educated to the new questions which time, civil war and national affluence had made paramount. He overthrew the Canal Ring, which had become ascendant in all the departments of the State government. He dispersed the lobby which infested the legislative bodies. He introduced a practical reform in the civil service of this State, and elevated the standard of official morality. In his messages he exposed the weakness and inadequacy of the financial policy of the party in power, the mismanagement of our canal system, the Federal assaults upon State sovereignty, and

Chauncey M. Depew.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the pressing need of radical reforms both in the State and Federal administrations." [1]

It is due to Mr. Tilden, also, to say that he has rarely discussed any matter of public concern without planting the structure of his argument upon the solid ground of fundamental principles. Always cautious in the selection of his facts, singularly moderate in his statements and temperate in his language, he, better than perhaps any other statesman of our time, can afford to be judged by his record. Who that has figured so prominently in public affairs has said or written less that he would prefer not to have said; less that his maturer judgment cannot approve; less that will not commend itself to the deliberate judgment of thoughtful men and to an unprejudiced posterity?

HON. CHAUNCEY M. DEPEW.

Mr. Depew, distinguished as a lawyer and statesman, was born at Peekskill, April 23, 1834. His ancestry was of the Huguenot race, from which have sprung so many noble men to make immortal names in history. His family were early settled at Peekskill, where his father, Isaac Depew, resided on the farm which had been the home of his ancestors for two hundred years. His early years were spent on the old homestead, and his education was finished at Yale College, where he graduated in 1856. Resolved to enter the legal profession, he studied law with Hon. William Nelson, was admitted to the bar in 1858, and commenced practice in his native town. His natural ability, sound knowledge of the law and great oratorical talent caused his rapid advancement. In his youth he took part in politics, was a delegate to the Republican State Convention in 1858, and a distinguished and effective speaker in the campaign of 1860. In every Presidential contest from that time to the present, his speeches have been listened to by thousands of his fellow-citizens, and his opinions have never failed to attract attention and command respect. At the beginning of the war he was adjutant of the Eighteenth Regiment N. Y. V., and served three months. In 1861 he was elected member of Assembly, and re-elected in 1862. His legislative career, which was marked with great ability, prepared the way for a still higher position, and in 1863 he was elected Secretary of State. He received, but declined, the appointment of commissioner of emigration, but served for one year as tax commissioner for the city of New York. In 1866 he received from President Johnson the appointment of minister to Japan,—a position which he resigned after holding the commission for one month. He was appointed one of the commissioners of the new capitol at Albany in 1871. The Liberal Republican party gave Mr. Depew the nomination for Governor in 1872; but he, together with the rest of the ticket, failed of election. During the controversy which led to the resignation of Hon. Roscoe Conkling as United States Senator, Mr. Depew was one of the most prominent among the candidates proposed as his successor, but withdrew his name in the interests of harmony. He was appointed one of the regents of the university in 1877, a position which he still retains. For several years he was vice-president and general counsel for the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad, and is now (1886) president of the road,—a position which furnishes ample scope for his abilities.

Among the prominent orators of the day, there are few who have been more frequently called upon to deliver addresses upon occasions of public importance. A speech delivered in the Legislature, in 1862, upon the subject of "State Finances" has been considered one of his best efforts, and attracted wide attention. On the 4th of July, 1876, he delivered the centennial oration at Sing Sing, and made a brilliant address at Kingston on July 30, 1877, the anniversary of the formation of the State government. On September 23, 1880, he addressed a large assembly at Tarrytown, in commemoration of the capture of Major Andre, and he was the orator of the day upon the occasion of unveiling the statue of Alexander Hamilton, in Central Park. At the election of a United States Senator, in 1885, he was tendered the nomination by all divisions of the Republican party, but declined to be considered a candidate, and the choice fell upon Hon. William M. Evarts.

Upon his maternal side, Mr. Depew is connected with the family of the celebrated Roger Sherman, of Connecticut, his mother being a granddaughter of the sister of that illustrious statesman.

He married, in 1871, Elise, daughter of William Hegeman, Esq., of New York, and has one son, who bears his father's name.

FRANCIS LARKIN.

Francis Larkin, well and prominently known among the legal fraternity of Westchester County, was born at Sing Sing, August 9, 1820. His father, John Larkin, came from the neighborhood of Belfast, Ireland, and after his arrival in this country, married Elizabeth Knox, who was also born in Ireland, near Donegal. The early part of Mr. Larkin's life was passed on a farm, upon which he worked till he attained his majority. After teaching school for a while, he resolved to study for the legal profession, and entered the office of Richard R. Voris, Esq., who was a prominent lawyer, and District Attorney of the County. In 1847 he was admitted to the bar as attorney and counsellor at law. Immediately after his admission he established his practice in Sing Sing, and has continued it to the present time, and by strict attention to the duties of his profession, has established an enviable reputation, commanding the confidence

[1] "Writings and Speeches of Samuel J. Tilden," edited by John Bigelow, preface.

Digitized by Google

of a very extended clientage. He has been a member of the Republican party, and received its nomination for Congress, in 1864, but as the district was strongly Democratic, his opponent, Hon. William Radford, was elected.

He has held the offices of trustee and president of the village of Sing Sing, and justice of the peace, and in 1851 was elected supervisor of the town of Ossining, in which positions he performed the duties of the offices to the entire satisfaction of the community.

He was married April 1, 1852, to Sarah E., daughter of Ebenezer Hobby, of New York. Their children are Mary E., wife of Adrian H. Joline, a prominent lawyer of New York City; Sarah, wife of Dr. Joel Madden; Frank, who married Lily, daughter of George A. Brandreth; John, Adrian H., and Alice. Of these Frank and John are practicing lawyers, and both graduates of Princeton College, and the youngest son, Adrian H., is now a student at the same institution. The youngest daughter is at present studying at the school for young ladies under the tuition of Miss Dana, at Morristown, N. J.

Francis Larkin

HON. SAMUEL PURDY.

The family of which Mr. Purdy is a representative has long been settled in Westchester County, their ancestor being Francis Purdy, who was living in Fairfield, Conn., previous to 1659. The line of descent is as follows,—1st, Francis; 2d, John; 3d, Joseph; 4th, Jonathan; 5th, Jonathan; 6th, Benjamin; 7th, Sylvanus; 8th, Samuel M.

Sylvanus Purdy, the father of Samuel M., married Effalinda, daughter of Andrew Purdy, of East Chester, and his son was born at the homestead of his maternal grandfather, August 28, 1824. This homestead (which was on the farm formerly belonging to Bartholomew Ward, and sold by him to Andrew Purdy), stood in what is now the village of Mount Vernon, at the corner of Sixth Avenue and Fourth Street, on the east side, and now belongs to the heirs of John Stevens. The early boyhood of Mr. Purdy was passed at this place, and at the age of twelve he went to Mamaroneck, and attended a school taught by John M. Ward, a well-known teacher of that day. Here he prepared to enter Columbia College, a plan which he afterwards abandoned, and at the conclusion of his school term he entered, in 1843, the law office of Samuel E. Lyon. In this office he remained four years, was then admitted to the bar, and established his practice at West Farms. During his first year there he was elected to the offices of Justice of the peace and town clerk, and has been continuously re-elected to the former position. He was elected supervisor of the town of West Farm, and held that office in 1855, 1856, 1862, 1863, 1864, 1865, 1866, 1867 and 1868, being four times elected without opposition, and at the other elections by a very large majority. In 1867 he was elected member of Assembly by a majority of eight hundred and twenty, and served on the committee on internal affairs. The following year he was re-elected, and was re-appointed on the above-named committee.

His practice as a lawyer has been almost entirely confined to real estate. In this branch of legal knowledge he has few equals, and it may be safely said that there is no one who is more thoroughly conversant with the history of the land titles in this county. He is constantly called upon to decide questions concerning ancient boundaries, the locations of which have passed from memory. The amount of money invested upon the security of real estate in this county, and of which he has the charge and oversight, exceeds a million dollars, which shows better than any words can express, the confidence which is placed in him by the community where his clientage is so large.

He was in early life a Whig, but joined the Democratic party at the election of Buchanan, and has ever since been connected with it.

He married, in 1847, Rachel, daughter of Caleb Purdy, of Harrison. Their only son, Caleb, a young man of great promise, died, in 1869, soon after his graduation from Columbia College.

Mr. Purdy is a member of the Episcopal Church, and now holds the position of senior warden, and is superintendent of the Sabbath-school.

Soon after establishing his practice at West Farms

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of a

be

Samuel M Purdy

Digitized by Google

Wm Beach

Google

Digitized by Goo

W A Beach

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

he purchased the homestead formerly belonging to Dr. William Hoffman, on the west side of Main Street, or the old Boston Post Road, which has ever since been his residence.

Mr. Purdy is a type of the self-made man. Commencing with small means he has accumulated a competency; by strict attention to business, and by his integrity and honesty of purpose, he has gained what is of still greater importance, the confidence and respect of the entire community.

WILLIAM AUGUSTUS BEACH.

On Broadway in Tarrytown stands the handsome stone mansion, which for four years previous to his death was the residence of William Augustus Beach, formerly a leading lawyer in New York City, and is at present occupied by his family.

Mr. Beach was born at Saratoga Springs, New York, December 10, 1809. His father, Miles Beach, was an early settler and successful merchant in that village. His mother, whose maiden name was Catharine Warren, was a first cousin of General Warren of Revolutionary fame. Augustus (as Mr. Beach was usually known) received no college education. He studied law in his native village and for some years after his admission to the bar was engaged there in the practice of his profession. In the law firm of which he was a member, Nicholas Hill, Jr., and Augustus Bockes, who was later a supreme court judge of that district, were the other partners. From the first, he showed remarkable powers in influencing juries to the conclusions he desired, and a keenness in seizing upon the points of advantage in his cases, and he soon acquired a local reputation as an advocate of ability.

In 1851 he removed to Troy, New York, where he made his residence for the next twenty years. In this new and larger field, he achieved a proportionately greater fame and success. He founded the firm of Pearson, Beach & Smith, which later, on the retirement of Hon. Job Pearson, became Beach & Smith. Legal interests of great importance were intrusted to his care, and he became attorney and counsel for all the large railroad corporations in the city.

When the Hudson River Bridge Company secured articles of incorporation for the purpose of bridging the Hudson River at Albany, the city of Troy, which was opposed to the building of the bridge, engaged Mr. Beach to endeavor to prevent its construction by an appeal to the courts. A preliminary injunction was obtained enjoining the bridge company from proceeding with their work, but an attempt to have the injunction made permanent resulted in the case being carried into the Supreme Court of the United States, where the bill of complaint was dismissed.

During the administration of Governor Seymour, while the Civil War was in progress, Mr. Beach was retained to defend Col. North and others, who were charged with tampering with the votes of soldiers. This case was carried into the Supreme Court of the United States, where, during that time of high political excitement, it occasioned widespread interest. Mr. Beach not only succeeded in procuring the acquittal of his clients, but also laid the foundation for the proceedings which ended in the discontinuance of the system of substituting military inquisitions for authorized civil courts. His argument was listened to by Senators and Representatives and his skillful conduct of the case made him the recipient of many enthusiastic manifestations of approbation.

In 1868 he obtained the acquittal before the courts of impeachment of canal commissioner Robert C. Dorn.

During his residence in Troy he was frequently tendered the nomination to a judgeship, but declined the honor. The title of judge, however, was commonly prefixed to his name.

In 1871 he removed to New York, where he commanded at once a large practice, and was pitted in the legal arena against the foremost lawyers of the city. He took the place of Charles A. Rapallo, now a justice of the New York Court of Appeals, in the firm of Rapallo, Daly & Brown. Afterwards on the withdrawal of Mr. Daly, the firm became Beach & Brown. Their office was in the Herald building. Mr. Beach became engaged in a number of noteworthy cases. In the action brought by the Erie Railway Company against Wm. H. Vanderbilt, popularly known as the five million dollar suit, Messrs. Beach and Rapallo were retained by Mr. Vanderbilt, and succeeded in obtaining a verdict in his favor. In the celebrated suit of Bowen vs. Chase, which involved the title to the valuable real estate left by Madame Jumel, Mr. Beach appeared for the plaintiff and was opposed by Charles O'Connor. The trial lasted for over a month, and resulted in the disagreement of the jury.

In the prosecution of Edward S. Stokes for the murder of James Fisk, Jr., he assisted the district attorney, with the result that Stokes was convicted of murder in the first degree. In a re-hearing of the case Mr. Beach did not appear and the decision was reversed. When Frank Walworth was tried for killing his father Mr. Beach and Charles O'Connor defended him, and Mr. Beach refused any remuneration for his services.

Perhaps the most widely known of his cases was the suit brought by Theodore Tilton against Henry Ward Beecher. He was senior counsel for Mr. Tilton and was assisted by Wm. Fullerton, General Roger A. Pryor, Samuel D. Morris and Thomas E. Pearsall. For Mr. Beecher appeared William M. Evarts, John K. Porter, Austin Abbott, Benjamin F. Tracy, Thomas G. Shearman, John L. Hill and John W. Sterling. In summing up the evidence for Mr. Tilton, Mr. Beach occupied the sessions of the court from June 10th to June 23d, 1875. The result of this trial, as is well known, was the disagreement of the jury.

Digitized by Google

After this time his activity in the pursuit of his profession began to decrease. For ten or fifteen years previous to his death he suffered from heart disease, which gradually grew worse, and in the first half of 1884 his condition became very serious. The immediate cause of his death was a congestive chill, taken at the house of his physician, at Tarrytown, at one o'clock Saturday afternoon, June 28, 1884. He was removed to his own home on Broadway, in Tarrytown, and died there at forty minutes past three o'clock the same afternoon.

In person he was somewhat above the medium height and well proportioned. He had a massive head and regular and strongly marked features. His white hair, which only partly covered his head, when brushed back, as he always wore it, showed a broad, full forehead. He wore a chin beard which, in his advanced years, was white. In disposition he was genial.

He left a wife and six children. He married Jennie Wilson, daughter of Jesse Wilson, of Albany, in 1858. His children were Captain Warren Beach, at present a member of General Hancock's staff; Judge Miles Beach, of the Court of Common Pleas in New York; John Beach, of Knoxville, Tenn.; Anna, wife of Walter S. Appleton, of the firm of D. Appleton & Co.; William, aged eleven years; and George, aged ten years.

J. MALCOLM SMITH.

The ancestors of Mr. Smith have been citizens of Westchester County for many generations past. His great grandfather, John Smith, was a tenant and afterward the owner of one of the farms of the Manor of Phillipsburg. This homestead, situated about two miles east of Sing Sing, he left by will to his son Caleb Smith, who died in 1832, at an advanced age. The latter married Elizabeth Sherwood, and they were the parents of a large family. One of their sons Isaac C. Smith, was born in 1797, and married Maria, daughter of George Titlar, who came when a child to this country from the north of Ireland, was a soldier during the Revolution, and one of the company who laid the great chain across the Hudson River at West Point. Mr. Smith died in 1877, leaving three children,—George T., Cornelia (wife of James T. Stratton, of Oakland, Cal., late United States Surveyor-General of that State), and J. Malcolm Smith, who was born in New York, March 11, 1823, while his parents were residing temporarily in that city, but removed with them to Sing Sing in early infancy. His father was desirous of giving him a collegiate education, and with that view he attended the preparatory school at Middletown, Conn., and subsequently entered the Wesleyan University. Here he continued till he passed the sophomore examination, when he was compelled to leave college on account of ill health, and was principally engaged in outdoor pursuits until past the age of thirty. During this time he studied law, was admitted to the bar and established his practice at Sing Sing, where he remained till 1868. While a resident Mr. Smith was elected one of the trustees of the village, and was also elected justice of the peace for three successive terms. He was for a number of years one of the loan commissioners for Westchester County, and for five years prior to 1867 clerk of the Board of Supervisors. At the general election in 1867 he was made county clerk of Westchester County and removed to White Plains in 1868. Finding the records and business of the important office, to which he had been chosen, in great confusion, as reported by a committee of the Board of Supervisors, he, upon taking possession of the office, at once devoted himself to the task of bringing order out of comparative chaos. So well did he perform his duties that at the expiration of his term he was re-elected, and in 1873 was chosen for a third term without opposition, his election being especially favored by the most prominent lawyers of the county without regard to party ties. Upon his retirement from office the following appeared in one of the leading newspapers of the county, reflecting, in substance, notices which appeared in nearly all the county papers:

"J. Malcolm Smith, Esq., whose third term of office as County Clerk of this County expired on the first of the present month, carries with him, in retiring from his official labors, the respect, good opinion and confidence of our entire community; and our Board of Supervisors, on the eve of his retiring from the office which he has so long and so ably filled, took occasion to give public and official certification to the correct and efficient manner in which he has discharged the various and important duties of the office during the past nine years, in the unanimous adoption of the Report of its Standing Committee on County Clerk."

The report of the Supervisors' Committee referred to closes as follows:

"Your Committee would report that at the request of J. Malcolm Smith, the present County Clerk, whose term of office is about to expire, they have made a thorough investigation as to the present condition of the books, papers and records of the office, and find the minutes of all the Courts duly recorded; the Registers of Actions and Special Proceedings written up to date and properly indexed; the Judgments docketed in the most plain and neat manner; the Lis Pendens, Sheriff's Certificates, Assignments, &c., all recorded and plainly indexed; and everything relating to the papers and records of the office showing that regularity and order prevail throughout, and that no unfinished business will be left to be performed by Mr. Smith's successor in office.

"Mr. Smith has always been a Democrat, and for twenty years prior to his retirement from office held a prominent position in the councils of his party."

Since his retirement he has been engaged in the practice of law in White Plains, devoting himself more especially to examination of titles and matters of law pertaining to real estate. He has been for forty years connected with the Methodist Episcopal Church, and is well known as an active and influential member, largely aiding financially and by judicious counsel in the erection of churches, both in Sing Sing and White Plains. He has been an extensive traveler in various portions of the United States and few men in this county have a wider circle of acquaintance. He married Hannah, daughter of James McCord, of Sing Sing. They have one child,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of [illegible]
door pursu[illegible]

Digitized by Google

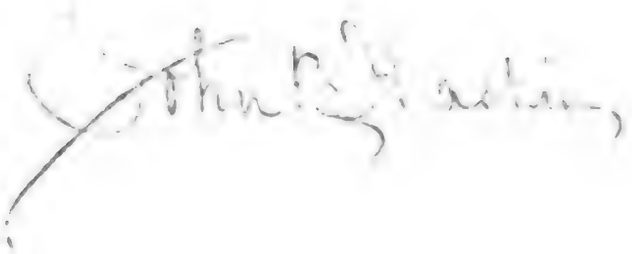
S. Malcolm Smith

Digitized by Google

Digitized

John B. Haskin

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Ella, wife of Charles V. Moore, of the well-known insurance firm of W. M. Onderdonk & Co., of New York City.

A few words should be added concerning his father, Captain Isaac C. Smith. During his whole life Captain Smith was identified with the growth and business of Sing Sing. He was the builder of the steamboat "Mount Pleasant" in 1835 and the "Telegraph" in 1836, and was the projector of the morning steamboat line from Sing Sing to New York. He was the builder of more than one hundred vessels, from a small sloop to a ship of three thousand tons. During his life he bore a part in the erection of five churches, and was known as the "father of Sing Sing Methodism," being one of the original corporators of the first church of that denomination in the village, and the largest contributor towards its erection. After a life of active usefulness, he died while on a visit to his son in White Plains, having reached his eightieth year.

HON. JOHN B. HASKIN.

Among the political leaders of Westchester County a prominent place must be given to Hon. John B. Haskin, who is descended from a long line of true American ancestry. His grandfather, Benjamin F. Haskin, was a native of Sheffield, Massachusetts, where he was born in 1767, and removed when a young man to Poughkeepsie, where he entered a store as clerk, and became partner. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Gilbert Cornwell, who lived at Nine Partners, and removing to New York, became largely connected with shipping interests, and the owner of several vessels. His children were Henry R.; Benjamin F., a sea-captain who settled in Peru, where his descendants are still found; William E., of Davenport, Iowa, who died in 1884, Harriet, wife of —— Collins; Maria, wife of —— Graham; Jane, wife of Casper Trumpy, now living at Greenwich, Ct.; and Caroline, wife of William Brown, of Yonkers, who died in 1885.

Henry R. Haskin, the oldest son, was born October 27, 1794, and died January 24, 1848. He was educated at St. Mary's College, Maryland; was a midshipman in the War of 1812; was with Commodore Chauncey at the battle of Sackett's Harbor, and was wounded there. He was a man of good education and ability, and established business in a store on Varrick Street, New York. In 1816 he married Elizabeth, daughter of John Bussing, who lived near Williams' Bridge, and was a descendant of Aaron Bussing, who came from Holland, and settled at Harlem. He was the owner of a farm of four hundred acres in the Manor of Fordham, which he left to his two sons, Johannes and Petrus. It remained in the hands of their descendants for one hundred and fifty years, and a portion of it is now in Bedford Park. The children of this marriage were Henry R., who died in California; John B.; and William E., now treasurer of the Board of Excise in New York. After the death of Mrs. Haskin, Mr. Haskin was married a second time, to Ann, daughter of Benjamin F. Lowe, and they had two children—Harriet, wife of R. Ridgly Wheatly, of New York, and Benjamin F., a member of the Excise Board of New York, who died, greatly lamented by his many friends, March 1, 1884.

John B. Haskin, the second son, was born at the Mansion House, in Fordham, August 27, 1821, the place of his birth being now a portion of Woodlawn Cemetery. His mother, whose name he never fails to mention in terms of the utmost respect and affection, was a woman of great energy and determination, qualities which she transmitted to her son. His early education was received at the public school, and when fourteen years old he entered the law-office of George Wilson. His natural quickness and ability were such that in four years he was sufficiently expert to take charge of the law-office of John M. Bixby. From his earliest days he was brought in constant contact with politics and politicians, and having passed the requisite examination, he was admitted to the bar May 16, 1842, his certificate being signed by Hon. Samuel Nelson, Judge of the Supreme Court. Five years later he was elected to the office of civil justice, and held court at the corner of Bowery and Third Street, and continued in this position till 1849, when the office was abolished. He seemed naturally destined for active political life, and his influence and ability were soon felt in the councils of his party. Fortunately for himself and the public, he was not a man to be bound by party trammels, or to be the obsequious slave of party rule. He called himself a "National Conservative Democrat," and might almost be said to be his own party. In 1848 Mr. Haskin removed from New York and settled at Fordham, near the scenes of his early childhood. The Democracy of his native county had to some extent escaped the corrupting influences which had made the party in New York a disgrace to the city and the State. Here he came in contact with a class of politicians who were more able to appreciate his true position and ready to join their forces with his own. In 1850 he was elected supervisor, and was re-elected, and one of his many acts for public benefit was his successful effort to erect a free bridge over Harlem River.

In 1853 he was appointed corporation attorney and held office till 1856. In that year he was elected member of Congress for the Ninth District on the regular Democratic ticket. It was soon evident that he was not the man to sit on a back seat. His first speech attracted at once the attention of the House, being made in opposition to the attempt of Alexander H. Stephens to disgrace Admiral Hiram Paulding for causing the arrest of the noted filibuster, William H. Walker. This speech marked Mr. Haskin as one of the accomplished orators of the House. In the fierce political strife which followed the attempt to introduce

Digitized by Google

slavery into the Territory of Kansas, he took at once a prominent position, and was one of the first to raise his voice against the Lecompton fraud, among the most active of the adherents of Senator Stephen A. Douglass, and an untiring organizer of the Democrats in the House against the administration. As a matter of course, a man who ventured to kick over the traces of party discipline was speedily denounced as a traitor to his party, but his opposition to Buchanan has been more than justified by the impartial verdict of history.

In 1858 Mr. Haskin was an Independent candidate for Congress, his opponent being Gouverneur Kemble, of Cold Spring. This was probably the most exciting political contest ever witnessed in the district, and resulted in the election of Mr. Haskin by a majority of thirteen votes. His nature showed itself when he stated from his seat in Congress, "I came here with no party collar on my neck." His independence was too plain to be misunderstood, and an attack upon him in the personal organ of President Buchanan was answered by him in an able speech on the floor of the House, in which his position and relation to the Democratic party were fully explained. "I am a Democrat,—a Democrat in essence, in substance, and not in mere form; Democracy, according to my reading, is the rule of the people under the law." In the Thirty-sixth Congress he was chairman of the Committee on Public Expenditures, and member of the Committee on Public Printing, and organized the research into current corruption known as the "Covode Investigation." Among his most intimate friends was Senator Broderick, of California, who had been his early schoolmate, and the friendship then begun continued till the day when the Senator fell, the victim of a duel occasioned by political animosity. It devolved upon Mr. Haskin to deliver a fitting tribute to the memory of his friend, which was a masterpiece of pathetic eloquence.

His last speech in Congress was delivered February 23, 1861. It was a characteristically bold and clear review of the agitation which led to the great crisis in our history; expressed his belief that the perilous condition of the country was directly traceable to the conduct of President Buchanan, and contained a scathing denunciation of the treasonable acts of his Cabinet.

During the course of the war a weaker man in his position would have been a Copperhead, but in Mr. Haskin the Union found a strong supporter. In 1863 he was elected supervisor of West Farms, and conducted with success the measures for raising troops and assisting the government in its efforts to subdue rebellion. Prominently identified with all local improvements, his most active efforts were devoted to the establishment of the public school in his district on a sure foundation. In the face of bitter opposition on the part of many of the wealthy men in the vicinity, he succeeded in procuring the erection of the present school building at Fordham, at a cost of seventy thousand dollars, which must ever remain a monument to his energy and public spirit.

Mr. Haskin married Jane, daughter of Peter Valentine, a representative of one of the oldest families in the county. Their children are Elizabeth, wife of E. V. Welsh; Emma, wife of Colonel J. Milton Wyatt; John B., Jr., Adele Douglass, wife of Joseph Murray, Jr.; and Mary.

The estate of Mr. Haskin, at Fordham, though now a part of the great city, has not yet lost its rural beauty. Here, surrounded by all that can make life enjoyable, he passes his days in the society of his family and friends. The visitor will find there as his host one who is thoroughly versed in the ways of the world, and whose intimate acquaintance with politics and politicians has made the name "Tuscarora Haskin" one of the best known in Westchester County.

As a politician Mr. Haskin has been remarkably successful, but the secret of his success and influence may be stated in a few words. Utterly fearless in the expression of his views, his friends know him as one upon whom they can depend, while his enemies find in him a man who can neither be frightened nor cajoled. A weak politician of an inferior grade will truckle to his adversaries and strive to conciliate by unworthy means. Mr. Haskin is the type of a politician who boldly defies his opponents and challenges them to a contest which they generally have the prudence to avoid. Among the notable instances of his traits may be mentioned his fearless letter to the authorities of the St. John's College, of Fordham, representatives of a power to which weaker politicians would have yielded with obsequious reverence, while his bold and scathing rebukes of many of the prominent politicians of the present time are too well known to require mention, and his firm self-reliance has shown by its success the truth of the saying, "They can conquer who believe they can."

MATHIAS BANTA.

Mr. Banta, who is among the best known jurists of Westchester County, and by his activity in the espousal of every just cause has brought himself prominently before its people, both in political and social life, was born in the city of New York, October 3, 1828. He was one of ten children and the only son of Solomon Banta, who married Maria Roome, of New Jersey.

While quite young his father sent him to Public School No. 3, in the Ninth Ward, New York City, from which he graduated. He then attended the private school of Mr. Starr, in Amos Street, leaving it at the age of sixteen to enter the University of the City of New York.

In 1848, after his graduation from college, he entered the law-office of David E. Wheeler as managing clerk, remaining in this position till the death of his employer, in 1869, when the business was divided,

Digitized by Google

Truly yours,
C. [illegible]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Truly yours
Ernest Hall

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the real estate portion of it falling into his own hands.

Mr. Banta has since continued to manage the business. By his faithful attention to the interests of his clients and his skill in the management of the affairs which they have placed in his hands, he has accumulated for himself an extended and lucrative practice, which is continually increasing.

In 1870, after a long residence in New York, he removed to Mamaroneck, where he resides at present. From his arrival in Westchester County he has deeply interested himself in its politics. Being a Democrat, he immediately identified himself with his party in Mamaroneck, and was elected in 1877 supervisor of the town, an office he continues to hold. The liberal course pursued by him in the County Board so won the approval of his party that in 1885 he was made their nominee for surrogate, and received a large majority of the votes cast at the election. A previously rendered decision, however, to the effect that no vacancy existed, deprived him of the office.

In 1849 Mr. Banta married Miss Eliza Gedney. They have three children,—Hannah M., wife of William A. Turner; Everetta, wife of F. S. Sheldon; and Eloise J.

He is an attendant of the Methodist Church, of Mamaroneck, and is highly respected in the community as an honorable and useful citizen.

Matthias Banta

HON. ERNEST HALL.

Hon. Ernest Hall, prominent as a member of the bar, and a judge of the City Court of New York, was born in London, England, October 24, 1844. His father, Henry B. Hall, was a landscape and portrait engraver, came to America with his family in 1850 and settled at Woodstock, in Morrisania. He afterwards removed to George Street, near the Boston road, where he died in 1884.

Judge Hall attended the old Public School No. 3, on Fordham Avenue (now Third Avenue), near One Hundred and Sixty-ninth Street, from 1851 to 1858, when he graduated. He then obtained a position in the well-known publishing house of the Putnams, and remained until 1860. In the fall of that year he began the study of law in the office of Henry Spratley, of Morrisania. He continued there until 1861, when he entered the office of Carpentier & Beach, in New York, and remained until May, 1864. In 1863 he joined the Seventy-first Regiment New York Militia during the Gettysburg campaign, and returned at the close of the riots in New York. He resumed his law studies until August 24, 1864, when he joined the navy as a landsman, and was detailed as clerk on board the receiving ship in Brooklyn Navy-Yard. He was afterwards on the United States steamer "Mohican," commanded by Daniel Ammen, now rear admiral on the retired list, and was attached to the North Atlantic Squadron. While on this vessel he was clerk to the executive officer. He was engaged in both battles of Fort Fisher, N. C., in December, 1864, and January, 1865, spent the winter on the Ogeechee River, in Georgia, and assisted in the dismantling of Fort McAllister, which had previously been captured by Sherman's army. He came North in March, and received his discharge in Boston, May 24, 1865. He then entered the law school of the University of the City of New York in the senior class, graduated June 17, 1866, and was admitted to the bar. He established an office for the practice of law in Morrisania, which he continued till 1877, when he removed to New York, and was elected judge of the City Court November, 1881, a position which he still holds.

From 1869 to 1873 he was a member of the board of trustees of the town of Morrisania. In the latter year he was appointed counsel to the corporation, and served in that capacity until the time of the annexation to the city of New York. He was subsequently appointed by E. Delafield Smith, then corporation counsel of the city of New York, to attend to all suits then pending affecting the annexed district, and was continued in this position by William C. Whitney, the successor of Mr. Smith. He was also counsel of the Board of Excise, of the German Savings Bank and of the Fire Department of Morrisania. He is a member of Post Lafayette, of the Grand Army of the Republic, and assisted in its organization.

Judge Hall's brothers, as well as himself, were actively engaged in the late war. Henry B. Hall was major of the Sixth New York Artillery, fought at the

Digitized by Google

battle of Bull Run, was wounded at Brandy Station in 1863, and was discharged from service upon recovering from his wound. Charles B. Hall was a member of the Seventy-first Regiment in 1861, and afterward joined the Ninety-fifth Regiment New York Volunteers, and his brother Alfred was a member of the Seventy-first Regiment in 1862–63. Judge Hall has four sisters—Annie, wife of Edmund H. Knight (she died in 1858, leaving three children); Emily, wife of William Momberger; Alice and Eliza, both unmarried.

Judge Hall married Charita, daughter of Cyprian Tallient. Their children are Charita, Alma and Edna.

He is well known as an able and distinguished member of the bar, and is especially noted for the clearness and perspicuity with which he delivers his charges to the jury. Gifted with a voice of remarkable power, his enunciation and his reasoning are alike perfect. Every point of the subject is laid down in so careful a manner as to render it perfectly plain to the most common intellect, and with an impartiality which leaves no ground for the charge of intentional bias on either side of the case. As an active and energetic politician, he is one concerning whom it is safe to prophesy still higher positions in the future.

The brothers of Judge Hall constitute the well-known firm of H. B. Hall's Sons, steel engravers, and their name is known in connection with the finest specimens of that art to be found in this country.

HON. SAMUEL WILLIAM JOHNSON.

Mr. Johnson is a great-great-grandson of the distinguished American clergyman, Dr. Samuel Johnson, who was born in Guilford, Conn., October 14, 1696, and died at Stratford, in the same State, June 6, 1772.

His son, William Samuel Johnson, was first president of Columbia College, a member of the convention that framed the Constitution of the United States and the first delegate in the Senate of the United States from the State of Connecticut.[1]

A grandson of William Samuel Johnson, was a New York lawyer of prominence and was a member of the Senate of the State of New York. He married Miss Laura Wolsey, sister of President Wolsey, of Yale College. Their second child and oldest son, Samuel William, was born in the city of New York, October 27, 1828. After a preparatory course in private schools of the city he entered Princeton College, graduating in 1849. He then entered the Law School, Cambridge, Mass., and after a full course graduated in 1851. He afterward entered the law-office of District Attorney N. Bowditch Blunt, remaining till 1852, when he was admitted to the bar.

Immediately after admission Mr. Johnson removed to Cattaraugus County, N. Y., where he remained for thirteen years in charge of a large landed interest. In 1865 he retired from active life, removing at the same time to Rye Neck, where he has since resided. He has been active in the politics of the county ever since his arrival in it. He early connected himself with the Democratic party in the home of his choice and has held several important political positions.

In 1871 he was appointed by Governor John T. Hoffman commissioner-general and chief of ordnance for the State of New York. He has been *nine* times elected supervisor of the town of Rye and was for two years chairman of the board. For three years he was a member of Assembly from the Second District of Westchester County. It is a remarkable fact that he is the fourth member of the family in the direct line who has represented a constituency in State Legislatures. He also interested himself in military affairs. From 1853 to 1872 he held commissions from the State of New York, the last one being that of brigadier-general.

He has been prominent in club life and is at present a member of the Manhattan, University and St. Nicholas Clubs, of New York City. He is also a director in the North River Fire Insurance Company and a trustee of the Port Chester Savings Banks.

He married Miss Frances Ann Sanderson, of New York, who died at her home in Mamaroneck in 1879. Their only living child, William Samuel, is a member of the bar in New York City, and resides with his father.

Mr. Johnson is a highly respected and useful citizen and his liberal spirit and cordial disposition has made him many warm and lasting friendships.

HON. G. HILTON SCRIBNER.

The ancestors of the family of which Mr. Scribner is an honored representative were among the early settlers of Salisbury, N. H., and the name is frequently found in the annals of that town. That of Samuel Scribner occurs in 1754, and during the following year he, in company with one of his neighbors, was taken prisoner by the Indians and carried to Canada, where he was sold as a captive, but was subsequently ransomed by the colonial government. In 1756 he joined the regiment of Colonel Nathan Meserve, which was raised for the Crown Point expedition, and served from May to December of that year. In 1757 he was a soldier in the regiment of Colonel Thomas Tash, and in the following year appears as one of the regiment raised by Colonel John Hart. The Revolution found in him a man ready for the hour, and, though exempt by age, he was one of the first to enlist in the regiment commanded by Colonel John Stark, which took an active

[1] For a full description of his life, see Appleton's Encyclopædia; also "Life of Dr. Samuel Johnson," by E. E. Beardsley (New York, 1874).

Digitized by Google

Google

Digitized by Google

Saml Wm Johnson

Digitized by Google

igitized by Google

G. Hilton Scribner

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

part in the battle of Bunker Hill. Among the list of soldiers in the town of Salisbury, May 27, 1776, are the names of Edward, Ebenezer, Benjamin and Jonathan Scribner.

David Scribner, son of Ebenezer and grandson of Samuel, was born May 12, 1767, and was the father of thirteen children,—David, Hannah, Sarah, Eben, Sewall B., Silas, Ruth, Jacob D., Jonathan, Albert G., Hannah D., Alfred and Almira H.

Sewall B. Scribner was born March 12, 1793, and removed from his native place (Andover, N. H.) to Monroe County, N. Y., in 1816. At that time the present city of Rochester was a mere hamlet, and Mr Scribner was among the pioneers in what is now one of the most prosperous portions of the State.

In 1821 he married Clarissa De Wayne Hilton, daughter of David Hilton, who was descended from a noted line of English ancestry, whose family records are unbroken from June 23, 1295, to the present time. The children of this marriage were Gilbert Hilton Scribner, Alsada, Arveda (wife of William E. Stickland, of Rochester), Albert S. (who died in 1852), Mary (wife of Van Buren Denslow), Celesta (deceased) and Celia M.

Gilbert Hilton Scribner was born in Ogden, Monroe County, N. Y., June 28, 1831, and his early education was received in the common schools of his native place, which offered exceptional advantages. He subsequently became a student at the Genesee Wesleyan Seminary, at Lima, N. Y., and, after remaining there two years, entered college at Oberlin, where he received the highest honors for his thoroughness and originality. At the close of his collegiate course, in 1853, he went to New York and began life in the great city without friends or acquaintance, and with little to encourage him, but an amount of determination and energy with which he could not fail to work his way. Commencing the study of law in the office of Hon. Daniel B. Taylor, who enjoyed a large practice and was the possessor of one of the largest law libraries in the city, the young student, by indefatigable labor, soon made himself useful in his chosen profession, and, in 1855, was admitted to the bar and soon after called to practice in the United States Courts as proctor, solicitor and advocate. Rising rapidly in his profession, his prudence and ability soon gained him a large and lucrative practice, and he was frequently retained as counsel for many monied corporations and large estates. In 1862 he was one of the organizers of the North America Life Insurance Company of New York, of which he became a director and counsel, and, after long and arduous labor in collating and analyzing facts and statistics in relation to travel and accidents, framed a bill, which was passed by the Legislature, allowing that company to insure against accidents to travelers. This was the first authority granted in this country for accident insurance.

Mr. Scribner came to Yonkers in 1858, and since that time his life and career have been identified with the history of Westchester County. Upon coming to Yonkers he built a house on Woodworth Avenue, near Locust Street, there being at that time very few dwellings in that vicinity. His home was surrounded by a beautiful locust grove. He subsequently moved to a residence at "Hillside," near the corner of Broadway and High Street. His present residence, "Inglehurst," was purchased in the spring of 1880, and from its elevated position commands one of the finest views of the Hudson River. It is also a landmark, being situated at the extreme north bounds of the "Lemuel Wells estate," which embraced the greater part of the thickly-settled portion of the city of Yonkers.

The first official position held by Mr. Scribner was that of village trustee, in 1863. At that time, with a few others, he organized a very thorough temperance reform. Born of Whig parentage, he early attached himself to that party, and remained a member while it had an existence. He attended the convention which nominated Fremont, in 1856, and since that time has been an able and earnest supporter of the Republican party. In 1863 he was made chairman of the County Committee. It was due to his ownership and efforts that the *Statesman*, the leading Republican paper in the county, was established. In addition to his extensive law practice, he was for a time the president of the Palisades Bank of Yonkers, and also a director of several large corporations.

In 1868 he retired from the practice of law and with his family made a long tour in Europe. He made a second trip in 1870, was present at the declaration of the Franco-Prussian War, and enjoyed special opportunities of visiting the armies of the contending powers.

Previous to his departure for Europe he had received and declined a nomination for State Senator, but upon his return, in the fall of 1870, was elected member of the Assembly by a very large majority, and was the first member other than a Democrat who had been elected from the district for over thirty years. The weight of his ability and influence was soon felt and he soon became a leader in the Legislature and in his party, devoting much of his time and effort to opposing the measures of the "Tweed Ring," then in the height of its power, but destined to a sudden and disastrous fall. In March, 1871, he was instrumental in organizing the Young Men's State Republican Association, the object of which was to unite discordant elements and end the strifes which had impaired the usefulness of the party. This organization very naturally chose Mr. Scribner for its president, and having shown himself a competent and faithful leader, he was nominated by acclamation at the State Convention in Syracuse, in 1871, for Secretary of State, a nomination which was signally confirmed at the succeeding election by a majority of over twenty thousand. Soon after the close of the Legis-

Digitized by Google

lature of 1871 the representatives of the insurance, banking and other corporate interests of the State united in a complimentary tribute to Mr. Scribner for his intelligent, able and successful opposition to unjust legislation while a member of Assembly. The ceremony of the presentation of a service of silver plate took place in the chambers of the Board of Underwriters in New York, and an address engrossed on parchment, signed by and presented on behalf of the presidents of more than fifty of the monied institutions of New York, was not only a compliment to Mr. Scribner's character, but a certification that he had performed his public services in an acceptable manner.

Notwithstanding the engrossing cares of an active political and business life, he has never permitted his tastes for literature and art to become dull or enfeebled. Often organizing and always connected with one or more literary circles, he has not suffered his love of learning to be stifled by the cares and responsibilities of his profession or the routine of daily labor. To him is due the credit of establishing the Bancroft Society of New York, and also "The Society of Pundits," a literary circle, which for many years continued its meetings, and embraced in its membership some of the brightest men and women of the city which he had made his home. He was also for many years a trustee of the Bible Union and also of the Rochester Theological Seminary.

The profound problem of the origin of life upon our planet has engrossed the attention of the greatest minds in the world of science, but still remains a question to which there seems no reply. Next to this comes the inquiry as to the place of its first manifestation, the determination of which would appear equally hopeless. Devoting his leisure time and thought to this and kindred subjects, Mr. Scribner has embodied his theories and the results of his investigations in a monograph entitled "Where did Life Begin?" This work, which appeared in November, 1883, immediately attracted the attention of the investigating and scientific public. It is a carefully prepared and forcibly written treatise, having for its object the establishment of the theory that all life, both vegetable and animal, must have had its origin within the polar circles, and further, that by the cooling of the earth's substance, and the consequent lowering of surface temperature at the poles, all organic life has been gradually driven to the temperate and to the equatorial regions. To express an opinion as to the truth or fallacy of this theory would in this place be presumptuous, but it is sufficient to say that the hypothesis has not only been well received by the press and scholars, but has been the means of turning the attention of men of science to a closer consideration of the subject, and the discoveries that may follow may far exceed the most sanguine expectations of its author.

Upon his retirement from political life Mr. Scribner accepted the office of vice-president of the Belt Railroad (so-called) of New York, and retained that position until 1880, when he was chosen president, a position which he still holds. He is also connected with many associations of a social and charitable nature, being a member of the Union League Club, president of the Skin and Cancer Hospital of New York, an institution which has done much to relieve human suffering; a member of both the British and the American Associations for the Advancement of Science, and trustee of St. John's Hospital in Yonkers.

He married Sarah Woodbury, daughter of Hon. James Osgood Pettengill of Rochester, who, as a legislator, and as an officer and patron of the Rochester Theological Seminary and other institutions of learning, is well known in Western New York. His father, Captain James Pettengill, came from Salisbury, N. H., and settled at Ogden, Monroe County, in the early part of the present century. The ancestors of the various families of this name were four brothers, Matthew, David, Andrew and Benjamin, who came from Yorkshire, England, in 1640, and settled in Newburyport, Mass., whence they removed to Salisbury. The mother of Mrs. Scribner was Emeline, daughter of Manlius G. Woodbury, who was an early settler and was made alderman in the first charter election in the city of Rochester.

Mr. Scribner has six surviving children,—Gilbert Hilton, Jr., Howard, Florence, Marion, Marguerite and Osgood Pettengill.

CHAUNCEY SMITH.

Phillip Smith was born in Connecticut, March 15, 1774, and married Sally Smith November 23, 1799. She was a granddaughter of Benjamin Stebbins, who came from England and settled in Deerfield, Mass., and was probably the ancestor of the families of that name in this country. Phillip and Sally Smith located shortly after their marriage at Bedford, Westchester County, N. Y., and were members of the old Episcopal Church of that place. They were parents of eight children, of whom Chauncey Smith was the sixth and was born November 10, 1810.

Bedford was then the county-seat and a place of no small importance; in fact, the principal village of the county. Mr. Smith at an early age entered the High School and academy at Bedford, which was an institution of note, second to none in the State, and included among its pupils Hon. William H. Robertson, Hon. James W. Husted and many others of distinction. A short time after graduating he studied law, and was admitted to the bar January 7, 1851.

He married Hannah, daughter of John P. Horton, of New Castle, Westchester County, whose wife was Elizabeth Fowler, both descended from old Westchester County families.

Elizabeth was a first cousin of Isaac Van Wart, who was one of the captors of Major Andre. Mr. Smith moved to White Plains and was appointed deputy

Digitized by Google

county clerk in 1847, and appointed county clerk the same year, to fill a vacancy.

In January, 1847 or 1848, he was appointed agent of Sing Sing State Prison, and after leaving Sing Sing practiced law in White Plains for several years.

He removed to Morrisania shortly after the settlement of the new village, about thirty years ago, and opened a law-office where he continued successfully the practice of his profession up to the winter of 1877, when he was compelled to give up business on account of a paralytic stroke. He was an old-school type of a Christian gentleman, highly respected in all the walks of life, and active in the true interests of the society and community in which he lived. He was intimately acquainted with, and highly respected by. the men who were first connected with the growth and prosperity of Morrisania, such as Nicholas McGraw, Jordan L. Mott, Gouverneur, Henry and William H. Morris, Robert H. Elton, Hon. Silas D. Gifford and many others and was well known throughout the county. He was naturally of a retiring disposition, and although often urged to accept public office, he refused. He continued an invalid from 1877 to his death, which occurred December 25, 1883, at the homestead in which he had resided for more than twenty-five years. He left two daughters and one son, W. Stebbins Smith, who is a member of the bar, in active practice, particularly in the counties of New York and Westchester. Mr. Smith studied law in the office of his father and attended the Columbia College Law School, from which institution he received his diploma, and was admitted to the bar June 12, 1871.

Chauncey Smith

EDWARD TRAFFORD LOVATT.

Mr. Lovatt was born May 22, 1850, at Newark, N. J. His father was John Lovatt and his mother Mary Ann Lovatt. He was the eldest of six children. Educated both in the ordinary English branches and in the classics in the public schools of that city, he graduated with high honors at the Public High School when he was but fifteen years old, receiving his diploma on July 21, 1865. He then went to the city of New York and began life as an errand boy in a wholesale fancy goods house, but his parents having removed, on May 23, 1866, to the village of North Tarrytown, in Westchester County, he entered his father's silk mills, in that village, to learn silk manufacture, and acquired a thorough knowledge of that industry.

On May 22, 1871, he married Miss Sarah Theodosia Tompkins, a descendant of one of the most respected families of Westchester County, she being a grandniece of the Hon. Daniel D. Tompkins, formerly Governor of New York and Vice-President of the United States.

For several years after marriage Mr. Lovatt remained at his trade, but it being distasteful to him he determined to become a lawyer, which had always been his great ambition. In order to do this, not having the means to attend college, he laid out the same course of reading as he would have been required to take if attending law school, and while busy in the mills during the day, pursued his studies at night and early in the morning, thus mastering the many thousands of pages of legal text works necessary to a thorough understanding of the principles of law. Entering a law-office in Tarrytown, he completed the three years' clerkship then necessary for a student's admission to practice. On February 14, 1878, he passed the prescribed examination, was sworn in as an attorney-at-law, and in May, 1878, was admitted as a Counsellor of the Supreme Court. His energy, perseverance and knowledge of the law soon gave him a leading place in his profession at the Westchester County bar.

He has been engaged in numerous cases of importance, both in the criminal and civil courts, many of which have been reported. He has been remarkably successful as an advocate. Among the many cases in the criminal courts in which he was counsel for the defense, some of the more prominent murder trials were those of William Newman, Fitzgerald, Brownlee, Coleman and Angelo Cornetti, the last-named being the first tried in this State under the amendments to the Code of Criminal Procedure, by which all capital cases can be appealed and execution of sentence thereby stayed until the appeal can be heard.

He has also tried a great number of civil causes and has met with unusual success. He was one of the counsel in the famous "Anderson Will Case," in which a large sum of money was recovered for his clients,—two little girls, aged ten and twelve years, grandchildren of John Anderson.

He has built up an extensive and lucrative practice, has acquired property, and his pleasant and modest house on Beekman Avenue, North Tarrytown, is provided with all the surroundings and appointments necessary to make it, what it certainly is, a happy home.

A. Lovatt

No person in his neighborhood takes a deeper interest in educational matters. Being a firm believer in the public-school system of the State, he is one of its most active supporters and is now president of the Board of Education of the village.

Mr. Lovatt has always been an ardent Republican, and upon the principle that all good citizens should participate in the politics of the State and country, he has taken a very active part, having been a delegate to most of the conventions held by his party.

In March, 1883, although running against a highly respected citizen of his village, he was elected president, having received four-fifths of the ballots cast.

In November of the same year, in the Republican County Convention, he was unanimously nominated for district attorney of Westchester County.

He is a member of the Republican County Committee and enjoys the friendship and confidence of the other leaders of the party. He is of a genial and social disposition and has a large circle of warm friends. He is a member and trustee of St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church of North Tarrytown.

He is an effective public speaker, easy in his manners, ready and fluent in speech, possessing a large fund of mother wit. His studious habits, quick perception, faculty of illustration, clear judgment and logical conclusions carry conviction with them.

CHAPTER XII.

THE MEDICAL PROFESSION.

BY GEORGE JACKSON FISHER, M.D.,
Of Sing Sing.

Excepting to gentlemen of the medical profession, there is nothing particularly interesting in the life of a physician or the transactions of a medical society. Each family, though familiar with its own medical adviser, seldom looks beyond its favorite to learn the traits of character, the extent of acquirements or the skill of others. The technical studies, and subtle researches of physicians, who strive to keep abreast with the rapid progress of the medical sciences, possess no interest or charm to the general public. It is only concerned with powers and results, and these only when disease interferes with the performance of the daily routine of business and pleasure, or when danger threatens life. So it becomes a difficult, perhaps a needless, and almost certainly a thankless task to attempt to write the sketch proposed.

On the 1st day of June, 1858, the writer of this chapter read the annual address, as president, before the Medical Society of the County of Westchester, taking for his theme "Biographical Sketches of the Deceased Physicians of Westchester County, N. Y.," which address was subsequently published in pamphlet form, "by order of the Society." (New York, 1861, 8vo., pp. 52.)

He must now go back seven and twenty years, and make extracts from that "plain, unvarnished tale of character, merits, traits and experience of those medical men who have previously been the incumbents of the field we now occupy," to which will be added brief sketches of several honored members of our beloved profession who have since been called from their labor—some at the full end of man's allotted time, and others abruptly, in the prime of man-

Digitized by Google

hood's vigor, and in the midst of their greatest usefulness.[1]

Over twenty years ago, Dr. James Fountain gave the writer a little document that was previously supposed to be irrecoverably lost, which contains the original records of the first five meetings of the Medical Society of Westchester County. This book was restored to the society, by which it is now preserved. It begins thus,—

"At a respectable Meeting of Physicians of the County of Westchester on the 8th Day of May, 1797—at the House of William Barker in the White Plains—Present—

"Archibald McDonald.	Lyman Cook.
Charles McDonald.	David Rodgers.
John Ingersoll.	Matson Smith.
Elisha Bruister.	Elias Cornelius.

"That a due improvement and proper regulations may be maid in the Practice of Physic within the County of Westchester and for the Purpose of a necessary and immediate compliance with the Law of the Legislature passed the last Session. The Physicians aforesaid formed themselves into a Society to be known and called hereafter by the name and style of *the Medical Society of the County of Westchester*. Upon Motion Doctr. A. McDonald, of the white plains, was Elected president of the Society *Pro tempore*, and upon said motion Doctr. Matson Smith, of New Rochelle, was Elected Secretary thereof.

"The Society, Pleased with the present progress and desireous that the Board shall hereafter exist upon the most fair and respectable terms: and that the Physicians of the County shall indiscriminately receive an invitation to unite with the present members and to encourage this Laudable dissign." (Here ends the first page.)

"*Resolved* upon motion that the following resolution be inserted in the *Danbury Journal* and *Mount Pleasant Register:*

"*Resolved* upon motion the Physicians of Westchester County be indiscriminately informed that it is the intention and hearty wish of the Members of the Society that there may be a perfect union of the Profession of Physic within the County for the purpose of establishing the Practice upon a liberal and satisfactory Plan, that there may be a due observance of the law passed at the last session of the Legislature of the State: And that an oppertunity may be given for such an union, the Society have proposed a meeting on the 13th Day of June next, at House of Majr. Jesse Hally, in Bedford, and hope this mode will be considered unequivically an invitation. Should any gentleman neglect the present season of uniting with the Society after the Meeting aforesaid, no gentleman can expect admission in the Society without a vote for the purpose.

"Upon motion resolved that Doctr. A. McDonald, David Rodgers and Matson Smith be a Commit ee to propose a Constitution for this Society against the Meeting at Bedford, which Constitution shall be Subject to Amendment.

"The Board Adjourn'd to Meet at the House of Majr Jesse Hally, in Bedford, on the 13th Day of June next.

"MATSON SMITH,
"*Secretary Pro. Tempore.*"

The second meeting took place, as proposed, at Major Holly's house, June 13, 1797, at which seventeen doctors were present. After the transaction of business it was

"*Unanimously resolved* that the Revd Robt. Z. Whitmore be invited to preach a Sermon before the Society at their next meeting. The board Adjourned to meet at the House of Mr. Sutton Craft, Near New Castle Church, on Tuesday, the 8th Day of August Next, at 10 o'clock A.M."

Only six members were present at the third meeting. No mention is made concerning the sermon, and we are left in doubt as to whether it was preached or not.

The fourth meeting occurred September 12, 1797, at Mr. Sutton Craft's, with eight members present. This is the first meeting at which it appears that anything strictly medical was proposed. "Doctor Ebenezer White was appointed to deliver a dissertation on the utility of a Medical Society," at the next meeting.

The fifth meeting took place at White Plains, "Tuesday the 31st day of October, A.D. 1797." Eight doctors were present. At this meeting the constitution was adopted. This is given in full in the minutes.

The sixth, and last meeting recorded in this little manuscript of thirteen pages was the annual meeting, which was held in Bedford on Tuesday, May 8, 1798, at which twelve members were present. Dr. Lemuel Mead "delivered a dissertation upon Physiology to the satisfaction of the Society."

The records of the society from this meeting to June, 1830, are, unfortunately, lost. The society, I believe, has never failed to convene, at least annually, since its organization. At the present time it holds four sessions a year, each of which is fairly well attended. It has served the general purposes for which it was founded, though it cannot boast of having made any considerable contributions to medical literature. Its publications consist of several editions of its constitution and bye-laws,—a "Fee Bill," 1868; "Proceedings of the Society at its annual meeting, held in the village of Sing Sing June 3, 1856," 8vo., pp. 50, Sing Sing, 1857; and two pamphlets of "Biographical Sketches of Deceased Physicians of Westchester County, N. Y.," 8vo., pp. 52, 1861; "In Memoriam," 8vo., pp. 41, 1875; and a "List of Registered Physicians," 1881.

The individual members of the society have made no insignificant additions to the literature of the profession. Appended will be found as nearly a complete list of the contributions as it has been possible to make at this time. By this it will be seen that more than a hundred articles, aggregating about twenty-two hundred pages of medical matter, have been put in print by our physicians during the past sixty years.

A CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF THE CONTRIBUTIONS TO MEDICAL LITERATURE MADE BY THE PHYSICIANS OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY, N. Y. [1825–1885].

This list must prove interesting, not only to the physicians of the present time, but to those who may follow us in the future. If each of the counties of our State has contributed as much as Westchester, the aggregate must amount to many volumes of no inconsiderable value.

1825.

"An Account of an Epidemic Erysipelatous Fever Prevailing in the Counties of Westchester and Putnam, in the State of New York." By James Fountain, M.D. Pp. 30. [*N. Y. Med. and Phys. Jr.*, vol. iv. pp. 330–359. New York, 1825.]

"Observations on Prenanthes Altissima." By Dr. James Hubble, of Westchester, N. Y. Pp. 3. [*N. Y. Med. and Phys. Jr.*, vol. iv. pp. 484–486. New York, 1825.]

"On the Employment of Calomel and Opium in Dysentery." By Dr. Moore Holt, of Peekskill, N. Y. Pp. 4. [*Ibid.*, vol. iv. pp. 487–490.]

[1] The biographies of living medical men which have been inserted in the chapter by the editor of this history are indicated by foot-notes, and the writer is in no way responsible for them. They have been prepared by various persons, and are inserted in accordance with the wishes of the publishers of the work.

Digitized by Google

1826.

"Reflections on Diseases of Irritation." By James Fountain, M.D. Pp. 50. [*N. Y. Med. and Phys. Jr.*, vol. v. pp. 145–164; pp. 397–426. New York, 1826.]

"A Case of Chorea Sancti Viti." By James Fountain, M.D., of Yorktown, Westchester County, N. Y. Pp. 5. [*Ibid.*, vol. v. pp. 563–567.]

1827.

"Observations on Intermittent Fever." By James Fountain, M.D. Pp. 27. [*N. Y. Med. and Phys. Jr.*, vol. vi. pp. 529–556. New York, 1827.]

1828.

"A Case of Pseudo Syphilis." By James Fountain, M.D. Pp. 3. [*N. Y. Med. and Phys. Jr.*, vol. vii. pp. 348–351. New York, 1828.]

1829.

"Practical Observations on Punctured Wounds." By James Fountain, M.D., of Yorktown, Westchester County, N. Y. P. 3. [*N. Y. Med. and Phys. Jr.*, vol. i. New Series, pp. 308–310. New York, 1829.]

1837.

"An Essay on Typhus Fever." By James Fountain, M.D., of Westchester County, N. Y. Pp. 31. [Trans. of the Med. Soc. of the State of New York, vol. iii. pp. 207–237. Albany, N. Y., 1837.]

1847.

"On the Nature of Phlegmasia Dolens." By James D. Trask, M.D. Pp. 38. [*Am. Jr. Med. Sci.*, N. S., vol. xiii. p. 26. January, 1847.]

"An Address to the Westchester County Medical Society on the Laws of Epidemics, as exhibited in those that have prevailed in that county during the last twenty years." By Benjamin Bassett, M.D., president of the Society. Pp. 9. [*The N. Y. Jr. of Med. and The Collateral Sciences*, vol. ix. pp. 183–192. New York, 1847.

"Baptisiæ Tinctoria" [Indigo Weed.] By James Fountain, M.D. [*N. Y. Jr. of Med. and The Collateral Sciences*, vol. ix. pp. 410, 411.]

1848.

"Monograph. A Statistical Inquiry into the Causes, Symptoms, Pathology and Treatment of Rupture of the Uterus." By James D. Trask, M.D. Pp. 79. [*Am. Jr. Med. Sci.*, N. S., vol. xv. January, 1848, p. 104–146; April, 1848, p. 383–418.] Includes 303 cases.

"Congenital Enlargement of Kidney." By G. J. Fisher. P. 1. [*Am. Jr. Med. Sci.*, N. S., vol. xv. p. 570. April, 1848.]

1853.

"Amputation of the Thigh for Caries." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 4. [Nelson's *Northern Lancet*, vol. vii. p. 161. June, 1853.]

"Report of Physician and Surgeon of New York State Prisons at Sing Sing for the year 1853." By Geo. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 8. [*Annual Report of Inspectors for* 1853, p. 132–140.]

1854.

"Report of the Physician and Surgeon of New York State Prisons at Sing Sing for the year 1854." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 13. [*Annual Report of Inspectors for* 1854, p. 298–310.]

1855.

"Prize Essay. Statistics of Placenta Prævia." By James D. Trask, M.D. Pp. 97. [Extracted from the *Trans. Am. Med. Asso.*, vol. viii. p. 572–689. Philadelphia, 1855.] 251 cases.

1856.

"Cases of Rupture of the Womb, with Remarks; Being a Sequel to a Monograph upon this Subject, in this Journal for January and April, 1848." By James D. Trask, M.D. Pp. 31. [*Am. Jr. Med. Sci.*, N. S., vol. xxxii. p. 81–111.]

"Report of Committee on Medical Topography, Epidemics and Endemics of the Southern Section of Westchester County." By James D. Trask, M.D., of White Plains. Pp. 26. [Proc. of Med. Soc. of Westchester County, 1857, p. 3–28.]

"Case of Phlegmasia Dolens after Typhoid Fever, and the Same of the Upper and Lower Extremities after Parturition." By James Fountain, M.D., of Jefferson Valley. Pp. 2. [*Ibid.* p. 40–41.]

"A Case of Chronic Nephritis, &c." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 4. [Trans. Med. Soc. S. of N. Y., 1856, p. 173–176.]

"Cases Illustrating the Effects of Needles Accidentally Penetrating Different Portions of the Body." By Geo. J. Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 5. [Proc. of Med. Soc. of Westchester County., p. 29–33.]

"An Apology for a Report on Surgery for the Northern Section of Westchester County." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 4. [*Ibid.*, p. 33–36.]

1857.

"Removal of a Large Fibrous Nasal Polypus, by the Knife." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 2. [*Am. Med. Monthly*, vol. viii. p. 15–17.]

"Double Monstrosity." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 2. [*Am. Med. Monthly* for Oct., 1857, vol. viii. p. 229.]

"A Case of Chronic Tubercular Splenitis." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 3. [Trans. Med. Soc. S. of N. Y., 1857, p. 175–177.]

"Remarks on Table of Contents and General Index of Transactions of Med. Soc. of the State of N. Y." "List of Presidents of Med. Soc. of State of N. Y., 1807–1857." "Titles of Articles in the Trans. M. S. of S. of N. Y., 1832–1857." "General Index of Trans. M. S. of S. of N. Y., 1832–1857." By Geo. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 50. [Trans. 1857, p. 179–227.]

"Puerperal Mania: Has it any Connection with Toxæmia?" By J. Foster Jenkins, M.D. Pp. 7. [Reprinted from *Am. Med. Monthly*, N. Y., Nov., 1857.]

1858.

"Splitting of the Alveolar Process of the Lower Jaw." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 2. [*Dental Register of the West*, vol. xii. p. 187–189.]

"Report on Spontaneous Umbilical Hemorrhage of the Newly-Born." By J. Foster Jenkins, M.D. Pp. 58. [Reprinted from Trans. of the Am. Med. Assoc., vol. xi. p. 263–318. Phila., 1858.]

"Biographical Sketches of the Deceased Physicians of Westchester County, N. Y. Being the Annual Address before the Westchester County Medical Society, at its session held in White Plains, June 1, 1858." By George J. Fisher, A.M., M.D. Published by order of the society. 8vo, pp. 52. New York, 1861.

1860.

"Spontaneous Complete Inversion of the Uterus; reposited recovery." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. P. 1. [*Am. Jr. Med. Sci.*, N. S., vol. xl. p. 341.]

1861.

"A Successful Case of Ovariotomy." By G. J. Fisher, A.M., M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 2. [The *Am. Med. Times*, N. S., vol. iii. p. 355–357, N. Y., 1861.]

"Rupture of the Uterus; an account of three cases, with remarks, etc." By G. J. Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 9. [Trans. of the Med. Soc. of the State of N. Y., p. 171–179. Albany, 1861.]

"On the Animal Substances Employed as Medicines by the Ancients." By G. J. Fisher, A.M., M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Read before the Westchester Co. Med. Soc., June 11, 1861. Pp. 16. [From the *Am. Med. Monthly* for January, 1862.]

1862.

"A Description of the Newly-invented Elastic Tourniquet, for the use of Armies and Employment in Civil Life. Its Uses and Applications, with Remarks on the Different Methods of Arresting Hemorrhage from Gunshot and other Wounds." Pp. 31. N. Y., 1862. [This tourniquet, called *Lambert's*, was invented by Dr. Charles A. Lee, who wrote this anonymous pamphlet.]

1863.

"Relations of War to Medical Science. The annual address delivered before the Westchester County Med. Soc., June 15, 1863." By J. Foster Jenkins, M.D. Pp. 16. [Published by request of the Society. N. Y., 1863.]

"Report of Fifty-seven Cases of amputation in the Hospitals near Sharpsburg, Md., after the Battle of Antietam, September 17, 1862." By G. J. Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 8. [*Am. Jr. of the Med. Sci.*, N. S., vol. xlv. pp. 44–51. Phila. 1863.]

1865–68.

"Diploteratology. An Essay on Compound Human Monsters, Comprising the History, Literature, Classification, Description and Embryology of Double and Triple Formation, Including the so-called Parasitic Monsters, Fœtus in Fœtu, and Supernumerary Formation of Parts or Organs in Man." By G. J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 193; 126 figures on 32 lithographic plates. [Trans. of the Med. Soc. of the State of N. Y. 1865, p. 232–268. *Ibid.*, 1866, p. 207–296. *Ibid.*, 1867, p. 396–430. *Ibid.*, 1868, p. 276–306.]

Digitized by Google

1866.

"On Provision for the Insane Poor of the State of New York and the Adaptation of the 'Asylum and Cottage Plan' to their wants; as illustrated by the History of the Colony of Fitz James, at Clermont, France." By Charles A. Lee, M.D. Pp. 30. [Trans. Med. Soc. of the State of N. Y. for 1866, p. 156–185.]

1868.

"Report on Insanity." By Charles A. Lee, M.D. Pp. 32. [Extracted from the Trans. of the Am. Med. Assoc. vol. xix., p. 161–168. Phila. 1868.]

"Report on Texas Cattle Disease." By George J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 2. [Report of Metropolitan Board of Health, 1868, p. 189–190.]

1869.

"Report to Metropolitan Board of Health of Sanitary Inspector of the Town of Gosining." By George J. Fisher, M.D. Pp. 2. [Report Met. Bd. of Health for 1869, p. 165–166.]

1870.

"Does Maternal Mental Influence have any Constructive or Destructive Power in the Production of Malformations or Monstrosities at any Stage of Embryonic Development?" By G. J. Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 57. [Reprinted from vol. xxvi. of the *Am. Jr. of Insanity* for January, 1870. Utica, N. Y., 1870.]

"Three Cases of Imperforate Anus, with Remarks." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 20. [Reprinted from *Am. Jr. Obst.*, vol. iii., No. 1, May, 1870.]

"Tent Hospitals." By J. Foster Jenkins, M.D. Pp. 25. [Trans. *Am. Social Science Assoc.* Cambridge, Mass., 1874.]

"A Medico-Legal Opinion relating to the sanity of Carlton Gates." By Charles A. Lee, M.D. Pp. 30. [Papers read before the Med.-Leg. Soc. of the City of New York. First series, p. 204–233.]

1871.

"A Contribution to the Natural History of Tubercles." By C. F. Rodenstein, M.D. Pp. 20. [Read before the Yonkers Med. Association. Published at the request of Med. Soc. of Westchester County, N. Y. Reprinted from the *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Dec., 1871.]

"The Late Dr. John Conolly, of Hanwell, England." By Charles A. Lee, M.D. Pp. 12. [Reprinted from the *Am. Pract.* for Aug. 1871.]

"Report of the Surgical Cases Treated in the St. John's Riverside Hospital, Yonkers, N. Y., during the Year 1870." By J. H. Pooley M.D. Pp. 19. [Reprinted from the *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Nov., 1871.]

"Suggestions Relative to the Sequestration of the Person of Alleged Lunatics." By R. L. Parsons, M.D. Pp. 42. [Papers read before the Med.-Legal Soc. of the City of New York. First series, p. 332–373.]

"Medico-Legal Considerations upon Alcoholism, and the Moral and Criminal Responsibility of Inebriates." By Paluel De Marmon, M.D. Pp. 24. [Read before the Med.-Leg. Soc. of the City of New York, March 31, 1871. Reprinted from the *Med. World*, Dec. 1871; also in first series of papers read before Med.-Leg. Soc. of the City of New York, p. 374–402.]

"Medico-Legal Suggestions on Insanity." By Charles A. Lee, M.D. Pp. 22. [Papers read before the Med-Leg. Soc. First series, p. 467–488.]

1872.

"On Imperforate Anus: the Rectum Communicating with the Vagina." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 34. [Reprinted from *Am. Jr. of Obstetrics*, &c., vol. iv., No. 4, Feb., 1872.]

"The Origin of Cæsarean Section; an historical sketch." By C. F. Rodenstein, M.D. Pp. 19. [Reprinted from the *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, April, 1872.]

"Two Cases of Rare Disease of the Tongue." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 4. [Extracted from *Amer. Jr. Med. Sci.* for April, 1872.]

"Report of the Surgical Cases Treated in the St. John's Riverside Hospital, Yonkers, N. Y., during the year 1871 (second year)." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 20. [Reprinted from the *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Nov., 1872.]

"Some General Remarks on the Surgery of Childhood." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 13. [Reprinted from "Trans. Med. Soc. of the State of New York," 1872.]

1873.

"Thermometry in Cerebro-Spinal Meningitis." By C. F. Rodenstein, M.D. Pp. 13. [Read before Med. Soc. of the County of Westchester. Reprinted from Dr. Brown-Sequard's "Archives of Scientific and Practical Medicine," vol. i. p. 210–222, March, 1873.]

"Nævus." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 28. [Reprinted from *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, June, 1873.]

"Report of the Surgical Cases Treated in the St. John's Riverside Hospital, Yonkers, N. Y., during the year 1872 (third year)." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 30. [Reprinted from *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Oct., 1873.]

"Case of Epithelioma of the Cheek and Lower Eyelid. Removal—Blepharophasty." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 7. [Reprinted from "Archives of Ophthalmology and Otology," vol. iii., 1873.]

1874.

"Cases in Surgery, Lumbar Colotomy, etc." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 11. [Reprinted from the *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Jan., 1874.]

"Injections of Tincture of Iodine into the Cavity of the Uterus in Hemorrhage after Delivery." By James D. Trask, M.D. Pp. 15. [Reprinted from *Jr. of Obstetrics* for Feb., 1875.]

"Morphine-Poisoning Successfully Treated by Atropia and Electricity." By J. D. Trask, M.D. Pp. 13. [Reprinted from the *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Aug., 1874.]

"Report of the Surgical Cases Treated in the St. John's Riverside Hospital, Yonkers, N. Y., during the year 1873 (fourth year)." By J. H. Pooley, M.D. Pp. 29. [Reprinted from *N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Dec., 1874, and Jan., 1875.]

"Injuries which Happen to the Wrist-Joint and to the Parts in its Vicinity, as Results of Falls upon the Hand. An examination of the evidence on which is based the establishment of the occurrence of luxations at the wrist and radio-carpal articulations; also a consideration of the nature of the deformity, of the symptoms and of the treatment of Colles' fracture, with a *résumé* of the literature of this subject, being the Merritt H. Cash prize essay for 1874." By Thomas K. Cruse, M.D. Pp. 63. [Trans. Med. Society of the State of New York, 1874, p. 56–118.]

1875.

"De Mortuis Nil Nisi Bonum. Biographical sketches of lately deceased members of the Medical Society of the County of Westchester." Published by the vote of the Society, passed June 16, 1874. 8vo, pp. 40. Katonah, N. Y., 1875.

"Biographical Sketch of the Late James Fountain, M.D., of Jefferson Valley, Westchester County, N. Y." By James H. Curry, M.D. Pp. 9. Katonah, N. Y., 1875.

"Biographical Sketch of Philander Stewart, M.D., of Peekskill, N. Y." By J. H. Curry, M.D. Pp. 4. Katonah, N. Y., 1874.

"Biographical Sketch of Peter Moulton, M.D." By Dr. William C. Pryer. Pp. 9. Katonah, N. Y., 1875.

"Teratology." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D. Pp. 4. [Johnson's "Cyclopædia," vol. iv. p. 782–785.]

"Inaugural and Anniversary Addresses delivered before the Medical Society of the State of New York, at its Sixty-ninth Session, held at the City of Albany, February 2, 3, and 4, 1875." By the President, George Jackson Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. 8vo, pp. 57. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1875. [Trans. of the Med. Soc. of the State of New York for the year 1875, p. 4–15, p. 54–111.]

1877.

"A Brief Historical Sketch of the Discovery of the Circulation of the Blood." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D. Pp. 14. [Reprinted by the *Popular Science Monthly*, July, 1877.]

1878.

"On the Effect of Atropine in Diminishing the Pains and Shortening the Duration of the First Stage of Labor." By Henry L. Horton, M.D. [Reprinted from the *Am. Jr. of Obstetrics and Diseases of Women and Children*, vol. xi., No. 3, July, 1878.] Pp. 20. New York, 1878.

"Clinical Notes in Obstetrics and Gynæcology." Read before the Yonkers Med. Association March 15, 1878. By Eugene Peugnet, M.D. Pp. 83. [Reprinted from the *Ohio Med. and Surg. Jr.*, Columbus, 1878.]

1879.

"Observations on the Digestion of Milk." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*N. Y. Med. Jr.*, Sept., 1879.]

1880.

"Case of a Rare Variety of Human Diprosopic Monster, with Observations on the Genus Diprosopus." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D. Pp. 4. [Annals of the Anatomical and Surgical Society, Brooklyn, N. Y., vol. ii. p. 193–197.]

Digitized by Google

1880–83.

"Historical and Bibliographical Notes: A Series of Sketches of the Lives, Times and Works of the Old Masters of Anatomy and Surgery." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D. Pp. 330. [Annals of Anatomy and Surgery, New York and Brooklyn, vols. ii.–viii., 1880–83. Vol. ii.: Paré, Eustachius, Colot, Fallopius, Tallacotius, Columbus, Wiseman, Fabricius ab Aquapendente, Guy de Chaullac, Harvey. Vol. iii.: Harvey, Rhodion, Hippocrates. Vol. iv.: Herophilus and Erasistratus, Galen. Vol. v.: Celsus. Vol. vi.: Mundinus, Rhazes. Vol. vii.: Avicenna, Haly Abbas. Vol. viii.: Albucasis, Avenzoar.]

1881.

"Milk. An essay read [before the Med. Soc. of the County of Westchester Tuesday, June 21, 1881." By E. F. Brush, M.D., Mount Vernon, N. Y. [The *Med. Record*, vol. xx. p. 149–151.]

"Skimmed Milk as an Article of Food." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [The *Med. Record*, vol. xx. p. 459–461.]

"One Mode of Improving Cow's Milk for Human Food. Read before the Yonkers Med. Soc. Oct. 7, 1881." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*Ibid.*, vol. xx. p. 539–541.]

"Kumyss." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*Ibid.*, vol. xx. p. 673–675.]

"One Phase of the Germ Theory. Read before the Yonkers Med. Soc. April 22, 1881." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*Ibid.*, vol. xiv. p. 568–569.]

"The Tartrate of Quinoline as an Antiperiodic." By Edwin I. Harrington, M.D. Pp. 3, and temperature charts. [*Med. Bulletin*, Phila., Nov. 1881.]

"Nicholas Tulp—(1593–1672)." A sketch by George Jackson Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 5. [*N. C. Med. Jr.*, vol. vii. p. 204–208, Wilmington, N. C., 1881.]

"On the Private Care of the Insane." By Ralph L. Parsons, M.D. Pp. 26. [Reprint from *The Alienist and Neurologist*, St. Louis, Oct. 1881.]

1882.

"Imperfect Nutrition in Infants." By E. H. Hermance, M.D., Yonkers, N. Y. [The *Med. Rec.*, vol. xxii. p. 320.]

"Acute Milk-Poisoning." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [The *Med. Rec.*, vol. xxii. p. 424–426.]

1883.

"Vaccination Observations and Suggestions." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [The *Med. Rec.*, vol. xxiii. p. 677–679.]

"Œsophagitis as a Disease of Infancy." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*Ibid.*, vol. p. xxiii. 35–37.]

"Reciprocal Insanity." By Ralph L. Parsons, M.D. Pp. 17. [Reprinted from the *Alienist and Neurologist*, Oct. 1883.]

"Jury Trial of the Insane." By Ralph L. Parsons, M.D. Pp. 27. [Papers read before the Med.-Legal Soc. of the City of N. Y., 1883, p. 327–353.]

1884.

"Sketch of Abûl-Walid Mohammed Ibn-Ahmed Ibn-Mohammed Ibn-Roshd (commonly called Averroës)." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D. Pp. 5. (*Pop. Sci. Monthly*, July, 1884, p. 405–409.]

"A Memorial Sketch of the Life and Character of the late John Foster Jenkins, A.M., M.D., of Yonkers, N. Y." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D., of Sing Sing, N. Y. Pp. 21. [Reprinted from the Transactions of the Med. Soc. of the State of N. Y., by order of the Med. Soc. of Westchester Co., N. Y. Syracuse, N. Y., 1884.]

"The Faculty of Speech." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*Popular Science Monthly*, April, 1884.]

"An Obstinate Case of Ovarian Dysmenorrhea, Oophorectomy, with Remarks on the Utility of the Operation." By E. H. Hermance, M.D., of Yonkers, N. Y. [The *Med. Rec.* vol. xxv. p. 430–431.]

1885.

"History of Surgery." By George Jackson Fisher, M.D. Pp. 57. [*International Encyclopædia of Surgery*, N. Y., 1886, vol. vi. p. 1146–1202.]

"Vesical and Renal Calculi—Open Urachus—Lithotomy." By A. C. Benedict, M.D., of Yonkers, N. Y. [The *Med. Rec.*, vol. xxvii. p. 208. N. Y., 1885.]

"Traumatic Gastric Fistula Opening into the Pancreatic Duct, resulting in death after forty years." By E. F. Brush, M.D., of Mt. Vernon, N. Y. [The *Med. Rec.*, vol. xxvii. p. 623–624. N. Y., 1885.]

"Intubation of the Larynx." By E. F. Brush, M.D. [*Ibid*, vol. xxvii. p. 206–207. N. Y., 1885.]

Dr. Peter Hugeford, of Cortlandtown, was probably the first regular physician in the northwestern portion of Westchester County.

He was an Englishman by birth and education, an accomplished medical practitioner and a gentleman of the decided English stamp, as can be seen by his full-length portrait which now hangs in an ancient parlor of his granddaughter, Mrs. Betsey Field, a widow of over eighty years, residing near the village of Peekskill. He was a successful practitioner previous to the Revolution. Being a Royalist, he retired to the British army when war was declared. His fine farm of two hundred acres was confiscated, and subsequently given by government to John Paulding, for his service as one of the three captors of Major Andre.

He was probably the most accomplished physician of his day in this country.

Dr. Stanly, of Cortlandtown, was cotemporary with Dr. Hugeford. He emigrated from Connecticut, and settled in Cortlandtown, at precisely what date is not known. He was celebrated for his great caution; he carried with him his scale and weights, and at all times weighed carefully every dose of medicine he administered.

He had one son, whom he educated thoroughly to the medical profession. Young Dr. Stanly married the only child of Richard Currie, a wealthy farmer of this county. They united under the most auspicious and flattering circumstances. He died prematurely of brandy, his wife of opium, leaving a large family, most of them in indigent circumstances.

Dr. Elias Cornelius, of Somers, was a native of Long Island, and served as surgeon's mate in the Revolutionary army. After the close of the war he settled in the western part of Somers, where he practiced his profession over forty years with eminent success and credit. During the Revolution he contracted the habit of smoking, snuffing and tippling, but, contrary to the generally received opinion, was never intoxicated during his long and arduous life.

Dr. James Fountain says: "Dr. Cornelius was truly a pattern physician; with a very limited medical education, he commenced the active duties of his profession, but full of energy and ambition, he studied and practiced both by day and by night. He kept three good horses, and rode off rapidly, and on his arrival at home he gave his horse over to his groom, and went directly into his office, and there spent all his available time in the pursuit of knowledge or in the compounding of medicines. He availed himself of every means of information; he commenced taking the first medical periodical ever published in America, viz.: *The Medical Repository*, and ever since continued to read it. He had also all the principal authors of his day, and studied them thoroughly. Having been inspired by a genuine love, with the requisite enthusiasm, for his profession, he gave it his undivided attention, and the whole

Digitized by Google

force of his energies and talents were made subservient to it. He died at the age of sixty-eight years, having been blessed with a large family, which were carefully and respectably bred. One of his sons, having been thoroughly educated, became one of the most celebrated and accomplished divines in the New England States."

He commenced life in extreme poverty, and left his heirs an estate of nearly fifty thousand dollars.

Dr. Lyman Cook, of Cortlandtown, was an eminent and successful physician. He was chosen the delegate of the Westchester County Society, which he represented by attending the first meeting of the State Medical Society in 1807.

He engaged somewhat in politics, and was once elected to the office of high sheriff of the county. He removed to one of the Western States, where he located as a physician.

Dr. Elias Quereau, of Yorktown, was born in the city of New York, and pursued his medical studies under Dr. Hugeford. Early in the Revolutionary War he married in the city of New York, where he engaged in practice for a short time.

Owing to the unsettled state of the country he frequently changed his residence and field of practice. Being a Royalist, he embarked for St. John's, with other refugees, but soon returned to his native State in consequence of the inclemency of the Canadian climate. He finally settled in Yorktown, in this county, which was the native place of his wife, where he continued to reside during the remainder of his life.

In Yorktown he seems to have commenced anew. He joined the Baptist denomination and became an active member. With a few others he built a church, which, under the charge of Elder E. Fountain, was a prosperous society, was kept together forty years by their united aid, and continues to the present.

He was a modest, quiet and unassuming man, and a pious, consistent and benevolent Christian. His Sunday earnings he invariably set apart for the benefit of the church, believing that, as his duties on that sacred day were labors of love and necessity, he had no right to appropriate the avails thereof to the common purposes of life. He died in his eighty-sixth year, leaving several children and many friends to lament his loss.

Dr. Francis Fowler practiced in White Plains and vicinity about eighty or ninety years ago. He came from Newburgh, Orange County, N. Y., and soon after his arrival married a sister of ex-Sheriff Amos W. Hatfield, of White Plains. His talents and practice are said to have been respectable and gave promise of good success, but in a few years after settling in White Plains, he died, leaving a widow, but no children.

Dr. Brewster also practiced in White Plains previous to or about the time of Dr. Fowler, but nothing further is known of him.

Dr. William Baldwin, late of New York City, lies beneath a large, plain, but handsome monument, in the yard of the first, or old Methodist Church, of White Plains. He was born in Northford, Conn., commenced practice about 1800, and married Elizabeth, daughter of John Falconer, a prominent citizen of White Plains, where he practiced with considerable success for about fifteen years. He then removed to the city of New York and located himself in East Broadway; became a prominent and successful practitioner in that section of the city, and gained a more than ordinary practice and honorable position among his professional brethren. He left a widow, but no children.

Dr. Seth Miller, of Sing Sing, was born in April, 1766. He came from Lower Salem, and, after practicing several years at New Castle, settled at Sing Sing, before 1790, being the first physician to locate in the latter village. Mrs. John Miller, who, in 1858, was eighty-six years old, stated that Dr. Miller had attended her husband when he was suffering from the yellow fever. It was the first case of the disease known in Sing Sing, and did not spread, Mr. Miller being the solitary victim. He had contracted it during a visit to New York, where it was raging at the time.

Dr. Miller's eldest daughter married Dr. Kissam, of New York, and his second became the wife of Dr. Wallace, of Troy. She was extremely beautiful and highly accomplished, and is said to have been so well versed in medicine that she undertook to continue her husband's practice after his death. Her father is said to have been very skillful and enjoyed the confidence of a large circle of friends and patients. His health began to fail several years before his death, and he invited Dr. Jeremiah Drake Fowler to settle at Sing Sing and participate in and eventually succeed to his practice. He died November 23, 1808, in the forty-second year of his age, and was interred in the cemetery at Sparta, below Sing Sing.

Dr. Archibald Macdonald, of White Plains, was one of the most distinguished of the early physicians of the county and prominent among the founders of the Medical Society. He was a native of Inverness, Scotland, and came of the Glengarry branch of the Macdonalds. His father, in 1745, joined the forces of Charles Edward, the last of the Stuart pretenders who endeavored to regain by arms the British throne, and perished in battle when his son was but a few weeks old, so that the parent and his youngest child never saw each other. The embryotic physician was brought to this country about 1757, when he was twelve years old, by his brother, a British officer serving in Canada. He received his medical education in Philadelphia, at the charge of this brother, who may be supposed to have procured him the position which he subsequently held of surgeon in the King's army. After practicing in North Carolina, in 1787 he married in Dutchess County, N. Y., and in 1795 removed to White Plains, where he practiced until his death,

Digitized by Google

December 21, 1813, in his sixty-ninth year. The genealogy of the family indicates that one of his ancestors married a daughter of Robert Bruce. Personally very popular, his practice was large and his professional reputation so high that he was often called long distances for consultations.

His son, James Macdonald, studied medicine with Dr. David Palmer, of White Plains, and Dr. David Hosack, of New York. As an investigator of insanity, in the treatment of which he became an expert, he visited the principal lunacy asylums of Europe; and, on his return to this country, was one of the founders and proprietors of the Sanford Hall Asylum, at Flushing, L. I. He died in 1849, leaving his brother, Allen Macdonald, in charge of that institution.

Dr. Stephen Fowler, a native of Orange County, N. Y., practiced in New Castle, Westchester County, eight years previous to his death, which occurred in 1814, when he was but thirty-five years of age. Despite his youth, he was quite successful, and accumulated in that short time a moderate fortune. He died from typhoid pneumonia, which was then epidemic in the neighborhood. Dr. Joshua W. Bowron was one of his students, and upon his death located in the immediate vicinity of his office.

Dr. Donal, of Colaburg (now Croton), on the Hudson, was a young man who began practice in 1814, during the prevalence of typhoid pneumonia, and won much praise for his successful treatment of the disease by the stimulating plan. He removed to New York and died there.

Dr. Clark Sanford resided at Greenwich, Conn., but for thirty years prior to his death, in 1820, when he was over sixty years old, had a wide professional connection in Westchester County. He was a native of Vermont, and the manufacturer of a superior article of pulverized Peruvian bark. His grinding-mills were at Byrom's Mills, now called Glenville; they were the first establishment of the kind in the United States, and his son John continued and enlarged the business with great profit. He is spoken of as "a bold practitioner of both medicine and surgery." He was a very eccentric man and an inveterate smoker, always carrying his pipe between his lips or in his boot leg. He could never endure the smell of ipecacuanha, which produced in him an asthmatic affection. He educated to the profession his son Josephus, who settled in the South and died there. Another son, Henry, became an apothecary in New York City.

Dr. William H. Sackett, born at Greenwich, Conn., in 1781, made his home at Bedford, Westchester County, about 1805, and married a daughter of Col. Jesse Holly some three years later. A man of splendid general culture, and a keen student of the new lights then being thrown upon the science of medicine by Cullen, Brown, Darwin and Rush, he was esteemed the most accomplished physician in the county. He had graduated at Yale and pursued his medical studies under Dr. Perry, at Ridgefield, Conn. Prompt in response to calls, he rode the country over on a fast gray mare which is still associated with his memory. To his excessively arduous labor is attributed his premature death, for he passed away December 29, 1820, in the thirty-ninth year of his age. He was the preceptor of Dr. Joseph Baily and Dr. Mead, of Tarrytown.

Dr. Ebenezer White, son of Rev. Ebenezer White, of Southampton, L. I., was born in the lower section of Westchester County, in 1744, located in Yorktown before the Revolution and was so ardent a patriot that the British made several attempts to capture him. Once a squadron of horse were sent to Crompond with orders to surround his house and take him prisoner, so that he might be exchanged for a British surgeon whom the Americans held. A friendly warning enabled him to escape, but they seized Dr. James Brewer, who resided in the neighborhood, and in a skirmish with a party of Americans who fired upon them as they were passing along Stoney Street, Dr. Brewer was mortally wounded. He expired the next morning, November 20, 1780, in the arms of Dr. White. He was a native of Massachusetts, but thirty-nine years old, and the husband of Hannah Brewer, by whom he had four sons and three daughters. Dr. James Brewer, of Peekskill, was his grandson. Dr. White was prominent in politics and the church. He was once elected to the New York State Senate, and died March 8, 1825, aged eighty-one.

Dr. Henry White, son of Dr. Ebenezer White, was born at Yorktown, August 31, 1781, and studied medicine under the tuition of his father. In 1802 he attended the medical lectures at Columbia College. In 1803 he was in partnership with Dr. Joshua Secor, in New York City, but in the same year returned to the place of his nativity. In 1804 he practiced at Hackensack, but once more came back to Yorktown in the same year. The Westchester County Medical Society, in 1809, elected him delegate to the State Society for four years. He was for several years surrogate of the county, and in 1823 became one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas. He continued the general practice of medicine until about 1840, after which he accepted no calls except as consulting physician. He died in November, 1857.

Dr. Elisha Belcher was born in Lebanon, Conn., in 1757, and became surgeon's mate and surgeon in the Revolutionary army. Stationed at Greenwich, Conn., he made that place his residence after peace had been declared, and extended his practice across the State line into Westchester County. He educated many young men in the profession, including his sons Dr. William N. Belcher, of Sing Sing, and Dr. Elisha R. Belcher, of New York City. Four of his seven daughters married physicians—the fourth becoming the wife of Dr. Stephen Fowler, of North Castle, and

Digitized by Google

after his death the wife of Dr. Henry White, of Yorktown. Other daughters married Dr. Darius Mead, of Greenwich, Conn., Dr. David Palmer, of White Plains, and Dr. Bartow F. White, of Somers, son of Dr. Ebenezer White. Dr. Elisha Belcher died in December, 1825, as he was approaching his sixty-ninth year.

Dr. John Ingersoll, born about 1745; the place of his nativity is unknown; came from the vicinity of Horseneck prior to 1804, and settled three miles north of Yonkers, where he died of delirium tremens in August, 1827. Being the first physician about Yonkers, he had a practice which obliged him to ride from King's Bridge to the outskirts of White Plains, and he would encounter the darkest night and the most pitiless storm rather than neglect his duty at the bedside of a patient. Until inebriety conquered him he was fairly successful as a physician and was especially favored in obstetrical cases, but his surgery is recorded to have been very bungling—probably because of a lack of training in that department.

Dr. Samuel Adams, a Scotchman by birth and surgeon in the British army, went upon the medical staff of the American forces during the Revolution, and then bought a farm near Mount Pleasant, which for nearly fifty years he cultivated while practicing his profession. Uncouth in his manners and abrupt in speech, his surgical skill yet caused him to be employed in difficult cases in all parts of the county, and his services were in constant requisition. His energy and will were indomitable, his perseverance unflinching, and he was a tyrant over his professional associates and his patients. His operations were of the heroic kind, and their progress emphasized with profuse oaths, the expressions of his passionate temper. He seems to have lived and died an avowed atheist. He served a term in the State Legislature, and was over ninety years of age when he died, about 1828.

Dr. Jeremiah Drake Fowler, born December 28, 1785, at Peekskill, studied at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York City, where he received his degree, and located at Sing Sing. No medical man could have been more popular than he was in his day, and he earned his eminence legitimately by skill in his profession. He was a prominent member of the Westchester County Medical Society, and several times its delegate to the State Society. In 1817–18–he was elected justice of the peace and was also a practical surveyor. Through going security for friends he nearly ruined himself financially, and died October 28, 1828.

Dr. Samuel Strang, of Peekskill, was a son of Major Joseph Strang, of Revolutionary fame. The family name of L'Estrange has been corrupted from the original French form. They were Huguenot emigrés and came to this country in 1686. Dr. Strang was born in Yorktown in 1766, studied with Dr. Ebenezer White, married his daughter and moved to Peekskill, where he died in December, 1831. He was the preceptor of his son, Dr. Eugene J. Strang, who died at the age of twenty-seven, after practicing one year.

Dr. William F. Arnold, born at Chatham, Rensselaer County, New York, June 1, 1809, learned the drug business in the store of Drs. Platt and Nelson, at Rhinebeck, and was aided by friends to attend a course of lectures at Rutgers Medical College. When he located at White Plains, about 1829, he was almost penniless, but his abilities soon procured him a remunerative practice. In May, 1832, he married Miss Williams, of Rhinebeck, and shortly afterward removed to New York City on account of his failing health, but within a brief period returned to White Plains, where he and his brother conducted a drug-store in connection with his office practice. In the autumn of 1843 he went to St. Thomas, W. I., for the improvement of his health and practiced dentistry there, but his disease gained on him so rapidly that in the course of a year or two he started to return home and died on the voyage.

Dr. Howard Lee, of Sing Sing, practiced there previous to 1838, but made no mark on cotemporary records.

Dr. David Rogers moved from Fairfield, Conn., to Rye, in 1810, where he spent the remainder of his days in retirement. His son, Dr. David Rogers, Jr., settled at Mamaroneck in 1800, and from 1817 to 1820 was president of the Westchester County Medical Society; moving to New York City, in 1820, he died there in 1843 or '44, aged nearly seventy. His sons, Dr. David L. and Dr. James Rogers, followed him in the profession in the city.

Dr. Matson Smith, of New Rochelle, was born in 1767, at Lyme, Conn., where he studied medicine with Dr. Samuel Mather, whose daughter became his first wife. In 1787 he came to New Rochelle, and, notwithstanding his youth, quickly established a remarkably large practice, which in time covered most of the southern towns of the county. A memoir of him, prepared by his son, Dr. Joseph Mather Smith, says: "Devoted to the practice of physic proper, obstetrics and surgery, it may, perhaps, be said, aside from some of the rarer and more delicate operations of surgery, which he referred to special experts, that he was equally skillful in these departments." He adopted vaccination at a very early date after its introduction into this country, and took great pains to remove the doubts of those whose minds wavered in relation to its value. He was a close student of the modifications of disease induced by atmospheric influences, and of rare and new forms of epidemic maladies. His "Account of a Malignant Epidemic which prevailed in the County of Westchester in the Summer of 1812" was a most important contribution to the history of the scourge of typhoid pneumonia, so fatal about that time in the Northern and Eastern States, and a valuable aid to the treatment of it. He was for several years president of the Westchester County Medical

Digitized by Google

Society, and in 1830 received from the regents of the University of New York the honorary degree of Doctor of Medicine. He was a devout Christian and foremost in educational projects, as well as in advocating the temperance cause. He died March 17, 1845.

Dr. Joseph M. Scribner was born at Bedford, Westchester County, May 11, 1793, and was licensed by the Medical Society of the county in April, 1817, after having studied with Dr. William H. Sackett and attended lectures at the New York City Hospital and the Medical Institution of the State of New York. Opening an office two and a half miles southeast of Sing Sing, he remained there a year and spent the next year at Bedford. For the succeeding fifteen years he had his office within a mile and a half of Tarrytown; then moving, in 1835, into that village, he continued his practice up to his death, on December 27, 1847. He died of ship-fever, contracted while attending at the almshouse upon emigrants, among whom the disease had broken out at sea.

Dr. Joseph Roe, born near Flushing, L. I., in 1811, graduated at the College of Physicians, New York City, having previously been instructed by Dr. John Graham and Drs. Bedford, Pendleton and Bush. Locating at White Plains, he went into partnership with Dr. David Palmer, then the only physician in the place. He contracted ship-fever at the same time and under the same circumstances as Dr. Scribner; in attending upon the latter he sacrificed his own strength, and died January 11, 1848. For many years he availed himself of the practice of the county almshouse as a school of observation, and was exceedingly kind to the forlorn and helpless paupers. He was the inventor of an improvement on Amesbury's splint. His name was coupled with that of Dr. Scribner in resolutions of regret passed by the County Medical Society, June 6, 1848, for "the death of two of our most worthy and esteemed professional brethren."

Dr. Isaac Gilbert Graham, born at Woodbury, Conn., September 10, 1760, was a son of Dr. Andrew Graham, who fitted him for the profession. At a very early age he was appointed assistant surgeon in the American army, and at West Point came under the personal notice of Washington, who is said to have conceived a warm feeling for him, because of his medical knowledge and his sturdy patriotism. He was granted an annual pension of four hundred and forty dollars by the government for his services. In 1784 he settled at Unionville, Westchester County, and practiced for nearly half a century. He was considered very skillful in treating cases of small-pox, or "winter fever," as it was then called, by inoculation, and is alleged to have earned fourteen hundred dollars in one season by this branch of practice, although he devoted much time to the poor, from whom he never looked for any recompense. He died September 1, 1848.

Dr. Stephen Allen Hart, born June 11, 1820, at Shrub Oak, Weschester County, was a student under Dr. John Collett, and in the spring of 1846 obtained his diploma from the University Medical College, in New York City. His career was brief, as he died at Yorktown, where he had practiced, on February 22, 1849.

Dr. Nathaniel Drake, born in Yorktown, August 27, 1763, was a pupil of Dr. Peter Hugeford and Dr. Ebenezer White. He attended medical lectures and dissections in New York City, and was one of the students obliged to seek safety in flight from the mob which attacked the dissecting departments. Subsequently to practicing for a short time in the town of his birth, he changed his location to Peekskill, where he died February 1, 1850. With him perished the name of his family. While in his general practice he always had his fair proportion, it was in the obstetrical branch that he especially bore off the palm.

Dr. George C. Finch was born April 6, 1817, at Croton Falls, Westchester County, and had for his first preceptor in medicine Dr. Seth Shove. Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, granted him his degree as Doctor of Medicine in the spring of 1841. He employed the next term in the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York, and, after being associated with Dr. Shove, went to his native place to practice. So strong was his opposition to the followers of Hahnemann, that when invited to meet a distinguished member of that school in consultation, he replied: "I would be pleased to meet with Dr. J. as an old friend and preceptor, but not as a physician." For six years he was supervisor of North Salem; in 1853 represented his district in the Legislature, and at the time of his death, May 28, 1856, was one of the committee for erecting new public buildings for the county.

Steven Archer was the son of John Archer, of Tarrytown, where he was born September 9, 1803. He married Emeline Ascough, and after her death was married to Deborah Underhill. His children were Sarah, wife of William Macy, of New York; Isaac; and Emma, wife of Dr. Joseph Hasbrouck. He died December 16, 1877.

Dr. Joshua W. Bowron, born at Washington, Dutchess County, in April, 1788, a pupil of Dr. Stephen Fowler, graduated at the Barclay Street College of Medicine, New York City. He began practice near Sing Sing, but soon removed to New Castle to occupy the field vacated by the death of Dr. Fowler, which he, filled for nearly forty years. In 1848 and 1849 he was president of the Westchester County Medical Society. His labors were so enormous that when about sixty-two years old he broke down under an apoplectic stroke, and died February 20, 1857.

Dr. Benjamin Bassett, born at Derby, Conn., December 6, 1784, was a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania, practiced at Yorktown from 1826 to 1829, and then settled at Peekskill, where he died March 21, 1858. He was president of the Westches-

ter County Medical Society in 1846 and 1847, and in the latter year delivered an address "On the laws of epidemics as exhibited in those that had prevailed in the county the preceding twenty years." In 1831 he wrote a valuable treatise on "Epidemic Dysentery and Intermittent Fever," published in the *New York Medical Journal* for May of that year. About the same time he prepared several articles on the effect of sulphate of quinine, but it is not known when they were published. He honored his profession except in placing too low an estimate on the value of his services; "his charges were so small that he was unable to live in the manner suitable to a man of his ability, skill and position."

Dr. James Fountain was spoken of in the biographical sketch prepared by Dr. James Hart Curry, at the request of the Westchester County Medical Society, as "one of the most remarkable men of his time, in the region round-about him." Born at Bedford, January 30, 1790, he began the study of medicine under Dr. Sackett, and was one of the first, if not the very first, student from Westchester County to matriculate in the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York City, where he graduated March 16, 1812. Beginning practice in his native county, in a year he moved to Staten Island, but, at the solicitation of his father, soon returned to Jefferson Valley. He had become a member of the Westchester County Medical Society a year before his graduation, and when, fifty years afterward, he resigned, he said, in his characteristic letter:—

"I witnessed its (the Society's) gradual rise to distinction until, in the acme of its usefulness and glory it was crippled by an act of our ignorant legislature. To court popularity and to support a mistaken Democracy, they, in their zeal to level all distinctions among men, passed a law declaring the ignorant quack and the most learned physician on a perfect level and equally entitled to protection. Since then our authority to keep down quackery has ceased, so that now a large portion of our best practice is enjoyed by ignorant quacks under the cloak of homœopathy. The consequences to our society are almost ruinous. Shorn of its power, its members have become discouraged, and a few only of the most faithful are found attending its meetings. All our struggles must be laborious so long as ignorance of physiology prevails among the people, and that must continue a long time.

"I am now in my seventieth year. I consider myself professionally dead. It is my last prayer that you may persevere until the rays of knowledge shall illumine the eyes of the people and induce them to value the realities of knowledge over ignorance and regard our profession in its true light."

He was frequently a delegate to the New York State Medical Society, and at the session of 1846 was made a permanent member. His numerous contributions to the medical journals, as full a list of which as can be made is embodied in the foregoing schedule of professional writings by Westchester physicians, bear witness to his profound research as well as to his pugnacious disposition. Having been thrown in his early practice greatly upon his own resources for medical agents, no drug-stores being near him, he became, of necessity, conversant with our indigenous medical botany, and applied it with marked results, and often with great success. He boldly and continually, and without the aid of the chemist, prescribed such potences as lobelia, scutellaria, actia sanguinaria, ergot, juglans, Indian hemp and many of the vegetable acids. But he was by no means restricted to any set of drugs or stereotyped forms of practice. If heroic practice means anything, Dr. Fountain was a hero of the boldest stamp. Arsenic, strychnine, mercury, tartar emetic, the lancet and the blister were the great weapons of his warfare, and he was not afraid to use them. In his treatment there was no half and half—he gave disease no quarter—and it must be confessed that often, in drawing out the enemy, he shook the citadel terribly, but when he had slain the foe, if the patient survived, like a discriminating general, he was quick to take advantage of circumstances, stopping medication when he thought the case would warrant, or modifying it as the symptoms might demand. In his treatment of old diseases, especially those of the lungs, as in asthma of

JAMES FOUNTAIN, M.D.

the aged, hydrothorax and bronchorrhœa, notwithstanding (or rather by the aid of) blood-letting, antimony, ptyalism and blistering, he was remarkably successful, often holding the disease in abeyance for many years after it had become apparently incurable.

Neither in auscultation or percussion, nor, in fact, in any of the more modern modes of physical explorations, did he ever make much proficiency, and he professed but little faith in them, believing, until his death, that the rational signs of disease would generally lead the rational practitioner to a correct diagnosis.

In surgery he was not a brilliant operator, although his isolated position and immense practice continually forced him to use the knife. It was his boast, and true, that during a practice of fifty years no irregular practitioner had been able to make any head in all his field of practice, and it must be added that during his prime it was a risky matter for any phy-

Digitized by Google

sician, regular or otherwise, to infringe upon his domain. His cultivated mind and vastly superior medical attainments made him the natural antagonist of empiricism, and his indomitable will, his consciousness of his own superiority, raised the hands of others against his. "In fact," his son, Hosea Fountain, wrote, "he was in hot water the most of the time. Of course such a man had bitter enemies and strong, warm-hearted friends." His field of labor extended from Fishkill to Tarrytown, and from the Hudson River to beyond the Connecticut line. "He kept the best horses and rode constantly in the saddle; he was very active, was up and away before we were up. Would ride all day, and then in hot weather I have known him to strip to the skin and help his man draw hay off by moonlight; then off in the morning again as usual." In 1862 he removed to Waverly, N. Y., to spend the remainder of his days with his son. He died May 19, 1869, during a visit to his old home in Jefferson Valley, and was buried in the Presbyterian grave-yard at Crompond.

Dr. Seth Stephen Lounsbery[1] was born at Bedford, Westchester County, September 11, 1837, and in 1861 received his diploma from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York City, having previously studied medicine under the direction of his uncle, Dr. William Minos. After a year of city practice he accepted, September 15, 1862, a commission as assistant surgeon of the One Hundred and Seventieth Regiment New York Volunteers, and on December 22, 1864, was promoted to the rank of surgeon of the One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Regiment. In these commands, notwithstanding his feeble constitution, he served in the field almost continuously until the close of the war. At Cold Harbor he narrowly escaped being taken prisoner, and he witnessed most of the movements of the army of the Potomac around Richmond and at the Weldon Railroad. In October, 1865, he was associated with Dr. William S. Stanley in his practice at Mamaroneck, where he continued for the remainder of his life. He died, April 25, 1872, at his father's home in Bedford. In 1866 he joined the Westchester County Medical Society, and was usually present at its meetings.

Dr. Caleb W. Haight[2] was born in New York City February 20, 1820; came with his family to Bedford when he was a very young child. In the spring of 1842 he entered the office of Dr. Shove as a student, and in March, 1846, graduated at the University of the City of New York, beginning practice in September at Chappaqua. Eighteen months, subsequently, he removed to Pleasantville, where he died March 5, 1873. In 1848 he became a member of the Westchester Medical Society, in which from time to time, he acceptably filled all its important offices. He was a constant attendant at its meetings, and contributed liberally to its transactions. In 1860 he was elected a member of the American Medical Association, and in 1861 of the New York State Medical Society.

Dr. Peter Moulton,[3] at his death the oldest member of the Westchester County Medical Society, and probably the oldest physician in active practice in the county, was born at Oxford, N. H., October 7, 1794. In May, 1816, he began to study medicine with Dr. Cyril Carpenter, of Saratoga Springs, N. Y., and, as a student was successively under Dr. Daniel Ayers, of Openheim, N. Y., and Dr. Nathaniel Drake, of Peekskill. He completed his studies as the private pupil of Dr. Cyrus Perkins, professor of anatomy and surgery in Dartmouth College, where he attended lectures and fulfilled all requirements necessary for his degree as doctor of medicine, but could not obtain it because two conflicting boards of trustees claimed to control the affairs of the institution. He, however, on November 8, 1819, passed an examination before the censors of the medical society of the county of New York, who granted him a license to practice, which for the greater part of his professional life, was his only diploma. But on March 27, 1860, the regents of the State University, at the instance of the State Medical Society, conferred on him the honorary degree of doctor of medicine, and in 1864 he was elected a permanent member of the State Society. In November, 1819, he established himself in East Chester, and his reputation for learning and skill soon spread throughout that part of Westchester County. His practice extended into the towns of White Plains, Scarsdale, Yonkers, Greenburgh, New Rochelle, Pelham, Mamaroneck and Rye. In 1835 or '36 he transferred his location to New Rochelle, where he practiced for nearly forty years.

About two years before his death, while walking upon the track of the New Haven Railroad, a short distance above New Rochelle, he was struck by an engine and he and his medicine chest thrown thirty feet forward and down an embankment twenty feet deep. Refusing to go into the train, he walked home with his precious chest under his arm. "On my entrance," says Dr. Pryer, "he called out, 'doctor, I have a broken arm.' Proceeding to examine the arm very tenderly, fearful of giving pain, I said, 'are you sure it is broken?' 'Oh, yes,' said he, 'see here,' and he shook the elbow to and fro again and again, until the broken bones grated against one another in a manner that produces a shudder to this day when the sensation comes back to me. The doctor's scientific interest in proving the fracture was so great that it overcame entirely all sense of pain."

As a surgeon Dr. Moulton was bold and skilful, but it was as an obstetrician that he most excelled, and he is said to have assisted at the birth of more children than any other physician in the county. He

[1] Biographical sketch by William S. Stanley, M.D., Mamaroneck.
[2] Biographical sketch by Seth Shove, M.D.
[3] Biographical sketch read before the Westchester County Medical Society, February 17, 1874, by Dr. William C. Pryer.

Digitized by Google

was an accomplished botanist and drew many of his medicines from native plants gathered in his daily walks. It is not known at what date he became a member of the Westchester Counter County Medical Society, but since 1831 he held the following offices:

Elected in 1831, censor; 1833–34, treasurer; 1838, vice president; 1836–37, president; 1838, censor; 1841, essayist for fall meeting; 1842, committee to draft rate bill, serving with Drs. Livingstone Roe and Gates; 1851, reported a case of puerperal peritonitis, treated by "opium alone;" 1852, censor; 1853, vice-president and committee to report on "Ship Fever;" 1854, vice-president; 1855, committee on surgery; 1857, essayist, also committee on Indigenous Medical Botany and served on this committee six years; 1858, delegate to American Medical Association; 1863, vice-president and delegate to American Medical Association; 1866, delegate to American Medical Association.

On December 1, 1873, Dr. Moulton rose early, visited various patients, traveled to New York City and back on professional business, and in the evening made visits to the sick in East Chester, Cooper's Corners, Mamaroneck and Scarsdale, in the teeth of an easterly storm. When he reached home he was too feeble to ascend to his bed-room and remained in his office all night in his wet clothing. Pneumonia supervened and he died on December 7th. On the 9th a meeting of the citizens of New Rochelle, at the Town Hall, passed resolutions of respect to his memory, and similar action was taken by the Board of Education and the Huguenot Lyceum, of both of which he had been a member. He had been made an honorary member of the Westchester County Medical Society at its annual meeting in 1869, and at the meeting in 1872, at White Plains, he met his brother members for the last time. On the day of his funeral, business was suspended in New Rochelle, flags hung at half-mast from the public and many private buildings, the church, school and engine-house bells were tolled, the schools were dismissed and the scholars stood bareheaded in the street as the *cortege* passed. No such honors had ever been paid to any private citizen of the town.

Dr. Philander Stewart[1] was born in Danbury, Connecticut, June 20, 1820, and in 1840 began to study for the profession in Brookfield, the adjoining town. At the medical institution of Yale College he attended his first course of lectures and graduated at Jefferson College, Philadelphia, in 1844. After two years of practice in Roxbury, Connecticut, he came to Peekskill, and although in three years he had established remunerative professional connections there, he returned to Philadelphia to avail himself of another course of lectures and clinical observations under Prof. Pancoast. Then he resumed his field of labor at Peekskill and cultivated it for upwards of thirty years. In the year 1857 he made a trip to Europe and pursued his investigations for some time in the hospitals and medical schools of the United Kingdom and the Continent. He early attached himself to the Westchester County Medical Society, in which he held every office, many of them for successive terms, and was frequently its delegate to the State Society. For twenty years he was a member of the latter body, making it a point never to be absent from its meetings. He was also from the beginning a member of the American Medical Association, and made long and expensive journeys to meet its annual sessions. As an operating surgeon, for years he was among the first in all the region about him. His manipulations and operations for strangulated hernia were very frequent and successful, as was his management in all cases of difficult parturition. He performed many amputations. His hand was steady, his instruments many and various, his knives were sharp, his determination almost dogged, his judgment good and he was never taken by surprise. In auscultation and percussion he was far above the average, his touch being delicate and his ear acute. If his diagnosis was sometimes shaped too much by his preconceived notion of things, and hence may have missed the mark, it was no more so than is peculiar to independent minds. His prognosis was remarkably true; he had an almost intuitive knowledge of the end from the beginning.

By being thrown from his carriage on May 26, 1869, Dr. Stewart broke an arm and was stunned by a blow upon the head. Terrible paroxysms of pain in the head attacked him; in October, 1872, he began to lose memory of names and places, his penmanship became entirely changed and he wrote with difficulty. A consultation with Dr. Brown-Sequard on December 3, 1873, resulted in pronouncing his case hopeless. He visited patients the next day, but was at once prostrated mentally and physically, and after ten weeks of darkness of intellect he died February 11, 1874.

Dr. Havilah Mowry Sprague,[2] born at Scotland, Windham County, Conn., July 4, 1835, received his first tuition in medicine in the office of Dr. Hutchins, West Killingly, Conn., and in 1858 became a student under Professor A. C. Post, New York City. He attended the New York University Medical College, and received at the close of the session of 1859–60 the first prize for the best report of clinical cases—a *post-mortem* set of instruments, which were finally used at his own autopsy.

He graduated March 4, 1864, receiving also a "Certificate of Honor" for having pursued a more extended course of study than is required by law. In the competitive examination for the position of "Junior Walker" in the New York Hospital, he passed an examination of superior excellence and was appointed. While here he passed the United States Army Medical Examining Board, standing No. 2 in general merit out of one hundred and twenty-five candidates examined (it is said that No. 1 was the son of the president

[1] Biographical sketch by Dr. James Hart Curry, read before the Westchester County Medical Society at its annual meeting, June 16, 1874.

[2] Biography by Dr. John Parsons, King's Bridge.

Digitized by Google

of the Examining Board). He was commissioned assistant surgeon United States army May 28, 1861, and ordered to New Mexico, but upon his arrival in Missouri was attached to the army of General Lyon, was present when he was killed at Springfield, and subsequently received the thanks of the commanding general for bravery and skill in attendance upon the wounded.

Dr. Sprague was transferred to Assistant Surgeon General Wood's office, in St. Louis, where he remained until early in 1863, when he was placed in command of the Eliot General Hospital, in St. Louis. That was shortly discontinued, and he took charge of the hospital steamer "City of Memphis," transporting the sick and wounded of Grant's army around Vicksburg to hospitals up the river. During the final days of the siege of Vicksburg he displayed exalted bravery and fidelity in attention to the men torn with shot and shell, sent to his steamer for such aid as the surgeons could render them. In November he was ordered on duty as secretary of the Army Medical Examining Board, in New York City, and then to command of the McDougall General Hospital, at Fort Schuyler, New York Harbor. Thence he was returned to the Examining Board, and in May, 1865, resigned from the army, his name standing high on the list for promotion. He began the practice of medicine at West Farms, and in 1868 moved to Fordham. He was appointed health officer of the town of West Farms, was the first physician to the "Home for Incurables," and first physician to the "House of Rest for Consumptives," at Tremont. He was a member of the Westchester County Medical Society, president of the Yonkers Medical Association, was elected a delegate to the American Medical Association for 1874 from the latter society, and was preparing to attend its meeting at Detroit, Mich., when he was arrested by death; was a corresponding member of the American Microscopic Society, and member of the New York Pathological Society. He was deeply learned in pathology, and marvelously skilled in the use of the microscope and the preparation of specimens. On May 30, 1874, he died at the "House of Rest," where he had been seized with a malarious attack during a visit on the previous day. An autopsy was made, and his brain was found to weigh sixty ounces.

John Foster Jenkins, A.M., M.D., was born at Falmouth, Mass., April 15, 1826. His preliminary course of medical reading was under Dr. Alexander M. Vedder, at Schenectady, N. Y., and in 1848 he received his degree from the Medical Department of the University of Pennsylvania. The next year he devoted to an extra course of didactic and clinical lectures at the Harvard Medical School, Boston. From May, 1849, to May, 1856, he practiced in the city of New York (except that from November, 1850, to July, 1851, he was in Europe, employing most of that time at the lectures and clinics and in the hospitals of Paris). In May, 1856, he located in Yonkers as a general practitioner of medicine, surgery and obstetrics. In August, 1861, he entered the service of the United States Sanitary Commission as hospital visitor and associate secretary, and in May, 1863, succeeded Frederick Law Olmsted as general secretary, an office which, in May, 1865, he was compelled to resign because of the failure of his health in the performance of its arduous obligations. He renewed his practice in Yonkers, and, in 1869, made a second voyage to Europe. On June 21, 1877, he was elected president of the Medical Society of the State of New York, but declined to accept because of his doubt as to the legality of the meeting at which he was chosen. Other offices which he held were as follows: Physician of the St. John's Riverside Hospital, at Yonkers; surgeon of the Yonkers Board of Police; senior warden of St. Paul's Parish, Yonkers; president of the Yonkers Medical Association (of which he was one of the founders); president of the Westchester County Medical Society; vice-president of the New York Obstetrical Society; permanent member of the American Medical Association; member of the American Public Health Association; corresponding Fellow of the New York Academy of Medicine; member of the American Social Science Association. In 1878 he spent six months at the sanitary resorts along the Mediterranean for the benefit of his health, and for nearly three years after his return kept steadily at his work. He died October 9, 1882, and, as an expression of the esteem in which he was held, the Yonkers Medical Association, at its next meeting, unanimously resolved to change its name to the "Jenkins Medical Association."

Dr. Jenkins was a student and an ardent lover of medical literature, both ancient and modern. He collected a large and valuable medical library. His contributions to the literature will be found in the list at the head of this chapter.

Dr. Henry L. Horton was born at Croton, Westchester County, December 6, 1826, and accumulated by manual labor the money which enabled him to enter the Albany Medical College, from where he graduated in 1858, but continued to serve some time afterward as house surgeon. In 1859 he removed to Morrisania and entered upon a large and successful practice. In 1879, and again in 1881, he visited Europe, but his health, which had greatly failed, was only partially restored, and on September 13, 1884, he again sailed. At Florence, Italy, a cold, which he caught while waiting outside the railway station, developed into p leurisy and ended fatally on February 24, 1885, at Rome. His remains were brought to his home and interred March 3d, at Sing Sing.

Dr. Platt Rogers Halsted Sawyer, born August 14, 1834, at Westport, N. Y., studied medicine with Dr. Bridges, at Ogdensburgh, N. Y., while engaged as principal of the High School of that town. After a course of lectures at the University of Vermont he

Digitized by Google

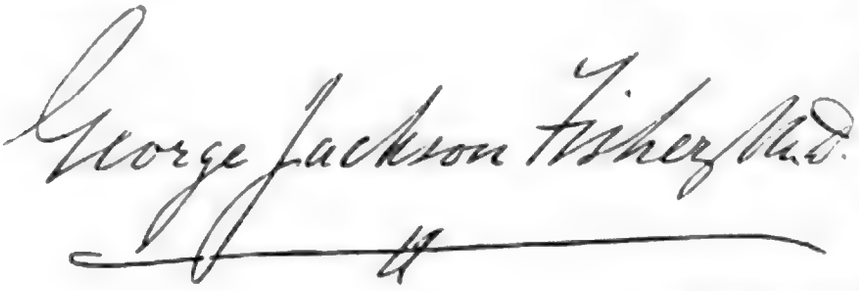
George Jackson Fisher M.D.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

entered the Albany Medical College, from which he graduated. At the opening of the Civil War he was commissioned assistant surgeon of the Forty-second Regiment, New York Volunteers, and was promoted to surgeon of the Ninety-sixth Regiment. After the muster out he practiced at Port Henry, N. Y., then at Gloversville, and in 1868 settled at Bedford, Westchester County, where he died March 31, 1885.

He was for two terms elected justice of the peace, and in 1881 was elected school commissioner and re-elected in 1884. He was a member, from its organization, of Stewart Hart Post, G. A. R., Mount Kisco, and its commander for one year; and an earnest and active member of Kisco Lodge, F. and A. M. Among other offices he had held were those of vice-president of the New York State Medical Society, president of the Westchester County Medical Society and for several years he was a trustee of the Bedford Academy.



BIOGRAPHY.

GEORGE JACKSON FISHER.

George Jackson Fisher, M.D., who has contributed more to the medical literature of Westchester County than any man either living or dead, was born in Westchester County, N. Y., November 27, 1825, and is a descendant of the early Dutch settlers, whose original name was Vischer. His father, who had been a merchant in the city of New York, removed to the central part of the State, and engaged in agricultural pursuits, when his son George was but eleven years of age. To his somewhat solitary life in the country the doctor attributes his fondness for Nature. To him she has always had "a voice of gladness, and a smile and eloquence of beauty," and much of his life has been spent in holding communion with her visible forms. This is the secret of his preference for rural and village life, instead of the allurements of a city practice. The principal portion of his office pupilage was under the direction of Dr. Nelson Nivison, then of Mecklenburgh, Tompkins County, N. Y., now professor of physiology and pathology in the Medical Department of the Syracuse University. Dr. Fisher attended his first courses of medical lectures at the Medical Department of the University of Buffalo, at which time Austin Flint, Sr., Frank Hastings Hamilton, James P. White and other celebrated professors gave character to this excellent school of medicine. He next attended the lectures and demonstrations at the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York, where Mott, Pattison and Draper were the great luminaries of science and practice. Here he graduated in the class of 1849. Immediately thereafter he entered into a copartnership with his preceptor. In 1851 he removed to Sing Sing, where he has continued his practice to the present time. In his time he has performed most of the important operations of surgery, including amputations, trephining, ovariotomy, the Cæsarean section, the removal of uterine fibroids, and, on two occasions, the ligation of the common carotid artery, with successful results. He has been the recipient of many honors, among which was the honorary degree of Master of Arts, in 1859, from Madison University; twice the presidency of the Medical Society of Westchester County; in 1864, vice-president of the Medical Society of the State of New York, and in 1874 president of the same; corresponding member of the Boston Gynæcological Society; Fellow of the New York Academy of Medicine; member of the New York Lyceum of Natural History; corresponding member of the New York Historical Society; permanent member of the Medical Society of the State of New York, and of the American Medical Association; delegate from the Medical Society of the State of New York to the International Medical Congress in Philadelphia, in 1876, etc. He has also held the office of president of the village of Sing Sing, and was for several years physician and surgeon of the State Prisons at Sing Sing, for both males and females. For twenty years he was brigade-surgeon, N. Y. S. M., and, for a like period, United States examining surgeon in the Pension Bureau.

On several occasions he served as a volunteer surgeon for the United States Sanitary Commission, after the great battles of the Rebellion, and also as medical director of a floating hospital.

His professional essays which have been thus far printed amount to not less than one thousand octavo pages. They embrace a variety of interesting topics; among them are the following titles: "Biographical Sketches of Deceased Physicians of Westchester County, N. Y." (1861); "On the Animal Substances employed as Medicines by the Ancients" (1862); "Diploteratology," or an essay on "Double-Monsters" (*Trans. of the Med. Soc. of the State of N. Y.*, 1865–68); "A Brief History of the Discovery of the Circulation of the Blood" (*Pop. Sci. Monthly*, July, 1877); "Teratology" (*Johnson's Universal Cyclopædia*, vol. iv.); "Influence of the Maternal Mind in the Production of Malformations" (*Amer. Journ. of Insanity*, vol. xxvi. January, 1870); "Sketches of the Lives, Times

Digitized by Google

and Works of some of the Old Masters of Anatomy, Surgery and Medicine" (consisting of twenty *sketches*, in *Annals of Anatomy and Surgery*, vols. ii.–viii., 1880–83); "History of Surgery" (*International Encyclopædia of Surgery*," vol. vi., N. Y., 1886). Several minor articles could be added to the above list.

Dr. Fisher has shown a profound interest in the literature of his profession, both ancient and modern. His library, which is quite well known to the medical scholars of the country, contains about four thousand volumes, including many of the rarest books now existing, in most of the departments of the healing art. There is, perhaps, no collection of the medical classics equal to his to be found in private hands in the United States. It includes large series of works illustrating the development of anatomy, surgery, materia medica and medicine, from the earliest periods to the present time. His collections of works pertaining to the history of medicine, and the biography of physicians and surgeons, are quite extensive.

The doctor has also been to great pains and cost in collecting the bibliography of teratology, a subject to which he has bestowed special attention. Mention should also be made of his collection of medals relating to the medical profession; and, also, of his collection of more than one thousand engraved portraits of celebrated physicians, surgeons, anatomists and medical authors. His library is enriched by a well-selected collection of medical essays, embracing about three thousand pamphlets, all carefully catalogued and indexed. His private museum contains collections of typical objects in conchology, palæontology, mineralogy and archæology. The latter department is quite rich in specimens of the stone implements of the American aborigines.

It is to Dr. Fisher that we are indebted for the history of the town of Ossining, which forms one of the chapters of this work.

THE JAY FAMILY.

The Jay family,[1] so well-known throughout Westchester County, and indeed throughout the whole country, trace their ancestry to Pierre Jay, who left France on the revocation of the Edict of Nantes.

He was an active and opulant merchant, extensively and profitably engaged in commerce. He married Judith, a daughter of Mr. Francois, a merchant in Rochelle. One of her sisters married M. Mouchard, whose son was a director of the French East India Company. Pierre Jay had three sons and one daughter. The sons were Francis, who was the eldest; Augustus, born March 23, 1665 and Isaac. The daughter's name was Frances. Mr. Jay seems to have been solicitous to have one of his sons educated in England. He first sent his eldest, but he unfortunately died of sea-sickness on the passage. Notwithstanding this distressing event, he immediately sent over Augustus, who was then only twelve years old. In 1683, he recalled Augustus and sent him to Africa, but to what part or for what purpose is now unknown.

During the absence of Augustus, the persecution of the Protestants in France became severe; and Pierre Jay became one of its objects. Dragoons were quartered in his house, and his family were subjected to serious annoyance. He was imprisoned in the castle of Rochelle, but was released through the influence of some Roman Catholic connections. Having at the time several vessels out at sea which were expected soon in port, he desired a Protestant pilot in his employ to take the first of these vessels that should arrive to a place agreed upon the Island of Rhé. The ship that arrived first was one from Spain, of which he was the sole owner. The pilot was faithful to his trust, and in due time Mr. Jay reached England and rejoined his family, whom he had sent to England some time before, at Plymouth.

Augustus Jay returned to France from Africa, ignorant of these family changes. As it was unsafe to appear in Rochelle openly, he was secreted for some time by his aunt, Madame Mouchard, a Protestant, but whose husband was a Roman Catholic. With the help of his friends he escaped to the West Indies, and thence to Charleston, S. C. The climate proving unfavorable, he removed to Philadelphia and afterwards to Esopus on the Hudson River, where he entered into business; but ultimately settled in New York. He re-visited France and England in 1692, and saw his father and sister; his mother had lately died.

In 1697 he married, in New York Anna Maria, daughter of Balthazar Bayard, the descendant of a Protestant professor of theology at Paris in the reign of Louis XIII., who had been compelled to leave Paris and take refuge with his wife and children in Holland; whence several members of the family came to America. Mrs. Jay was a woman of eminent piety. It is mentioned that she died while on her knees in prayer.

Augustus Jay lived to the good old age of eighty-six, respected and esteemed by his fellow citizens, and died in New York where he had pursued his calling as a merchant with credit and success, March 10, 1751.

Peter Jay, only son of Augustus, married Mary, daughter of Jacobus VanCortlandt, January 20, 1728. Like his father, he was a merchant in the city of New York. Having earned a fortune which added to the property he had acquired by inheritance and marriage, he thought sufficient, he resolved when little more than forty years old, to retire into the country, and for this purpose purchased a farm at Rye, where he died April 17, 1782.

James Jay, third son of Peter, born October 16, 1732, became Sir James Jay, Kt.; he resided for some years in England, and returned after the Revolution

[1] The Jay family and John Clarkson Jay, M.D., (compiled from a sketch of the Jay family in "Baird's History of Rye.")

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

John C. Jay

Digitized by Google

to New York, where he lived until his death, October 20, 1815. On his return from England in 1784 or 1785, he brought propositions from the Countess of Huntington to some of the States of the Union, for establishing settlements of emigrants among the Indians, with a view to civilizing them, and converting them to Christianity. General Washington in a letter to him dated January 25, 1785, expresses his entire approval of the plan, and suggests that it should be brought before Congress.[1]

Peter, fourth son of Peter Jay, and brother of the former, was born December 19, 1734, and married in 1789, Mary Duyckinck. Though he had the misfortune of losing his eyesight in early life through an attack of small-pox, many interesting stories are related of his ingenuity and sagacity and he is said to have possessed a fine mind and an excellent character.

John Jay, sixth son of Peter, was born December 12, 1745. His boyhood was spent at Rye and New Rochelle. He was admitted to the bar in 1768. On April 28, 1774, he married Sarah, daughter of William Livingston, afterwards governor of New Jersey. He soon took a foremost position in the politics of the country, and was prominent in the debates of the first and the second Continental Congress. In 1777 he was appointed chief justice of the State of New York. In 1778 he was elected president of Congress. In 1779 he was sent as Minister to Spain, and from thence, in 1780, went to Paris as Commissioner to assist in the negotiation of a treaty of peace with Great Britain. He returned to New York in 1784, after an absence of five years, and was received with tokens of esteem and admiration. December 21, 1784, he was appointed by Congress, secretary for foreign affairs, and held the office for five years. He was one of the contributors to *The Federalist*. In 1789 he was appointed chief justice of the United States,—an office which he was the first to fill. In 1794 he was sent as special Minister to London, upon a delicate and most important mission, relating to difficulties growing out of unsettled boundaries and certain commercial complications. He discharged this duty with great ability, and upon his return to America, in 1795, was elected by a large majority Governor of the State of New York. At the end of three years he was reelected, and at the expiration of a second term was solicited to become a candidate for election a third time. But he had determined to renounce public life, and though nominated again in 1800, to the office of chief justice of the United States, declined the honor, and retired to his paternal estate, at Bedford; a property—part of the Van Cortlandt estate—which his father had acquired by marriage with Mary, a daughter of Jacobus Van Cortlandt. There he lived for twenty-eight years a peaceful and honored life. In 1827 he was seized with severe illness, and after two years of weakness and suffering, was struck with palsy, May 14, 1829, and died three days after. He was buried in the family cemetery at Rye. His public reputation as a patriot and statesman of the Revolution was second only to that of Washington, and his private character as a man and a Christian is singularly free from stain or blemish.[2]

Peter Augustus, eldest son of John Jay, was born January 24, 1776. He graduated from Columbia College in 1794 and studied law under Peter J. Monroe. He married Mary Rutherford, daughter of General Matthew Clarkson, and became prominent in the legal profession and public affairs. He was a member of the State Assembly in 1816; recorder of New York in 1818; a member of the convention which framed the constitution of the State in 1821, and for many years president of the New York Historical Society, trustee of Columbia College, etc. He received the degree of LL.D. in 1831, from Harvard, and in 1835 from Columbia. He died February 20, 1843.

John Clarkson Jay, M.D., eldest son of Peter Augustus, was born September 11, 1808, and married Laura, daughter of Nathaniel Prime. He is the proprietor of the estate at Rye, and the present well-known representative of the family in Westchester County. After a thorough preparation in private schools, among which were those of the blind teacher, Mr. Nelson, and the McCulloch school at Morristown, N. Y., he entered Columbia College, from which he graduated, together, with the late Secretary of State, Hamilton Fish, and many other distinguished men in the class of 1827.[3] In 1831 he took his degree as M.D. He has been a deep student of natural history, especially of conchology, and the valuable collection of shells, formerly in his possession, and which is now in the New York Museum of Natural History, having been purchased by Miss Wolf and presented to that institution by her, in memory of her father, has the reputation of being the finest in the country. On this branch Dr. Jay has written several pamphlets, among which are the following: "Catalogue of Recent Shells, etc.," New York, 1835, 8vo, pp. 56; "Description of New and Rare Shells, with four plates," New York, 1836, 2d ed., pp. 78; "A Catalogue, &c., together with a description of new and Rare Species," New York, pp. 125, 4to., ten plates. The article on shells in the narrative of Commodore Perry's expedition to Japan, is also by him. He has been connected with many prominent literary and social organizations, both in Westchester County and in the city of New York, where he spends much of his time. He has been for many years a trustee of Columbia College, and has, at two different periods, served as trustee of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of the City of New York. He was one of the founders and at one time recording secretary of the New York Yacht Club, the annals of which will show the lively interest which he took in its management and general

[1] "Writings of Washington," by Jared Sparks. Vol. IX., pp. 86–89.

[2] "The Life of John Jay," in 2 vols. By his son, William Jay.

[3] See "Continued Catalogue of Columbia College."

Digitized by Google

affairs. The records of the New York Lyceum of Natural History, now known as the New York Academy of Natural Sciences, will exhibit the interest manifested by him in that most useful organization.

Dr. Jay is an Episcopalian and has been connected for many years with Christ Church, Rye, of which he is warden. He is well known throughout Westchester County, where he has long been greatly appreciated for his social and literary qualities.

These and many other illustrious names have adorned the history of the Jay family in America, the members of which have ever been faithful to their country, faithful to their religion and faithful to themselves. Their residence there has added lustre to Westchester County, and their noble influence will be remembered while American history continues to be read.

WILLIAM ANDERSON VARIAN.

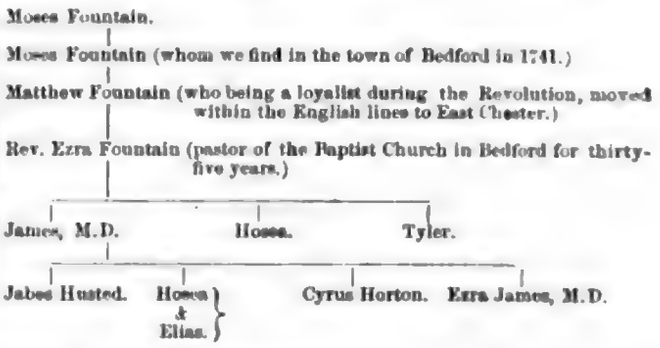
William Anderson Varian, M.D., is descended from an old French family, who came to this country at an early date, the regular line of descent being as follows: First, Isaac, who was living in New York in 1720 and died about 1800; second, James, born January 10, 1734, died December 11, 1800; third, James, born November 22, 1765, died December 26, 1841; fourth, Dr. William A. Varian, who was born at Scarsdale January 23, 1820. His mother was Elizabeth, daughter of John Cornell, a member of the Society of Friends and of a family noted for patriotism and virtue. He attended school in his native place up to the age of sixteen, and then went to White Plains, where he was a student at the academy for three years. He then entered the office of Livingston Roe, M.D., and continued with him for the same period. The death of his father, which occurred about that time, rendered it necessary for him to labor for his own support, and for a while he was employed as a teacher in East Chester. He afterwards entered the office of Dr. James R. Wood, a prominent physician of New York, and remained under his instruction for three years, at the same time attending the lectures at the medical department of the University of the City of New York, where he graduated, with the degree of M.D., March 4, 1846. After practicing for one year in New York he removed to King's Bridge, which has ever since been his home, and has been constantly employed in the practice of his profession. In 1849 he purchased a portion of the old Macomb estate and erected his present residence. He married Frances Elizabeth, daughter of Francis Losee, September 11, 1845. Their children were Sarah (deceased), Pamelia (wife of Maynard L. Granger), James (of Neola, Iowa), George Dibble (deceased), Sarah and Alice (both deceased).

Dr. Varian is one of the oldest residents of King's Bridge and thoroughly acquainted with the history of the locality and its early families. When he commenced practice, the country round was thinly settled, and his rides to visit his patients extended from One Hundred and Tenth Street on one hand to Greenburgh on the other. He was also frequently called to the villages on the western bank of the Hudson, and on one occasion, while crossing during a cold winter night, his boat became fast in the floes of floating ice and drifted below Fort Washington; he and his two companions narrowly escaping a watery grave. He was present when ground was broken for the Hudson River Railroad and was surgeon for the company of contractors, they paying him at the rate of twenty-five cents a month for each man on the work.

In 1850 he made the acquaintance of Dr. Edwin N. Bibby, a prominent physician of New York, and this acquaintance ripened into a deep friendship, which lasted till the death of Dr. Bibby, in 1882. He was for many years his family physician, Dr. Bibby having retired from practice and spent the last years of his life on the Van Cortlandt Manor. During the late war Dr. Varian was a strong friend of the Union and plainly outspoken in his sentiments. During the riots in 1863 his life was repeatedly threatened, and for a while he made his professional visits armed with a double-barreled gun and a revolver, which he would have unhesitatingly used had occasion required. In politics and religion he maintains independent and liberal views, and the evening of his life is passed in the enjoyment of friends and home. He had for many years been one of the police surgeons of New York and commands the respect of his professional brethren.

HOSEA FOUNTAIN, M.D.

Hosea Fountain, M.D., the second son of James Fountain, M.D., was born at Jefferson Valley, a hamlet in the northern portion of Yorktown, July 24, 1817. His ancestry, both paternal and maternal, were English. The Fountain family, probably, were of Norman origin, and are supposed to be descended from Sir John Fountain, a monument to whom is found in a village church-yard in Devonshire, England. Moses Fountain emigrated from Bedfordshire, England, in 1650. The genealogy is as follows,—



Dr. Fountain's maternal grandfather lived at Coscob, Conn., prior to the Revolution, but being a loyalist his property was confiscated and he was obliged to accept a settlement at the hands of the British government at St. John, New Brunswick. Charlotte Husted was born there, but at the age of twelve or thirteen years, came to New York to reside

Digitized by Google

William Wilberforce Esq.

Digitized by Google

G
ceased.

Dr. Va.
Bridge and t.
the locality and
menced practice, t.
tled, and his rides to vis.

Digitized by Google

William Warren Ebbs

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

with her aunt, who was a Van Guilder. Here, doubtless, Dr. James Fountain made her acquaintance.

Hosea Fountain received his English education in the district school of his native village, and at a school kept by a Rev. Mr. Patterson, in Patterson, Putnam County, N. Y. His professional studies were pursued at several schools. He attended the medical department of Fairfield College, Fairfield, N. Y., 1835–36; Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, Pa., 1836–37; College of Physicians and Surgeons New York, 1837–38, and would have graduated at the latter in March, 1838, if he had reached his majority. For this reason we find him in 1838–39 at the Medical Institution of Yale College, New Haven, Ct. He received his degree of M.D. March 26, 1839, from the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York, and spent six months in the New York Hospital. He practiced medicine with his father at Jefferson Valley for a time, and after his marriage with Mary Horton, daughter of Joel and Harriet Montrous Horton, in February 19, 1840, he settled at Peekskill. In 1843 he removed to Somers, and later in 1854 or 1855 he purchased the property on which he resided, until his death, August 28, 1885. Yorktown and the adjoining town of Somers were the field of his professional labors, until April, 1884, more than forty years. He was laid to rest September 1, 1885. The funeral took place in the Presbyterian Church, which was filled with those who, themselves or in their families, had had the benefit at one time or another of his professional services. June 20, 1872, he married, as his second wife, Mary Brett, daughter of James and Helen Ann Brett, of Fishkill and grand-daughter of Ebenezer White, M.D., of Somers. She survives him. The issue of the first marriage are Harriet Louise, Elias, Charlotte (now Mrs. Erskine Westervelt, of Hackensack, N. J.), and Mary Emma (now Mrs. Theodore F. Tompkins, of Yorktown.) Of the second, Grace, Elias Fountain (who was second lieutenant of the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, and died from the effects of a wound received at Cedar Creek, Va., October 19, 1864), and his sister, Harriet Louise, who died ten days later from a gangrenous sore-throat, contracted from him while caring for him in his last illness.

Hosea Fountain

THE HASBROUCK FAMILY.

The Hasbrouck family is of French Huguenot origin, and descended from Abraham Hasbroucq, who was a native of Calais. His father moved to the Palatinate, in Germany, with his two sons, Jean and Abraham, and a daughter. Here they lived for several years, and in 1675 Abraham Hasbroucq came to America "with several of his acquaintances, the descendants or followers of Peter Waldus." He landed at Boston, and in July, 1675, found his way to Esopus, Ulster County, N. Y., where he found his brother Jean, "who had come two years before." The next year he married Marie, daughter of Christian Duyou (Deyo), with whom he was acquainted in the Palatinate. She died March 27, 1741, at the age of eighty-eight. In 1677 he, with twelve others, obtained a patent from Governor Andross, for a large tract of land at New Paltz, in Ulster County, where he and his brother settled and "lived and died there." Abraham Hasbroucq was one of the founders of the Walloon Protestant Church, at New Paltz. He was a very prominent citizen, and for many years a member of the Provincial Assembly. On Sunday, March 17, 1717, he was struck with apoplexy, "whereof he died very suddenly at a very good old age, and rests in the Lord till his coming to judge both the quick and the dead." He left five children,—Joseph, Solomon (who died April 3, 1753), Daniel (died January 25th, 1759, aged sixty-seven), Benjamin and Rachel, (wife of Louis Dubois).

Joseph, the eldest son, married, in 1706, Elsie, daughter of Captain Joachim Schoonmaker, whose father, Hendrick Joakimse Schoonmaker, "was a native of Hanse Town, in Germany." Joseph Hasbrouck died January 28, 1723–24, age forty years and three months. His wife, Elsie, died July 27, 1764, aged seventy-eight years, eight months, three days, "and was buried at New Paltz by the side of her husband. She brought up all her children in honor and credit." They left "six sons and four daughters,"—Abraham; Isaac D.; Rachel, born 1715, died 1756, wife of Jan Eltinge; Mary, wife of Abraham Hardenberg, born

Digitized by Google

January 10, 1714, died 1774; Sarah, wife of William Osterhoudt, born February 21, 1709, died 1780; Benjamin; Jacob, who married Mary Hoornbeck; and Colonel Jonathan.[1] The names of one son and one daughter do not appear. Abraham, the eldest son, was born on the old family homestead at Guilford, Ulster County, August 21, 1707. He married his first cousin, Catharine Bruyn, January 5, 1788–89. She was born June 24, 1720, and died August 10, 1793. She was a daughter of Jacobus Bruyn, and his wife, Tryntie, who was a daughter of Captain Joakim Schoonmaker, and died August 27, 1763, aged seventy-eight. The father of Jacobus Bruyn "was a native of Norway, and came here in the Dutch time, and married Gertruy Esselstein." Jacobus Bruyn lived at Bruynswyck, in Ulster County, and died November 21, 1744, aged sixty-four. He had a sister Esther, who married Zachariah Hoffman. Abraham Hasbrouck was one of the most prominent men of Ulster County, and was for thirty years a member of the Legislature. He settled in Kingston in 1735, and died there November 10, 1791, and "was buried the next day with the honors of war." He left eight children,—Elsie, wife of Abraham Salisbury; Catharine, wife of Abram Houghtaling; Mary, wife of David Bevier; Jonathan, who married Catharine, daughter of Cornelius and Catharine Wynkoop; Joseph, who married Elizabeth Bevier; Jacobus, who married Maria, daughter of Charles De Witt; and Daniel, who married Rachel, daughter of Colonel Jonathan Hasbrouck (his uncle), of Newburgh.

Isaac Hasbrouck, the second son of Joseph, was born March 12, 1712 (o.s.). In 1766 he married Antie Low, widow of John Van Gaasbeck. They had three children—Joseph, Elsie and Jane, wife of John Crispell. Isaac died April 6, 1778, "and was buried at the Shawangunk church-yard, near the burying-place of Jacobus Bruyn's family." His widow, Antie, died October 2, 1784.

Joseph Hasbrouck, the son of Isaac and Antie, married Cornelia, daughter of Edmond Schoonmaker, and they were the parents of nine children—Stephen; Sarah, wife of David Tuttle; Maria, wife of Thomas Ostrander; Jane, wife of Cornelius De Witt; Katy, wife of Samuel Johnson; Levi, George, Abel and Augustus.

Augustus Hasbrouck married Jane Eltinge, and left children—Dr. Stephen, of Yonkers; Dr. Joseph, of Dobbs Ferry; Wilhelmus, Cornelius, Richard, Augustus, Cornelia, wife of William Simpson, Abraham, James H., Aaron, David, Herman and Edward.

[1] Col. Jonathan Hasbrouck was the youngest child, and was born April 12, 1722. He married Tryntie, daughter of Cornelius Dubois, and settled in Newburgh. He died July 31, 1780, and "was buried on his own land by two of his sons, between his house and the North River." His homestead is the famous "Washington's Headquarters," at Newburgh, now owned by the State of New York. He left children—Cornelius, Isaac, Jonathan, Rachel and Mary. He was a very tall man, being six feet four inches in height.

Stephen Hasbrouck, M.D., son of Augustus Hasbrouck and Jane Elting, was born in Bergen County, N. J., January 29, 1842. His maternal grandfather was pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church at Paramus for thirty years. At the age of fourteen young Hasbrouck went to Great Falls, Mass., where he engaged as a clerk. He stayed three years, then returned home, and attended the Normal School at Trenton, and afterwards entered business as a commission merchant in New York. In 1862 he entered the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and afterwards studied in the New York Homœopathic Medical College. At the close of the late war a colony from New Orleans, composed of persons who had been disloyal to the Union, resolved to seek a new home in Brazil. They numbered about three hundred souls, and engaged the services of Dr. Hasbrouck as surgeon to the expedition. The experience of a few years convinced most of them that they had not bettered their condition by leaving their native country, and, through the influence of Dr. Hasbrouck, the captains of some of the United States war vessels were induced to bring back the relics of the colony, who returned much better reconciled to the government and the starry flag than when they went away. While in Brazil he wrote a history of the practice of homœopathy in that country, which was published by the *New England Medical Gazette*. He was on the island of St. Thomas during the hurricane and earthquake which devastated it, and published the first description of the fearful scene of destruction. On his return he graduated from the New York Homœopathic Medical College, and settled at Dobbs Ferry, where he remained three years in the practice of his profession. In 1874 he removed to New York, where he stayed till 1881, when he made a very extensive tour in Europe and the East, visiting Egypt and Palestine and most of the countries of the Old World. Returning from his travels in 1883, he settled in Yonkers, which has since been his home.

He married Anna M., daughter of Captain John Stillwell, of New York, and has two children—Augustus and Mabel. He holds a good position among the members of the homœopathic medical profession, and is esteemed as a useful and worthy citizen.

Dr. Hasbrouck's maternal grandfather, Wilhelmus Elting, was of Huguenot origin, and his ancestry could be traced back to Henry IV. of France. Dr. Hasbrouck was a surgeon in the Brazilian army during the war with Paraguay, and, while in South America, passed through several epidemics of small-pox and cholera. He was in St. Thomas during a violent epidemic of yellow fever, and the good results that followed his methods of treatment proved their efficacy.

Joseph Hasbrouck, M.D., was born in Bergen County, New Jersey, March 20, 1839, and remained in his native village till the age of fifteen, when he

Digitized by Google

Stephen Harbouck M.D.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Joseph Hasbrouck

Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Levi W. Hagg

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

commenced teaching school, in which he was engaged for two years.

At the establishment of the New Jersey Normal School he entered that institution, and graduated in due time. He then engaged in teaching until he reached the age of twenty-nine. During the latter part of this period he pursued the study of medicine, and in 1869 graduated from the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York. He immediately investigated the system of homœopathy, and has since practiced it. His first year of practice was at Goshen, Orange County, N. Y. From thence he removed to Newton, Sussex County, N. J., and was the first to practice homœopathy in that county. In 1875 he removed to Dobbs Ferry, which has since been his place of residence. He is a member of the Westchester County Homœopathic Medical Society, and was its president for two years. He has been four times married. His wives were Sarah and Anna D., both daughters of Elias Dayton, of New Jersey, and cousins of Hon. Wm. L. Dayton; Emma, daughter of Steven Archer; and Ellen M., daughter of Rev. D. L. Marks, of the New York Conference. Of the children of Dr. Hasbrouck, his eldest son, Dayton, who died January 13, 1885, at the age of twenty four, was at the time of his death a member of the senior class of the New York Homœopathic College. His surviving children are Edith S. and Mabel E., twin daughters, and an infant son, David Marks.

Although not a professional politician, he has always taken a deep interest in political affairs, and is especially interested in all that pertains to the welfare of the locality in which he lives. He has been for several years a member of the Board of Education of Dobbs Ferry, and is its present president. He is also health officer of the village, and president of the savings bank. He has been connected with the Republican party since its organization, and has always taken a deep interest in its success.

His residence is one of the historical land marks of Westchester County. It is the old Livingston mansion, formerly the residence of Van Brugh Livingston. It was at this house that General Washington, Governor Clinton and General Sir Guy Tarleton met on the suspension of hostilities, May 3, 1783, to arrange for the evacuation of New York. The mansion, which is a well-preserved relic of olden times, stands on the east side of the old Albany post road, a short distance below Livingston Avenue. The place was sold by Van Brugh Livingston to Steven Archer in 1836, and was his residence till the time of his death, which occurred in 1877, and was purchased from his heirs by Dr. Hasbrouck in 1882.

Dr. Levi Wells Flagg was born in West Hartford, Conn., February 14, 1817. After receiving a thorough primary education, he became a student of Yale College, where he graduated in 1839. Among his classmates were Charles Astor Bristed and John Sherwood, of New York, Rev. Francis Wharton, joint author of "Wharton and Stille's Medical Jurisprudence," and Hon. H. L. Dawes, of Massachusetts, ex-Governor Hall of Missouri, Prof. J. D. Whitney, of California, the eminent chemist and geologist, and others who have become distinguished.

After graduating he went south and spent three years in teaching in St. Francisville, Louisiana. Returning to his native place in 1842, he studied medicine for a year with Dr. Pinckney W. Ellsworth. At the expiration of that time removing to New York City, he entered the office of Prof. Willard Parker, with whom he remained two years. In 1847 he graduated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons (old Crosby Street school), and in the following year established himself in Yonkers as an allopathic physician. Shortly afterward he was induced to investigate homœopathy, the result being a conviction as he said of its superiority over the old system of practice. He at once became its strong advocate and the pioneer practitioner in the county. His success in introducing the new system was most marked; he grew rapidly in favor with the community, acquiring wealth and a pre-eminent position among the physicians of the locality.

Notwithstanding his change of faith, the relations between himself and his old teacher, Professor Parker, greatly to the honor of the latter ever continued of the most friendly character.

Dr. Flagg avoided politics entirely, and never held any public office of a political character. He always devoted himself wholly to his profession, in which he was a zealous and untiring worker; a portion of a year spent in Europe and a short time in Mexico, being almost the only relaxation he allowed himself between the commencement of his practice and his death on May 15, 1884.

When, in 1865, the Westchester County Homœopathic Medical Society was organized, he was elected its president and held that office for three years. He was also a member of the American Institute of Homœopathy.

He married on May 17, 1848, Charlotte Whitman, of Hartford, Conn., and had eight children, five of whom are still living. Their names are Howard W., Marietta W., Lucy W., George A. and Robert N. Flagg, M. D., who succeeds to the practice of his father.[1]

It is with pleasure that we present our readers with the above brief outline sketch of one of the most popular and successful physicians as well as most useful and upright citizens that it has ever been the good fortune of Westchester County to possess. Dr. Flagg came to Yonkers when the village was in its infancy and for thirty-six years watched its development and growth. No one was or could be better known than he. By his steadfast integrity, his pro-

[1] The above with slight modification is from the "Biographical cyclopedia of homœopathic physicians and surgeons." (S. A. George & Co. 1873.)

Digitized by Google

fessional ability and his genial and winning manner he won for himself the respect of the business community, an extensive and lucrative practice and a high social standing. His death not only creates a vacancy beside the family hearth, but is also a loss to the city and county in which he lived, which is irreparable.

ADRIAN K. HOFFMAN.

Dr. Adrian K. Hoffman, who is remembered as one of the most distinguished physicians of Westchester County, was born at the Manor of Livingston, in Columbia County, March 26, 1797. Entering the profession of medicine at an early age, his first experience was on a three years' cruise as surgeon's mate on board the United States man-of-war "Franklin," commanded by Commodore (afterwards Admiral) Charles Stewart. After his return Dr. Hoffman settled at Sing Sing, and for nearly half a century practiced his profession with great success. His reputation was widely extended, and he was justly esteemed by his fellow-citizens as a wise and skillful physician and a prudent and able man of business. He was chosen several times as president of the village of Sing Sing by unanimous elections.

He married Jane, daughter of Dr. John Thompson, of Saratoga County, with whom he had studied medicine. The issue of this marriage were Cornelia, who married Alfred Buckhout, and died in January, 1866; John Thompson, who became in succession twice recorder, twice mayor of the city of New York and twice Governor of the State, and who married Ella, daughter of Henry Starkweather, of New York; Mary E., wife of Colonel Charles O. Joline; Emma Kissam, who married Rev. M. M. Wells, and occupies the homestead at Sing Sing; and Katharine, who first married Captain Charles C. Hyatt, United States Army, and, after his decease, married General William H. Morris.

After a long life of active usefulness Dr. Hoffman died May 6, 1871, universally beloved and mourned by all his neighbors. On the day of his funeral the houses and places of business were draped in mourning and all business was suspended. He is spoken of with loving respect by those who knew him and yet survive, and by the children of others, with whom his name is a household word.

HENRY ERNEST SCHMID, M.D.

Henry Ernest Schmid, M.D., who is a well-known member of the medical profession, was born in Saxony, Prussia, May 1, 1824. His father, who was a publisher and connected with the famous family of Tauchnitz, intended him to follow his profession. After receiving his early education at the great Latin school at Halle, Dr. Schmid commenced a higher literary course for that purpose. His father, unfortunately, incurred the censure of the government, and this changed the whole tenor of the son's life. The latter emigrated to this country in 1853, and soon after his arrival went to Virginia, and having an early predilection for the study of medicine, pursued that branch of science at Winchester and at the University of Virginia. For a while he was connected with a newspaper in Richmond, and in 1859 was sent, under the auspices of the Episcopal Board of Foreign Missions, as medical missionary to Japan. While in that country he organized a hospital and his practice increased to an enormous extent among the natives, who were quick to learn the superiority of foreign practitioners. Owing to the failure of his health he obtained a position on board the flag-ship of an English surveying fleet as interpreter. In this capacity he visited Corea and northern China, Borneo, Java and Sumatra. The ship, having narrowly escaped destruction in a typhoon, went to Cape Town for repairs, and Dr. Schmid embraced the opportunity to make an extensive tour in southern Africa. He afterwards went to St. Helena and the Azores, and thence to England, returning to this country in 1862.

He came to White Plains, Westchester County, in 1859, when he made a short visit. Upon his return from England he settled in this place, and has been engaged in the practice of his profession to the present time. With a devoted love of science, Dr. Schmid, while in Japan, made many valuable collections for the Smithsonian Institution, which led to his being made a member of the Oriental Society, and of the American Association for the Advancement of Science.

In his profession he has enjoyed a very extensive practice, and is justly considered one of the leading physicians of the county. He is a member of the American Medical Association, the State Medical Society and the Westchester County Medical Society. As a prominent citizen of the village he is president of the Board of Health, and of the Board of Education, and is a member of the vestry of Grace Episcopal Church. He is also the physician in charge of St. Vincent Retreat for the Insane. He married Eugenia, daughter of Eugene T. Prudhomme, of White Plains, and they have three children—Theodora, Gertrude and Permetta.

CHARLES J. NORDQUIST.

The father of Charles J. Nordquist, M.D., the well-known physician, was Lars Peter Nordquist, who was born at Sounerly, in Sweden, March 29, 1781. He was a surgeon in the Swedish army, which he entered April 22, 1802, remaining in the employ of the government till his decease, in 1824. He was an eminent physician and was the recipient of many high appointments both in military and civil life. On the 16th and 17th of March, 1809, he accompanied the Royal Mounted Life Guards in their retreat upon the ice over the Gulf of Bothnia, and afterward became surgeon to Bernadoth, King of Sweden. On January 3, 1812, he married Sophia Christina Weu-

Digitized by Google

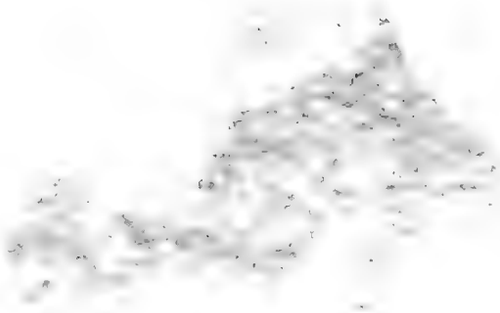
A. H. Hoffman

Digitized by Google

H Ernest Schmid.

Digitized by Google

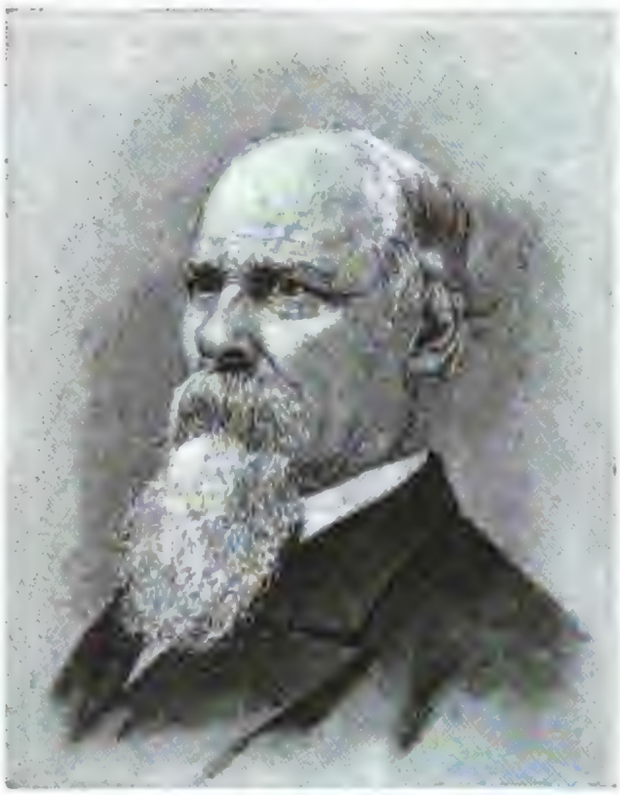
Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

gren (daughter of Ivan Weugren and Sophia Christina Habicht) who was born December 18, 1782, and died June 10, 1830.

Charles J., their son, was born at Jousered, near Gottenberg, Sweden, on the 16th of July, 1821. He was left at three years of age in the care of his father's cousin, Lars Peter Afzelius, dean of Alingsas, who sent him at the age of nine to the high school in that place. Here he remained for eight years, when he removed to Stockholm for the purpose of acquainting himself with the drug trade. After three years of practical experience as a pharmacist, he entered the Carlingasta Institute, where he studied medicine, graduating in 1842. A year spent in traveling through Europe followed his graduation, after which he sailed for the United States, arriving at New York in 1843. He engaged first as a drug clerk, but in 1848, having meanwhile mastered the English language, he established a store of his own on the corner of Broome and Mulberry Streets, New York.



Disposing of this at a profit to himself, he engaged until 1854 in the fitting out and selling of drug-stores. He then entered the University Medical College of the city of New York, from which he graduated in 1856. After practicing two years in New York City, he removed to Tuckahoe, N. Y. In 1861 he joined the Ninth Regiment as surgeon, and like his father's, his army life was an eventful one. From the time he was commissioned, he rose rapidly in favor with his superiors and received one mark of respect after another with enviable rapidity. He was appointed chief surgeon of the Third Brigade, medical director of the Second Division, and finally medical inspector of the First Army Corps.

Chas J. Nordquist M.D.

On February 1, 1864, he received a note of thanks from the commanding general for the efficient manner in which he had performed his duties; and two years after the departure of the Ninth Regiment from New York, he was presented by its non-commissioned officers and privates with a handsome gold watch and chain as a token of their respect and esteem.

Unlike some of the officers of the late war, Dr. Nordquist did not make use of his official power to shirk his duty in the hour of danger, but was present and actively engaged at every battle, in which his division participated. On the fields of Harper's Ferry, Cedar Mountain, Rappahannock Station, Thoroughfare Gap, Second Bull Run, Chantilly, South Mountain, Antietam, First Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, The Wilderness, Laurel Hill, Spottsylvania and Coal Harbor he was present in person, administering the comforts of his profession to the sick and dying soldiery. As a surgeon, he was most successful, and several of his cases are mentioned in the surgical history of the war of the Rebellion.

At the battle of Gettysburg, on the 1st of July, 1863, he was taken prisoner by the Confederates and was held for three days and nights upon one pint of flour without the means of preparing it for food. Being placed by his captors in one of the churches of the town, he escaped by crawling into the steeple and remaining concealed till the advance of the Union troops. On June 23, 1864, he closed his career in the army and sought again the quiet of his home in Tuckahoe. Here he has since remained, honored and respected among his associates in the profession and looked up to with pleasure by the many friends who surround the home of his adoption.

He is a Republican in politics, and held the office of coroner for four years. He is a member of the Lutheran Church, and is well-known for his liberality. He married on April 28, 1846, Harriet Louise Goodwin, and has had three children, all daughters, of whom one died in early youth and two still survive and are married.

D. JEROME SANDS.

To chronicle within the limits of this work, all that is either important or interesting in the record of a family prominent in English and American history for a period of more than eight hundred years would be impossible, and but a brief outline of it can be given here.

The first trace of the family is found in the reign of

Digitized by Google

Edward the Confessor (son of Ethelred and Emma) before the conquest, 1042 to 1066, when Ulnod dwelt in the Isle of Wight, in the County of Hampshire, at a place called Sandes. From this the surname (at the time of the Holy Wars) of Sandes, Sandis, Sandys, Sands is derived. Sir John Sandys of Hampshire was a knight-baronet, in the reign of Richard II., 1377–1399. John Sands, born in 1485 at Horborm, Straffordshire, died in 1625 at the age of one hundred and forty. His wife lived to be one hundred and twenty years old. Sir William Sandys was the first baron of the name. By his eminent services to the Kings Henry VII. and VIII., he advanced his family to wealth and honor. He was prominent in the suppression of the Cornish Rebellion, and was created Lord Sandys in 1524 by Henry VIII., who appointed him Lord Chamberlain in 1526. The same king made him a Knight of the Garter and employed him in the wars with France, after which he was created Baron.

Sir William, Lord Sandys, his grandson, was a member of Parliament, and one of the commissioners appointed by Queen Elizabeth for the trial of Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk, January 16, 1571; also for that of Mary Queen of Scots, October 12, 1586, and Philip Howard, Earl of Arundel, April 18, 1589. He was imprisoned for a short time in 1600 for joining with Robert, Earl of Sussex, in an insurrection in London. His princely mansion at Basingstoke, called the Vine, was famous as the reception place of the State embassy sent by King Henry IV. of France to Queen Elizabeth in 1601.

Edwin Sandys, D. D., was an eminent Prelate of England. He was born in 1519, became Master of St. Catherine College in 1547, Prebendary of Peterboro in 1549 and of Carlisle in 1552. He was Vice-Chancellor of Cambridge University in 1553, and a strong advocate of the reformation. He preached a sermon in favor of the royal claims of Lady Jane Grey, and refused to proclaim Mary Queen of Scots, for which he was deprived of his honors, sent to the Tower and afterward to Marshalsea, where he was imprisoned for seven months.

Pursued by the persecution of his enemies, he escaped from England in May 1554. In 1558, after the coronation of Elizabeth, he returned to England. Under her, he held many important positions. He was one of the nine Protestants sent to dispute with nine Catholics before Parliament, and in 1559 became Bishop of Worcester. He was appointed by Queen Elizabeth one of a commission under Bishop Parker to prepare a new translation of the Bible, known as the Bishops' Bible. In 1570 he became Bishop of London, and in 1576 Archbishop of York. He died at the Archiepiscopal palace of Southwell, July 10, 1588, and his alabaster tomb and effigy are looked upon by visitors to this day with peculiar interest.

[1] Sir Edwin Sandys, son of the preceding, born in Worcester, 1561, was an English statesman of great ability. He traveled extensively on the continent, after which he published "Europæ Speculum, or a Survey of the State of Religion in the Western part of the World." He was knighted by James I. in 1603, and became an influential member of the Second London Company for Virginia, into which he introduced the vote by ballot. He was the treasurer or chief officer of the company, and was indefatigable in promoting public prosperity and security. In 1620, Spanish influence having been exerted against him, King James, in violation of the charter, forbade his re-election. [2] George, a brother of Sir Edwin, was a famous English poet. He was educated at Oxford, and published "A Relation of a Journey Begun A.D. 1610, in Four Books, Containing a Description of the Turkish Empire, of Egypt, of the Holy Land and of the Remote Parts of Italy and Adjoining Islands;" also a "Translation of Ovid's 'Metamorphoses.'" In 1621 he became colonial treasurer of Virginia, where he distinguished himself by his public zeal. He executed all orders concerning staple commodities; to him is due the building of the first water mill; he promoted the establishment of iron works in 1621, and in the following

[1] From Appleton's "Encyclopædia."
[2] Also from Appleton.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Norman R. Freeman M.D.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

year introduced ship building. While in Virginia he translated the last ten books of the "Metamorphoses," and, after returning to England, in 1626, he published the translation of the whole. He also wrote poetical versions of the Psalms, of the Book of Job, Ecclesiastes, Lamentations, etc., and of the Song of Solomon. His life, by the Rev. J. H. Todd, is prefixed to "Selections from Sandy's Metrical Paraphrases." (London, 1839.) Samuel Sandys, who, in 1741, accused Sir Robert Walpole of fraud and corruption, was appointed Chancellor of the Exchequer, in 1742; created Lord Sandys by George II., 1743; was First Commissioner of the Board of Trade, 1761; and died 1770. These and many other gentlemen whose names are conspicuous in English history, were members of the family in the direct line. Though many of their descendants have also been prominent in this country, the family is still influential in England. Its present representative there is Baron Augustus Frederick Arthur Sandys, born March 1, 1849; married, August 3, 1872, Augustus Ann, second daughter of the late Charles Des Voeux, Bart. His seat is at Ombersley Court, Droitwich. The first known member of the American family was Henry Sandy, who came to Boston, Mass., and established himself as a merchant. He was prominent as a religious worker, and upon one occasion, when he, with others, was in the act of starting a new church at Rowley, a clerk called him Sands, which was the origin of the present spelling.

D. Jerome Sands, M.D., president of the village of Port Chester, and one of the first physicians in Westchester County, is one of his direct descendants. In his qualities of perseverance and persistency in support of principle, Dr. Sands strongly resembles his illustrious ancestry. He was born November 26, 1814, and was the second child of David Sands and Elizabeth Brady, of New Castle, N. Y. His father, who was a farmer and civil engineer, early sent him to the school at his native place, after which he also attended a higher academy at Sing Sing, N. Y. After leaving Sing Sing he spent a year or two in farming and study together. At the close of this time he entered the College of Physicians and Surgeons of the city of New York, graduating in 1840. Shortly after this he began the long and successful professional career, in Port Chester, which has ended not only in the possession of an extended and lucrative practice, but in winning a host of warm and steadfast friends.

Dr. Sands has given much of his time to outside work. He is at present a director of the First National Bank of Port Chester. For over ten years he was trustee of the village, and is now its president. He is also health officer of the town and a member of the County Medical Society. He married, on the 27th of April, 1842, Miss Ann Maria Green, of Port Chester, and has had three children,—one daughter, who died in childhood, and two sons, who are still living. Morton J. Sands, M.D., the oldest, practices with his father, and Purdy G., the youngest, who holds the position of town clerk, is a civil engineer at Port Chester. Dr. Sands has also a grandchild,—Benjamin J., a son of Morton J.

NORMAN K. FREEMAN.

Norman K. Freeman, M.D., who is the oldest physician in the southern portion of Westchester County, was born in Warren, Herkimer County, N. Y., May 3, 1814. The ancestors of the family were three brothers who came from the north of England, where the home is still found, in the latter part of the seventeenth century. They landed in Philadelphia, but one of them went to Massachusetts, and has many descendants in that portion of the country and in the northern part of this State. Another of the brothers was drowned in the Delaware River, and his widow, with the surviving brother, made their home at Woodbridge, N. J., where four generations of their descendants are interred in the old burying-ground.

Thomas Freeman, one of the descendants, was a soldier of the Revolution and a prisoner in the Sugar-House in New York, and on board a prison ship, from which he escaped by swimming. He married Sallie Moore, of Scotch descent. Their children were John, Smith, Ariel, Thomas, Linus, Moores, Rachel (wife of Moses Freeman, her cousin), Polly (wife of Thomas Edgar) and Henry. Of these children, Henry Freeman was born June 21, 1789. In his early manhood he learned the trade of a carpenter and subsequently went to Warren, where his uncle Isaac resided, and was the builder of the first mill in that place. He remained there till 1822, when he removed to Richfield, Otsego County, and purchased a farm on the west side of Canaderago Lake, which he made his home until his death, in 1869. He married, in 1813, Mercy, daughter of Holden and Rhoda Sweet, of Berlin, Rensselaer County, N. Y. Their children were Norman K.; George S., born August 25, 1815, and died unmarried Jan. 30, 1840; Emily, born Oct. 21, 1816 (wife of Borelli Ingalls); and Delos, born April 22, 1819. He died August 8, 1843, without descendants.

Dr. Norman K. Freeman remained on his father's farm, attended the district school, then taught school and worked by the month for the neighboring farmers, giving half his wages to his father and educating himself with the remainder. At the age of twenty-one he went to New York and served, until 1837, as a clerk in a store on Maiden Lane. In 1838 he returned to Richfield, and studied medicine with Dr. Alonzo Churchill. Two years later he went to Geneva and continued his studies under the instruction of Dr. Thomas Spencer, who was then president of the Geneva Medical College. He graduated February 8, 1842, and his diligence and skill were so well known to Dr. Spencer that he was received by him as a partner. In the fall of that year he was compelled, by the failing health of his brother Delos, to accompany him on a trip to the South, and after his death oc-

Digitized by Google

curred, in 1843, he came to Westchester and began practice with Dr. Wm. Bayard, a physician of great local prominence. He remained with Dr. Bayard till June, 1845, and then established a practice on his own account, which he has continued with unabated zeal to the present. He was the physician of St. John's College, at Fordham, from 1845 till 1850, when the failure of his health compelled him to retire to his farm in Richfield. He remained there till 1852, and then returned and resumed his practice, and purchased a homestead of William Simpson, on the west bank of Bronx River, which he has since made his residence. Under the administration of President Fillmore, he was for three years postmaster at West Farms, and was assistant inspector of the Metropolitan Board of Health while it continued to have an existence. Dr. Freeman was married, October 17, 1837, to Ann Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel W. Lowerre, of New York City, by whom he had four sons. Only two are now living,—Norman, who is a broker in New York, and Wm. Francis, who is in business in the city of Albany. Both are married and have children.

It is safe to say that there is no man to whom West Farms is more indebted for its present efficient Union schools than to Doctor Freeman. His exertions in this respect were crowned with well-merited success, though his efforts met with the most determined opposition from many who might have been expected to show better judgment.

The Union school established by his active zeal and determination was the first organized in the State under the act of 1853. For twenty-one years he was a member of the Board of Education, and for twenty years of that time clerk of the board. He was one of the first to anticipate the time when the sparsely settled districts of Morrisania and West Farms would become thickly populated portions of New York City, and he was among the foremost in promoting the cause of annexation.

In all his views he has ever been greatly in advance of his times, and has had the satisfaction of seeing them in course of time adopted by the community, which at first opposed them. A strong advocate of temperance, his practical devotion to the cause has been a prominent feature of his life, and the reward of his temperance is found in the fact, that at the age of seventy-two, and after a life of constant and severe labor, he is to-day as hale and hardy as a man of fifty. During his professional career his practice embraced a very large portion of the county, and there is no one who is a better representative of its local practitioners.

DR. JAMES BATHGATE.

The parents of Dr. James Bathgate, who is well known as the oldest resident physician in Morrisania, were Charles and Margaret Bathgate, who came from Scotland, and settled at West Farms. Their children were Charles and John (both deceased), Dr. James Alexander (now living in Morrisania), Jane, the wife of William J. Beck (deceased), of West Farms, and Margaret Ann. The father of this family was a skillful agriculturist, and noted for his superior horses and cattle, which he raised on his farm. He removed from West Farms to Morrisania, where the younger children were born. James first attended school at Harlem, from whence he went to Mount Pleasant Academy, at Sing Sing. He was subsequently a student in the University of the City of New York, and studied medicine with Professor Joseph M. Smith, one of the professors of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and graduated from that institution in 1847. He was for three years assistant and resident physician in the Medical Department of the New York Hospital, and subsequently physician in the New York Dispensary, but his health failing, he removed from New York and settled at Morrisania upon a farm which was purchased from Gouverneur Morris. From that time to the present Dr. Bathgate has devoted his time and attention to the practice of his profession. He is a member of the State Medical Association, and takes an active interest in all that tends to advance its interests, and he enjoys a very extensive practice in Morrisania and the surrounding country. During his long practice at Morrisania he has never failed to command the confidence and respect of the community, in which his professional services have been uniformly successful. In political affairs he is a strong supporter of the principles of the Republican party, but without being a politician in the common acceptation of the term. The Bathgate estate, in Morrisania, which is now rendered extremely valuable by the advancement of New York City, is a farm purchased from Gouverneur Morris. The estate is bounded on the east by the old Patent Line, which separates Morrisania from the patent of West Farms. It is bounded on the west by the Mill Brook, and extends south to the tract which was bought by Jordan L. Mott and others, who founded the new village of Morrisania, the south line being near One Hundred and Seventieth Street, and the north line a short distance south of One Hundred and Seventy-fifth Street.

The residence of Dr. Bathgate is very pleasantly situated on the west side of Third Avenue, and still retains much of the rural beauty that once distinguished it, and here he enjoys a quiet home in the company of his brother and sister, who are, like himself, unmarried. St. Paul's Church, of Morrisania, is on the south side of the estate, and the church lot was presented to the congregation by this family.

JAMES W. SCRIBNER.

Dr. James W. Scribner was born at Tarrytown, January 17, 1820. His grandfather, Enoch Scribner, was a resident of Bedford, Westchester County, to which place he is supposed to have moved from Connecticut, and died July 18, 1848, at the age of eighty. He married Mary Miller, and they were the parents

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

James Battigate. M.D.

Google

Digitized by Google

James H Scribner

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of two sons, Joseph M. and James W. The former was born May 11, 1793, and was a prominent physician. He married Rebecca, daughter of Thomas Ward, of Sing Sing, of a family long known in this county, and died December 28, 1847, leaving four children,—Dr. James W., John C., Mary (wife of Robert Jameson) and Philip W. His son, James W., attended the public schools until he was fifteen years old, when he was transferred to the collegiate school of Bedford, of which Samuel Holmes was principal. Having acquired a good classical education, he commenced the study of medicine with his father, who was then, and had been for many years, one of the physicians in charge of the Westchester County almshouse, where the son had ample opportunity of seeing much practice while yet a student. After attending three courses of lectures at the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York, he graduated as "M.D." in 1847.

The next year he began practice in his native town, and continued it until the close of his life, being invariably favored with a large, remunerative and responsible practice. He became his father's successor in the profession, and was appointed to fill his place at the Almshouse.

During his entire life Dr. Scribner held a high position among his professional brethren in the county. So acute were his perceptions, so widely read was he in his profession, and so skillful in applying his acquirements to practical use, that if he had made a specialty of any one department of medicine, he would have become renowned as a leader in it. But he devoted himself to general practice, and was satisfied to gain a local reputation as a skillful physician, surgeon and obstetrician. It is seldom that any one becomes as accomplished in all these divisions of practical medicine as was Dr. Scribner. His counsel was frequently sought by physicians at a distance, and in his own neighborhood he was the one always sent for when consultation was required in cases of prolonged illness or in emergencies. He was devoted to his profession and to the friends he had acquired in following it, and could seldom be induced to withdraw himself from his work for relaxation or amusement. During the last year of his life, while suffering from the acute pains of a malignant disease and from the depression naturally arising from it, he attended regularly to business day and night, without murmur or complaint, ministering unto hundreds who were far less in need of help than he was himself, until his force was all expended, and he laid down his labor and his life together. In all his professional relations he was pre-eminently a silent man, never gossiping about his cases in the sick room, and seldom indulging in conversation, even upon topics of general interest. Though dignified and courteously reserved in his intercourse with the world, among his friends he was always cheerful and fully enjoyed light amusements and harmless jokes.

Dr. Scribner's professional silence grew out of his hatred for shams of all kinds. His profession was to cure, not to amuse, and he never sought to win success by any means outside of his skillful treatment of cases. Operations of a complicated nature and requiring the highest skill were performed by him; but his modesty kept him from reporting the cases, and they remain unknown to all except the ones who were directly benefited by his art.

It is needless to say that his moral and professional worth were alike appreciated by the entire community. For several years he was elected president of the village, held the highest offices in the Westchester County Medical Society, and was a delegate to the National Medical Association in 1871. He was also a member of the New York State Medical Society and of the American Medical Association, and an honorary member of the California State Medical Society. For several terms he was chosen president and director of the Westchester County Agricultural Society, and was an able and efficient member of the Board of Education of Tarrytown.

He married Margaret E. Miller, and left two daughters,—Josie and Ella. By his death, which occurred January 28, 1880, the community suffered an irreparable loss; all classes mourned him as a friend, and it was with feelings of no common veneration that his friends and neighbors bore to their final home the remains of one who had been in all the relations of life a useful and honored man.

SAMUEL SWIFT.

Samuel Swift, M.D., is descended from an old English family who came to New England at an early date. His immediate ancestors were residents of Dorchester, Mass. He was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., August 5, 1849, his father, Samuel Swift, being then a prosperous merchant in New York. His mother was Mary, daughter of Samuel Phelps, of West Hampton, Mass., of a family well known in the history of that portion of the country. Dr. Swift resided in Brooklyn till 1858, when he went to Massachusetts and entered Williston Seminary. In 1865 he entered Yale College, and graduated in 1868 with the degree of Ph.B. In the fall of 1869 he joined the Medical Department of Cambridge University, where he remained one year. He then entered the Medical Department of Columbia College, and was also a private pupil of Dr. T. M. Markoe. In 1872 he graduated and received the diploma of M.D., and was the valedictorian of his class. After completing his studies he made a short tour to Europe, where he spent six months, principally in Germany. Previous to his trip he had been appointed resident physician at the "Nursery and Child's Hospital," in New York, obtaining this position by a successful competitive examination; after completing his services there he was for a time connected with the Northeastern Dispensary.

Digitized by Google

In the fall of 1873 he came to Yonkers, where he has since resided. Here he entered into a business partnership with Dr. J. Foster Jenkins, a physician of great skill and reputation, and this connection continued till the death of Dr. Jenkins, in 1882. In his profession Dr. Swift has attained an enviable and well-merited reputation. He is a member of the Medical Society of the State of New York, of the New York Academy of Medicine, of the Westchester Medical Society, the Jenkins Medical Society of Yonkers and the Boylston Medical Society of Boston, Mass. He has always been identified with the Democratic party, and in 1882 was elected mayor of the city of Yonkers. He has also been president of the Board of Education, and is justly recognized as a prominent and useful citizen and a skillful medical practitioner.

He married Lucy, daughter of Hon. Henry E. Davis, late judge of the Court of Appeals of New York, and has one child, Martha. He is a member of St. Paul's Episcopal Church, where he has served as vestryman since 1877, and is at present junior warden of the church.

AUGUSTUS VAN CORTLANDT.

Dr. Augustus Van Cortlandt was born August 31, 1826, and died December 24, 1884. He was the son of Frederick Augustus Van Cortlandt and Harriet, daughter of Peter Jay Munro, of Mamaroneck. His paternal grandfather was James Morris, of Morrisania, and his grandmother Helen Van Cortlandt. His father took the name of Van Cortlandt to inherit an estate at Lower Yonkers, now called King's Bridge. The house in which Dr. Van Cortlandt was born was afterwards purchased, with a small portion of the property, by Hon. Waldo Hutchings.

Dr. Van Cortlandt was sent at an early age to a school at White Plains. He had a wonderful memory and learned very rapidly. When the California fever broke out he went to California, and upon his return to New York began the study of medicine. When the war opened he joined the Ninth New York Regiment and went to Washington. With a number of others, he shortly left the Ninth and joined the Twelfth. On the return of his regiment he went out with the Seventh. On returning home he was sent to David's Island as physician. Subsequently he commenced the practice of medicine in New Rochelle, which he continued until his death.

His practice was never very remunerative, being principally among the poor, by whom he seemed to be much beloved.

PIERRE CORTLANDT VAN WYCK.

Pierre Cortlandt Van Wyck, M.D., was born at the old Van Cortlandt Manor-house, on the banks of the Croton River, September 24, 1824.

His father, Philip Gilbert Van Wyck, was the nephew and adopted son of General Philip Van Cortlandt, who died a bachlor and left his large estate, including the Van Cortlandt Manor, to be divided between his two nephews, Pierre Van Cortlandt and Philip G. Van Wyck.

Dr. Van Wyck's mother was Mary Smith Gardiner, daughter of Colonel Abraham Gardiner, who was one of the lineal descendants of Lion Gardiner, of Gardiner's Island.

Coming of a race of those who had from the earliest history of the country been foremost in patriotism, generosity and the development of all the nobler traits of human nature, descended from the Van Cortlandts, Van Rensselaers, Gardiners and Van Wycks, whose names are so intimately interwoven with the early history of our own country, he never forgot the traditions of his ancestry, but was always the genial, high-toned, honorable gentleman.

Beginning life under these favorable auspices, he entered Princeton College and graduated with the class of 1845.

He began the study of medicine under the care of Dr. Adrian K. Hoffman. He was afterwards a student at the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York, where he enjoyed the benefit of the instructions of the celebrated Dr. Willard Parker.

He graduated in 1849, and was afterwards appointed by President Taylor, United States inspector of drugs, at the port of New York.

While holding this position he became interested in the firm of Radway & Co., in which he still held an interest at the time of his death.

In 1862 he was appointed by President Lincoln assessor of internal revenue for the Fourth District of New York.

He organized the district and continued to administer it ably and efficiently until it was consolidated in 1871. In January, 1882, President Arthur appointed him superintendent of the United States Assay Office in New York, to succeed Mr. Thomas C. Acton, who was made Assistant Treasurer of the United States.

In politics he was a Whig until 1856, when he joined the Republican party during the Fremont campaign. He had always been prominent in the councils of his party and was many times sent as a delegate to State and National Conventions, and was one of the famous three hundred and six who voted so persistently for General Grant at Chicago in 1880.

When the nomination of General Garfield was announced, Governor Dennison of Ohio, came to the New York delegation and said that any candidate they named for Vice-President would be nominated. Dr. Van Wyck proposed the name of Chester A. Arthur, which was unanimously indorsed.

Dr. Van Wyck had been the personal friend of President Arthur for twenty years, and was with him on that memorable night of September 19, 1881,

Digitized by Google

Google

Digitized by Google

Samuel Wright

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Pierre C Van Wyck

Digitized by Google

'ed Helena Sanford, August
ents of twelve children;
born in 1748, and
'eut. Gov. Pierre
children were
'ho was for
k) and
4,

Digitized by Google

Pierre C Van Wyck

Digitized by Google

'ed Helena Sanford, August
ents of twelve children;
born in 1748, and
ut. Gov. Pierre
children were
ho was for
k) and
4,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

when the sad news came that President Garfield had passed away, and he was one of the nine persons present when the oath of office was administered by Judge Brady to the new President during the silence and solemnity of the midnight hour.

Dr. Van Wyck had a brilliant mind, cultivated by deep study and extensive foreign travel, combined with refined and artistic tastes. He lived and died a bachelor. He was a man of domestic habits, and devoted himself to the care and comfort of his sisters, Miss Joanna L. Van Wyck and Mrs. Annie V. R. Wells, who resided with him at the Van Wyck mansion, Grove Hill, in the village of Sing Sing. This had always been the seat of generous and refined hospitality, and it was at this home that he died suddenly, of pneumonia, on the 23d day of April, 1883.

The funeral was largely attended, not only by his associates and friends in his own circle of life, but by all his numerous tenantry and the poor of the surrounding country, who found him always a friend and brother to each and all, irrespective of race or creed.

Of him it may well be said: "Write me as one that loves his fellow-men."

The interment took place in the family burial ground at Croton, where repose the remains of those sterling Revolutionary patriots, Lieutenant Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt and his sons, General Philip and General Pierre, and of his grandsons, General Philip G. Van Wyck and Recorder Pierre C. Van Wyck and numerous other members of the Van Cortlandt and Van Wyck families.

Of the ancestry of Dr. Van Wyck a few words may be added.

Cornelius Barentse Van Wyck came to America in 1660, from Wyck, a town on the river Teck in Holland. He married Anna Polhemus; their son Theodorus who was born September 17, 1668, and died December 4, 1753, married Margaretta Brinckehoff, February 3, 1685. They were the parents of eight children, one of whom, Abraham, who was born November 7, 1695, married Catherine Provost in 1717. Of their nine children, the eldest, Theodorus, born November 30, 1718, married Helena Sanford, August 2, 1740, and they were the parents of twelve children; one of their sons, Abraham, was born in 1748, and married Catherine, daughter of Lieut. Gov. Pierre Van Cortlandt, January 7, 1776. Their children were Theodorus, Pierre Cortlandt, Van Wyck (who was for many years Recorder for the City of New York) and Philip Gilbert Van Wyck, who was born June 4, 1786, and married Mary Smith, daughter of Col Abraham Gardiner, and granddaughter of David Gardiner, fourth proprietor of Gardiner's Island. Their children were Joanna Livingston Van Wyck, now residing at Sing Sing; Catherine, wife of Stephen H. Battin; Philip Van Cortlandt, who died unmarried, January 12, 1842; Eliza, wife of William Van Ness Livingston, who died December 9, 1865; Gardiner, who died unmarried, April 7, 1860; Annie Van Rensselaer, who married the late Hon. Alexander Wells, of the Supreme Bench of California, and whose only child, Gertrude Van Cortlandt, married Schuyler Hamilton, Jr., great-grandson of Alexander Hamilton; David Gardiner, who died unmarried, December 16, 1848, and Dr. Pierre Cortlandt Van Wyck, the subject of this article.

The Van Wycks of Holland, are an aristocratic and wealthy family, and continue to bear the same coat of arms as those brought by the Van Wycks to this country upwards of two centuries ago.

H. K. Huntington M.D.

HENRY K. HUNTINGTON.

The first known ancestor of Henry K. Huntington, M. D., in America, was one to whom tradition has assigned the name of Simon. He was an Englishman, and in 1633 started with his wife and family for this country. His death occurred during the voyage, and his son Christopher, who succeeded to the paternal cares, brought the family first to Norwich, Conn., and finally to Windham, in the same State, where a permanent settlement was effected. The branch of the family from which Dr. Huntington is descended has apparently remained within a short distance of the original homestead, for we find by an examina-

Digitized by Google

tion of the records that Samuel Howard Huntington, his father, who was born December 14, 1793, was married in Hartford October 19, 1835, the lady being his second wife. Her name was Sarah Blair Watkinson, and she was a daughter of Robert Watkinson, a merchant residing in Hartford.

Henry K., their son, was born at Hartford March 27, 1845. He remained in his native town till 1862, in which year, having meanwhile graduated from the Hartford public school, he entered Trinity College. In 1867, after graduating there, he made a first attempt at self-support. Proceeding as far west as Racine, Wis., he engaged as a tutor in the college there. A year's experience as an instructor, however, convinced him that teaching was not his forte, and at the end of the first term he resigned his position at Racine, with the intention of studying medicine.

Retracing his steps, he came eastward, and in 1868 entered the University (medical college) of the city of New York, from which he graduated in 1871. The success which has attended him as a physician, has convinced him, as well as his many friends, that he made no mistake in his second choice of a profession. Immediately following his graduation, he devoted sixteen months to service in the Charity Hospital on Blackwell's Island. As a reward for the proficiency with which he had performed his duties there, he was commissioned in 1872 with the re-organization of the Convalescent Hospital on Hart's Island, and to him is due the credit of originating what is now known as the Hart's Island Hospital.

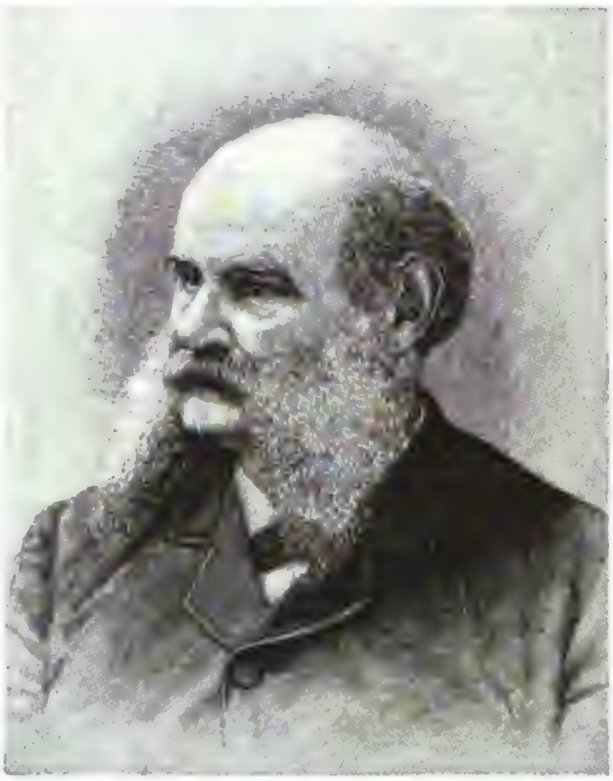
On the 23d of September, 1873, he removed to New Rochelle, where he still resides. By careful attention to the needs of his patients and faithfulness in the performance of his professional duties, he has won for himself not only a large and extended practice, but also the esteem of his fellow-townsmen

He is a member of Trinity Episcopal Church, was formerly a trustee of the public schools and is connected with the County and State Medical Associations. He is at present physician to the Board of Health of the town of New Rochelle.

Dr. Huntington married Sept. 23, 1873, Miss Moruca Frances De Figaniere, and has no children. He is one of the most successful physicians in the county.

MAXIMILIAN JOSEPH REINFELDER.

Maximilian Joseph Reinfelder, M.D., was born in Munich, Kingdom of Bavaria, March 4, 1821. His father, Ferdinand Reinfelder, was a surgeon in the military academy of that capital, where he was in active service thirty-three years. From his fourteenth year Dr. Reinfelder paid great attention to the study of the natural sciences, especially chemistry, in which he graduated from the University of Munich in 1844. From 1847 to 1850 he pursued his medical studies there.



Maximilian J. Reinfelder

Attracted by the large field of usefulness which America affords to scientific men as medical practitioners, as well as by his natural and unconquerable predilection for this country almost from his childhood, he came to the United States in 1854.

Notwithstanding the thoroughness of his European medical education, he matriculated at the University Medical College, in New York City. His object in doing this was to familiarize himself with American medical authorities, and identify himself with American interests; also to observe and study the great changes which took place during twenty years in all branches of medical science. Having finished the courses prescribed in the school of medicine, he was graduated in 1869, receiving, beside his regular diploma, a certificate of honor, as an evidence of having pursued a fuller course of medical instruction than that usually followed by students. He continued the practice of medicine in Yonkers, where he has been located for the last thirty-one years. He is a man of acknowledged reputation in the profession, and is at present consulting physician to St. John's Riverside Hospital. He is a Fellow of the New York Academy of Medicine, and also a member of the Westchester Medical Society.

He was married, in 1854, to Miss A. Merz, of Lindau, Lake Constance, Bavaria, and has one daughter, Armina J., who resides with him at the present time.

He is now a gentleman of advanced years. By

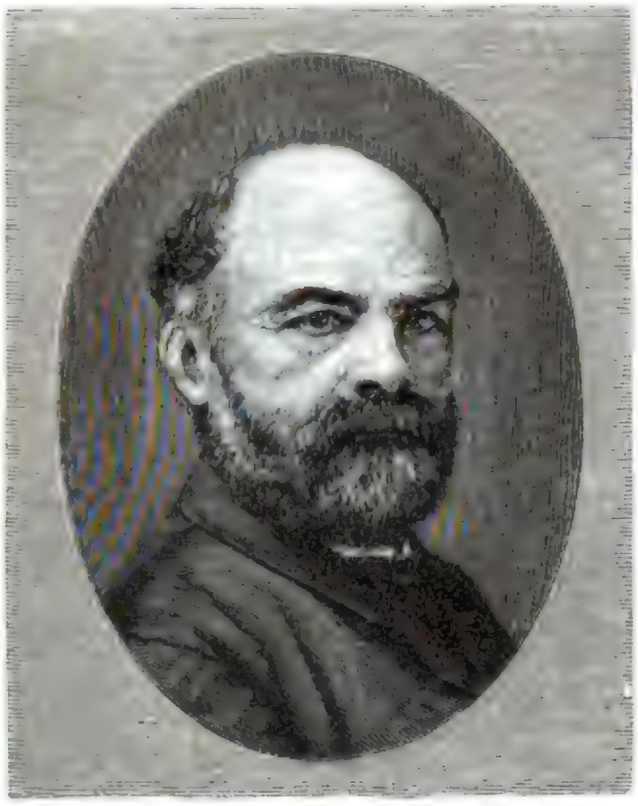
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

careful attention to the wants of his patients, and strict economy in the management of his private affairs, he has accumulated for himself an extensive practice and a moderate fortune. He is greatly respected in the city of his adoption both as a private citizen and an influential physician.

RALPH BARNARD GRISWOLD.

The family of Ralph Barnard Griswold, M.D., was originally English. The first ancestor in this country was Roger Griswold, who came to New London, Conn., before the Revolution, and it is supposed that Fort Griswold, near that city, was named after some of the members of the family.



Ralph B. Griswold M.D.

Ralph Barnard Griswold, M.D., son of Lucius and Julia Elizabeth (Barnard) Griswold, was born at Colebrook, Litchfield County, Conn., January 18, 1835. His parents moved to the thriving village of Winsted in 1848, where he attended the district school, after which he became a pupil of St. James' School, taught by Revs. Jonathan and James R. Coe. He taught school in the academy at Winchester Centre and also nine months at Stroudsburg, Pa. His success was so great there that he was urged to tarry longer. For years, however, it had been his desire to become a physician, and while yet engaged as a teacher in Stroudsburg, he fully decided to execute this purpose. He read medicine with H. B. Steele, M.D., of Winsted, Conn., and attended his first course of lectures at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, and a full course at the Eclectic Medical Institute of Cincinnati, O., where he graduated in Feb 1857.

It had been his father's wish that he should spend some time in Europe to further advance his medical education, but being of an ambitious turn of mind, and having confidence in his own ability, he decided not to accept the kind offer thus made. In April, 1857, he came to North Castle, where he immediately began the practice of medicine and has succeeded in building up a business second to none in this part of the county. He is now called to Stanwich, Round Hill, Armonk, Bedford, New Castle and Long Ridge, and is the leading physician in North Castle, his post-office address being Banksville, Fairfield County, Conn. He is town physician and is also health officer of the Board of Health.

He joined the Methodist Episcopal Church at Winsted, Conn., in his seventeenth year, and in 1857 brought his letter from this church to the Middle Patent Methodist Church, where he has been an acceptable member for twenty-eight years, holding the offices of trustee, steward and chorister from the time of his arrival to the present. He has been since his earliest recollection connected with Sabbath-schools, either as a pupil, superintendent or teacher. For fifteen years Dr. Griswold has managed the financial matters of the church of which he is a member, and has rendered valuable service in the collection of funds necessary for its support.

May 1, 1858, he married Mary Jane Early. Four children were born to them, of whom William L. Griswold, Ph.B., M.D., now practicing medicine in Greenwich, Conn., and Julia Alice Griswold are still living. He has held the office of commissioner of highways of his town for five consecutive terms of three years each, and still holds the position. He has also been tendered the nomination for supervisor, but owing to pressure of professional business, has been obliged to decline the honor. He has always been a temperance man, and became especially active in that work in 1870, when he assisted in organizing the Middle Patent Division of the Sons of Temperance. He was made its first Worthy Patriarch, and some three years afterward was elected Grand Worthy Patriarch of the Grand Division "Sons of Temperance" of Eastern New York, embracing in its jurisdiction some thirteen counties of the State. He is also an ex-officio member of the National Division of the same association. He has always been a consistent Republican, not having missed either a town or State election in over twenty-eight years. He has identified himself, irrespective of party, church or state, with any and every cause which he thought was for the

Digitized by Google

benefit of the community, being always ready to lend a helping hand. He has often, after a day of toil or a thirty or forty-mile ride, driven away again some five miles to drill or take charge of a company of singers in giving a concert or entertainment for some weak society. His liberal tendencies, together with his cordial disposition and the valuable services which he has in times past and still contines to render the community in which he lives, have endeared him to its people and made his name an honor to the county of his adoption.

WALTON JAY CARPENTER.

Walton Jay Carpenter, M.D., is descended from an English family who came to New England during the seventeenth century. From thence a branch removed to the town of Purchase, in Westchester County, where they took up land and engaged in farming. Charles B. Carpenter, father of Walton Jay, was of this line. He married Rachel White, and of their five children, Dr. Carpenter was the oldest. He was born in Duanesburgh, Schenectady County, N. Y., September 11, 1852, and removed with his family when but four years of age to Illinois. After a stay of two years in the West the family returned to Duanesburgh where the youth attended the public school, leaving at the age of fifteen for the Delaware Literary Institute, where he passed two winters. A period of three years, divided between teaching and study followed; then a two years' course of select studies at Union College and a term of medical preparation under the celebrated professor, Dr. Alfred Loomis, of New York. In the fall of 1875 he entered the medical department of the University of the City of New York, and finally finished his course in the spring of 1877, when he graduated.

W. J. Carpenter M.D.

He first settled at Round Hill, Connecticut, where he practiced for a few months, in connection with his uncle, J. C. White, M.D.; but this town not offering the advantages which he craved, he returned to New York City and entered upon a post-graduate course at the University, after completing which in 1878 he removed to Katonah, where he still resides.

He has by care and industry succeeded in building up for himself an extensive practice, and has during his residence in Katonah effected many cures which will render his reputation permanent and his presence in the place a continual agency for good. He is a member of the Methodist Church of Katonah, and also a member of the following Masonic organizations: Kisco Lodge, No. 708; Croton Chapter, No. 202; and Crusade Commandery, No. 56.

He married April 30, 1884, Miss Anna L. Green, daughter of Alsoph Green, of Katonah.

Dr. Carpenter is connected with the Westchester Medical Society, among the members of which he is widely known and as widely respected.

CHAPTER XIII.

LITERATURE AND LITERARY MEN, OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

BY

J. THOS. SCHARF, A.M., LL.D

WESTCHESTER COUNTY has good reason to pride herself on her contributions to the literature of the country. Few, if any, counties in the Union, can show an equally brilliant record. She has given birth to many noted writers and has nurtured many more. The greatest literary genius, probably, that our country has produced, the weird, uncanny Poe, found inspiration within her borders, on the banks of the lordly Hudson, and that sunny, facile intellect which dwelt in the pure and lofty brow of Washington Irving found equal delight in exploring the mystic nooks and windings of its "Sleepy Hollows." Fenimore Cooper, the great pioneer of American fiction, roamed over its rugged hills and through its pleasant meadows, and treading close upon his heels came James Kirke Paulding, Irving's friend and collaborateur, whose strong Americanism was quite as pure and unadulterated as was that of the patriotic Cooper. Among political writers, Westchester presents the great names of Hamilton, Tom Paine, Seabury, Wilkins, the Jays, Gouverneur Morris, Daniel

Google

D. Tompkins, John Bigelow, Horace Greeley, James Watson Webb, besides a host of lesser celebrities.

George Washington, though not, properly speaking, a literary character, deserves to be included among those who have transmitted noble thoughts as well as noble deeds to his countrymen. His association with the people of Westchester County during the Revolutionary era is fully set forth elsewhere in this work. Among his writings are to be found vivid bits of description of Westchester localities, with which he became familiarized in passing through the county. The Sparks collection of Washington's writings fills twelve large octavo volumes. His first appearance as an author was in the publication, in 1754, at Williamsburg, Va., and in London, of his journal of his proceedings "To and from the French of the Ohio," a brief tract written hastily from the rough notes taken on his expedition. His State papers, correspondence and "Farewell Address" are too well known to need description here. Major John Andre, whose mournful fate is indissolubly linked with the glorious deeds of Washington, spent the closing days of his career in Westchester. He was a poet as well as a soldier and an accomplished man of letters.

Daniel D. Tompkins, Vice-President of the United States, belongs to the political, rather than to the literary history of Westchester County, although his talents as a speaker and writer, entitle him to recognition as a man of letters. He was a native of Scarsdale.

Samuel J. Tilden may be included in the same category, and can be claimed as one of the celebrities of Westchester County, where, at his beautiful estate "Greystone," he spends much of his time in elegant and scholarly retirement.

General John C. Fremont, the soldier, explorer, author and politician, resided at one time at Mount Pleasant, in the house built by General James Watson Webb. His wife, who is the daughter of Senator Benton, of Missouri, is a woman of great accomplishments and decided literary tastes. General Fremont, who was born at Savannah, Ga., January 21, 1813, is known to literature by his graphic reports, which were published by the federal government, of his Western explorations. Devoting himself in early life to civil engineering, he obtained an appointment in the government expedition for the survey of the headwaters of the Mississippi, and was afterwards employed at Washington preparing maps of the country explored. In 1842, at the head of a small force, he crossed the Rocky Mountains and opened to commerce and emigration the Great South Pass. His report of his adventures was so interesting that it was reprinted by publishers in this country and in England and was translated into various foreign languages. He next accomplished an expedition to Oregon, and, striking southward and westward, after incredible hardships, succeeded in exploring the region of Alta California, including the Sierra Nevada, the valleys of San Joaquin and Sacramento and the gold region. Returning to Washington in 1844, he published another report, and upon its completion set out on another expedition to the Pacific, the result of which was the acquisition of California by the United States. He was sent to Washington in 1850 as the first United States Senator from California. In 1856 he was the Republican candidate for President of the United States and during the Civil War held a commission as major-general in the Union army. A superb edition of his reports, entitled "Fremont's Explorations," was published in 1859.

Among other names associated with the history of Westchester County which have attained to distinction in literature are those of J. Rodman Drake, John Savage, William Leggett, Robert Rogers, David Humphreys, Gulian C. Verplanck, Ann Eliza Bleecker, Mrs. Haven, James Parton, Rev. Thomas Allen, a chaplain of the Revolutionary army at White Plains, who took an active part in the political discussions of the time; Charles Tafin Armand, the Marquis de la Rouarie, an eloquent and persuasive speaker and writer, who, in 1778, was actively engaged in Westchester County in opposing Simcoe, Emmerick and Baremore, the Loyalist, whom he captured near King's Bridge November 8, 1779; Aaron Burr, who was stationed in Westchester County in the winter of 1778-79, and whose duel with Hamilton took place at Weehawken; Nathaniel Chipman, LL.D., the Vermont jurist, who participated in the battle of White Plains; Joel Barlow, the author of the "Columbiad," and Rev. William Crosswell, D.D., clergyman and scholar, born at Hudson, November 7, 1804, and died at Boston November 9, 1851; James De Lancey, the jurist, born in 1703 and died in 1760; General Oliver De Lancey, of the British army, who fought at White Plains; Horace Green, M.D., LL.D., the distinguished physician and medical writer, who died at Greenmount, Sing Sing, N. Y., December 24, 1802; Rev. Freeborn Garretson Hibbard, D.D., at one time editor of the *Northern Christian Advocate* and author of several books, born at New Rochelle, February 22, 1811; James Macdonald, M.D., author of valuable papers on the treatment of insanity, born at White Plains, July 18, 1803, died at Flushing, Long Island, May 5, 1849; Alexander Slidell Mackenzie, the noted naval officer and author of the lives of Paul Jones, O. H. Perry, Stephen Decatur and many other works, born in New York, April 6, 1803, lived in Mount Pleasant, on the Sing Sing road, and died at Tarrytown, September 13, 1848; Benjamin Moore Norman, the author of interesting books of travel, born at Hudson, December 22, 1809, died near Summit, Miss., February 1, 1860; Rear Admiral Hiram Paulding, son of John Paulding, one of Andre's captors, and a distinguished naval officer and author of a "Journal of a Cruise Among the Islands of the Pacific," born in Westchester County, December 11, 1797; Calvin W. Philleo, the novelist, born at Vernon, July 14, 1822, died at Suf-

Digitized by Google

field, Conn., June 30, 1858; Winthrop Sargent, the soldier, statesman and writer, who fought at White Plains; Joseph Mather Smith, M.D., the eminent physician and medical writer, who was a native of New Rochelle; John Savage, the editor and poet, who lives at Fordham; John Canfield Spencer, LL.D., lawyer and politician, a native of Hudson, who is known to the literary world for having edited the first American edition of De Tocqueville's "Democracy in America," with an original preface and notes; William Leete Stone, the noted journalist, who, in 1813, edited the *Herkimer American* and afterwards a political paper at Hudson, becoming finally one of the proprietors of the *New York Commercial Advertiser;* Peter Van Schaack, LL.D., jurist, loyalist in the Revolutionary War and author, born at Kinderhook, where he died, September 27, 1832; Aaron Ward, lawyer, politician and author, born at Sing Sing, July 5, 1790; Robert Watts, M.D., physician and medical writer, born at Fordham in 1812; and Thurlow Weed, the journalist and politician, born at Cairo, N. Y., November 15, 1797, and whose early life was passed as a cabin boy on the Hudson.

Of contemporary writers, the following have been more or less identified with Westchester County:

General Adam Badeau, author of the "History of General U. S. Grant," etc., who lived in North Tarrytown, Mount Pleasant, from boyhood until about 1856; Clarence Cook, the art critic, who attended school at Irving Institute, Tarrytown, and lived at Irvington; A. C. Wheeler ("Nym Crinkle"), poet and critic, who also attended school at Irving Institute and lived at North Tarrytown; Charles A. Brace, author and philanthropist, who lived at Hastings; Frank Vincent, Jr., author and traveler, who wrote "The Land of the White Elephant," "Through and Through the Tropics" and "Norsk, Lapp and Finn," and whose home is in Tarrytown; Rev. William C. Wilkinson, D.D., formerly professor in Rochester Theological Seminary, who has written a critique on Arnold's "Light of Asia," etc., and who resides at Tarrytown; Stephen H. Thayer, the poet, who wrote "Songs of Sleepy Hollow," and lives in North Tarrytown; Latham C. Strong, poet and journalist, who wrote "Castle Windows," "Poke O'Moonshine," etc., and was a resident of North Tarrytown until his death; Hamilton Mabie, editor of *The Christian Union*, who lived in North Tarrytown; Marshall H. Bright, editor of *The Christian at Work*, who lives in Tarrytown; Rev. Pharcellus Church, D.D., the author of a number of books, reviews, etc., and a resident of Tarrytown; Rev. Jacob Dutcher, author of "The Old Home by the River," who was born in Greenburgh; Minna Irving, poetess, a contributor to *The Century*, whose full name is Minna Irving Odell, and who lives in Greenburgh; Henry Drisler, scholar, author and professor, who lived in Greenburgh; Rev. John A. Paine, professor in Robert College, Constantinople, archæologist to the Palestine Exploring Expedition, and author of a work on that subject, whose home is in Tarrytown; Colonel Church, editor of *The Army and Navy Journal;* E. Z. C. Judson ("Ned Buntline"), who lived at Chappaqua; Dr. Edward Bright, editor of *The Examiner*, who lives at Yonkers; and Robert B. Coffin ("Barry Gray"), who lives at Katonah.

In music and the fine arts Westchester is also not without distinction. Among composers may be mentioned George F. Bristow and Francis H. Nash, both residents of Morrisania; and among painters, Albert Bierstadt, the famous landscape painter, who lived within the corporate limits of Tarrytown, and whose residence was destroyed by fire; Francis W. Edmonds, Edward W. Nichols, Tait, Gustave M. Arnolt, the young German painter of animals, and Samuel Fanshaw and Robert Hite, both of them eminent painters on ivory. Robert Walter Weir, the distinguished painter, who succeeded C. R. Leslie as instructor in drawing at West Point, was born at New Rochelle on June 18, 1803.

The earliest of the Westchester County *literati* was Adrian Van der Donck, a graduate of the University of Leyden, who was appointed by the patroon of Rensselaerwick sheriff of his colony, and came to New Netherland in 1642. In 1648 he was granted a tract of land at Yonkers. In the deed he was spoken of as Yonker Van der Donck, Yonker being the usual title of gentleman. His name appears among the signers of a tract, published at the Hague in 1650, describing the New Netherland. It has been translated by Mr. Henry C. Murphy for the New York Historical Society, and published by them, and also by James Lenox, of New York. Owing to its attacks on the government of Kieft and Stuyvesant, Van der Donck was denied access to the colonial records during the preparation of his "Description of New Netherland," which has been translated and occupies one hundred and six pages of the "New York Historical Society's Collections," 1841. It describes the rural products, animals and inhabitants of the colony. The date of the first edition is unknown. The second was published at Amsterdam, in 1656, by Ebert Nieuwenhof, who introduced the work with a poetical preface.

Right Rev. Samuel Seabury, D.D., first bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church, may be classed among the literary men of Westchester, from the fact that, while in charge of St. Peter's Church, Westchester, he wrote and published, anonymously, during the Revolutionary period, a series of pamphlets in defense of the crown, under the signature, it is said, of "A. W. Farmer." He was the son of Rev. Samuel Seabury, missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, at New London, Conn., and was born at Croton, November 30, 1729, and graduated at Yale in 1748. He then went to Scotland to study medicine, but while in that country also devoted his attention to theology, and was ordained by

Digitized by Google

the Bishop of London in 1753, and, on his return, settled at New Brunswick, N. J., as a missionary of the Propagation Society. In 1757 he removed to Jamaica, and from thence, in 1766, to Westchester, where, in addition to his church, he had charge of a school. The authorship of the "Farmer" pamphlets, which were commonly attributed to him, caused him to be seized by the Whigs, in 1775, and carried to New Haven, where he was imprisoned. As the fact of the authorship could not be established by legal proof, he was suffered to return to Westches er, where he renewed his efforts in behalf of the Loyalist cause. Upon the Declaration of American Independence he removed to New York City. Here he remained until the close of the war, officiating part of the time as chaplain to the King's American Regiment, and practicing medicine. In 1783, having been elected bishop of the diocese of Connecticut, he sailed for England and applied for consecration to the Archbishop of York, the See of Canterbury being vacant. His application was refused, in consequence of the inability of the English bishops to dispense with the oath of allegiance to the crown. In August, 1784, he made a similar application to the bishops of the Scottish Church, by whom he was consecrated, at Aberdeen, November 14, 1784. In the spring of the following year he returned to America and began the discharge of his duties as bishop. He displayed considerable ability and force as a writer on a variety of topics, and rendered important services to his church in the arrangement of the Liturgy and other matters. He died February 25, 1796, at New London, Conn., where he had filled his father's place as rector of the church, besides discharging his episcopal duties. The "Farmer" pamphlets have been attributed to Isaac Wilkins, and also to Dr. Chandler, Dr. Inglis and Dr. Myles Cooper, but it is believed they were written by Seabury. The strongest evidence is found in the draft of a document in Seabury's own writing, in which he states that he was the author of a pamplet, entitled "Free Thoughts on the Proceedings of the Congress at Philadelphia," which was published shortly after the first Congress broke up, and other publications which followed, all of them signed "A. W. Farmer." He also states that on the 19th of November, 1775, an armed force of one hundred horsemen came from Connecticut to his house, and, not finding him at home, beat his children to compel them to tell where their father was, "which, not succeeding, they searched the neighborhood and took him from his school, and, with much abusive language, carried him in great triumph to New Haven, seventy miles distant, where he was paraded through most of the streets, and their success celebrated by firing cannon, &c." At this time, according to his own statement, Dr. Seabury "lived at Westchester, in the then province of New York, and was, though not wealthy, yet in easy circumstances, and supported a large family—viz., a wife and six children—comfortably and decently; that his income was at least £200 Sterl. p^r a^nn, arising from his Parish, Glebe & from a grammar School, in which he had more than 20 young Gentlemen, when the Rebellion began." The "Free Thoughts" of Seabury, we are told, excited the bitterest feeling. It was reprinted in London, in 1775, "for Richardson & Urquhart, at the Royal Exchange." Mr. Trumbull says that "when copies of these pamphlets fell into the hands of the Whigs, they were disposed of in such a manner as most emphatically to express detestation of the anonymous authors and their sentiments. Sometimes they were publicly burned, with imposing formality; sometimes decorated with tar and feathers [from the Turkey-buzzard, as 'the fittest emblem of the author's odiousness'], and nailed to the whipping-post." Rev. Jonathan Boucher, writing of Seabury's authorship of the pamphlets, states that, "being attributed to another gentleman, he alone derived any advantage from them, for to him the British government granted a handsome pension, whilst the real author [Seabury] never received a farthing." Who the spurious pensioner was, Mr. Boucher does not state. Bishop Seabury received the degree of A.M. from Columbia (then King's) College, N. Y., in 1761, and that of D.D. from the University of Oxford, England. His son Charles, a distinguished clergyman and father of Rev. Samuel Seabury, D.D., of New York, was born at Westchester, May 20, 1770.

REV. ISAAC WILKINS, D.D.

Isaac Wilkins, D.D., was born at Withywood in the Island of Jamaica, December 17, 1742, and was the son of Martin Wilkins, an eminent lawyer and judge, who came to New York in order to educate his son. His parents died when he was a child and his care and education devolved on his aunt, Mrs. Mary Macey, his mother's sister. He graduated at King's College in 1760, and was married, November 7, 1762, to Isabella, daughter of Hon. Lewis Morris. They resided at Morrisania for a year or two, when Mr. Wilkins purchased an estate known as Castle

Digitized by Google

Hill Neck, in Westchester County. In 1772 he was sent to the Colonial Legislature from the borough of Westchester and took an active part in its proceedings until April, 1775, on the side of the Loyalists. As the reputed author of the "Westchester Farmer" pamphlets, he became obnoxious to the Whigs and was forced to leave for England, where he remained about a year, making every effort to reconcile the dispute between the colonies and the mother country. He then returned to his family, whom he removed from Castle Hill, which had been laid waste and made desolate, to Long Island, where, at Newtown and Flatbush, he resided until the peace. He sold his farm in 1784 and took his family to Nova Scotia, where he purchased a farm and returned to his agricultural pursuits. He was sent to the Assembly of the province, and soon after placed at the head of a committee for the distribution of lands to the American refugee Loyalists. In 1798 he returned to New York, and while preparing for the ministry was called to the partial rectorship of St. Peter's, Westchester. As soon as he was ordained deacon he entered upon the discharge of his duties. He was ordained a priest by Bishop Provoost, January 14, 1801. He was now in the enjoyment of a pension from the British government of one hundred and twenty pounds per annum. In 1811 the degree of D.D. was conferred upon him by King's College. He died at the rectory in Westchester February 5, 1830, in his eighty-ninth year.

Right Rev. William Heathcote De Lancey, D.D., D.C.L., Protestant Episcopal bishop of Western New York, was one of Westchester's most distinguished sons. He was born at Mamaroneck October 8, 1797, and died at Geneva, N. Y., April 5, 1865. He graduated at Yale in 1817, studied theology under Bishop Hobart, was ordained deacon in 1819 and priest in 1822, and soon after became assistant to Bishop White in Philadelphia. He was annually chosen secretary of the Diocesan Convention of Pennsylvania from 1825 to 1830, and was secretary of the House of Bishops from 1823 to 1829. He was provost of the University of Pennsylvania from 1828 to 1833; traveled in Europe in 1835 and on his return, after the death of Bishop White, succeeded to the rectorship of St. Peter's, Philadelphia. In 1838 he was chosen first bishop of the diocese of Western New York, and was consecrated May 9, 1839. The Hobart Free College at Geneva was chiefly indebted to his efforts for its maintenance. In 1852 he was a delegate to England from the Episcopal bishops of the United States, and was one of the recognized leaders of the High Church party. He received the degree of D.C.L. from the Oxford University in 1852; D.D. from Yale in 1828 and LL.D. from Union College in 1847.

Thomas Paine, the noted political and atheistic writer, is identified with Westchester County by the fact that for his Revolutionary services the State of New York granted him five hundred acres of land in New Rochelle, where he resided part of the time after his return to the United States, in 1802. Paine was a native of Thetford, Norfolk, England, born January 29, 1737; died in New York City, June 8, 1809. His parentage was humble and his educational opportunities limited. For a time he preached occasionally as a dissenting minister, and in 1774, at the suggestion of Franklin, came to America. He soon became known as a writer of uncommon force and logic and an opponent of slavery. His celebrated pamphlet, "Common Sense," in which he advocated the independence of the colonies, was published in January, 1776, and had an extraordinary influence in disseminating republican ideas. His subsequent publications were of inestimable benefit to the patriotic cause. He was outlawed in England for his celebrated "Rights of Man," which appeared in 1791, in answer to Burke's "Reflections on the French Revolution," and in September, 1792, was elected a member of the French National Convention. In consequence of his outspoken opposition to the execution of Louis XVI., he narrowly escaped being put to death during the Reign of Terror. His remains were taken to England in 1819 by William Cobbett. A monument was erected to his memory in 1839, near his original burial-place in New Rochelle.

THOMAS PAINE.

The literary reputation of John Jay is chiefly that which attaches to his political character, but he is pre-eminently worthy of being ranked among the literary men whom old Westchester has either produced or nurtured. Of Huguenot descent and a native of New York City, born December 12, 1745, he graduated at Columbia College and was a delegate to the First Revolutionary Congress at the age of twenty-eight, three years later chief justice of his State, and subsequently minister to Spain and negotiator of the peace with Great Britain, Secretary of State, Chief Justice of the United States and Governor of New York. Notwithstanding these various trusts, he was enabled to spend nearly thirty years of retirement in pleasant country life at Bedford, Westchester County, where he died on the 17th of May,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Rochelle, where he resided [illegible]

Digitized by Google

1829, at the age of eighty-four. His life has been written by his son, William Jay. His national state papers, written when a member of the Continental Congress, and his contributions to the *Federalist*, were powerful aids to the patriot cause. His "Address to the People of Great Britain," in 1774, called forth expressions of admiration from Jefferson. He was also the author of a number of other political treatises of great clearness and vigor.

William Jay, second son of Chief Justice Jay, was also a person of decided literary talent. He was born June 16, 1789, graduated at Yale, and studied law at Albany under John B. Henry, until, compelled to abandon study by an affection of the eyes, he retired to his father's country-seat at Bedford. In 1812 he married the daughter of John McVickar, a New York merchant. He was appointed first judge of the county of Westchester by Governor Tompkins and was successively reappointed by Clinton, Marcy and Van Buren. Throughout his life he was a prominent opponent of slavery and in this connection published many addresses and pamphlets, which were collected by him in his "Miscellaneous Writings on Slavery," published at Boston in 1854. In 1832 he published "The Life and Writings of John Jay." He died at his residence in Bedford, October 14, 1858.

John Jay, son of William Jay, born June 23, 1817, and a graduate of Columbia College in 1836, is also the author of several pamphlets on the slavery question, together with many other papers on topics of public interest. He studied law in the city of New York and was admitted to the bar in 1839. His residence of late years has been the old homestead at Bedford. In April, 1869, he was appointed minister to Austria and represented this country with distinction at the Court of Vienna.

Gouverneur Morris, the noted statesman and writer, was a native of Morrisania. The first of his ancestors who emigrated to America was Richard Morris, who is said to have been an officer in Cromwell's army. He came to New York after a short residence in the West Indies and purchased an estate at Harlem, which was invested by the Governor with manorial rights. His son Lewis succeeded to the estate and during the last eight years of his life was Governor of New Jersey. His eldest son, Lewis, became a member of the New York Legislature. The second Lewis had four sons, of whom the youngest was Gouverneur, who was born January 31, 1752. At an early age he was placed in the family of M. Tetar, at New Rochelle, where he acquired a thorough knowledge of the French language. At the age of sixteen he graduated at King's College, distinguishing himself by a florid address on "Wit and Beauty." He then studied law in the office of William Smith, colonial historian of New York, and at the age of eighteen began the publication of a series of anonymous newspaper articles against a proposition in the Assembly for raising money by emitting bills of credit. In 1775 he was elected a member of the Provincial Congress, in which he soon attracted attention by a speech on the mode of issuing a paper currency by the Continental Congress. Its chief suggestions were afterwards adopted by that body. In 1777 he was elected a member of the Continental Congress and the following winter was one of the committee appointed to inquire into the state of the army, then stationed at Valley Forge. He was also chairman of the committee appointed in 1779 to consider the dispatches from the American commissioners in Europe, which were the basis of the subsequent treaty of peace. In the discussion of the question as to the jurisdiction of the State of New York over the New Hampshire grants, now the State of Vermont, Morris was supposed to be in favor of the independence of that region and consequently lost his election by the Legislature to Congress. He continued to reside in Philadelphia and engaged in the practice of his profession. In the early part of 1780 he commenced the publica-

GOUVERNEUR MORRIS.

tion of a series of essays on the state of the national finances, which were then in a desperate condition. He attacked with great ability the laws making the receipt of paper money at a fixed value compulsory, and also those regulating the prices of commodities. In May, 1780, Morris was seriously hurt by being thrown from his carriage and it was necessary to amputate one of his legs. In 1781 he was appointed by Robert Morris, who had been placed at the head of the national finances, his assistant. He performed the duties of this position for three years and a half. In 1786 his mother died. Her life interest in the estate at Morrisania thus terminated, and the property passed into the possession of the second son, Staats Long Morris, a general in the British army, the eldest son, Lewis, having received his portion during his father's life-time. Gouverneur purchased the estate from his brother. In 1787 he took his seat as delegate from Pennsylvania in the convention

Digitized by Google

which framed the Constitution of the United States. President Madison bears testimony to his exertions for the promotion of harmony, and states that the draft of the Constitution was placed in his hands to receive its finished form. In 1788 he sailed for France and in January, 1791, visited London by appointment of President Washington as a private agent to the British government to settle unfulfilled articles of the treaty of peace. During his stay in London he received his appointment as minister to France. During the troubled times of the Directory in Paris he conducted the affairs of his office with great tact and prudence. In August, 1794, he was succeeded by Monroe, his recall having been asked by the French government after the recall of Citizen Genet at the request of the United States. He next made a tour of Europe, and while in Vienna endeavored to secure the release of Lafayette from Olmütz. In October, 1798, he returned home. In 1799 he was chosen United States Senator from New York. He sided in the Senate and for the remainder of his life with the Federalists. His term closed in March, 1803, after which he resided at Morrisania. On Christmas day, 1809, he married Miss Anne Carey Randolph, of Virginia. Mr. Morris delivered funeral orations on Washington, Hamilton and Governor George Clinton and an inaugural discourse before the New York Historical Society on his election as president, and contributed frequently in the later years of his life to the *New York Evening Post*, the *Examiner* and the *United States Gazette*. He was an early advocate of the Erie Canal and chairman of the canal commissioners from their first appointment, in March, 1810, to the time of his death, which occurred November 6, 1816. His life, with selections from his correspondence and papers, by Jared Sparks, was published in 1822. In person he so closely resembled Washington that he stood as a model of his figure for Houdon, the sculptor.

The association of Alexander Hamilton with the history of Westchester County is of a tragic character, for it was at Weehawken that he lost his life in the duel with Burr, July 12, 1804. One of his best known productions—his description of the fate of Major Andre—also links him with the literary chronicles of the county, and one of his strongest, political papers was his reply to Dr. Seabury's supposed "Westchester Farmer" pamphlets. Of Andre he wrote, "Never, perhaps, did any man suffer death with more justice or deserve it less." Of the famous *Federalist*, papers, Hamilton wrote fifty-one out of eighty-five numbers. His life and public services are too well known to require consideration here. His fame will chiefly rest upon his able adminstration of the Treasury Department. In the eloquent language of Webster, "he smote the rock of the national resources and abundant streams of revenue gushed forth. He touched the dead corpse of the public credit and it sprung upon its feet."

James A. Hamilton, son of Alexander Hamilton, lived in Greenburgh, north of Dobbs Ferry, from 1835 until his death. He was the author of an interesting volume entitled "Reminiscences of Men and Events at Home and Abroad During Three-Quarters of a Century," published by Charles Scribner & Co., New York, 1869.

General Alexander Hamilton, grandson of Alexander Hamilton, lives in Tarrytown, Greenburgh. He has written tragedies, poems, prose, etc., and is a highly cultivated and accomplished *litterateur*.

David Humphreys, the soldier poet of the Revolution, composed his "Address to the Armies of the United States of America" in 1782, while encamped at Peekskill, the foe being in possession of New York and Charleston. He was the son of a Congregational clergyman, Rev. Daniel Humphreys, and was born in Derby, Connecticut, in 1753. He was educated at Yale, where he formed a personal and literary friendship with Dwight and Trumbull. He entered the Revolutionary army, and became a member of Washington's military family, with the rank of colonel. He wrote a life of General Putnam, and a number of poems and plays. After the war he resided with Washington at Mount Vernon, and when he became President, traveled with him to New York. Among his poetical productions is "Washington's Farewell to the Army," in verse. He held the diplomatic post of ambassador to Lisbon, 1794–1797, and minister to Spain, 1797–1802. He died at New Haven, February 21, 1818.

Robert Rogers, the noted ranger and writer, narrowly escaped being captured by Lord Stirling's troops at Mamaroneck, so that his associations connected with Westchester County were not, perhaps, of the pleasantest character. He was then a colonel in the British service, commanding the Queen's Rangers. After the incident at Mamaroneck he went to England, and was succeeded in his command by Colonel Simcoe. He was a native of Dunbarton, New Hampshire, and early achieved reputation as commander of a company of Rangers during the French War. His name is perpetuated by "Rogers' Slide" on Lake George, so-called from the daring act of Rogers in escaping from the Indians by sliding down the steep face of the mountain to the shore of the lake. After many romantic adventures in this country and in Europe, he figured in 1775 as an ardent patriot. Washington, however, suspected him, and in June 1776, ordered his arrest. He professed to be on his way to offer his services to Congress, which body ordered his return to New Hampshire. He soon after openly espoused the cause of the King. He was proscribed and banished by his native State, and his subsequent history is unknown. Rogers published in 1765, his "Journals," a spirited account of his early adventures as a ranger, and in the same year, "A Concise Account of North America." In the following year, he published a tragedy, "Ponteach," founded on scenes of frontier life.

Digitized by Google

Rev. Nathaniel Scudder Prime, D.D., author of a "Treatise on Baptism" and the "History of Long Island," died at Mamaroneck, March 27, 1856. He was born at Huntington, L. I., April 21, 1785; graduated in 1804 at Princeton College, from which, in 1848, he received the degree of D.D., and was ordained a Presbyterian minister October 24, 1809.

In the spring of 1830 the Rev. Dr. Prime came to Sing Sing with his family from Cambridge, Washington County, N. Y. He had been invited by the trustees of the Mount Pleasant Academy, in Sing Sing, to be its principal and had accepted the appointment. Having been the principal of the academy in Cambridge, he brought several pupils with him, and a high reputation as a scholar and teacher.

Dr. Prime was a very remarkable man. His father and grandfather were men of learning, and he himself had made great attainments in the ancient languages, philosophy and mathematics. There was probably no superior to him as a teacher in this country at that time. His two eldest sons, Alanson Jermain and Samuel Irenæus, were associated with him in the work of instruction.

The Female Seminary in Sing Sing, then under the care of Miss Dawson, was soon purchased by Dr. Prime, and his daughters, Miss Maria M. Prime and Miss Cornelia Prime, conducted the school with great success.

The academy flourished and attracted students from distant parts of the country.

The Presbyterian congregation of the village invited Dr. Prime to take charge of the pulpit, and he preached in it as stated supply about three years. He identified himself with the improvement of the place, taking an active part in all public movements of a philanthropic and moral character. In addition to the sons and daughters already named, two sons more were trained in the academy, Edward D. G. Prime and William C. Prime, the first-named graduating at Union College and the other at Princeton. The oldest son, A. J. Prime, pursued the study of medicine with Dr. A. K. Hoffman, and was for many years a successful physician at White Plains, where he died April 3, 1864, aged fifty-three years.

During the time of Dr. Prime's principalship of the academy, and almost entirely through his perseverance and enterprise, the large and handsome stone building now occupied by the institution was built, and it stands as a monument to his memory.

In the year 1835 Dr. Prime and his family removed to Newburgh, N. Y., where they conducted a female seminary and also the Newburgh Academy.

His son, Rev. Samuel Irenæus Prime, D.D., who died in 1885, was for many years the editor of the *New York Observer*, and known throughout the country as a graceful writer of travels and religious works, as well as for his able editorial management of the *Observer*. He was born at Ballston, N. Y., November 4, 1812, graduated at Williams College in 1829, was ordained a Presbyterian minister and received the degree of D.D. from Hampden-Sidney College, Virginia. His brother, E. D. Prime, also of the *Observer*, and W. C. Prime, formerly of the New York *Journal of Commerce*, were also residents of Sing Sing in early life.

John Swinburne, A.M., the distinguished scholar and teacher, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., August 11, 1803. His father was a native of England, and came to this country when a young man. His mother was a native of Ireland, and was brought to the United States by her parents in early childhood. After their marriage his parents settled in Brooklyn, where they had three children,—two sons and one daughter. John was the eldest of the three. When twelve years of age he lost his father by death. His education, from its earliest stages until he entered on the duties of active life, was directed by an English gentleman of rare attainments as a scholar and eminent skill as a teacher, and the successful results of his training were finely illustrated in the subsequent career of his gifted pupil. After leaving school he turned his attention for a short time to mercantile pursuits, and was engaged as book-keeper by a large commercial house in North Carolina. Not finding this sphere of effort congenial to his taste, he returned, after a year and a half, to Brooklyn, where he established, and successfully conducted for ten years, a select school. On October 5, 1825, he was married to Mary W., daughter of Isaac Searles, of Brooklyn. A few years afterward he accepted an invitation to the position of principal of White Plains Academy, an incorporated literary institution under the care of the regents of the State. This position he filled with the highest credit to his ability as an educator of youth. While principal of this academy he received, as an entirely voluntary tribute to his learning and skill, the honorary degree of Master of Arts from the Wesleyan University at Middletown, Conn. The president, Rev. Wilbur Fiske, D.D., LL.D., in presenting this degree, said, in his letter to Professor Swinburne: "This honor is regarded by our Faculty and Board of Trustees as justly due to your superior scholarship, as proved by the fact that your scholars, who enter our Institution, are the best fitted of any we receive."

In 1841, Professor Swinburne, who desired a school which should be subject to his sole authority, and in which he might carry out practically and fully his views of the proper education of boys, established "The White Plains Institute," a boarding-school for boys. The reputation of its proprietor and principal, as an accomplished instructor and as a Christian gentleman of the highest qualities, was so extensively known and fully established, that from its opening applicants for admission to the institute were more numerous than could be received. He now found himself in just the sphere of educational effort which he had long wished. His school was his own, was admirably located, liberally furnished in every depart-

Digitized by

Digitized by Google

ment, and would rise or fall as his long-cherished ideal of such a school should find practical realization from his efforts. To say that his success was pre-eminent is only to state a fact testified to by all who know the history of the school. The prominent characteristic of its instruction throughout was *thoroughness*. *Mastery* of the study pursued, at every step of progress made, was the end aimed at and required; and in this feature it strikingly resembled the celebrated Rugby School of Dr. Arnold in England. His scholars who left the school to enter upon a collegiate course uniformly took a high rank, and often the highest rank, in scholarship in the institutions they joined; and those who pursued a course preparatory to a business life have almost invariably been found among the most successful and honored in the circles of mercantile and commercial enterprise. The advanced years of the professor are often gladdened now by visits from his former pupils,—generally gray-headed men and distinguished in their several spheres of life, who approach their venerable teacher and friend with strong and often touching expressions of respect, gratitude and affection. The lapse of years and the changes of more than a generation seem only to have strengthened and made more tender the ties which were created by the relation that once existed. From his early youth the professor evinced a remarkable genius for mathematics. While yet a young man he was a contributor to some of the ablest mathematical periodicals of the country. Even now, when more than eighty years of age, he is often found engaged in mathematical investigations, as a mere pastime. This natural capacity for and pleasure in this science, connected with a peculiar facility in simplifying to young minds its rules and processes, enabled the professor to awaken in his school that fondness for mathematical studies, and secure that unusual advancement in them, which was one of the marked results of his teaching.

With the literature of ancient Greece and Rome he has rare familiarity. Many of the most elegant of the classic authors of antiquity in their original languages are to him as hand-books, and his translations of a number of them into our vernacular tongue are among the permanent and most valuable fruits of his scholarly labors. He is now just finishing a translation of the works of Horace, which, in fidelity to the original text, and in perspicuity and elegance of expression, will, in the opinion of classical scholars who have had the privilege of examining his work, be superior to any we now have. It is earnestly desired that he will give these translations to the world through the press, and that his health and strength will be continued, that he may personally superintend their publication.

Among the sciences to which he has successfully given his attention is mineralogy, and through more than half a century he has been engaged in collecting specimens from different parts of the world, till he has now a choice and valuable cabinet.

In 1853 Professor Swinburne met with an irreparable loss in the death of his wife. This most estimable lady, naturally active and energetic, possessed of superior practical wisdom and endowed with great tenderness of affection, had rendered invaluable aid in the administration of a school whose government was peculiarly parental. Even after the lapse of more than thirty years, the testimony borne to her watchful care and maternal kindness, by those once pupils of the school, is a most touching tribute to her memory, and furnishes pathetic proof of the great loss sustained by the school in her decease. The uninterrupted prosperity of the institute had secured to its proprietor a handsome competency; and having no longer the important aid of his wife, he decided to retire from the school to whose interests he had given the best years of his life. In the sphere of a teacher of youth for thirty years, Professor Swinburne had earned and received its highest honors, and he could now lay aside its labors in the gratifying consciousness that to the advancement of the cause of education, second in importance to none that can employ the human mind, he had given his best powers and most devoted efforts.

Since his retirement from teaching, he has continued his residence in White Plains, and has often been honored by his fellow-citizens with positions of responsibility and trust. On the organization of the fire department of the town, he was made its first president, and continued such for a number of years. When the village was incorporated, he was elected its first president, and re-elected for several successive terms. He was made the first president of the White Plains Savings Bank, and president and treasurer of the Board of Commissioners of Westchester Avenue. At the opening of the War of the Rebellion, and through its whole progress, his influence was powerfully felt in support of the cause of the Union. In his eloquent appeals at public gatherings to the patriotism of those who could take the field, as well as by his liberal contributions of money to aid in the raising and equipment of military organizations and to meet the wants of the families of soldiers who were absent at the seat of war, he rendered most valuable aid and inspired hearts in many an anxious home with gladness and hope. Professor Swinburne is a firm believer in the Christian faith. For more than forty years he has been in communion with the Protestant Episcopal Church and a liberal supporter of its worship at home and of its benevolent efforts through the land. Although eighty-three years of age and laboring under the physical infirmities incident to his years, his mental faculties continue unimpaired, and he enjoys his literary labors as highly, and enters into the current affairs of the day as earnestly and welcomes the society of his friends as cor-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

dially, as when in the prime of life. The circle of his friends is almost unlimited, and rarely has a man lived who could boast of those more devoted.

Robert Havell, an eminent English engraver and publisher, resided for many years in Sing Sing. Mr. Havell distinguished himself as the publisher, as well as the chief engraver, of that world-renowned and supremely sumptuous work, Audubon's "Birds of America." This work appeared in ten magnificent volumes, so large as to occasion the invention of the term *elephant folio*. They contained over five hundred plates, colored to the life, each bird being shown in life size, even to the extent of a large specimen of the wild turkey. The subscription price was one thousand dollars per copy. Mr. Havell spent fourteen long years in engraving, with his own hands, the most difficult portions of this work. He also employed a full force of assistants. Besides this work, Mr. Havell also published the grand work of Lord Kingsborough on the "Antiquities of Mexico," in nine quarto volumes, richly illustrated. The subscription price of this work was one hundred and seventy-five pounds per copy. To the above must be added Donnovan's "Insects of India" and "Insects of China," two exceedingly beautiful illustrated works in quarto, and a superb folio on "Lilies and Amaryllas." After the completion of "The Birds of America," Audubon induced Mr. Havell to accompany him to this country. He came to Sing Sing, one day, to enjoy the scenery, and while there made a bid on a parcel of land then being sold at auction, and had it struck off to him. This surprised him, as he had made his bid more in jest than in earnest. However, he accepted the bargain, and subsequently built a house on the grounds and occupied it as his residence for many years. He eventually removed to Tarrytown, where he died a few years since. The Havell mansion was situated on the high grounds nearly opposite the grand gateway of Dale Cemetery. The little avenue leading to these places still bears his name.

That distinguished English writer on mental disorders, the late Dr. Forbes Winslow, resided in Sing Sing for several years during his boyhood. His mother, who was then a widow, and her two sons, Forbes and Octavius, both of whom subsequently became celebrated, one as a physician, the other as a divine, resided for several years in a house that then stood where the present mansion of Mr. Frank Larkin now stands.

Rev. Robert Bolton, author of Bolton's "History of Westchester County," was born in the city of Bath, England, April 17, 1814. He was the eldest of the fourteen children of the Rev. Robert Bolton and Anne, daughter of the distinguished Rev. William Jay, of Bath.

The Bolton family is of ancient British stock, their genealogy being traced up to the time of the Conquest; resident, anciently, at Bolton and Blackburn, in Lancashire, and Wales, in Yorkshire. In the long line of the Bolton ancestry the name of Robert is rarely without a bearer. A number of these were distinguished for their learning and piety. A Robert, born in 1572, was noted at Lincoln and Brazen Nose Colleges, Oxford, for his varied accomplishments, and afterward as a divine. A Robert, born in England in 1688, became a prominent merchant in Philadelphia. His son Robert, born in 1722, was a merchant in Savannah, Georgia. His son Robert, born in 1757, became a very prominent merchant of Savannah, and the owner of much valuable real estate. His son Robert, born in 1788, in Savannah, became a merchant in Liverpool, England, afterward the rector of Christ Church, Pelham, Westchester County, and subsequently chaplain to the Earl of Ducie, at Tortworth, in Gloucestershire. His son Robert is the subject of this sketch.

Mr. Bolton and his four brothers became clergymen in the Protestant Episcopal Church. He was ordained a deacon in October, 1868, and a presbyter in June, 1869. He was rector of St. John's Church, South Salem, at the time of his death.

His brother, William Jay, at the time of his death, was rector of St. James', Bath, England, and an author of note; John is rector of Trinity Church, Westchester, Pa.; Cornelius Winter is rector of the Church of the Redeemer, Pelhamville, Westchester County; and James was the incumbent of St. Paul's Chapel, Kilburn, London. All of Mr. Bolton's sisters who survived youth achieved distinction in teaching, in literature or in art.

Robert Bolton was educated in England, and studied medicine there, but never practiced it as a profession. He came to this country in 1836, and settled at Bronxville, in East Chester, becoming a farmer. From there he removed to New Rochelle and published his first book, "The Guide to New Rochelle." He then removed to Tarrytown and engaged in teaching, an occupation to which he gave attention for the remainder of his life. He there became principal of the Irving Institute, and enjoyed intimate relations with Washington Irving, who had long been a close friend of his father. He next removed to Bedford, taking charge of the Female Institute there, and afterward founded a school in Lewisboro.

While preparing the "Guide to New Rochelle" he became interested in Westchester County history, and at once began the collection of the materials which he published in two volumes in 1848. The labor involved in this work, in the searching of collections of documents, the examination of papers and the personal visitation of every spot of interest and nearly every person of advanced age, was very great. His knowledge of the history of county localities was remarkable. He was actively engaged in the revision of his history at the time of his death. He was also the author of the "History of the Protestant

Digitized by Google

Episcopal Church in Westchester County," and of the "Memoirs of the Bolton Family."

In 1838 he married Elizabeth Rebecca, daughter of James Brenton, of Newport, R. I.; she died in 1852. In 1854 he married Josephine, daughter of Brewster Woodhull, of Patchogue, L. I., by whom he had eleven children.

Mr. Bolton's father founded the celebrated Bolton Priory, at Pelham, with which the family name has been so prominently connected. He purchased this estate, charmingly situated upon the shore of Long Island Sound, in 1837, and erected thereon a handsome stone edifice for a residence, and laid out the grounds with surpassing taste. This was afterward used for a young ladies' school, and under the management of Miss Nanetta Bolton, became justly famous. Here Robert Bolton, the historian, died October 11, 1877.

Beside being a laborious, painstaking historian, a diligent teacher and an earnest minister, Mr. Bolton was accomplished in many ways. He was dexterous in wood-carving, apt with his pencil and skillful in painting. He had a passion for the antique, and was a man of peculiarly fine and cultivated tastes.

Rev. Cornelius Winter Bolton, brother of Robert Bolton, the historian, was born in Bath, England, June 3, 1819. He came to this country and studied divinity at the Protestant Episcopal Theological Seminary at Alexandria, Va.; was admitted to deacon's orders in 1847, and was ordained priest in 1848. In 1850 he became assistant minister of Christ Church, Baltimore, and in 1855 rector of Christ Church, Pelham. In 1858 he was rector of South Yonkers Church, and he then became minister of St. George's Chapel, in New York City. He became rector of St. Mark's Church, New Castle, in 1867, and then of St. Stephen's, North Castle, and at present is rector of the Church of the Redeemer, Pelhamville.

In 1856 he married Cornelia, daughter of Cornelius Glen Van Rensselaer, Esq., of Greenbush, Rensselaer County, N. Y.

Mr. C. W. Bolton is the author of "The Shepherd's Call," the "Sunday-school Prayer-Book" and other publications. In 1854 he edited Jay's "Female Scripture Characters" and Jay's "Autobiography and Reminiscences." In 1881 he edited and published his brother Robert's "History of Westchester County."

Edmund March Blunt, the nautical writer, was for many years a resident of Sing Sing. He was born at Portsmouth, N. H., June 20, 1770, and died at Sing Sing, January 5, 1862, in the ninety-third year of his age. He was the publisher of the *Newburyport Herald*, and in 1796 he published his first "Coast Pilot," which is still in use, and which has been translated into most of the languages of Europe. He also published "Strangers' Guide to New York City" in 1817, and numerous nautical books and charts. He lived about forty years in the house in State Street, Sing Sing, now owned and occupied by Dr. Wm. H. Helm.

Mrs. Ann Eliza Bleecker, the poetess, was at one time a resident of Westchester County, having lived at Poughkeepsie a year or two just after her marriage. Mrs. Bleecker was the youngest daughter of Brandt Schuyler, and was born in the city of New York in October, 1752. In 1769 she married Mr. John J. Bleecker, of New Rochelle, and removed with him to Poughkeepsie. After leaving Poughkeepsie, Mr. and Mrs. Bleecker settled at Tomhanick, a beautiful little village about eighteen miles above Albany. She died there November 23, 1783. Her poems were written without a view to publication, but several of them were printed in the earlier numbers of the *New York Magazine*. A collection of her poems and stories was published in 1793, under the supervision of her daughter, Margaretta, who added a number of verses and essays from her own pen.

Gulian C. Verplanck belongs to the literary characters of Westchester County by right of residence, for many years dividing his time between the city of New York and the Verplanck homestead at Fishkill Landing, on the Hudson, a well-preserved old mansion, in which the Society of the Cincinnati was founded. A graduate of Columbia College, he studied law, was admitted to the bar and after spending several years in Europe returned to New York, and was elected a member of the Legislature. In 1818 he delivered the first of the series of public addresses on which his literary reputation mainly rests. About 1820 he was appointed professor of the Evidences of Christianity in the General Protestant Episcopal Seminary, and in 1824 published a volume of essays on this subject. In 1825 he was elected a member of Congress from New York City and remained in the House eight years. He was especially prominent in advocacy of the bill extending the term of copyright from twenty-eight to forty-two years. For several years he was a member of the New York Senate. In 1827 Verplanck, Sands and Bryant united in the production of an annual called *The Talisman*. Mr. Verplanck also wrote a number of essays on a variety of subjects and published an edition of Shakespeare's plays, with notes from various sources, including some from his own pen. Mr. Verplanck, who was born in New York City August 6, 1786, died there March 18, 1870. His private life, says Bryant, "was as beautiful as his public life was useful and beneficent."

James Fenimore Cooper is another distinguished name which may be included among the *literati* of Westchester County, for his first novel was written while he resided at Mamaroneck. Cooper was born at Burlington, N. J., September 15, 1789. His father, Judge William Cooper, removed the following year to the neighborhood of Otsego Lake, N. Y., where he had purchased a large tract of land on which he

Digitized by Google

established a settlement, to which he gave the name of Cooperstown. In this frontier home, in the midst of a population of settlers, trappers and Indians, young Cooper imbibed that knowledge of backwoods life and of the habits of the aborigines which afterwards served him so well in the construction of his romances. At the age of thirteen he entered Yale College, and after remaining there three years received an appointment as midshipman in the United States Navy. In the latter he obtained, during the six years of his service, a familiarity with nautical life which he utilized with splendid results in his famous sea-stories.

In 1811 Cooper resigned his commission in the navy and married Miss De Lancey, a member of the well-known New York family of that name and sister of the bishop of Western New York. They settled in the village of Mamaroneck, in Westchester County, and not long after Cooper's mind was accidentally turned to the field of fiction. One day, after reading an English novel, he remarked to his wife that he believed he could write a better story himself. To test the matter he wrote "Precaution." He had not intended to publish the novel, but was induced to do so by his wife and his friend, Charles Wilkes. The descriptions of English life and scenery gave it great popularity in England where it was re-published. The "Spy," which followed, was as thoroughly American, and obtained great success, not only in this country, but abroad. It was almost immediately re-published in all parts of Europe. "The Pioneers" was the first of the series of frontier and Indian stories, on which

Digitized by Google

the novelist's reputation chiefly rests. It was followed by "The Pilot," the first of his sea-stories. Other novels followed in quick succession, and Cooper's reputation grew apace. He was also sharply criticised and became involved in various controversies, which culminated finally in a series of libel suits against his detractors in the newspapers. In 1826 he visited Europe, and upon his return to this country made his home at Cooperstown, N. Y. During his residence abroad (1826–33) he was everywhere received with marked attention. His literary activity was unchecked by his wanderings, and during his stay in Europe he wrote a number of novels. After his return to this country he wrote the "Naval History of the United States," which excited an acrimonious discussion as to the correctness of his account of the battle of Lake Erie. In one of his libel suits Cooper defended, in person, the accuracy of his version of the battle. A lawyer, who was an auditor of the closing sentences of his argument, remarked, "I have heard nothing like it since the days of Emmet." Cooper continued to write with amazing fertility and vigor almost to the close of his life, which was terminated by dropsy, September 14, 1851. Notwithstanding his defects of style, his romances are conceded to be among the most vivid and original of all American works of fiction. He was the first of his countrymen who obtained a wide recognition in other portions of the world. His works were translated into many languages, and the Indian tales especially were universal favorites in Europe. The great French novelist, Balzac, said of him, "With, what amazing power has he painted nature! How all his pages glow with creative fire! Who is there writing English among our contemporaries, if not of him, of whom it can be said that he has a genius of the first order?" "The empire of the sea," says the *Edinburgh Review*, "has been conceded to him by acclamation;" and the same journal adds, "In the lonely desert or untrodden prairie, among the savage Indians, or scarcely less savage settlers, all equally acknowledge his dominion."

Of all the writers who have in any way been associated with the history of Westchester County, Washington Irving is perhaps the most illustrious. Born in New York City, his whole life, with brief intervals, was spent within the borders of the county, and some of his very best work bears the impress of local influences. On the "lordly Hudson" Irving "chose and built the home where he lived for many years, and in which he did much of his life's best work, and here he died."[1]

"Westchester," said another eulogist of Irving, "has a claim peculiarly her own, for, while we are joint-heirs with others of his fame, Irving was here honored during his life for other qualities besides those of the gifted author, as he was here also known as the good citizen, the genial neighbor and the Christian gentleman."[2]

Irving first came to know Tarrytown and Sleepy Hollow when a lad of fourteen or fifteen. He spent some of his holidays here, and formed an attachment for the spot which never left him. Irving was born on the 3d of April, 1783, in a house which stood on William Street, New York City, next to the corner of Fulton. He was the youngest son of William Irving, a merchant and native of Scotland, who had married an English lady. He had an ordinary school education, but early developed a taste for literature. At the age of sixteen he began the study of law. His brother, Dr. Peter Irving, edited the *Morning Chronicle*, and for this paper Washington Irving wrote a series of essays on the theatres, manners of the town and kindred topics, with the signature of Jonathan Oldstyle. In 1804 for the benefit of his health he visited the south of Europe, returning by way of Switzerland to France and proceeding thence after a sojourn of a few months in Paris to England *via* Flanders and Holland. While at Rome he formed the acquaintance of Washington Allston, the artist, with whom he studied painting for a time with the idea of himself becoming a painter. After an absence of two years, however, he returned to New York, in March, 1806, and again took up the study of law. He was admitted to the bar, but never practiced. About this time he wrote and published his portion of the "Salmagundi" papers, which appeared as a serial. Paulding wrote a portion of the work, William Irving the poetry and Washington Irving the remainder. In December, 1809, he published "Knickerbocker's History of New York," an extravagant burlesque, which excited general laughter, although it was gravely held up to reprehension in an address before the Historical Society of New York. Its grotesque descriptions of Dutch manners and customs in the colony of New Netherlands are full of humor. After the publication of this work Irving engaged as silent partner with two of his brothers in mercantile business. The second war with Great Britain breaking out, he joined the military staff of Governor Tompkins, with the rank of colonel. After the war he paid a visit to the British Islands, and intended to make a tour of the Continent, but business reverses involving the ruin of his firm compelled him to abandon his purpose. Irving now turned to literature for support, and through the friendly aid of Sir Walter Scott, secured the publication of the "Sketch Book" by Murray, the great English publisher, who bought the copyright for two hundred pounds, which he subsequently increased to four hundred pounds.

In 1820 Irving took up his residence in Paris, where he formed the acquaintance of Tom Moore. While in

[1] Address of Chief Justice Noah Davis at the Irving anniversary, at Tarrytown, N. Y., April 3, 1883.

[2] Address of James Wood, Tarrytown celebration, 1883.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Washington Irving

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Paris he wrote "Bracebridge Hall." The winter of 1822 was spent in Dresden. Returning to Paris in 1823 he published, in December of the following year, his "Tales of a Traveller," for which he received from Murray the sum of £1500. In 1826, after spending a winter in the south of France, he went to Madrid, where he wrote his "Life of Columbus," the English edition of which brought him 3000 guineas. His "Conquest of Granada" and "Alhambra" followed. In July, 1829, having been appointed Secretary of Legation, at London, he left Spain for England. In 1831 he received, from the University of Oxford the degree of LL.D. After an absence of seventeen years he returned to America, in May, 1832. His arrival was commemorated by a public dinner in New York City, at which Chancellor Kent presided. A few months later he made a journey west of the Mississippi, which he described in his "Tour of the Prairies." In 1836 he published "Astoria" and subsequently the "Adventures of Captain Bonnevill." From 1839 for two years he contributed a series of papers to the *Knickerbocker Magazine*. A number of these papers, together with others, were published in 1855, in a volume which received the title "Woolfert's Roost."

In 1842 Irving was appointed Minister to Spain, an office which he retained for the next four years. He then returned home and for the rest of his life resided at his cottage residence "Sunnyside," near Tarrytown, the spot which he had described years before in the "Legend of Sleepy Hollow" as the castle of the Herr Van Tassel, and of which he wrote—"If ever I should wish for a retreat whither I might steal from the world and its distractions, and dream quietly away the remainder of a troubled life, I know of none more promising than this little valley." Here in this retreat he lived in the midst of a family circle composed of his brother and his nieces, hospitably entertaining his friends and engaged in writing his biographies of Goldsmith and Mahomet and his "Life of Washington."

His life at "Sunnyside" was simple, kindly and affectionate. He was a good friend and neighbor and a devout communicant at Christ Episcopal Church in Tarrytown. For many years he was a vestryman and warden, and it was his practice during the greater part of this time to take up the collection at the Sunday services. He never married, having lost by death his betrothed wife, Matilda Hoffman, a beautiful young girl. His death occurred at Tarrytown, November 28, 1859, and he was buried in the beautiful cemetery of Sleepy Hollow. The ivy upon the tower of Christ Church was taken from "Sunnyside" and planted by Irving himself. It was originally brought from Melrose Abbey. His pew in the church is marked with his name and was set apart years ago by the vestry for the use of any members of the Irving family who might wish to worship there. As near the pew as it could be placed is a mural tablet erected by the vestry to his memory. In the centre is the Irving coat of arms and on the stone the following inscription:

Washington Irving,

Born in the City of New York, April 3, 1783.

For many years a communicant and warden of this church,

And

Repeatedly one of its delegates to the Convention

Of the Diocese.

Loved, Honored, Revered.

He fell asleep in Jesus,

November 28th, 1859.

Irving died at "Sunnyside," having just taken leave of the family-circle. Three days later he was buried in the old Dutch Church cemetery, where he had some time before selected the spot for his grave, and where the remains of the brothers and sisters who had died before him were buried. An account of the funeral says: "It was a remarkable assemblage from the city, of men of worth and eminence, the friends of his youth and middle-life, and universally of the population of the town and adjacent country, where he was beloved by all. The area of Christ Church, Tarrytown, where the funeral services of the Episcopal Church, of which he had been a member, were performed, was much too limited to contain the numbers which thronged to the simple ceremony. The neighboring hillside was covered, and the road to the cemetery lined with spectators, villagers and others, clad in their Sunday attire. The shops of Tarrytown were all closed. Thus was borne to the grave with simple but heartfelt honors all that was mortal of Washington Irving. Eulogies, resolutions and addresses from civic, religious, literary and other societies followed his death. The city government of New York, the Athenæum Club, the New York Historical Society, the Massachusetts Historical Society, heaped these honors on his tomb, while personal tributes in sermons, editorial articles and various reminiscences were called forth in great number."

"By his will, says the same account, "which made ample provision to continue the home at 'Sunnyside' to the brother and nieces by whom Mr. Irving had been surrounded, he left his manuscripts to his nephew, Pierre M. Irving, who had been his assistant in some of his more important labors of research, as his literary executor." Mr. Irving afterwards published a memoir of his distinguished uncle. Mr. George P. Putnam, the New York publisher, issued a uniform edition of Washington Irving's works, in 1847, which yielded Mr. Irving and his representatives more than $150,000.

On the 3d of April, 1883, the centennial anniversary of Irving's birth was commemorated at Tarrytown by "The Washington Irving Association," which had been formed on the 19th of March for the purpose of appropriately observing the anniversary. The ex-

Digitized by Google

ercises took place on the evening of April 3d, at the Second Reformed Church. Judge Noah Davis presided, and from New York, Brooklyn and many adjacent points many came to swell the assemblage. The church was beautifully decorated with flowers and evergreens. As a prelude to the addresses, Miss Hawes played the overture from the opera of "Rip Van Winkle" on the organ. Addresses were delivered by Judge Davis, Mr. James Wood, president of the Westchester County Historical Society; Rev. James Selden Spencer, Donald G. Mitchell, Charles Dudley Warner and Professor William C. Wilkinson. A poem by Mr. Stephen H. Thayer, of Tarrytown, was read by Rev. Washington Choate. Letters of regret from a number of invited guests were also read, among them being responses from Governor Cleveland, John G. Whittier, George William Curtis, John Jay and President Porter, of Yale. Miss Sears sang "The Lost Chord," and Professor T. S. Doolittle, D.D., pronounced the benediction. At the request of the committee of arrangements the Misses Irving opened "Sunnyside" to the public, and for several days persons from all parts of the country availed themselves of the opportunity to visit "Woolfert's Roost," which remained as it was at Mr. Irving's death. A memorial volume containing an account of the commemoration, with the addresses and poem, was afterwards published by the Irving Association. It is embellished by fine steel portraits of Irving and Matilda Hoffman and by views of "Sunnyside," Christ Church, the old mill in Sleepy Hollow and "Woolfert's Roost."

Among the *literati* of Westchester County the name of Henry B. Dawson suggests itself, at once, as among the most prominent of those identified with the work of historical research in America. Although not a native of the county, he has been so completely a part of its social and literary life for more than a generation, that he may justly be regarded as one of its representative men.

Henry Barton Dawson was born at Gosberton, in Lincolnshire, about ten miles southwest of Boston, England, on Friday, June 8, 1821. His father, Abraham Dawson, was born in July, 1795, at Wisbeach, in the neighboring county of Cambridge, where his grandfather, originally of Lincolnshire, was then residing. His father's mother, a Miss Culy, belonged to a family of French Huguenots, who lived on a farm called Guyhirn, near Wisbeach. His mother was Mary Barton, second daughter of John Barton, of the parish of Bicker, five miles north of Gosberton. Mr. Barton was a respectable farmer. His daughter, Mary, married Abraham Dawson, May 15, 1820.

Henry Barton Dawson was their only son and the eldest of six children. He received his first instruction from a school-mistress, who found him an apt and ready pupil. At nine years of age, having in the meantime had the care of the village school-master, he attended, for a year, the noted school of Mr. Moses of Donnington. The last school in his native county, at which he was taught, was kept by Mr. Greenfield, a pupil of Mr. Moses, who carried him through a course of practical surveying.

In the spring of 1834 his parents, with their family, removed from England to the United States. They landed at New York on the 9th of June in the same year. His father's chief reason for emigrating was his dissatisfaction with the British government. At Manhattanville, eight miles from New York, he established himself as a gardener, an occupation which he continued to pursue until a short time before his death, in January, 1872. Henry attended the public schools in West Seventeenth Street, New York, and at Manhattanville until the spring of 1836, except during the summer of 1835, when he was at work with his father. In March, 1836, he left school in order to assist his father, who was then gardener at the Bloomingdale Lunatic Asylum. Before he left the trustees of the Public School Society tendered him a free scholarship in college, but the limited means of his father would not admit of his acceptance. He continued to work in the garden of the asylum with his father until the fall of 1837, when the family removed to Ithaca, N. Y., with the intention of settling on a farm. His father, however, resumed his occupation of gardener, and Henry continued to assist him for a short time. He then became an apprentice to a wheel-wright, Mr. Ira Bower, and soon after a clerk in the book-selling and publishing house of Messrs. Mack, Andrus & Woodruff, at Ithaca. In the winter of 1838–39 he left the latter to take the position of confidential clerk for Judge Gere, a wealthy resident of the town, and in April, 1839, returned to New York, where his employer had established a large lumber-yard. His salary at this time was one hundred and twenty-five dollars a year. Mr. Dawson continued in this business, under successive employers, until May, 1844, when he was engaged by Messrs. Comstock & Co., of Cortlandt Street, large dealers in patent medicines, as book-keeper. He also performed the duties of their cashier and corresponding clerk. In June, 1846, he became book-keeper for Messrs. Cumming, Main & Co., druggists, with whom he remained one year.

Although Mr. Dawson had contributed articles for the daily press, generally on political topics, as early as the winter of 1840, his first pecuniary venture in literature was brought about in a rather singular way. Having, in 1845, while still employed by Comstock & Co., advanced some money to the proprietor of *The Crystal Fount*, a weekly temperance and literary newspaper, he was obliged to take the printing-office and paper in repayment of his loan. For more than a year he edited and published the paper besides discharging his duties as book-keeper, and finding the work too burdensome, he finally, in 1846, gave up his position with Cumming, Main & Co., and devoted all his time to the newspaper. In November of the same year he was obliged to discontinue its publication with the loss, not only of the original loan, but

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Henry B. Dawson

Digitized by Google

also of all his savings. The paper was the organ of the Order of the Rechabites, and Mr. Dawson's uncompromising spirit having involved him in difficulties with the principal officers of the order, the paper suffered from the enmities thus aroused.

Mr. Dawson next accepted the agency of the International Art Union, and in the following year, that of the American Art Union, which latter he retained until the concern was closed by the Supreme Court. After this he was an officer of the Wall Street Ferry to Brooklyn, and was successively connected with three different insurance companies in New York. In 1856, owing to the failure of the company of which he was secretary, he was again left without employment, and accepted an offer from Messrs. Johnson, Fry & Co., Publishers, to write a work for them on the military and naval history of this country. This was his first book, although he had already become known among historical writers, by "The Park and its Vicinity," written for and published in the "Manual of the Common Council of the City of New York" for 1855; the "Life and Times of Anne Hutchinson," written for the Baptist Historical Society; and "The Retreats through Westchester County, in 1776," written for the New York Historical Society.

"The Battles of the United States by Sea and Land," which is the title of the military and naval work, written for Messrs. Johnson, Fry & Co., was published, as a serial, in forty numbers, the first number appearing in the autumn of 1858. Besides its merits as a popular work, it is of recognized value as an historical authority, the events of each battle being given in detail with copious references, the principal documents relating to the engagement, and, occasionally, biographical sketches of the prominent actors. The success of the work was so decided that he undertook to write a complete military history of the United States, but the Civil War stopped the work as it also did the progress of the "Life and Times of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins," which he had undertaken at the request of the family.

While writing the "Battles," he became involved in a controversy concerning the merits of Major General Israel Putnam, with Messrs. Griswold and Deming, of Hartford, Conn., in the *Daily Post* of that city. The correspondence attracted the attention of scholars throughout the entire country, the Legislature of Connecticut being led by it to take special action on the subject; and the letters were subsequently collected and published in a handsome volume, copies of which have commanded prices as high as fifty dollars each.

In 1862 Mr. Dawson was enabled to make a complete transcript of the receipts and disbursements of moneys for the municipal purposes of the city of New York, during the entire occupation of that city by the Royal Army, 1776 to 1783, together with all the military orders on which those receipts and disbursements rested, and all the vouchers of the auditors appointed by the successive Commanders-in-chief through whom those accounts were settled.

As none of these were previously known and as the Finance Department of the city needed only these to make the financial records of the city complete from a very early period, this work of Mr. Dawson was welcomed by the city authorities as few such works have ever been welcomed. The mayor honored it by sending it to the common council with a special message; and the latter spread not only the message, but the entire financial and historical statement made by Mr. Dawson on its Minutes, made a liberal appropriation for his compensation; gave to him an official vote of thanks, a copy of which elegantly engrossed and framed ornaments his dining-room; and gave to him, also, the unusual privilege of copying and publishing any of its ancient records and files which he should, at any time, desire to employ.

Mr. Dawson's edition of the "Fœderalist" was the first of a projected series of historical works upon the Constitution of the United States, to be completed in seven octavo volumes, namely, "the Fœderalist," two volumes; "the Anti-Fœderalist, two volumes, which were to consist of contemporary articles written against the adoption of the Constitution; and a "History of the Constitution," an original work, written by Mr. Dawson, three volumes. Other engagements, however, prevented him from completing a work which would doubtless have proved a most important contribution to the political literature of the United States.

In 1863 the first volume of Mr. Dawson's edition of "The Fœderalist" appeared. The distinguishing feature of this edition was the restoration of the original text and the rejection of unauthorized mutilations. Prefixed was an historical and bibliographical introduction, giving a careful review of the political condition of the State of New York in 1787; an account of the causes which led its authors to write the series of articles of which the work is composed; the names of the writers of the several articles; a list of the different editions which Mr. Dawson had found; and a very elaborate analysis of "The Fœderalist" itself. The peculiar merit of that edition of this celebrated work was recognized by Harvard University, Williams College and several others, as well as by the Board of Education in the city of New York, all of whom added it to their respective lists of text-books; by the leading scholars of that period, led by the venerable Joshua Quincy, and by the Attorney General and the Secretary of State of the United States, each of whom adopted it as the edition of "The Fœderalist," which should, thenceforth, be used in their respective offices.

The publication of "The Fœderalist" called forth an attack on the volume and its editor by the Hon. John Jay, grandson of one of the authors of the original work and more recently United States minister to Austria-Hungary. It was also assailed by the

Digitized by Google

venerable James A. Hamilton, son of Alexander Hamilton, another of its authors. These articles were printed in the *New York Evening Post*, and created much excitement among the politicians and historians. Mr. Dawson replied to each and the controversy proved highly interesting. The intercourse between Mr. Hamilton and Mr. Dawson was afterwards resumed and their personal relations were perfectly friendly until the death of the former.

In 1863 Mr. Dawson also published his work on "The Assault of Stoney Point by General Anthony Wayne." It was an elegant volume, illustrated by maps and fac-similes. The germ of the work was a paper read April 1, 1862, before the New York and Pennsylvania Historical Societies. In preparing it he had the use of the correspondence and other family papers of General Wayne himself.

In 1864 Mr. Dawson reprinted the "Federalist Correspondence" with John Jay and James A. Hamilton as the first number of a protracted series entitled, "Current Fictions Tested by Uncurrent Facts." In the following year he published "The Diary of David Dow," a soldier of the Revolution, which, like all of Mr. Dawson's publications, was exhaustively annotated, and an edition of Dring's "Recollections of the Jersey Prison-Ship," which was published originally at Providence, R. I., in 1829, being compiled from Mr. Dring's manuscripts by Albert Gorton Greene, the well-known scholar and poet. The value of the work was greatly enhanced by the addition of an elaborate appendix prepared by Mr. Dawson.

A new edition of "The Park and its Vicinity" has been printed as No. I. of his "Gleanings in the Harvest Field of American History," but has not been published. Several of his works already mentioned had been issued as numbers in this series—namely, the "Diary of David How" as No. IV.; "Putnam Correspondence" as No. V., and "Stoney Point" as No. XI. The series is elegantly printed, in uniform style, royal octavo, and the editions are all limited. Besides these various works Mr. Dawson has written a paper on "The Sons of Liberty in New York;" one on "The Battle of Harlem Heights," and one on "The City of New York on Sunday Morning, April 23, 1775," all of them for the New York Historical Society; one on the "Battle of Bennington" for the Vermont Historical Society; and one on the "Battle of Long Island" for the Long Island Historical Society, together with several minor tracts, and numerous articles for periodicals with which he has had no editorial connection; and he edited, in 1861, for the Mercantile Library Association of New York City a volume of original papers, generally of the Revolutionary War, to which he added voluminous notes. The introduction to the last-named volume, which bore the title of "New York City During the American Revolution," attracted much attention, since it contained a carefully prepared and minute description of the city as it was at that early period, as if written at the time and by one who was personally acquainted with every part of it, and with the principal persons who lived there. Like the greater number of Mr. Dawson's works this volume was printed in elegant form for private circulation, and commands very high prices when copies are thrown on the market. In 1866 he edited the official "Record of the Trial of Joshua Hett Smith, Esq.,, for Alleged Complicity in the Treason of Benedict Arnold," of which only fifty copies were printed; and five large octavo volumes of selections from the *Historical Magazine*, bearing the general title of "The Magazine Miscellany," and elegantly printed in an edition of only twenty-five copies, have also appeared under his editorial supervision.

In the spring of 1865, Mr. Dawson was invited to take the editorial charge of *The Gazette*, a Democratic newspaper, published weekly at Yonkers, N. Y., which invitation he accepted. During the eleven months of his connection with the *Gazette*, he gave a new character to the publication, and proved himself an able controversialist and critic. His last number appeared on the 31st of March, 1866. The historical and bibliographical material with which he occupied the first page of the *Gazette*, at once commanded attention from the leading men of the country. Judge Nelson, of the Supreme Court of the United States, ordered a great case to be re-argued, in order that articles bearing on it, which had appeared in the *Gazette* after the case had been argued, could be judicially admitted as authorities before the decision of the court was given; and it is said that the authoritative character of those articles, which were from Mr. Dawson's pen, were seen in the decision of the court given by that distinguished jurist. In Brodhead's "History of the State of New York," and in other works of equally high character, the historical articles which Mr. Dawson prepared for *The Gazette*, were repeatedly referred to as standard authorities. Odd numbers of the *Gazette* of that period are eagerly sought, and command high prices; files of it are bound and carefully preserved in the state and historical society's libraries; and it is known that, during the past year, fifteen dollars were paid for an unbound file of it for the twelve months during which Mr. Dawson was its editor.

Four volumes of selections from the more important articles in the *Gazette* have been printed under the general title of the "Gazette Series." The titles of the several volumes are: vol. i. "Papers concerning the capture and detention of Major John Andre," collected by Henry B. Dawson, Yonkers, N. Y., 1866; vol. ii., "Papers concerning the boundary between the States of New York and New Jersey," written by several hands, Yonkers, 1866; vol. iii., "Papers concerning the town and village of Yonkers, Westchester County," a fragment, by Henry

Digitized by Google

B. Dawson, Yonkers, 1866; vol. iv., "Rambles in Westchester County," a fragment, by Henry B. Dawson, Yonkers, 1866. The authors of the articles in vol. ii. were General John Cochrane, Attorney-General of New York; Hon. J. Romeyn Brodhead, (two articles); William A. Whitehead, of Newark, in reply to the last; Mr. Dawson himself, who endeavored to act as umpire between the two; Mr. Whitehead, in reply to Mr. Dawson; Mr. Dawson, in reply to Mr. Whitehead; and the Attorney-General of New York in closing the argument. The correspondence closes with a postscript by Mr. Dawson. The volume was subsequently printed for the use of the United States Court in one of the boundary suits; and the arguments and evidence which Mr. Dawson presented in his articles, are said to have influenced Judge Nelson in determining the case for New York. The Andre volume is probably the most perfect "Andreana" in print. The series of volumes has been sold at one hundred dollars for the set, the edition being very small, only twenty-six copies having been printed.

A month or two after dissolving his relations with the *Gazette*, Mr. Dawson purchased *The Historical Magazine*, of which he became the editor and publisher. His first number was that for July, 1866. Ten volumes having been completed at the end of the year, he began in January, 1867, a new and enlarged series of the work giving double the number of pages and making two volumes in a year. As editor of this publication Mr. Dawson has achieved wide reputation among literary people, and especially among the students of every branch of American history. The magazine became a mine of historical information, and continues to be regarded as one of the standard references of American literature.

In 1868 the "Manual of the New York Common Council" passed into the editorial care of the new clerk, Joseph Shannon, and his deputy, F. J. Twomey. It now began to be issued in an enlarged and improved form. Mr. Dawson, on invitation, furnished the historical material and added some new features to the work. The Charter of the city was collated by him, critically, with the ancient parchments, and was first printed accurately in the manual. Mr. Dawson also furnished an elaborate paper on the battle of Harlem Heights and the death of Colonel Knowlton. The State authorities of New York subsequently employed him to examine and report on the boundaries of that state on the lines of New Jersey, Massachusetts and Connecticut; and the vestry of Trinity Church, New York, invited him to become the historian of that ancient and noted parish. Mr. Dawson did nothing under either of these requests, but his selection indicates the estimation in which he is held as an authority on historical questions relating to New York.

Mr. Dawson has long conducted an extensive correspondence with literary people and conspicuous actors in public events. He has been elected a resident member of the New York Historical Society, the American Institute, and the American Geographical and Statistical Society; an honorary member by the Minnesota and the New England Methodist Historical Societies, and a corresponding member by the Massachusetts, Vermont, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, Wisconsin, Chicago, and New England Historic-Genealogical, the Long Island, the Oneida and the Cayuga County Historical Societies; and also by the Worcester (Massachusetts) Society of Antiquity, the American Statistical Association and the Albany Institute.

Mr. Dawson possesses a fine library on American history—the result of many years of historical inquiry, and undoubtedly one of the most valuable collections, for practical purposes, in the country. Not only on the special subjects of which he has written, but in the general field of American history, Mr. Dawson's searching and retentive intellect has stored up a mass of most valuable information, in the use of which he is skilled by long practice to such an extent as to make him one of the most formidable of controversialists.

In religious opinion he is a resolute and uncompromising Calvinistic Baptist; and in politics an old-fashioned "States-rights Democrat." He voted for Polk for President in 1844, and attached himself to that wing of the Democratic party known as the "Barnburners," which, in 1848, assisted in forming the Free Soil party. During the Presidential canvass of that year, he was a member of the New York City committee of that party, and in 1849 was on the "general committee" of the city—what was known as "the old men's committee"—of which S. J. Tilden, B. F. Butler, ex-Attorney-General of the United States, Wilson G. Hunt, George H. Purser, Mark Spencer, Anthony J. Bleecker, John Van Buren, David Dudley Field, Lucius Robinson, Nelson J. Waterbury and other well-known politicians were members. He adhered to the Free Soil party and its successor, the Republican party, till the War of Secession, to the last-named, however, not as a "Republican," but as "a Democrat opposed to the administration." Since the close of the War he has been, as he maintains he had been before the War, a Democrat and a rigid opponent of centralized power both in State and Federal government.

Mr. Dawson was married May 28, 1845, to Catherine, daughter of Abraham D. and Esther (Whelpley) Martling, of Tarrytown, Westchester County, N. Y., one of the oldest families of the county. They have had nine children—1, Spencer H. C., born May 11, 1846, died July 9, 1871; 2, Henry B., Jr., born December 19, 1847, died March 10, 1876; 3, William Martling, born August 27, 1849; 4, Stephen Van Rensselaer, born September 21, 1851; 5, George Cooley, born September 25, 1853, married Mary Kate Dean November 16, 1881; 6, Mary Dawson, born June 17, 1855, married William H. Halsey July 6, 1875; 7,

Digitized by Google

Catherine Martling, born April 9, 1859; 8, Esther Martling, born July 17, 1861, died March 16, 1865; and 9, Caroline Dutcher, born August 31, 1863, died April 22, 1880. They have also had an adopted daughter, Anna Augusta, born October 30, 1851, who died May 31, 1878.

James Kirke Paulding, the friend of Irving and his associate in the production of the *Salmagundi* papers, was of Westchester extraction, though a native of Dutchess County. His grandfather, many years previous to the Revolution, settled in Westchester County on a farm at Tarrytown, still in possession of his descendants. The family removed to a tract of land in Dutchess County which had been granted them by King William III. This change was made in consequence of the fact that the Paulding residence being "within the lines," that is in the district intervening between the British Army at New York and the American forces in the Highlands, and the Pauldings being Whigs they were exposed to the depredations of the British troops and their Tory allies. Paulding was born at a place called Pleasant Valley in Dutchess County, August 22, 1779. His father was a leader of the Whig party in the county of Westchester, a member of the first committee of safety and subsequently Commissary General of the New York quota of troops. He was financially ruined by furnishing the army with supplies obtained on his personal credit for which he could obtain no compensation from the government.

After the close of the war, the family returned to their former home in Westchester, and Paulding was educated at the village school—a log house nearly two miles distant from his residence. Here he received all the education he ever obtained from tuition. On arriving at manhood in 1800 he removed to New York City, staying at first with Washington Irving's brother, William, who had married Paulding's sister. His first attempts in literature were his contributions to the *Salmagundi* papers. At the beginning of the War of 1812 he published a clever satire on the policy of England toward America with the title of "The Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan" which was reprinted in one of the English journals. Following this was "The Lay of the Scottish Fiddle," a parody of the "Lay of the Last Minstrel," in which he satirized the predatory warfare of the British on the Chesapeake Bay, and described the burning and sacking of Havre-de-Grace at the mouth of the Susquehanna by Admiral Cockburn's fleet. It was republished in London in handsome style with a complimentary preface and provoked a fierce review from the *London Quarterly*. He next published "The United States and England," a strong defense of this country against the strictures of the *Quarterly*, which attracted the notice of President Madison. In 1815 he published his "Letters From the South by a Northern Man," written after a visit to Virginia, and in 1818 his principal poetical work "The Backwoodsman." He next published the novel "Konigsmark," or, as it was afterwards called, "Old Times in the New World," the scene of which is laid amongst the early Swedish settlers on the Delaware. These were followed by a number of tales and sketches and his "Life of Washington," prepared chiefly for the more youthful class of readers. In 1836 he published a defence of slavery under the title "Slavery in the United States." Most of his works were republished by Harper & Brothers in a uniform edition in 1835. Paulding was thoroughly American in spirit and feeling, and his writings did much to confirm and strengthen in the popular mind the sentiments of patriotism engendered by the Revolution and the war of 1812. Their value was recognized officially by his appointment in 1814 or 1815 as secretary of the Board of Navy Commissioners, then first established. He was transferred several years later to the post of Navy Agent for the port of New York, which he retained for twelve years under different administrations and resigned to accept the position at the head of the Navy Department, under the administration of President Van Buren. Upon the accession of President Harrison to office, he resigned and soon afterwards retired to a pleasant residence, "Hyde Park," on the east bank of the Hudson in the county of Dutchess, where he spent the closing years of his life. He died in the eighty-second year of his age, on the 6th of April 1860. The "Literary Life of James K. Paulding," by his son, William Irving Paulding, was published in 1867.

JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE.

Near the road leading from West Farms to Hunt's Point, on the sound and on the edge of the marshes which border the Bronx River, stands an ancient burial place in which repose the remains of Joseph Rodman Drake, the poet who charmed the senses of thousands with the music of "The Culprit Fay," and strung the patriotic feelings of Americans to the highest tension when his muse sung of the national glory. Dying at the age of twenty-five, his

Digitized by Google

was a life of promise cut short long before the maturity of his gifts could be reached. All readers know that he forever celebrated the rural beauties of the Bronx in some of his daintiest verse, and it was proper that he should be laid to rest near its banks. But whatever fitness there might have been in the selection of his burial place is lost in the neglect into which it was afterward permitted to fall. One who visited it in 1865[1] gave a most depressing description of its forsaken and desolate appearance. The entire inclosure was covered with briers, weeds and rank grass, which grew thickly around the poet's monument. This was a neat marble shaft, eight feet high, bearing the inscription,—

"Sacred
to the memory
of
Joseph R. Drake, M.D.,
who died Sept. 21st,
1820,
Aged 25 years.
None knew him but to love him,
Nor named him but to praise."

The salt marsh surrounded the knoll on which the cemetery is laid out and the Bronx at that point is but a lazily flowing stream. At the rate of decay then in progress the people of a few generations later would be compelled to refer to books and maps to know where the grave of Drake was situated.

J. Rodman Drake was born in New York City, August 7, 1795. He studied medicine under Dr. Nicholas Romayne, and shortly afterwards married Sarah, the daughter of Henry Eckford, a connection that placed him in affluent circumstances. The youthful couple took a trip to Europe, but Drake's health soon after failed, and, after spending the winter of 1819 in New Orleans, in the hope of regaining it, he returned to New York fatally smitten with consumption, dying on September 21, 1820, at the age of twenty-five.

Drake was a poet from his boyhood. Some of his youthful compositions have been preserved and show great fluency and aptness of expression. In March, 1819, he published the first of the famous "Croakers," the verses to "Ennui," which were written in conjunction with his friend, Halleck. "The Culprit Fay" was written to refute an assertion, by Fenimore Cooper and Halleck, that the rivers of this country furnished no such romantic associations as the Scottish streams for purposes of poetical composition. The scene is laid in the highlands of the Hudson, but the chief associations relate to salt water, "the poet drawing his inspiration from his familiar haunt on the Sound, at Hunt's Point." "The Culprit Fay" is an exquisite creation of the fancy and will always retain for its author a niche in the gallery of American poets. A selection of his poems, including "The Culprit Fay," was made, and published in 1836, by his only child, the wife of Commodore McKay.

Edgar Allan Poe, wrote some of his most noted productions while a resident of Westchester County, including the famous "Raven". Although he was very poor during most of the time, this was probably the brightest period of his melancholy life; for he was happier in the companionship of his wife, the lovely Virginia Clemm, and her mother, than at any other stage of his chequered career. His wife's death, after a residence in the county of about three years, was a sad blow to the poet's sensitive organization; but it is pleasant to think that the sweetest as well as the saddest memories of his "dear heart" his "dear Virginia," were associated with the charming landscapes of Morrisania and Fordham. Poe was nearly thirty-four years old when, in the autumn of 1844, he removed to New York City from Philadelphia. Born in Boston, in January 1811, his early life was as chequered and eventful as his manhood was dark and stormy. The Poe family was one of the oldest and most respectable in Maryland. Edgar's grandfather was a quartermaster-general in the Continental Army and the friend of Lafayette. His father while a law student fell in love with a beautiful actress, Elizabeth Arnold, and went on the stage. He was discarded by his family, and he and his wife died within a few weeks of each other in Richmond, Va., leaving three children, Henry, Edgar and Rosalie, in a state of destitution. Edgar was adopted by Mr. John Allan, a wealthy merchant of Richmond, from whom he derived his middle name. Mr. and Mrs. Allan treated him with great kindness, and after a tour of the British Islands in 1816, placed him at school at Stoke Newington near London, where he remained four or five years. In 1822 he returned to Richmond, and in 1825 was entered as a student at the University of Virginia. His life at the University was marked by many youthful excesses, which finally resulted in his expulsion. He was very much in debt and upon Mr. Allan's refusal to satisfy the claims of some of his creditors he quarreled with his benefactor and set out to join the Greeks, who were then in the midst of their war with Turkey. After wandering in Europe for about a year, he finally made his way to St. Petersburg where he became involved in a quarrel with the Russian authorities, from which he was extricated through the kind offices of the American minister, Mr. Middleton. Returning to America he was again taken into favor by Mr. Allan, who sent him to West Point, where his conduct was so irregular that in ten months after his admission he was cashiered. He was again received into Mr. Allan's family but another rupture ensued, in consequence, it is said, of Poe's uncivil behavior toward Mr. Allan's second wife. Mr. Allan died a few years latter, leaving Poe nothing.

Thrown upon his own resources, Poe turned to literature for support. In 1829, he had published in

[1] Hist. Mag., Feby., 1872.

Digitized by Google

Baltimore a volume of poems, "Al Aaraaf, Tamerlane and Minor Poems," which had been received with favor. He seems to have had but little difficulty in obtaining employment from magazines and newspapers, but the pay was meagre. In despair he enlisted in the army and then deserted. Luckily for him, in 1833 he entered the competition for prizes offered by the *Baltimore Saturday Visitor* for a story and a poem. He was awarded both prizes but was subsequently excluded from the second prize and only given that for the story. His story was the "MSS. found in a Bottle" and his poem "The Coliseum." His productions attracted the notice of John P. Kennedy, the novelist, who befriended him and finally secured him employment on the *Southern Literary Messenger*. This may be said to have been the beginning of Poe's literary career. In 1835, he was made editor of that publication at a salary of five hundred dollars per annum and removed to Richmond, where he married his cousin, Virginia Clemm.

In January, 1837, he left Richmond and returned to Baltimore, whence he proceeded to Philadelphia and New York. In Philadelphia he obtained employment as a contributor to the *Gentleman's Magazine*, and in May, 1839, was made its editor. In the following year he took charge of *Graham's Magazine*. In the spring of 1843, he wrote "The Gold Bug," for which he received a prize of one hundred dollars. He had previously written a number of critical papers and stories, among them "The Mystery of Marie Roget." In the autumn of 1844 he removed to New York. His residence at first was on what is now Eighty-fourth Street. The house, a large bleak structure, stands on a rocky elevation. It is said to have sheltered Washington and some of his generals in the days of the Revolution. The front windows command the Boulevard (formerly Bloomingdale Road) and the new Riverside Park. The Hudson is seen through the trees, with the lofty Palisades beyond, a view still meet for the poet, and far more picturesque and beautiful when Poe looked upon it. Poe was often seen walking along the banks of the river, and he and his wife no doubt were wont to sit at the western window and watch the decline of the sun as it sank to rest behind the embattled front of the Palisades. The room formerly occupied by Poe and in which "The Raven" was written, is an apartment of moderate size, on the second floor of the house. Its windows look out upon the Hudson. The mantel, a relic of by-gone days, is of wood, curiously carved and painted in imitation of ebony. Here, before the old fashioned fire-place, the poet sat and dreamed his wonderful dreams, the weirdest of which, perhaps, is embodied in "The Raven."

THE HOUSE IN WHICH POE WROTE "THE RAVEN."

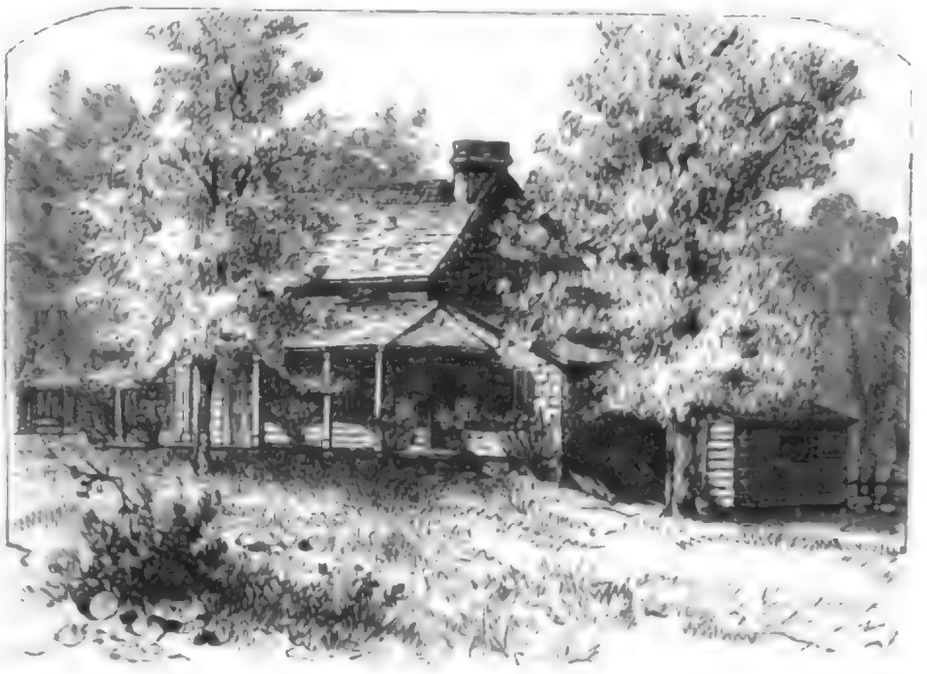
Poe's next place of residence was Fordham. In the winter of 1846, says one of his biographers, he was living in extreme destitution at Fordham. In the meantime he had been employed by Willis & Morris, as critic and assistant editor of *The Mirror*, a position which he retained about six months, and as associate editor with C. F. Briggs of *The Broadway Journal*. The latter publication ceased in January, 1846, and Poe then began a series of papers, "The Literati of New York City," which were published in *The Lady's Book*. Their pungency and personality created for him many enemies. His troubles now began to thicken. His wife's health, which had always been delicate, was failing rapidly and Poe was sub-

Digitized by Google

jected to the agony of seeing her fading, day by day, without the means at hand to minister properly to her comfort. His necessities were finally made known by some friendly hand in the newspapers and a subscription was raised in his behalf. But, although his sufferings were extreme, he must have had many gleams of happiness in the little old-fashioned cottage at Fordham. It is a quaint little structure, a story and a half high, with a white shingled gable-end toward the street and a porch on one side. It is perched on the top of a hill and is surrounded by old fruit-trees, mossy stone walls and thickets of brambles and flowers. In one of his papers on the Literati, Poe severely criticised Dr. Thomas Dunn English, who retorted in a personal article which was reproduced in the *Evening Mirror*. Poe thereupon sued for libel and recovered from the *Mirror* several hundred dollars, with which he refitted his cottage. His life at this time was one of singular domestic tranquillity and sweetness. His mother-in-law, Mrs. Clemm, who seems to have been much attached to him, watched over him with tender kindness and solicitude, and managed the affairs of the little household with great skill and prudence. Poe's affection for his wife and her mother is the one bright spot in his sombre life. In a tender letter of June 12, 1846, to his wife he speaks of Mrs. Clemm as "our mother," and declares that his "dear Virginia" is his "greatest and only stimulus now, to battle with this uncongenial, unsatisfactory and ungrateful life." Nearly all the personal reminiscences of Poe which tell of his life at Fordham are of a bright and pleasing character. One of his friends describes his wife as looking very young. "She had large, black eyes and a pearly whiteness of complexion which was a perfect pallor. The pale face, her brilliant eyes and her raven hair gave her an unearthly look. One felt that she was almost a disrobed spirit, and when she coughed it was made certain that she was rapidly passing away." Mrs. Clemm, we are told, "was a tall, dignified old lady with a most lady-like manner, and her black dress, though old and much worn, looked really elegant on her." The same informant says, "the cottage had an air of taste and gentility that must have been lent it by the presence of its inmates. So neat, so poor, so unfurnished, and yet so charming a dwelling I never saw."

A short distance back of the cottage there is a rocky elevation, crowned with cedars. It overlooks a pleasant landscape and the hills of Long Island in the distance. Tradition asserts that this was a favorite spot of Poe's, and here, perhaps, he wove in his brain the ideas which found expression in "Eureka," "Annabel Lee," "For Annie" and "Ulalume," all of which were written while he lived at Fordham. Another favorite resort was the Aqueduct pathway, leading from High Bridge to Fordham.

A recently published description of the cottage and its surroundings says: "Two years ago the place was sold at public auction, under foreclosure, and it was bid in for five thousand seven hundred dollars. The unpaid taxes and accrued interest amounted to something more than that. From the railroad station the road winds up the Fordham hill to the cottage, with the native rock as a pavement. The cottage seems no more than a little paint-box, shingled on the sides as well as the roof, and covered with vines on which the foliage is now appearing. It is only a few feet from the road, but in summer is almost obscured by the trees. Within, the rooms are more spacious than they appear from the road. A cherry-tree planted by Poe, now vigorous and thrifty, shades a pleasant porch. There are two good-sized rooms, a bed-room and a kitchen on the lower floor. In the front room Virginia, Poe's invalid wife, lay through her sickness, and died. On the upper floor there are three rooms, one of them quite large. The old-fashioned chimney passes through it, affording an old-time fireplace, which in winter, when filled with crackling wood, would be a cheerful place. It was a favorite room with the poet, and here he wrote "Ulalume" and "Eureka."



EDGAR ALLAN POE'S HOME AT FORDHAM.

"Poe moved to Fordham from Amity Street. Washington Square was then the centre of the fine

Digitized by Google

residences of the city, and his house in Amity Street, into which he moved when the 'Raven' had brought him a reputation, was only a short distance from the square. He had been engaged on the *Evening Mirror* at a salary of ten dollars a week, and in a suit against the paper for libel, after resigning his position, he secured a verdict and obtained several hundred dollars. With this money he secured the Fordham cottage, at a rental of one hundred dollars a year, furnished it and removed there with his wife and her mother, Mrs. Clemm, who remained there until Poe's death in 1849. The grounds, comprising about two acres, are as interesting as the house, and have associations reaching back to Revolutionary times, when this neighborhood was a part of the 'neutral ground' and the field of Cooper's 'Spy.' The lawn slopes into a grassy hollow. A massive ledge of blue-

THE OLD DUTCH CHURCH, FORDHAM.

gray rock overlooks the valley at the height of a hundred feet and forms the eastern wall of the place. The site is said to have been occupied at one time by a British battery. Now a tennis club, composed of young men and women of Fordham, meets on the lawn in summer. The rocky ledge commands a view of the Long Island hills in purple background and against the horizon. In the growth of the city it is likely to become one of the choice sites for residences.

"The place rents for four hundred dollars a year. For several years it has been occupied by Mrs. E. D. Dechert, the widow of an engineer who drew many of the plans of Central Park, and afterward most of the avenues and drives of Fordham. A few of those who knew Poe and his family are still living in the neighborhood. One of these was his nearest neighbor, Mrs. Reuben Cromwell, then a young girl. She said recently that the first time she saw Poe he was up in a cherry-tree picking the fruit, and his wife stood beneath the tree. 'He was a nice-looking young man,' continued Mrs. Cromwell, 'and sociable.' His wife had come out here to get the good air, he said, and to dig in the ground and get well. But she was too thin and weak to dig. She soon became ill and never came out until she was buried. Her mother they called Muddie, and Mr. Poe they always called Eddie. They were awful poor; poorer than I ever want to be.

"Mrs. Cromwell describes going over to the house the morning that she heard of Poe's death. Mrs. Clemm was packing his things, having received a letter from him the day before, in which he wrote of his intended marriage to a Baltimore lady, and said that he would come on for her. She was overcome when informed of his death, and was sure that he would not have died had she been there to 'nurse him in his bad spell.' The neighbors raised money to enable her to go to Baltimore. Poe had not paid any rent for several months, and Mrs. Clemm afterwards returned and sold their few effects. Among these Mrs. Cromwell obtained the family Bible, a rocking-chair and a clock, which she still retained as relics of her distinguished but unfortunate neighbor."

In January, 1847, Poe's wife died and was buried in the church-yard of the old Dutch Church, on the King's Bridge road, about half a mile to the westward of the cottage. She was laid in the vault belonging to the Valentine family, who owned the cottage which Poe rented. In 1878 the remains were taken to Baltimore, to be placed beside those of her devoted "Edgar," and the vault itself has now disappeared. After the death of his wife, Poe's sister, Rosalie, came to live with him at Fordham. Poe continued to reside in the cottage until June, 29, 1849, when he started forth on the journey which terminated in his death. Before leaving, he arranged his papers and instructed Mrs. Clemm as to what disposition to make of them in case he died. After spending some time in Richmond he started on his return to New York, but got no farther than Baltimore when he was taken ill, and died in an infirmary on the 7th of October, 1849, at the age of thirty-eight.

Rev. Daniel Curry, D.D., the clergyman and author, was born near Peekskill, November 26, 1809; graduated from the Wesleyan University in 1837, and in the same year became principal of the Troy Conference Academy, at West Poultney, Vermont. In 1839 he became a professor in the Georgia Female College at Macon, and in 1841 entered the Georgia Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He filled pastoral charges at Athens, Savannah and Columbus, and in 1844 was transferred to the New

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

residences of the city, and his house in Amity Street. [illegible] bor. Mrs. Reuben Cromwell, then a [illegible]

Digitized by Google

Charles W. Baird

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

York Conference where he continued to engage in pastoral work until 1854, when he was chosen president of the Indiana Asbury University, at Greencastle, Indiana. After three years he returned to New York and in 1864 was elected editor of the *Christian Advocate*, at New York. He was re-elected in 1868 and 1872, and in 1876 became the editor of the *Ladies' Repository* of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Dr. Curry has written much for the periodicals of his church in addition to the articles which he gave to his regular editorial work. He has published a "Life of Wyckliff," "The Metropolitan City of America," and a "Life of Bishop Davis W. Clark," and has edited the writings of the late Rev. Dr. James Floy, and an edition of Southey's "Life of Wesley."

Rev. Robert Baird, D.D., the author and philanthropist, spent the closing hours of his busy life in Westchester County, dying at Yonkers on the 15th of

REV. DANIEL CURRY, D.D.

March, 1863. Born in Fayette Co., Pennsylvania, in 1798, he was graduated at Jefferson College in 1818, and received the degree of D.D. in 1842. From 1835 to 1843 he was the most part of the time in Europe, striving to revive the Protestant faith in the south of the continent, and to promote the cause of temperance in the North. He published a number of valuable works. His son, Professor Henry M. Baird, D.D., LL.D., of Yonkers, professor of Greek in the University of New York, is a distinguished scholar and historian. He has published a book of travels entitled, "Modern Greece," and more recently a "History of the Rise of the Huguenots of France," 2 vols. 8vo., which has taken rank among the more important historical works of the day.

Another son, Rev. Charles W. Baird, D.D., is the author of two chapters of this work, the histories of the the towns of Rye and Harrison, and is a distinguished literateur. He was born in Princeton, N. J., August 28, 1828, and was graduated at the University of the city of New York in 1848 and at the Union Theological Seminary in 1852. He was ordained for the ministry and in 1852–54 was the American chaplain in Rome, Italy. In 1859–61 he was the minister at the Reformed Dutch Church on Bergen Hill, Brooklyn, N. Y., and since May 9, 1861, has been pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Rye, N. Y. Dr. Baird has written "Eutaxia: Historical Sketches," New York, 1855; "A Book of Public Prayer," New York, 1857; "History of Rye, N. Y.," 1870; "History of Bedford Church," 1882; "History of the Huguenot Emigration to America," 2 vols., 1885.

Elias Cornelius, D.D., the educator and missionary, was born at Somers in 1794, graduated at Yale College in 1813 and died at Hartford, Conn., February 12, 1832. In early life he studied theology and in 1816 visited the Cherokee and Chickasaw Indians as a missionary. In 1818 he went to New Orleans in the employ of the Missionary Society of Connecticut. In July, 1819, he was installed with Dr. Worcester at Salem, but upon being appointed, in September, 1826, secretary of the American Educational Society he was dismissed. He contributed to the *Quarterly Journal* and published the reports of his educational society.

His father was surgeon's mate of Colonel Angell's regiment during the Revolution, and at one time an inmate of the "Jersey" prison-ship. He died at Somers, June 13, 1823, aged sixty-five years.

Among the eminent men who, after having made high reputations for themselves in other localities, selected Yonkers as the home of their advanced life, is Professor William Holmes Chambers Bartlett. For more than forty years he was identified with the United States Military Academy at West Point, first as a cadet, and subsequently as Professor of Natural and Experimental Philosophy. The leading particulars of his life, obtained in outline from Cullum's "Register of the Officers and Graduates" of the academy, with such details as we have been able to gather from other sources, are as follows:

Professor Bartlett was born in Pennsylvania in September, 1804, but as his parents removed immediately after his birth to St. Louis, Missouri, his childhood and youth were passed in the latter State, and it was from it that he was in due time sent to West Point. His parents were poor, and as there were then no schools at the West, he had no home advantages for education. Attracting, however, the notice of Missouri men who were able to command the influence of Senator Thomas H. Benton, an appointment was procured for him as a cadet. He was received at West Point on the 1st of July, 1822, at seventeen years and eight months of age, stood at the head of his class through his whole four years of study, and was graduated at its head on the 1st of July, 1826, having served as Acting Assistant Professor of Mathematics during the last two years of his course. From August 30, 1826, to August 30, 1829,

Digitized by Google

he continued to be employed at the academy, first as Assistant Professor, and later as Principal Assistant Professor of Engineering. In 1828 he took part as assistant engineer in the construction of Fortress Monroe, Va., and from 1829 to 1832 was engaged in the construction of Fort Adams, Newport Harbor, R. I. From 1832 to 1834 he was assistant to the chief engineer at Washington, D. C. In the latter year he returned to the Point, and became Acting Professor of Natural and Experimental Philosophy. To the full professorship in this department he finally received an appointment from General Jackson in 1836, and continued to fill the position until 1871, when he resigned and was appointed colonel in the regular army on the retired list. The instrument by which he was appointed to his professorship in 1836 is still in his possession. It was forwarded to General Cass, and sent by him, through his son, to Professor Bartlett. It was as follows:

"I hereby appoint Second Lieut. William H. C. Bartlett, of the Corps of Engineers, Prof. of Nat. and Exper. Philosophy (vice Courtney resigned.

(Signed,) ANDREW JACKSON.

During the student days of Professor Bartlett, as we have seen, he spent two years in teaching in the academy. Many men, afterwards distinguished in United States history, and several who, on both sides, in our civil contest, became men of mark, were at the institution. Leonidas Polk, a relative of James K. Polk, and afterwards Bishop of Louisiana, was his room-mate, and Albert Sidney Johnston, afterwards killed at the battle of Shiloh, was both his room-mate and classmate. Jefferson Davis, Robert E. Lee and Charles Mason (afterwards Judge Mason, of Iowa) were under his instruction, as were many others who in due time became widely noted.

While engaged in the construction of Fort Adams, between 1829 and 1832, Professor Bartlett contributed to *Silliman's Journal* a paper on "The Expansibility of Coping Stones," which has been frequently referred to by foreign writers. During his life in Washington (1832 to 1834), as first assistant to Chief Engineer (General) Gratiot, he had a great deal to do with the engineering on the Cumberland National road, and with fortifications all over the country. In 1840 he was ordered by President Van Buren, through his Secretary of War, Mr. Poinsett, to examine the European observatories, with a view to improving the course of instruction in astronomy, practical and theoretical, in the Military Academy. In this work he was absent from the country about five months, and made many valuable acquaintances in Europe. On his return he submitted to the War Department the report of his work, the receipt of which was duly acknowledged. It is a misfortune, however, that this valuable report has in some way been lost. Frequent search has been made for it, but without success. It suggested a plan for an observatory to be located in Washington City.

In addition to these labors, the Professor, during his long service at the Point, prepared several text-books for the use of the cadets. In 1839 he published a "Treatise on Optics;" in 1858, one on "Synthetical Mechanics," and another on "Spherical Astronomy," and in 1859 one on "Acoustics and Optics" and another on "Analytical Mechanics." Before finally retiring from his professorship he also published an article entitled "Strains on Rifle Guns," which will be found in the Memoirs of the National Academy of Sciences, Volume I. It was also separately published. All this shows the years of his life at West Point to have been busy and productive. In 1847 Geneva College conferred upon the professor the degree of Doctor of Laws. The degree of Master of Arts had been conferred upon him as an honorary degree by the College of New Jersey, at Princeton, ten years before. He is a member of the Philosophical Societies of Philadelphia and Boston, and is one of the original corporators of the American Academy of Science, incorporated by Congress.

His books and his writings in periodicals are a monument to Professor Bartlett's scholarship and industry. The value of his books may be inferred from the fact that they have passed through a succession of editions. The ninth edition of "Analytical Mechanics" was published in 1874. We judge from a mere passing sentence in the preface to the second edition that, in the so-called conflict between scientists and the Bible, this eminent scholar and scientist has no sympathy with Anti-Theism. Speaking of a mathematical formula which he framed and which expresses the laws that govern the action and reaction of forces upon bodies, he says of this formula,—

"It embraces alike, in their reciprocal action, the "gigantic and distant orbs of the celestial regions "and the proximate atoms of the ethereal atmosphere "which pervades all space, and establishes an un-"broken continuity upon which its divine architect "and author may impress the power of His will at a "single point and be felt everywhere."

This, even in an academy text-book, is a strong tribute to Theism, and when it is added as a fact that Professor Bartlett is a worthy member of the Episcopal communion, it may be safely taken as a tribute to Theism in its Christian phase.

In 1871, at sixty-seven years of age, Professor Bartlett was retired at his own request. On the 1st of July he removed from West Point to Yonkers, and took possession of a fine residence which he had purchased for himself on Locust Hill Avenue. Here he has since lived. At the time of his retirement from the Point he was elected actuary of the Mutual Life Insurance Company of New York, and this position he still holds, faithfully fulfilling its duties day by day, even at eighty-one years of age. He has rendered exceedingly valuable service to the company. Among his labors have been the construction of tables to facilitate their office work, and the prepara

Digitized by Google

he continued to be employed at the ac-
Assistant Professor, and later as P
Professor of Engineering. I-
assistant engineer in th-
Monroe, Va., and fro-
the construction
R. I. From
engine-
he-

Digitized by Google

Wm. H. C. Bartlett

Digitized by Google

tion of an elaborate report of thirty-one years of the working of their institution.

Professor Bartlett was married during his work upon Fort Adams, in Newport Harbor, February 4, 1829, to Miss Harriet Whitehorne, daughter of Samuel Whitehorne, a merchant of that place. He has had eight children, of whom four sons and three daughters are yet living. Mrs. Bartlett is also still spared. The professor, though somewhat infirm, is still both mentally and physically active, keeps up a deep interest in passing events, and is a fluent and sprightly conversationalist and companion, full of reminiscences of the country's history, and of an eventful and interesting personal life.

Rev. John A. Todd, D.D., pastor of the Second Reformed Church of Tarrytown, N. Y., who contributed to this work the two chapters on the history of the townships of Greenburgh and Mount Pleasant, is a native of Somerset County, N. J., and a graduate of Rutgers College and of the Theological Seminary of the Reformed Church, at New Brunswick, N. J. After completing his course at the Seminary, in 1848, he was settled towards the latter part of that year as pastor of the Reformed Church of Griggstown, N. J. His personal connection with Westchester County dates back to 1855, when he accepted the call of the Second Reformed Church of Tarrytown, and entered upon his duties as pastor. Having lived since then in the midst of the historical scenes of which he has written, and having enjoyed the friendship of many whose ancestors had long lived there before them and had borne a prominent part in the great revolutionary struggle, he has had peculiar opportunities of information in regard to the localities described.

Among other productions of Dr. Todd's pen may be mentioned his "Discourse on the Character and Death of Washington Irving," 1859; "Memories of the Rev. Peter Labagh, D.D., with Notices of the History of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church in North America," 1860; "The Law of Spiritual Growth, a review of Boardman's 'Higher Christian Life,'" in the *Princeton Review* of October, 1860; "The Man for the Times," an Oration delivered before the Governor of the State, the Trustees, and the Alumni of Rutger's College, at the Dedication of Geological Hall, New Brunswick, N. J., June 18, 1872; "The Posture of the Ministers and People of the Reformed Dutch Church during the Revolution," prepared by request of a committee of the General Synod, and published by order of the Synod in the volume of *Centennial Discourses*, 1876; "The Good Fight and the Victor's Crown," a Memorial Discourse on the Life, Character and Services of the Rev. Abraham Moesle, D.D., 1882; "Letters from Europe, from Canada and the Saguenay, from Nova Scotia, Prince Edward Island, Cape Breton, and Newfoundland," 1880–1884. Dr. Todd has also published a number of translations from the German and the Spanish, both in prose and verse.

Since completing the two chapters included in this work, he has resigned his pastoral charge, but will continue to reside in Tarrytown, and be chiefly occupied in literary pursuits.

James Parton, the well-known historical writer, received his early education in Westchester County. He is a native of England, born at Canterbury, February 9, 1822. Brought to the United States when but five years of age, he was educated in New York City and vicinity, chiefly at a school at White Plains. For seven years he taught school, finally becoming known as a writer by his editorial contributions to the *Home Journal*. His first published work, which appeared in 1855, was the "Life of Horace Greeley." It was a successful piece of work, and secured the author employment in the compilation of "The Humorous Poetry of the English Language," which appeared in 1857. It was followed, in 1859, by the "Life and Times of Aaron Burr," and in 1860 by the "Life of Andrew Jackson." In 1864 his "Life of Benjamin Franklin" appeared. Since then he has been a prolific writer of recognized popularity. In 1856 he married Sara Payson Willis, sister of N. P. Willis, the poet, and herself widely known for her literary productions under the *nom de plume* of Fanny Fern.

John Bigelow, the veteran writer and politician, was, for three years, a resident of Westchester County as one of the inspectors of the state prison at Sing Sing. Mr. Bigelow was appointed to this position in 1845, and during his term of service introduced various reforms in the prison discipline. Mr. Bigelow is a native of Malden, Ulster County, N. Y. He was born November 25, 1817; graduated at Union College 1835; studied law, and was admitted to the bar in New York City in 1839. For ten years he was engaged in the practice of his profession, occupying himself, at the same time, more or less with literature and literary journalism. In 1850 he became one of the proprietors and editors of the *New York Evening Post*, and sustained this relation more than ten years. In 1856 he published a life of General Fremont, when the latter was a candidate for the Presidency. He spent the years 1859 and 1860 abroad, writing letters to the *Evening Post*. He had previously written interesting narratives of trips to Jamaica and Hayti; the former presenting his views of the practical working of emancipation in Jamaica. Early in the administration of President Lincoln he was appointed consul at Paris, and upon the death of the minister, Mr. Dayton, in 1864, was chosen to succeed him. While consul, he published in French, for the information of the people of France, a valuable work on the resources of the United States. Early in 1867 he returned to the United States, bringing with him the original manuscripts of Benjamin Franklin's autobiography, which he published in the following year, with notes and an introduction by himself. Mr. Bigelow is the author of some valuable mono-

Digitized by Google

graphs on social and political phases of French history, as well as of many other papers and sketches. In December, 1871, he submitted to Senator Conkling, of New York, an elaborate scheme for the commemoration of the first centennial anniversary of American independence in 1876, which was published in the *New York Tribune*, and first directed public attention to the approach of that occasion. Mr. Bigelow was a warm supporter of Governor Tilden for the Presidency, and for some years has been prominent before the public as Mr. Tilden's trusted adviser and intimate friend. Early in 1886 he was appointed United States Sub-Treasurer at New York, and confirmed by the Senate, but, before qualifying, resigned the position, not caring to undertake its arduous duties. Upon the retirement of Louis J. Jennings, he was appointed editor of the New York *Times*, but found the labors of daily journalism too arduous for his tastes.

Alice B. Haven, the author of a number of poems and tales under the name of "Cousin Alice," is a resident of Mamaroneck. She was born at Hudson, N. Y. Her maiden name was Bradley. She became a contributor to the periodicals of the day at an early age, and in 1846 was married to Joseph C. Neal, author of the "Charcoal Sketches." Upon his death a few months later, she took charge of the literary department of *Neal's Gazette*, of which her husband had been a proprietor, and conducted it for several years with success. She also contributed frequently to the leading monthly magazines. "The Gossips of Rivertown, with Sketches in Prose and Verse," from her pen, was published in 1850. She is also the authoress of a series of popular juvenile works published under the name of "Cousin Alice." In 1853 Mrs. Neal was married to Mr. Samuel L. Haven, and has since resided at Mamaroneck.

Cornelius Mathews, the novelist, play-wright and journalist, was a native of Port Chester. He was born October 28, 1817. His early country life on the banks of Byram River and the rolling uplands of Rye and its picturesque lake, made a deep impression on his mind, as is shown by traces in many pages of his writings. He was among the early graduates of the New York University in 1835, and began his literary career while still a youth. To the *American Monthly Magazine* of 1836, he contributed both prose and verse. He was also a contributor to the *New York Review* and the *Knickerbocker Magazine*. In 1837 he was admitted to the bar. In "Behemoth" he produced an original romance, describing the efforts of a supposed anti-Indian race to overcome the pre-historic animal known as the mastodon. From December 1840, to May 1842, he edited the *Arcturus*, a monthly magazine, besides writing a comedy and another novel. In 1843 he published a volume of poems, and in 1846 his tragedy "Witchcraft," was successfully produced. This was followed by a number of tales and sketches. A collected edition of his writings was published by the Harper's in 1843. Mr. Mathews was also a constant writer in the journalism of the day and has been prominently identified with the discussion of the international copyright question.

William Leggett, the well-known writer, married in New Rochelle and spent the closing years of his life there. Mr. Leggett was born in New York City in the summer of 1802 and was partially educated at Georgetown College. In consequence of his father's failure in business, he was withdrawn before the completion of his course, and in 1819 accompanied his father to Illinois, where the family settled. In 1822 he entered the navy as midshipman but resigned his commission in 1826. Shortly afterwards he published "Leisure Hours at Sea," a volume of verses written at intervals during his naval career. He also wrote a prose tale "The Rifle," in which he portrayed the scenes and incidents of western pioneer life. Other stories followed and were afterwards collected and published under the titles of "Tales by a Country School-master," and "Tales of the Sea." In 1828 he married Miss Almira Waring of New Rochelle, and in November of the same year commenced the publication of *The Critic*, a weekly literary periodical. It was discontinued at the end of six months and united with the *Mirror*, to which Mr. Leggett became a contributor. In the summer of 1829, he became, with Wm. C. Bryant, one of the editors of the New York *Evening Post*, a position which he retained until December, 1836. He became a zealous Democrat and an earnest advocate of free-trade, as well as a strong opponent to the United States Bank. After his retirement from the *Evening Post*, he established *The Plain Dealer*, which he conducted with ability. It was involved, however, in the failure of its publisher, and ceased to exist at the end of ten months. Mr. Leggett did not engage in any literary or newspaper work after this, his health having become impaired. He passed the brief remainder of his life at his country place at New Rochelle, which had been his residence since his marriage. In May 1839 he was appointed by President Van Buren, diplomatic agent to the Republic of Guatemala, but he died while preparing to start for his post, on the 29th of May, 1839. He was a writer of great fluency and persuasive force, and a man who possessed in an eminent degree, the courage of his convictions.

Elise Justine Bayard, daughter of Mr. Robert Bayard, of Glenwood, near Fishkill, was the author of a number of poems, some of which have appeared in the *Knickerbocker Magazine* and *Literary World*. She married Mr. Fulton Cutting, and died about 1850.

Hon. William Cauldwell, so well-known as the editor and proprietor of the *New York Sunday Mercury* and as a legislative representative of Westchester County, was born in the city of New York, October 12, 1824. His father, Andrew Cauldwell, who married Margaret, daughter of William Giffen, was a

Wm Caldwell

Google

Digitized by Google

native of Kilmarnock, Scotland, and came to this country about 1816. The primary education of his son was obtained at the then well-known high school in Crosby Street, New York, but at the early age of eleven he went at the request of his uncle, Adam Giffen, to Louisiana, and lived for a while at St. Martinsville in that State. He afterwards attended school at Opelousas, but his school-life there was somewhat suddenly terminated. His teacher, a Mr. Tinnerman, who was an old soldier of Napoleon, had heard that the noted Colonel David Crockett was to pass through that place on his way to Texas, where he was destined to end his eventful career at the fated Alamo. Resolved to be one of the brave colonel's followers, he announced his intention to his pupils, and instructed them to inform their parents and guardians that the institution would close. After this, young Cauldwell attended Jefferson College, on the banks of the Mississippi River, south of Plaquemine, where he remained three years. He then returned to his native city, and entered a dry-goods store, but at the end of two years, following the bent of his inclination, he drifted into a printing office, where he learned the trade. This office was conducted by Samuel Adams, whose murder by John C. Colt caused a great sensation throughout the country. After the tragic death of Mr. Adams, young Cauldwell secured a position as compositor on the *Sunday Atlas*, and remained on that paper till about 1850. At that time one-third of the *Sunday Mercury* was owned by Elbridge G. Page, who was a regular contributor to its columns under the name of "Dow, Jr.," and his "Short Patent Sermons," were a well-known feature of the paper, and a source of amusement to thousands of readers. This share Mr. Cauldwell purchased, and Page went to California, where he died some years after. At the time when Mr. Cauldwell became connected with the *Mercury*, it was a small sheet, with a comparatively limited circulation. He immediately went to work with energy and vigor to make it the foremost paper of its kind. It was the pioneer of Sunday journalism, and from that time to the present its circulation has constantly increased, and its sales now number 75,000 copies weekly. The best humorous writers of the country have contributed to its columns, and here appeared the brilliant sketches, written by men of whose life and history the world knows nothing, but whose *noms de plume*, are household words, and known the length and breadth of the land. Among these were "Orpheus C. Kerr," (Robert H. Newell) whose witty papers were the delight of Abraham Lincoln; "Doesticks," (Mortimer G. Thompson); Charles F. Brown, known the world over as "Artemus Ward;" Joseph Barber, author of a long series of racy papers under the name of the "Disbanded Volunteer," and a host of others whose productions were the delight of the reader, and made the *Sunday Mercury* a welcome visitor to many thousands of households. Under his skillful and energetic management, the paper has increased its size to a journal of fifty-six columns, and two of Hoe's perfecting presses are required to work off its regular edition.

In the early part of the year 1848 an association of householders, of whom Mr. Cauldwell's father was one, purchased a tract of land north of the Harlem River, and laid out the village of Morrisania. His father, as well as his brother-in-law and himself, joined in the purchase of one share, or an acre of land, and Mr. Cauldwell's father was the first to erect a house, which he built on "Lot 64" of the village of Morrisania, located on Washington Avenue, between what is now One Hundred and Sixty-ninth and One Hundred and Seventieth Streets. In the autumn of 1848 William Cauldwell and family occupied a portion of his father's residence, and during this time he purchased from Robert H. Elton a plot of ground at the corner of One Hundred and Sixty-sixth Street (then George Street) and Boston Avenue (then known as the old Boston Post Road), and next north of the famous land-mark known as Pudding Rock, and here built in 1852 the mansion which has since been his home. In 1855 the inhabitants of Morrisania village, unwilling to remain longer a part of the town of West Farms, resolved to form a separate township, which was done in the same year. Of the new town, Gouverneur Morris was, in 1856, the first supervisor, and was succeeded the next year by Mr. Cauldwell, who held the office for fifteen terms, and up to the time (1874) when the town was annexed to the city of New York.

For twelve years Mr. Cauldwell was also a member of the Board of Education of the town of Morrisania, and was chosen chairman of the Board of Supervisors of Westchester County in 1866, and held the same position in 1868 and 1869. In 1867 the Board of Supervisors were equally divided between the Democratic and Republican parties. Mr. Cauldwell received the Democratic nomination for chairman, having for his competitor ex-Senator Hezekiah D. Robertson. After one hundred and eleven ballots had been taken, the opposing candidates withdrew, and united upon Abraham Hatfield, an old and respected citizen of Westchester, as presiding officer for that year. The handsome gold mounted gavels which were presented to Mr. Cauldwell as testimonials of his service as chairman of the board, are highly prized by him. His first appearance in active politics was in 1856, at which time he was an ardent worker to secure the election of James Buchanan, for President, and John B. Haskin for Congress, and in 1858 took a prominent part in the re-election of Mr. Haskin. In 1863 he was instrumental in procuring the passage of an act authorizing the construction of a horse railway for Morrisania and West Farms, an enterprise which was rapidly pushed to completion, and since its organization has been treasurer of the company. In 1867 the question of rapid transit began to attract public atten-

Digitized by Google

tion, and having been in that year elected to the State Senate (his opponent being Hon. James W. Husted), his influence secured the passage of the first act ever passed by the Legislature for that purpose. In 1869 he was re-elected, and in 1871 he again received the unanimous nomination of his party, but was defeated by the Hon. W. H. Robertson. To show Mr. Cauldwell's adaptability for public affairs, he was at one and the same time holding the offices of State Senator, president of the Board of Town Trustees, chairman of the Board of Supervisors of the county, member of the Board of Education, president of the Saving's Bank and chairman of the Democratic General Committee of Morrisania, and in all of these his duties, varied as they were, have been faithfully performed. True to the Union during the war, his duties as supervisor were so faithfully performed, that he was the recipient of most honorable testimonials from the Citizens' Mutual Protection Association, and an engrossed copy of the action of that body, neatly framed, is among the treasures which adorn his library.

In 1874 his fellow citizens again called upon him to go to the Legislature, in order to perfect the somewhat rude Act of Annexation, which had been passed in 1873. He was elected by a very large majority, and devoted himself to the matter with such energy that a new act was passed so perfect in its details, that no need to amend it has yet occurred. It is a somewhat curious circumstance, that when elected to the Assembly, he met in the Legislature both of his former competitors for senatorial honors, Hon. W. H. Robertson and Hon. James W. Husted, the former as President of the Senate, the latter as Speaker of the Assembly. With every work of a public nature in the town of Morrisania, Mr. Cauldwell has been prominently identified. During the fifteen terms in which he held the office of supervisor, nearly a million and a half of dollars passed through his hands; and his duties were performed with such exactness as to merit and receive the complimentary endorsement of those who were appointed as a board of audit to examine his accounts, and the fact remains on record that for this long service, Mr. Cauldwell received the sum of two hundred and twenty dollars for incidentals (his own services being voluntary), which speaks volumes for his unselfishness. It is also worthy of mention that the entire quota of eight hundred men required from his town by the various drafts during the war, was filled by volunteers and substitutes procured through his efforts.

Among the men who are much indebted to him for their success in public life, may be mentioned Waldo Hutchins and Clarkson N. Potter, both of whom became prominent members of Congress.

In 1876 Cauldwell became the sole proprietor of the *Sunday Mercury*, and in 1883 he purchased the building No. 3 Park Row, New York, which is fitted with every appliance for a first-class printing and publishing office. He was married October 27, 1845, to Miss Elizabeth, daughter of George Dyer. Their children are Leslie G., Nettie G. and Emily L., wife of Thomas Rogers.

His career has been alike creditable to himself, and to the county which he has so ably represented, and in his profession as a publisher, few can show a more successful record, and none a more honorable one.

Horace Greeley, the noted journalist, spent much of his leisure at his country home in Westchester County, and breathed his last at Chappaqua. Mr. Greeley was born at Amherst, N. H., February 3, 1811. He received a common-schoool education, which was supplemented by his own unwearied efforts in the acquisition of knowledge. At the age of fourteen, his parents having removed to Vermont, he obtained employment as apprentice-boy in the office of the *Northern Spectator*, Pultney, Vt. In 1830 he returned home, owing to the discontinuance of the paper, but soon afterwards secured another position as apprentice at Erie, Pa., for fifty dollars a year.

In August, 1831, having saved enough money to pay his traveling expenses, besides giving twenty-five or thirty dollars to his father, he arrived in New York City "with a suit of blue cotton jean, two brown shirts and five dollars in cash." He obtained work as a journeyman printer, and, in 1834, commenced with Jonas Winchester (afterwards publisher of the *New World*) a weekly paper, of sixteen pages quarto, called the *New Yorker*. Although conducted with much ability it was not successful, and was finally abandoned. While editing this journal Mr. Greeley also conducted, in 1838, *The Jeffersonian*, published by the Whig Central Committee of the State, and the *Log Cabin*, a campaign paper, published in the Presidential contest of 1840.

On Saturday, April 20, 1841, Mr. Greeley began the publication of the *New York Tribune*, which soon obtained recognition for the spirited and independent tone of its utterances. In 1848 he was elected a member of the United States House of Representatives, and in 1851 visited Europe and was chosen chairman of one of the juries of the World's Fair, at London. While in Paris the Emperor had him imprisoned for his caustic criticism of the imperial government, but he was soon released through the intervention of the American Minister. His letters from Europe, written to the *Tribune*, were published in a volume entitled "Glances at Europe." In 1856 he published his "History of the Struggle for Slavery Extension," and, three years later, "An Overland Journey from New York to San Francisco," a series of letters reprinted from the *Tribune*. Of Mr. Greeley's editorial work on the *Tribune* it may be said that it was one of the most powerful of literary agencies in forming the Republican Party and in paving the way for the downfall of slavery. The *Tribune* was interdicted in many Southern homes, on account of

Digitized by Google

its radical and uncompromising utterances, and Horace Greeley drew upon himself the wrath of the entire slave-holding section. His style was rugged, trenchant and forcible; always breathing the spirit of candor and sincerity. In 1864 and 1867 were published the two subscription volumes of Mr. Greeley's "American Conflict, or History of the War for the Union." The sale soon reached one hundred thousand copies, but was checked for some years after it had become known that Mr. Greeley had generously consented to affix his name to the bail-bond of Jefferson Davis.

In 1867–68 Mr. Greeley contributed to the *New York Ledger* a series of autobiographic reminiscences, which were afterwards republished in a volume entitled "Recollections of a busy life." In 1870 he reprinted from the *Tribune* a series of "Essays on Political Economy," defending the "protection theory," which were dedicated to the memory of Henry Clay. In 1872 he published "What I Know about Farming." He also originated and edited the *Tribune Almanac*, which for many years has been a standard book of reference.

In 1872 Mr. Greeley was nominated for President of the United States by the Liberal Republican and Democratic Conventions, but, as is well known, was overwhelmingly defeated by General Grant. His political reverses and the death of his wife proved too great a strain for his frame, enfeebled by overwork, anxiety and weary vigils at his sick wife's bedside. He died November 29, 1872, at the residence of Dr. Choate, several miles from his home at Chappaqua. Mr. Greeley's strict integrity, guilelessness of character, simplicity and candor, as well as his lofty aspirations and great services to his country, caused him to be universally mourned, and nowhere more so than in Westchester County, where he was so well known.

James Watson Webb, the noted journalist, resided at Mount Pleasant from about 1848 to 1861, when he was appointed minister to Brazil. Born at Claverack, N. Y., February 8, 1802, he entered the United States Army as second lieutenant of artillery August, 1819, but resigned in 1827 to take charge of the *Morning Courier*, which had been established in New York City in May of that year. In 1829 he purchased the *Enquirer* and combined the two with the name of the *Morning Courier and New York Enquirer*. He became the sole editor, and, in the following year, sole proprietor, which position he retained for thirty-four years. At an early period his paper became identified with the principles of the Whig party, of which it was an able exponent. In 1851 he was appointed enginer in chief of the State of New York, with the rank of brigadier-general. In 1849 he was appointed minister to Austria, and in 1861 minister to Constantinople, but this appointment was exchanged for the mission to Brazil. In 1865, being in Paris, he negotiated a secret treaty with the Emperor Napoleon for the withdrawal of the French troops from Mexico. In 1869 he resigned the mission to Brazil and returned to New York City, where he afterwards resided.

Henry Ward Beecher, the great pulpit orator and author, has made his summer home at Peekskill for many years. Mr. Beecher comes of a remarkable family. His father, Lyman Beecher, was one of the famous divines of his day, and of his four sons each rose to eminence in the ministry, while his two daughters were equally prominent in literature, one of them, Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, achieving a world-wide reputation as the author of "Uncle Tom's Cabin." Henry Ward Beecher was born in Litchfield, Conn., June 24, 1813, graduated at Amherst College in 1834, and studied divinity at the Lane Theological Seminary at Cincinnati. He first had charge, as an ordained minister, of a Presbyterian congregation at Lawrenceburgh, Ind., whence he removed in 1839 to Indianapolis. In 1847 he left the latter city to accept the pastorate of Plymouth Congregational Church at Brooklyn, N. Y., which he has rendered famous throughout the land as the church in which he preaches. Mr. Beecher has been equally successful on the lecture platform, and has long occupied an undisputed position as one of the leading orators of the country. He has been a voluminous contributor to the press, and assisted in founding two religious newspapers—*The Independent* and *The Christian Union*, both of which achieved a large circulation and commanding influence. He has published a number of essays, lectures, etc., in book form, which have been read by many thousands of people, and his published sermons have long commanded a host of readers. In April, 1865, Mr. Beecher, at the request of the federal government, delivered an oration at Fort Sumter on the anniversary of its fall, and on the occasion of the formal restoration of the national flag by Major Anderson. Besides his other literary labors, Mr. Beecher edited "The Plymouth Collection of Hymns and Tunes," a work largely used by churches that practice congregational singing. In 1867 he wrote for the *New York Ledger*, for which he had previously contributed a series of papers teaching the art of profit and enjoyment in familiar objects—a novel entitled, "Norwood; or, Village Life in New England," which was afterwards published in book form. In 1872 he published "The Life of Jesus Christ: Part I.—Earlier Scenes," of which the introductory "Overture to the Angels," had appeared in 1869. In the same year he accepted the "Lyman Beecher Lectureship on Preaching," then recently founded in the theological department of Yale College. Mrs. Henry Ward Beecher has also contributed to the press, and in 1859 published anonymously a work of fiction, "From Dawn to Daylight: A Simple Story of a Western Home, by a Minister's Wife." Her "Motherly Talks with Young Housekeepers" appeared in 1873.

Alexander H. Wells was born January 18, 1805, at Cambridge, Washington County, N. Y., to which his father, Daniel, son of Edmonds Wells, had emi-

Digitized by Google

grated from Hebron, Tolland County, Conn., about the beginning of the Revolutionary War. Edmonds Wells was one of six patentees of the tract twelve miles square now embraced in the townships of Cambridge, White Creek and Jackson, Washington County. On his mother's side Alexander H. was descended frem Rev. Elijah Lothrop, a stern Whig, who was the Congregationalist minister at Gilead, Tolland County, Conn., during the Revolution. Gilead was also the residence of Rev. Dr. Peters, the historian, who was roughly treated by his patriotic neighbors and finally driven out of the town, whence he escaped to England. Hannah, the daughter of Dr. Lothrop, married Daniel Wells. When a girl, she saw the people riding Peters on a rail, and when he returned to this country the reminiscence was renewed in conversation between them. Alexander H. was the youngest son and sixteenth child of his parents. He graduated at Cambridge Academy and devoted his life to politics and journalism. In 1840 Governor Seward appointed him surrogate of Westchester County, and in 1848 he was appointed warden of Sing Sing prison by David D. Spencer, Isaac N. Comstock and John B. Gedney, the first inspectors under the constitution of 1847. In the fall of 1848 he was himself elected to Gedney's place in the board. He was editor of the *Weekly Times*, Haverstraw, Rockland County, four years; of the *Hudson River Chronicle*, Sing Sing, three years; and of the *Daily Times*, Troy, three years. As a journalist he possessed much force and facility, but his headstrong disposition carried him into frequent situations from which he was forced to retreat. As usual with men of his combative temperament—for he was happiest in a controversy—he had warm friends and bitter enemies.

In 1829 he married Mary Collins, of Bloomfield, N. J., and they had two children, one of whom, Mary Elizabeth, was born January 3, 1838, and died August 7, 1848. Margaret, the oldest daughter, married Horace Stone, a St. Louis merchant, and died in 1881, leaving one son, Hamilton Stone.

Mr. Wells died at Sing Sing December 21, 1857, and is buried in Dale Cemetery, beside his youngest daughter and his wife. The latter survived him fifteen years, dying October 21, 1872.

Mr. James Wood has contributed largely to the literary development of Westchester County by his writings, his lectures and his earnest efforts to promote intellectual activity and especially historical research. He is the author of two chapters in this work—that on the Indians of Westchester County and another on the Early Explorations and Settlers of the County, and has aided the compiler in many ways—by suggestions, by correcting manuscripts and reading proof and by lending his valuable support in various directions to the promotion of the enterprise. He is justly regarded as one of the most intelligent and public-spirited gentlemen in the county and as ne of its most cultured and useful citizens.

James Wood was born November 12, 1839, at the place where he now resides, and where his father and grandfather lived before him, one mile north of the present village of Mount Kisco, in the town of Bedford. He bears his grandfather's name. His father's name was Stephen. He died in 1876. His brothers were Henry, Charles and John J., of whom the first alone is now living. There were three sisters. James is the youngest of the family.

The family came from Long Island early in the last century. They are descended from Jonas Wood, who came from Halifax, in England, in 1635, and was named in the patent of Hempstead in 1644. He was connected with the family of Lord Halifax.

Mr. Wood's mother was Phœbe, daughter of Caleb Underhill, of Yorktown, a descendant of John Underhill, who came from Ettington, in Warwickshire, England, and settled at Oyster Bay, Long Island, in 1667. The Underhill mansion and buildings are still standing at Ettington, while numerous brasses and monuments to members of the family remain in the old parish church. The estates are now in the possession of Lord Frere's family—the Shirleys—with whom the Underhills intermarried. Another John Underhill of this family was chaplain to Queen Elizabeth, and was made Bishop of Oxford in 1589.

Mr. Wood married, June 7, 1866, Emily Hollingsworth Morris, daughter of Henry Morris, of Philadelphia. They have three children,—Ellen M., Carolina M. and Levi Hollingsworth.

Mr. Wood attended the Reynolds Academy, at Bedford, in 1850 and '51, Westtown School, Pa., in 1851 and '52, and entered the sophomore class in Haverford College, Philadelphia, in 1853. From this college he has the degree of Master of Arts. He is now a member of the corporation of the college and of the board of managers.

Mr. Wood has never held any political office except that of supervisor of his native town in 1862 and '63. He has never allowed his name to be used in connection with a political nomination.

Mr. Wood has taken a great interest in the cultivation of his farm and in importing and breeding fine sheep. He has been a frequent contributor to the agricultural press, has delivered many agricultural addresses, has taken an active part in the discussions of the Bedford Farmers' Club and has held official positions in the New York State Agricultural Society.

He was one of the original incorporators of the Westchester County Historical Society, and has been its president since 1879. He has read a number of papers before the society. He has taken especial interest in local Indian history and has an extensive collection of Indian implements and remains.

He has also taken an active interest in the Westchester County Bible Society, which has long been an important auxiliary to the American Bible Society. He has been its treasurer since 1878.

Mr. Wood is a member of the religious Society of

Digitized by Google

Friends, as were also his father and grandfather. He has been the clerk (presiding officer) of their Yearly Meeting for the States of New York and Vermont and is now clerk of the Representative Meeting. He is a member of the Missionary and Educational Boards of that denomination.

Mr. Wood has frequently appeared upon the lecture platform, with a variety of subjects, in aid of various institutions and charities. In this way he has largely sustained the Mount Kisco Lyceum and Free Library Association, of which he has been the president since its organization, in 1880.

Besides the management of his farm and personal affairs, Mr. Wood's most active business connections have been with a number of estates as their trustee. He is the president of the Genesee Salt Company, whose works are at Pifford, in Livingston County, New York, and have the capacity for producing five thousand bushels of salt per day. He is also president of the Oakwood Cemetery Association.

Mr. Wood's family have been unfortunate in having their homesteads destroyed by fire. A new house, built by his father, was burned in 1819. The one built upon the same site, and in which Mr. Wood was born, was destroyed in 1869. Upon this site Mr. Wood, in 1870, built the large stone house in which he now resides. The farm buildings are largely of stone, and, with the green-houses, grapery, museum of curiosities, vineyards and orchards of many kinds of fruits, combine to make an attractive country home.

Mr. Joseph Barrett, author of the town histories of Bedford, North Castle and New Castle, in this work, is a gentleman of cultured literary taste and a clear and interesting writer. He was born in Bedford, May 25, 1840, was prepared for college at the old Bedford Acadamy and graduated at Lafayette College, Easton, Pa., in 1861. He was school commissioner, *i.e.* Superintendent of Schools, for the third school district of Westchester County from 1867 to 1875 inclusive and occasionally prepared and read papers before teachers' societies, and once before the State Association of Superintendents and Commissioners. On the 4th of July, 1876, he read an historical address on the town of Bedford. Mr. Barrett was one of the original members of the Westchester County Historical Society and in 1878 read a paper before the Society on "Enoch Crosby, the Spy of the Neutral Ground." For many years years he was secretary of the Bedford Farmers' Club, being then a farmer, and has written a number of articles on agricultural topics. From July, 1881, to July, 1885, he was special deputy collector in the New York Custom House, and from November, 1884, to July, 1885, cashier of that institution.

William Allen Butler, the noted author of "Nothing to Wear," and of a number of other poetical and prose compositions, is a resident of Yonkers. He is the son of the eminent lawyer and politician, Benjamin F. Butler, of New York, who was a member of the cabinets of Jackson and Van Buren. William Allen Butler was born in Albany, in 1825. After a course of study at the University of the City of New York, he read law in his father's office and then went abroad, where he remained a year and a half. Although since 1855 engrossed with the practice of his profession in New York City, Mr. Butler has devoted much time to literature. Among his writings are some spirited translations from the German poet Uhland, a series of biographical and critical sketches of the old masters, some pleasant descriptions of Old World localities, and a number of poems, including clever satires on social follies. Of these the most successful was "Nothing to Wear," which was printed anonymously in 1857. Many editions were published in England as well as in this country and the poem was translated into both French and German. In 1871 Mr. Butler published "Lawyer and Client," a valuable exposition of the relations, rights and duties which ought to exist between the two. In the same year appeared a volume of "Poems," containing the translations from Uhland, "Nothing to Wear," poems of travel and other verses. Other published works of Mr. Butler are "The Bible By Itself," an address before the New York Bible Society, 1860; "Martin Van Buren, Lawyer, Statesman and Man," 1862, a comprehensive though brief biography of that eminent statesman.

Mr. Butler has lived in Yonkers nearly a score of years, and his family by their culture and taste, together with the accessory advantage of wealth and liberality in the use of it, have been one of many who have made themselves felt in the city socially and in many varieties of useful work.

Frederic S. Cozzens, author of the "Sparrowgrass Papers," etc., was a resident of Yonkers. He was born in New York City, March 5, 1818, and died at Brooklyn, December 23, 1869. Mr. Cozzens' occupation was that of a wine merchant, but he early evinced a taste for literature, and contributed a number of popular sketches to the *Knickerbocker* and *Putnam's Magazines*. In 1853 he published a volume of sketches in prose and verse, entitled "Prismatics, by Richard Hayward." It was illustrated by Darley, Hensett, Elliott and others. His "Sparrowgrass Papers," describing a cockney's residence in the country, were first written for *Putnam's Monthly*, but in 1856 were published in book form. He also published, in connection with his business, a pleasant miscellany, entitled *The Wine Press*, which he continued to edit for seven years, relinquishing the publication on the breaking out of the Civil War. A collection of essays on gastronomic and kindred topics from its pages was published, in 1867, with the title, "Sayings of Dr. Bushwhacker and Other Learned Men." Another book, "Acadia; or A Sojourn Among the Blue Noses," had been published nine years before, in 1858, and one year later, in 1868, his last work, a

Digitized by Google

"Memorial of Fitz-Greene Halleck," was published by the New York Historical Society.

The twin brothers, Willis Gaylord Clark and Lewis Gaylord Clark, were born at Otisco, Onondaga County, N. Y., in 1810. Willis, on the completion of his education, went to Philadelphia and commenced the publication of a weekly paper, similar to the *New York Mirror*, which was soon discontinued. He then associated himself with Rev. Dr. Brantley, a Baptist clergyman, as assistant editor of the *Columbian Star*, a religious publication, from which position he retired to take charge of the *Philadelphia Gazette*, the oldest daily newspaper in that city. He became its proprietor and remained at its head for the rest of his life. Mr. Clark died in 1841. He was the author of a number of short poems and of a series of short essays, anecdotes, etc., entitled "Ollopodiana," which were published in the *Knickerbocker Magazine*, then edited by his brother Lewis. The latter conducted the *Knickerbocker* for many years, and became widely known by his monthly "Editor's Table," a selection from which was published with the title, "Knick-knacks from an Editor's Table," in 1852. He died at Piermont-on-the-Hudson, November 3, 1873.

The noted naval commander, Matthew Galbraith Perry, whose claim to literary distinction rests upon the notes which he furnished for an interesting account prepared by F. L. Hawks and George Jones, of his naval expedition to Japan, resided at one time in Mount Pleasant, on the Sing Sing road. Commodore Perry was born at Newport, R. I., in 1794, and was a brother of the famous Oliver Hazard Perry, who fought the battle of Lake Erie. As commander of the "Cyane," he fixed the first settlement of Liberia, and in a cruise in the schooner "Shark," in 1821–24, he captured several pirates. He took an active part in the Mexican War, and in 1852–54 commanded the expedition to Japan, with which country he negotiated an important treaty, March 21, 1854.

Another great naval hero, Admiral D. G. Farragut, was a resident of Westchester County (Hastings, in the town of Greenburgh) in 1861–62.

John Orde Creighton, another commodore of the United States navy, who was born in New York City, died at Sing Sing, October 13, 1838. Commodore Joseph B. Hull, of the United States navy, was also born in Westchester.

John Lorimer Worden, who commanded the ironclad "Monitor" in the famous engagement with the ironclad "Merrimac," in Hampton Roads, March 9, 1862, was born at Mount Pleasant on March 12, 1817. He was appointed a midshipman in the United States navy on January 12, 1835; lieutenant, November 30, 1846; commander, May 27, 1862; captain, February 3, 1863; and commodore, May 27, 1868. In April, 1861, he was sent with dispatches to Fort Pickens, and captured by the Confederates, and kept in prison seven months. In the engagement with the "Merrimac," Captain Worden's eyes were severely injured by the explosion of a shell from the "Merrimac" upon the eyehole of the pilot-house. In the command of the ironclad "Montauk," of the South Atlantic Blockading Squadron, he engaged Fort McAllister, January 27, 1863, and on February 28th attacked and destroyed the privateer steamer "Nashville," under the guns of that fort. He was in the attack of Charleston, under Dupont, April 7, 1863, and on December 1, 1869, was appointed superintendent of the United States Naval Academy, at Annapolis.

Rev. David Cole, D.D., has been a Yonkers pastor since 1865, and is the oldest of eight children of Rev. Isaac D. Cole and Anna Maria Shatzel. On his father's side he is of unbroken Holland descent. The original spelling of the family name was "Kool." His mother's parents were John M. Shatzel, Jr., and Barbara Wood. The former was a son of John M. Shatzel and Anna Maria Tremberin, both born at Frankfort-on-the-Main, and the latter, a daughter of Ebenezer Wood, of Welsh, and Margaret Hubbard, or Hoeber, of Holland descent.

On preserved New Amsterdam (New York) records, the name "Kool" first appears with official papers of 1630 and 1633. Lenart Kool, as Director Minuit's deputy secretary, signed the famous patent to Kiliaen Van Rensselaer for a tract of land on the Hudson River, August 13, 1630, and Barent Jacobsen Kool, as an officer of the West India Company, with six others, signed a "Condition and Agreement" between Jacob Van Curler and certain Indian chiefs on the 8th of June, 1633. Whether these were related is not known. The latter was the earliest American ancestor of Rev. Dr. Cole. The form of his name indicates that he was a son of Jacob Kool. The father is not known to have come to America. The son, in an affidavit made in January, 1645, and still preserved, represents himself as then thirty-five years old, which shows that he was born (of course in Holland) about 1610.

The prominent position he occupied in 1633, at twenty-three years of age, proves that he must then have been in New Amsterdam and with the West India Company a considerable time. Without doubt he came to the colony with Minuit and his suite about 1625 or 1626. He retained his connection with the company till the surrender of 1664, occupying even to that date one of its houses for its officers on Bridge Street. After this he followed some of his children to Ulster County, where his name appears on a list of male inhabitants as late as 1689. The date of his death is not known.

The line from him to Rev. Dr. Cole is in hand without a break. It is widely represented by descendants in different States of the Union, but it is especially to be noted that from its earliest appearance in America it has never failed to be represented by resident families in the city of New York.

1. Barent Jacobsen Kool and Marretje Leenderts had nine children, viz.: Jacob Barentsen, Aeltje,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

David Cole

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Dievertje, Apollonia, Leendert, Arent, (1st) Theunis Arent, (2d), and Pieter.

2. Jacob Barentsen Kool (born before 1639) and Marretje Simons had eight children, viz.: Barent (1st), Barent (2d), Simon, Arent, Marretje, Barent (3d), Claartje and Jacob.

3. Jacob Kool (baptized at Kingston, N. Y., January 1, 1673) and Barbara Hanse settled at Tappan, N. Y., about 1695, and united with the New Reformed Church, organized the year before. They had six children born in Tappan between 1695 and 1707, viz.: Geertje, Jacob, Jr., Tryntje, Jan, Barent and Abraham. This family first introduced the Kool line into the lower part of Orange (now Rockland) County, where its representatives have been numerous and prominent ever since.

4. Abraham Kool (baptized at Tappan November 2, 1707) and Annetje Meyer had eight children, viz.: Jacob, Ide (1st), Ide (2d), Isaac, Johannes, Rachel, Abraham and Andreas.

5. Isaac Kool (born January 21st and baptized at Tappan February 15, 1741) and Catharine Serven (born at Tappan August 28, 1747) were married at Tappan by Rev. Samuel Verbryk, pastor of the Tappan Reformed Church, October 15, 1764. They settled at New City, in their native county, and had fifteen children born there, viz.: Abraham, Breghje, Rachel, John, Jacob, Anna, Elizabeth, David, Isaac, Jr., Mary, Margaret, Philip, Catharine, Andrew and Sarah. In 1794 the parents removed to Broadalbin (or Fondabush), in Fulton County, where the father died and was buried in October, 1800. The mother, after his death, returned to Rockland County, where she died in 1832. It was in this generation that the spelling of the family name was changed to "Cole." The pronunciation under its earlier and later forms was the same. The change in spelling was adopted to protect the name against mispronunciation by an incoming people not acquainted with Holland forms and sounds.

6. David Cole (born at New City September 26th and baptized at Clarkstown, by Rev. Nicholas Lansing, October 5, 1777) married Elizabeth Meyer, at Kakiat, January 11, 1798, the ceremony being performed by Rev. George G. Brinkerhoff. The wife was a daughter of Johannes Meyer and Tryntje Van Houten, both born in the county, but of Holland descent. These had three children—Isaac D., Catharine and Eliza. The last died unmarried in 1851. The second, Mrs. Thomas Lippincott, who died September 23, 1881, is represented numerously by descendants in New York City and elsewhere. The first was the father of Rev. Dr. Cole.

7. Rev. Isaac D. Cole was born at Spring Valley, Rockland County, N. Y., January 25th and baptized at Kakiat by Rev. Geo. G. Brinkerhoff, March 25, 1799. He was a resident of New York City with brief intervals, from 1801 to 1826, and was married, November 3, 1821, by Rev. Christian Bork, to Anna Maria Shatzel, born in the city November 3, 1797. His history is given with fulness of detail in the "History of Rockland County," published in 1884, under the editorial direction of his son. After several years of teaching in New York City he entered the Theological Seminary at New Brunswick, N. J., in 1826, and having been licensed to the missionary in 1829, at once became pastor of the Reformed Church at Tappan, in which his ancestors had worshipped from its beginning, more than a century and a quarter before, and continued in his pastorate, with an interval of one year, till his retirement from the active duties of the ministry in 1864, at sixty-five years of age. Subsequently and until his death, on the 30th of August, 1878, he lived at Spring Valley upon the family home-ground of more than a hundred years, which he had inherited from his father. His sterling character, his remarkable gifts as an instructor, his special life-work in the ministry, the valuable influence of his precept and example and the preciousness of his memory are so fully put on record in the history mentioned above that they need no reproducing here. The children of Rev. Isaac D. Cole and Anna Maria Shatzel were eight, viz.: David, Caroline, Elizabeth, Juliana (1st), Juliana (2d,) Catharine Amelia, Margaret Ann, Benjamin Wood and Isaac D., Jr. Of these children, Juliana (1st), Caroline Elizabeth (Mrs. Dr. James J. Stephens), Catharine Amelia (Mrs. Benjamin L. Disbrow) and Isaac D., Jr., late president of the Knickerbocker Fire Insurance Company, of New York City, have passed away.

What has thus been given shows that Rev. Dr. Cole belongs to one of the oldest New York families. It is not believed that there are any older, though there may be a very few others as old. The family is of the Reformed Church of Holland from its very start in that country. It was identified with the organization of the first Reformed Church in New Amsterdam (the "Church in the Fort") and subsequently with the organization of the Reformed Churches of Kingston, Tappan, Clarkstown and West Hempstead (or Kakiat), and it also, before 1800, founded a Reformed Church in Fondabush, Fulton County, which, however, was changed to a Presbyterian Church in 1825. Rev. Dr. Cole is thus, through his father, of strictest Holland descent. He feels the derivation of his name from so historic a stock and is equally alive to the character for simplicity and spotless business integrity which has been handed down through the American generations. With the exception of the first member of the line, who was a government officer, all the generations, down to his father, were farmers. All of them were continuously, and many of them officially, connected with the life and work of the Reformed Churches. Purity of life, probity in dealing, steadiness of aim and purpose have been the heritage handed down to him, and this heritage he cherishes with the most

Digitized by Google

sacred reverence and would not exchange for any other form of inheritance whatever.

Rev. Dr. Cole was born at Spring Valley September 22, 1822, during a brief summer visit of his parents, then residents of New York City, to the old family homestead. Being the first child of a conscientious and gifted teacher, his training naturally engaged his father's close thought. The course taken with him was such as to give to his mind an early and strong bias for the study of languages, without, however, impairing his education in other branches. But his father's view of the importance of languages was such that he was started in Latin at four, in Greek at six and in Hebrew at nine, and was prepared for college at twelve years of age. No effort was spared to lay his foundations solidly. The consequence was the awakening of an enthusiasm for languages which has shaped a life, and is one of its leading characteristics. From twelve to sixteen years of age study was suspended during the summers, and training on a farm substituted, for the building up of a physical and mental strength that had been too severely taxed. The winters, however, continued to be devoted to study. In November, 1838, at sixteen years of age, he entered the Grammar School of Rutgers College. After a year spent in reviewing old studies, and especially in earnest work upon mathematics, he entered the Sophomore Class of the college in October, 1839, from which, in July, 1842, he was graduated. Being too well prepared for college at his entrance, he had thrown himself upon his past studies to a large extent, and as a result, came to his graduation, though with credit, yet without distinction. At once after graduation he began to teach near his father's residence at Tappan, and continued teaching from August, 1842, to November, 1858, more than sixteen years, devoting himself through almost the whole period to the teaching of the Latin and Greek languages alone. During his work as a teacher he prepared many young men for college, several of whom were graduated with honor. His greatest successes as a teacher were attained during several years in the principalship of an academy at Trenton, N. J., during which his students were sent to Princeton, Rutgers, Harvard, Yale, Union, Amherst and the Universities of New York and Pennsylvania.

In 1855, prominently through his influence, the State Normal School of New Jersey was brought into being, of which, by the appointment of Governor Rodman M. Price, he was one of the first trustees. In 1857 he became a professor in that institution, resigning his trusteeship to accept the post. For several years during his teaching life, however, he had been privately studying for the ministry, and, in connection with his teaching work, had established and carried on an enterprise, on which, as a foundation, many years ago, grew up the present Fifth Presbyterian Church of Trenton. Having induced his pastor and friends of the First Presbyterian Church of that city to build a house for the purpose in the suburbs, he founded and conducted a large Sunday-school in it, and soon after began, while still a layman and principal of an academy, to preach twice in it every Sabbath, and lecture in the houses of his hearers on Thursday evenings. From this work and from his professorship in the State Normal School he passed into the ministry in 1858. Several offers of pulpits were at once made to him, but he decided to accept the charge of the new Reformed Church at East Millstone, N. J. Here he was ordained November 23, 1858, and remained pastor until April 1, 1863. In February of that year he had been called to the professorship of the Greek language and literature in Rutgers College, and had accepted the call. Entering upon his new post March 16, 1863, he remained in it till January 1, 1866. During this period of three years, however, he was several times urged to re-enter the pastorate. The teaching in the college was a fascination to him, but the attraction to the pulpit proved the stronger, and in December, 1865, a call from the Reformed Church of Yonkers was accepted. From the 10th of that month he has been connected, as its pastor, with the history and life of that church. During his professorship at New Brunswick the degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him by the trustees of Franklin and Marshall College, at Lancaster, Pa.

The period from 1861 to 1865 was with Dr. Cole one of strong decision and great activity. From the firing on Sumter he took the most pronounced position for the Union, and during his pastorate at East Millstone, and his college life at New Brunswick, was at all times forward in sustaining the government and making sentiment for it by writing and speaking in its behalf. Many incidents of interest in his history in that connection might be related, but want of space excludes them here.

Dr. Cole's activity as a writer began soon after his graduation from college, but confined itself for some years to newspaper articles. His first book was a small "Manual of English Grammar," published in 1848, and his only other book written during his teaching life was a larger one, entitled "Principles of English Grammar Applied," issued in 1853. These books were intended mostly for his own use, but had a considerable circulation in the schools of New Jersey in their day. It was not till about 1855 that he began to appear much as a public speaker. At this time, in addition to his evangelistic work, before alluded to, in Trenton, he became deeply enlisted in a new educational movement in the State of New Jersey, and, by permission of the State Legislature, joined with others in pressing the interests and wants of the public schools upon the members assembled for the purpose in joint session. He also formed one of a company who visited the various counties of the State, speaking everywhere for the cause of popular education. Several of his addresses on these subjects,

Digitized by Google

from 1855 onward, were printed. Besides this, he spoke in various places upon topics connected with higher education. In December, 1854, he read an important paper at the Smithsonian Institution on "Classical Education," which was published in Barnard's *American Journal of Education*, and drew commendation from both sides of the Atlantic. In 1855–56 he was New Jersey editor of the *New York Teacher* and wrote many of its editorials. After his entrance into the ministry, in 1858, he dropped speaking and writing in the special interest of education, finding enough to do for his pulpit and in the defense of the Union cause during the war. During his ministry he has been absorbed in two specialties, the one being his principal and the other his secondary object of pursuit.

The former is the critical study of the Bible originals and the development of the Bible's thought, and the latter is the tracing of Divine Providence through history. Of the results of his Bible study, he has written and printed very much, but not in pamphlet or book-form. Upon history, his researches have been mostly of local bearing, being developments of church and local annals. In October, 1865, he delivered an historical address upon his first church at East Millstone, then ten years old; in 1868, another upon his church at Yonkers, then twenty-five; and in 1883, a third upon the same church, then forty years old. All these were published by the congregations. His Thanksgiving sermon of 1866 was also published by his people, and his Centennial Thanksgiving sermon (1876) on "Our American Republic, the Child of Special Providence," was called for by a representation from the uniting congregations that heard it, and published. The General Synod of the Reformed Church published also a sermon he preached before it in 1874 on "Offerings to the Lord," being its "Annual Sermon on Benevolence." In 1876, Dr. Cole himself published a large octavo volume, the fruit of very great labor, giving the genealogy of his own Holland family from 1580 to date. In October, 1882, at the call of his fellow-citizens of Yonkers, he delivered in the open air, to many thousands of people, a bi-centennial oration commemorative of the founding of the Manor (now the city) Hall of Yonkers, which was printed and very widely circulated. In 1883 and 1884 he edited the "History of Rockland County," alluded to above. In September, 1884, as president of the General Synod of the Reformed Church, he presided at the installation of Rev. John G. Lansing, D.D., as professor in the Theological Seminary at New Brunswick, and delivered a sermon on "God's noteworthy preparations of the two original languages of the sacred Scriptures to become the conveyancers of His divine revelation to men, and His no less noteworthy preparations of a modern language to effect the spread of this revelation over the earth." The sermon was published with the proceedings of the day. In October of the same year, in the same capacity, he presided at the first session of the centennial of the same seminary, and delivered the "Response" to the "Address of Welcome," which was printed in a volume with the proceedings. His latest publication has been the "History of Yonkers," contained in this work. In all his published historical addresses he has had in view one controlling object—to hold up in the most conspicuous light the Providence of God as manifested in the details of church, historical, community and family life.

Dr. Cole married, on the 18th of April, 1844, Abbie D. Wyckoff, a daughter of Jacob Wyckoff and Elizabeth Van Deventer, of New Brunswick, both of purest Holland descent. The children have been six in number, of whom the third died in infancy, in 1855, viz.: Mary Elizabeth (wife of Rev. James Henry Bertholf, of Nassau, Rensselaer County, N. Y.), Isaac D., Ella, J. Wyckoff, Frank Howard and Edward R. None of the sons are married. Rev. and Mrs. Bertholf have four children, viz.: Harry W., Charles Howard, Bessie and Griffith Dürst.

Thomas Henry Edsall is descended from Samuel Edsall, Esq., a native of Reading, Berkshire, England, by his marriage with Ruth Woodhull, daughter of Richard Woodhull, Esq., a native of Thenford, Northamptonshire, England. Samuel Edsall came to Boston, Mass., in 1648, settled among the Dutch in New Amsterdam in 1655, and afterwards became quite prominent in the colonial affairs of New York and New Jersey. Mr. Woodhull came to Lynn, Mass., about 1640, and was an early settler and leading citizen of Southampton and Brookhaven, L. I. Other immigrant ancestors of Mr. Edsall came in the seventeenth century from Holland and France (Huguenot). In the last century several of his progenitors bore arms in the old French War and in support of American independence during the Revolution. He is the only son of the late Thomas Edsall, Esq., and Phebe A. Jones, daughter of the late Hon. Nathaniel Jones, of Orange County, N. Y., and was born October 7, 1840, in the city of New York. After completing his academic education he entered Brown University at seventeen, and was graduated in 1861. The following year he assisted in raising a regiment of infantry, which was afterwards consolidated to form the One Hundred and Seventy-sixth New York Volunteers—"Ironsides"—of which he was commissioned adjutant. The regiment was assigned to the "Banks Expedition" and served in the Department of the Gulf. During the summer and autumn of 1863 Mr. Edsall was detached and assigned to duty at headquarters under the chief engineer of the department. In November he returned to New York and was mustered out with his regiment. He then studied law with O'Connor & Dunning and at Columbia College Law School, was admitted to the bar in the spring of 1865, and has since been in practice in New York City. He is now a member of the firm of Dunning, Edsall, Hart & Fowler.

Digitized by Google

For several years Mr. Edsall has devoted much attention to historical and genealogical researches, and has contributed several papers on those subjects to the New York Historical and the New York Genealogical and Biographical Societies, some of which have been published. He has given special study to the early history of King's Bridge and its neighborhood, where he has resided for several years, in Spuyten Duyvil. Mr. Edsall has prepared a very interesting and valuable history of that town for this work, which is published elsewhere. He is a member of the University Club, the New York Historical Society, a trustee of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society and the vice-president of the Society of the Sons of the Revolution.

Josiah Sherman Mitchell, son of Minot Mitchell, one of the most distinguished members of the Westchester County bar, was born at White Plains, February 2, 1816. He studied law in his father's office, and was admitted to the bar in 1845. He is still (1886) pursuing the practice of his profession, and resides in White Plains. Mr. Mitchell has devoted a good deal of study to the history of his locality, and is recognized as an authority upon that subject. Besides writing the very able and interesting history of White Plains for this work, he has written a number of other articles on subjects relating to White Plains, or other points in the county, but none of them have hitherto appeared in printed form. He prepared two papers on "The French in Westchester County," which were read before a social club of White Plains, and has read two papers before the Westchester County Historical Society, of which he is a member, one of them being a "Life of Ann Hutchison," the other a review of the events succeeding the battle of White Plains, giving reasons for Howe's retreat. A paper has also been written by Mr. Mitchell in which he brings forward arguments to show that the sect of Methodists acquired a foothold in Westchester County before having done so in New York City,—a conclusion contrary to the received teaching on that point, which is, that the Methodist Society in this country acquired its first converts in the latter place. The paper is deposited with the pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church at White Plains.

Mr. Mitchell has been twice married. His first wife was Elizabeth Anderson, daughter of the Hon. Joseph H. Anderson. Their children were William Anderson, who is now a manager of one of the departments of the New York Safe Deposit Company, of New York City, and Anna Caroline. His second wife was Margaret Louise Dusenbury. Their only child is Charles Halsey.

Wm. Saml. Coffey.

Rev. William Samuel Coffey was born in the city of New York in 1827, and in 1847 graduated from Columbia College. After studying for the ministry he graduated from the General Theological Seminary of the Protestant Episcopal Church in 1850, and was ordained deacon in the same year at Trinity Church, New York. In 1851 he received the full orders of the priesthood at Grace Church, Brooklyn Heights. On February 1, 1852, he became rector of St. Paul's Church, East Chester, and his pastorate has continued to the present time, a period of over thirty-four years, during which he has been most efficient and active in his ministerial labors, and has greatly endeared himself to the community. He has held the commissions of the State as chaplain of the Third Regiment and consequently of the Twenty-seventh Regiment N. Y. S. N. G. In 1856 he founded Trinity Church at Mount Vernon.

Mr. Coffey's literary work has only been second in importance and value to his labors in the ministry. He delivered the centennial address of the laying of the corner-stone of St. Paul's Church, East Chester, in October, 1865, and a memorial paper in 1875 upon the life and services of Rev. Thomas Standard, D.D., at the dedication of a tablet erected in his honor in the church. He also delivered a historical address in October, 1884, in St. Peter's Church, Westchester, upon the eminent career of Rev. Samuel Seabury as rector of that parish. To these volumes he has contributed three important chapters,—"The General History of Westchester County from 1683 to 1774;"

Digitized by Google

"The General History of Westchester County from 1783 to 1860," and the "History of the town of East Chester," which is a complete review of that town in all its social, political and religious aspects from the earliest period to the present year. The public addresses of Mr. Coffey upon religious and secular topics and occasions have been numerous, while for many years he has contributed to the newspapers of the country the results of his profound thought and thorough scholarship as brought to bear upon the questions which interest mankind. On October 4, 1876, he married Henrietta, daughter of Henry P. Kellogg, of New Rochelle, and has two sons, both of whom are living.

John William Draper, M.D., LL.D., the late chemist and physiologist, was born in Liverpool, England, May 5, 1811, and at the time of his death, in 1886, lived at Irvington, in Westchester County. He was educated at the University of London. Emigrating to America in 1833, he continued his chemical and medical studies at the University of Pennsylvania, where he took the degree of M.D. in 1836. Besides holding prominent professorships in various seats of learning, he contributed a large number of valuable works to the literature of America. Between 1838 and 1857 he furnished to the *Edinburgh Philosophical Journal* about forty treatises, besides contributing to other scientific journals. He was the author of a "Treatise on the Organization of Plants," 4to, 1844; a popular "Text-Book on Chemistry," 1846; another on "Natural Philosophy," 1847; a "History of the Intellectual Development of Europe;" "Thoughts on the Future Civil Policy of America;" "History of the American Civil War," 3 vols., 1867–68; and "Memoirs on the Chemical Action of Light." His most elaborate work is a treatise on "Human Physiology, Statical and Dynamical," 1856.

Robert Bonner, the proprietor of the *New York Ledger*, born in Londonderry, Ireland, about 1820, of Scotch-Presbyterian ancestry, is or was a resident of Westchester. While a lad in the printing-office of the *Hartford Courant* it is said he could set up more type in a day than any man in the State. He went to New York City in 1844, purchasing the *Ledger*, then an obscure sheet, and brought it to the position it now occupies by engaging Fanny Fern, Edward Everett, Henry Ward Beecher and other eminent writers as contributors.

General Adam Badeau, the author of a "History of General Grant" and numerous newspaper and magazine articles, was born in New York and resided in Westchester County. He was made captain and aide-de-camp of United States Volunteers in April, 1862, and afterward appointed on the staff of General Sherman. He was severely wounded at Port Hudson, joined General Grant in January, 1864, as his military secretary, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and was made brevet brigadier-general United States army for faithful and meritorious services in the war. He became colonel and aide-de-camp to the general of the army in March, 1865, and continued to May, 1869, when he was retired. He was secretary of legation to the English court at London.

Rev. Wm. E. Turner, of Elmsford, kindly furnishes the following account of the early life and literary labors of Jay Gould, the noted financier, who, while a mere lad, wrote the history of Delaware County:

"Jay Gould did not in early life enjoy the advantages of a literary education. His only opportunities were first in a private school taught in the neighborhood, for the benefit of a few of the neighbors, by a young man named Oliver. He subsequently removed to the academy in Franklin, where young Gould followed him and very early finished his education. Hence it could not be said that he ever acquired much of a literary taste, but rather a business education. He did, however, write the history of Delaware County, which is still extant and certainly a very creditable performance for a youth of sixteen years of age. His education, as we have said, was more of a business character. Hence we see him, after spending a little time as clerk in a country store, engaged in measuring the distances and assisting in plotting the maps of Ulster and Scoharie Counties. We should not forget to mention that his first business venture was with a mouse-trap which he had constructed and brought to the city of New York for the purpose of placing it among the curiosities and useful exhibits of the Crystal Palace. This venture seems, in some respects, to have been unfortunate; for, while on his way, as he was admiring the wonders of the city, a thief stole the trap. The offender, however, was caught and on his arraignment before the Police Court it was recorded that the mouse-trap had taken larger game—it had caught a thief.

"At an early age—before he was twenty—he left his native town to engage in a large business in Pennsylvania—managing the financial affairs of a tannery, said at that time to be the largest in the country, if not in the world."

Mr. Gould's life story, as told by himself before the Senate Labor Committee in New York, in September, 1883, was as follows: Having stated that he was born in Roxbury, N. Y., on May 27, 1836, he said he assisted his sisters in tending the cattle and one day he said to his father he would like to go to school. The father replied that he was too young, "but," said the witness, "I was determined to secure an education, as I was then fourteen years of age. At last," said the witness, with a smile, "I fell in with a blacksmith, and as I could write a good hand, I told him I could keep his books. He consented and that was the first occupation that brought me remuneration."

He had a taste for mathematics; used to get up at three o'clock in the morning and study till six and in this way prepared himself for a start in life.

Mr. Gould then proceeded to say that he heard of a man in Ulster County who was making a map of

Digitized by Google

that county, and having a great taste for surveying he (the witness) went and offered his assistance. He was thereupon engaged at twenty dollars per month, but his work proved so unsatisfactory that his employer told him the work he performed was a silly lot of stuff. "After that," said the witness, "I had not the heart next day to ask anybody to give me a dinner." He finally went to a quiet place, where nobody could see him, and had a good cry. He then went to his sister's house, where he went up stairs and prayed, after which he felt better. After that he resolved not to go home again, but to go ahead and die in the last ditch. He returned to his task of completing the map and made similar surveys of Delaware and Albany Counties, from which he realized five thousand dollars, which was his first capital.

After the panic of 1857 he came to New York and, owing to the depreciation of values in property, he was able to buy on credit the bonds of the Rutland and Washington Railroad for ten cents on the dollar. He took charge of the railroad and was its president, treasurer and general manager. He conducted the road until its consolidation with the Rensselaer and Saratoga road, when he was able to sell out his interest at a large profit. Subsequently he took a bankrupt friend's interest in the Cleveland and Pittsburgh road and held it till he was able to sell it to advantage. He became a large owner of Union Pacific stock in consequence of a misunderstanding with parties interested and also owing to the illness of Mr. Horace F. Clark in Chicago. The road was then in a bad way, the stock going down to fifteen, and the only thing he could do to save himself was to hold on to what he had, while at the same time he still kept buying. He made up his mind to stick to the road and build it up, and he persevered till it at last paid dividends. Before the road became a success a great clamor arose that it was Jay Gould's road, as though that was a dangerous thing. He was then engaged in selling out his stock, which was soon in the hands of seven thousand investors, representing the earnings of many widows and orphans.

The next venture was the building up of the Gould railroad system in the South and West. It began with purchase of the Missouri and Pacific from Commodore Garrison. Other roads were purchased and connections were made to different points. Mr. Gould said that he had at this time passed the point where money-making was an object, and his only idea was in carrying out the system to merely see what could be done by combinations. The lines now spread through Ohio, Illinois, Indiana, Michigan, Missouri, Arkansas and Indian Territory, Texas, Louisiana and Mexico. There are central connections at Cincinnati, St. Louis, Chicago and New Orleans. All the construction of this system of roads was completed in 1882, and represented about ten thousand miles of road. The earnings of the lines when he took possession of them were about seventy thousand dollars a month. The earnings for the month of August, 1883, were five million five hundred thousand dollars. In building up this system, the Southwest has been opened up and the country thrown open to civilization. Mr. Gould stated that he was a director in the Chicago and Northwest, Chicago and Rock Island, Delaware, Lackawanna and Western, New York and New England and several other smaller lines.

Incidental to his railroad interests he has become largely interested in the telegraphic business. This was on account of the intimate connection between the two industries. He was instrumental in starting the American Union to make it a competing line with the Western Union. He found it would be impossible to accomplish this on account of the extent of the latter's connections. He then turned his attention to getting control of Western Union by buying stock when it was low. Finding it a paying investment, he had been constantly increasing his interest. His subsequent history as a successful business man, and finally as one of the greatest magnates of Wall Street, is well known, but has little to do with the literary annals of Westchester County.

Another Westchester County *littérateur*, Mr. Frederick Whittaker, is a prolific writer of stories, and widely known for his "Life of Custer." Mr. Whittaker is the second son and fourth child of Henry Whittaker and Catharine Maitland, and was born in Sloane Street, London, on December 12, 1838. His father was a solicitor with a large practice, but was ruined by indorsing for a noble client, Lord Kensington, the original of Thackeray's "Lord Crabs" in the "Yellowplush Papers." Mr. Whittaker was compelled to flee from England to escape imprisonment for debt. For some years he wandered from place to place with his family on the Continent, and finally, in 1850, came to this country, settling in New York, where he obtained a good practice as a lawyer, and wrote the first book on practice, under the code. "Whittaker's Practice" was a standard book until superseded by later decisions and later books. Frederick Whittaker's education in the mean time was of a desultory character, and his attendance at school was limited to six months at a Mr. Walker's private school in Brooklyn. His father tried to make a lawyer of him, but the boy's tastes inclined to literature. At sixteen he entered the office of N. Dane Ellingwood, a lawyer, as office-boy, and two or three years later obtained a position in the office of Henry G. Harrison, architect. A defect in his eyesight, however, which was now discovered, put an end to his efforts to become an architect. In the mean time he had made many boyish attempts at literary composition, and finally succeeded in getting into print in a magazine, now extinct, called *The Great Republic Monthly*. When the Civil War broke out he joined a cavalry regiment, and on his return obtained employment as

Digitized by Google

a book canvasser, and afterwards as a school-teacher. After repeated failures to secure the publication of some of his writings he attracted the notice of Mayne Reid, who published a little song "Starlighted Midnight" from his pen in his (Reid's) magazine, *Onward*. Reid gave him some good advice, and pointed out the course he should pursue in order to succeed.* Mr. Whittaker's next step was the publication by Frank Leslie of some stories of adventure which he had submitted. In 1870, with some money inherited from English relatives, he was enabled to buy his present home at Mount Vernon. He also married and set to work in earnest to earn a living by his pen. This he succeeded in doing by writing serials and dime novels for Munro, of the *Fireside Companion*, Beadle and others. He also contributed a set of papers to the *Army and Navy Journal*, called "Volunteer Cavalry; the Lessons of the Decade." These attracted much attention, and in 1874 Mr. Whittaker became the first National Guard editor, and afterwards assistant editor of the *Journal*. In 1876 he left it for a time and wrote the "Life of General Custer." In the following year he returned to the *Journal* and also wrote a good deal for the *Galaxy* magazine. He also published a novel, "The Cadet Button," about this time. Since then he has been engaged in writing serials for a living, and has also written a play, "Napoleon," intended for Edwin Booth, but never acted. He compiled for this work, the chapter on "Civil War" in Westchester County.

Eliza W. Farnham, philanthropist and author, was born at Rensselaerville, November 17, 1815, and died in New York City, December 15, 1864 Her maiden-name was Burhaus. She went to Illinois in 1835, and was married there in the following year to Thomas J. Farnham. In 1841 she returned to New York, and was employed in visiting prisons and lecturing to women. In the spring of 1844 she accepted appointment as matron of the Female Department of the State Prison, at Sing Sing. In 1848 she was connected with the Institution for the Blind, in Boston, and from 1849 to 1856 resided in California. She returned to New York and published "California, in Doors and Out." She was also the author of several books, and was active in promoting social reforms and the rights of women.

Rev. William James Cumming, author of the histories of the towns of Cortlandt and Yorktown in this work, and compiler of the Civil List, was born in New York City, July 22, 1847, and is the son of John Pollock Cumming and Isabella Pollock, both of Bangor, Ireland. He was educated at the public schools of New York City and in the College of the City of New York, where he graduated in 1867. He studied for the ministry at the Union Theological Seminary, graduating in 1871 and was ordained August 8, 1876, since which time he has been pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Yorktown. Previous to that time, 1872–75, he taught school at Norwalk, Conn., and in New York City. His literary work has comprised a number of historical papers and newspaper articles, and he is a member of the Westchester Historical Society and secretary of the Westchester Bible Society.

Mr. Charles E. Culver, author of the town histories of Somers and North Salem in this work, was born on the 6th of April, 1842, in the town of Somers, in the house now owned and occupied by James P. Teed. His father was Edward W. Culver, the son of Joshua Culver, and he was born in the house directly opposite Mt. Zion Church. The Culver family are of Welsh descent. Charles E. Culver's mother was Sarah J., daughter of Samuel Teed. She was born in the Teed homestead, now the residence of her brother, James P. Teed. The Teed family are of French extraction. His parents removed to New York City when he was a child, and among the earliest of his recollections is the attendance at a private school in Amos, (now West Tenth) Street. Owing to continued ill health in childhood and by advice of a physician, his father disposed of his business in the city, and removed to North Salem on a farm. Charles then attended the preparatory department of the North Salem Academy. John F. Jenkins, A.M., was the principal, his daughter, Miss Mary Jenkins, having charge of the preparatory department. The family then removed to Whitlockville, (now Katonah,) and Charles attended the private school of Mrs. Miller and Miss Mitchell, near that place. He continued his studies, after the close of the latter school, at the public school and under tutors. In 1860 he began the study of dentistry in New York, intending to complete the course at the Baltimore Dental College, but the approach of the war and excitement of the times turned his attention to other than civil pursuits. In 1861–62–63 he was engaged in various government employments, both under the State and nation. He was married in New York City in 1863, and removed to West Farms, where he carried on the manufacture of writing ink. In 1864 he removed to Northern Illinois and remained West ten years, being a resident of Chicago during the memorable fire of 1871, where his publishing business, as well as his home and everything he possessed, including a fine library, were completely destroyed, his family and himself escaping with but the clothing they wore. In 1869 he started the publication of the *Chicago Dispatch*, a weekly Sunday paper, under the firm-name of Culver, Harris & Wilson. Charles E. Harris (Carl Pretzel) is now the publisher of *Pretzel's Weekly*. Col. T. B. Wilson was from Alabama, and had charge of the Masonic department of the paper. After the firm had sold out the publication, Mr. Culver became connected with the daily press of Chicago, having began to write for the press when a mere lad. His first real newspaper work was done for the late Horace Greeley about 1861, since which time he has been more or less actively engaged as correspondent or in

an editorial capacity. He has had two children, both now deceased. In politics he is a Democrat.

Rev. David Cole, D.D., of Yonkers, who has contributed so much towards this history of Westchester County, has furnished us with the following interesting sketch of a few of the authors and writers in his locality:

Pastors, editors and newspaper correspondents have, of course, in Yonkers, as in other places, written voluminously. We have already spoken of all editors and conductors of papers who live in the city, and will not bring them in here. But, among paper correspondents, many facile Yonkers pens, driven both by ladies and gentlemen among us, have been driven to purpose upon articles that have appeared in our own and in outside papers and periodicals. We cannot mention these, but confine ourselves, in the following catalogue, to writers who have published pamphlets or books.

Lyman Cobb, Sr., born in Massachusetts in 1800, and one of the greatest educators and most indefatigable authors of his time, spent the last five years of his life in Yonkers. Mr. Cobb began teaching at sixteen, and published his famous "Cobb's Spelling-Book" at nineteen years of age. This book went into all the schools of the country. His subsequently published books were very numerous. They included five reading-books, a speaker, a dictionary, an expositor, a miniature lexicon and extended to many other volumes. At his death he left unfinished a concordance, a national dictionary and a pronouncing Testament. Mr. Cobb was as active in humane enterprises as he was in educational and literary work. He was a member of each of many benevolent societies of prominence, and a leader in them all. He was noted for intelligent zeal, for promptness in action, for kindness of heart and for simplicity of conduct. His death occurred on October 26, 1864, and he left in Yonkers four children, two of whom are prominent in Yonkers business life, and have both been mentioned in their places in this work.

J. Henry Pooley, M.D., who has been spoken of among the Yonkers physicians, was, during his long residence and practice in Yonkers, a frequent writer of pamphlets and fugitive articles upon professional subjects, some of which at least attracted wide notice. These were his diversions. He did not make writing a profession.

Several leading business men of Yonkers have done more or less amateur writing, now and then throwing their productions into pamphlet form. Among these, one is Mr. Robert P. Getty, whose overflowing life has made itself felt in so many and such various directions. Mr. Getty's home delight has been in his library, within the walls of which he has collected and systematically filed newspapers and other registers of passing events, with which he has kept up familiarity to such a remarkable degree that he is almost an encyclopædia of the history of New York and its vicinity. He has grappled with history, with science and with social, political and financial economy, and has written considerably on them all, and many articles he has printed. One little waif of his, in doggerel verse, will keep his memory alive. It is entitled, "Chronicles of Yonkers." It was published in 1864 without name, and thrown upon the tables of a fair held in the interest of the New York Sanitary Commission, to be sold for the benefit of the fair. It is sprightly and pungent, full of caustic allusions to the early history of Yonkers, as well as hits at the living men and the usages of the place at the time in which it was written. But, most of all, it helps to reveal the mind and vivacity of the writer, who has himself been one of the institutions of Yonkers since 1849.

Hon. G. Hilton Scribner, who came to Yonkers about twenty years ago as a practicing lawyer, and who, from 1871 to 1873, was Secretary of State, has now long confined himself to the management of a New York City railroad. He is, however, another of the amateur writers of Yonkers. His most notable production is a monograph, published about two years ago, entitled "Where did Life Begin?" It has attracted wide attention for its subject, for the way in which the subject is treated, and from the fact that several minds on both sides of the Atlantic seem almost simultaneously to have set forth its theory, which is, that all life of all varieties began at the poles. Mr. Scribner does not make writing a pursuit, but writes in a neat, self-controlled and pleasant style, which always insures respectful attention for whatever he prints.

Foremost among the writers of Yonkers is the Rev. Henry Martyn Baird, Ph.D., D.D., LL.D., an accomplished linguist, and one of the best read and most scholarly of men. He has been professor of Greek in the University of the City of New York since 1859. His writings have been numerous. A list of them may easily be obtained. It is enough here to cite his last and greatest work, entitled "Rise of the Huguenots of France," published in two volumes in 1879. Dr. Baird was widely known before, but this masterly work gave him a greatly increased reputation. Its style is a model, it thrills with interest, its grasp is profound, and altogether it is a masterpiece. The notices of it by foreign as well as home journals, while independent and in many cases ably critical, have been most flattering, and some have not hesitated to rank the work with the great histories of Prescott and Motley. Dr. Baird is still prosecuting his researches into his great subject, and further volumes, we understand, may be expected in due time.

Dr. Dio Lewis, the author and teacher of physical culture, died at his residence in Yonkers, in 1886, from erysipelas. A couple of weeks before his death he fell from his horse and received an injury to his left leg, below the knee. On Wednesday following he came to New York, and in returning home was

Digitized by Google

carried past Yonkers to Hastings. He walked home, a distance of about four miles. The exertion proved too much for his injured leg, causing erysipelas to set in.

Dr. Lewis was a native of Auburn, N. Y., and was sixty-three years old. He studied medicine in the Harvard Medical School, and began the practice of his profession in Auburn in 1845, at the age of twenty-two. Two years later he removed to Buffalo, where he practiced five years, and wrote and published a number of papers on the causes and treatment of cholera, which ravaged that city in 1849 and 1851. Dr. Lewis during those years of practice became impressed with the necessity of physical culture to prevent disease, and in 1855 he gave up the practice of his profession, and began a course of lecturing and writing on the subject of public and personal hygiene. During four years he lectured almost every night, giving his days to the invention of his new system of gymnastics.

In 1860, having perfected this system, he abandoned the platform and settled in Boston, where he established his normal school for physical training. He was assisted in teaching by the celebrated Dr. Walter Channing, Dr. Thomas Hoskins and other well-known medical scholars, and within seven years more than four hundred persons had been graduated from his normal school, and were spreading the principles of his system of physical training throughout the land. He next established a seminary for girls in Lexington, Mass., his object being to illustrate the possibilities in the physical development of girls during their school-life. This seminary rapidly became popular, and attracted pupils from all parts of the country and even from Central America and the West Indies. Dr. Lewis remained in Boston until 1882, when he removed to Yonkers and established a magazine in New York devoted to sanitary and social science, and known as *Dio Lewis' Monthly*.

Dr. Lewis published a number of books on physical culture which had a wide circulation, the most prominent of them being "Our Girls," "Our Digestion" and "Weak Lungs."

Besides the authors mentioned, the celebrated novelist Mrs. E. D. E. N. Southworth has been a resident of Yonkers since 1876. She was born in Washington, D. C., December 26, 1819, her parents being Charles Le Compte Nevitte, a merchant of Alexandria, Va., and Susannah George Wailes Nevitte, of St. Mary's, Md. She married Frederick H. Southworth, of Utica, N. Y., in 1840. Her first story was written in the latter part of 1846, and published in the *Baltimore Saturday Visitor* of that year. From 1847 to 1857 all her writings were issued in the *Washington National Era*. Her first novel in book-form was published by the Harpers of New York, in 1849, after having been run through the *Era*. From 1857 she has been writing for the *New York Ledger*.

Since the latter year she has published through the *New York Ledger* only. She is at present (December, 1885) writing her sixty-seventh novel. Her works have been republished in England, and translated into German, French and Spanish. Mrs. Southworth is a lady of refinement, of great intelligence and extensive reading, especially familiar with all the characters and phases of Washington life, and a most interesting conversationalist. She is so devoted to her work as to be seldom seen in public. She is understood to be an admirer and perhaps a disciple of Swedenborg. Her disposition is one of great amiability, and she is noted for her practical sympathy with and ready hand for all who are in trial and need.

It would not be possible to give the names of all Yonkers men and women who have simply published pamphlets or been active in newspaper correspondence. Among the latter have been several Yonkers ladies, some of whom have been professional paper and magazine contributors, writing under assumed names. We have tried to recall at least all writers of books, and hope that to this extent our effort has been a success.

J. Thomas Scharf

CHAPTER XIV.

CIVIL HISTORY.

BY REV. WILLIAM J. CUMMING,
Of Yorktown.

OCTOBER 3, 1642, John Throgmorton (or Throckmorton) and some friends, who had suffered in the persecution against Roger Williams, obtained permission of the authorities of the New Netherlands to settle thirty-five families in what is now the town of Westchester, and doubtless the settlement was made shortly after this date. This territory had been purchased of the Indians in 1640, and bore the name Vredeland—land of peace.[1] This grant was confirmed by William Kieft, director-general, July 6, 1643. John (or Jan) Throckmorton was to receive the land in fee-simple and to be allowed the free exercise of religion, on condition that he, his associates and successors should "acknowledge as their lords and patroons" the Dutch authorities. This grant really made John Throckmorton the patroon of the portion of Vredeland granted to him. The settlement was designated by the Dutch Oostdorp and by the English Easttown. This is the first civil division in what is now Westchester County,[2] in which, doubt-

[1] O'Callaghan's "History of the New Netherlands," vol. ii. p. 312.
[2] See "History of Town of Westchester," below.

Digitized by Google

less, English ideas and government, subject to the supremacy of the Dutch, prevailed.

August 3, 1639, the Dutch purchased a large tract of land on the Hudson, north of Manhattan Island, from the Indians. In 1646, Adriaen van der Donck received a grant of this tract, called Nepperhaem, where Yonkers now stands, from the Dutch.[1] This grant was made under the "Charter of Privileges and Exemptions," issued June 7, 1629, "which provided that any member of the company who should purchase of the Indians, and found in any part of New Netherland (except Manhattan) a colonie of fifty persons over fifteen years of age, should be in all respects the fendal lord and patroon of the territory of which he should thus take possession."[2] This colony bears the name of Colen Donck. Here we have the second civil division.

In 1655, Thomas Pell, of Fairfield, Conn., laid claim to Vredeland under color of an Indian conveyance[3] of November 14, 1654, and called it Westchester. Settlement took place shortly after by the English from New England. April 2, 1655, the Dutch ordered them off. March 6, 1656, an order was issued by the director-general and Council for the arrest of the English intruders. A force, sent for the purpose, arrested twenty-three persons and brought them to New Amsterdam. On the 16th the prisoners offered to submit to the Dutch authority. Their offer was accepted. They requested the privilege of choosing their own officers and of making and administering their own laws. They were granted the same privileges as the freemen of the villages of Middleborough, Brenkelen, Midwout and Amersfoort. They were allowed to nominate double the number of persons, from whom the executive would make selections. These officers were called "Schepens."[4,5] The civil designation originally given to Throckmorton's settlement Oostdorp or Easttown, was continued.

"In the municipal government of these settlements two systems, essentially different in principle obtained. In the 'Colonies,' the superintending power was lodged in one individual, who, though the immediate vassal of the sovereign authority from which he derived his lands, was himself lord paramount in his manor, where he not only represented the sovereign, but exercised feudal jurisdiction over his colonists, who stood towards him in the same relation he occupied towards the supreme head of the State. . . . In return for this obedience the patroon was bound to protect the colonists, who had the additional right to address themselves by appeal to the supreme authority at Amsterdam, in case they were either aggrieved or oppressed. . . .

"Towns or communes sometimes acquired independence of these feudal lords, and held their privileges directly from the crown. They were incorporated and held land in fee, and possessed the rights of patroons. They named persons from whom the executive selected officers called 'schepens.' These constituted a board of communication with their sovereign head, were a local court of justice, and had a schout or sheriff, a secretary and a marshal. Their official term was one year. One hundred years before the Dutch settlement there were in Holland 300 such municipalities. Both ideas came with the people and were found here.

"Strange as it may seem, while every colonie, and almost every hamlet, had its local magistracy, the citizens of New Amsterdam [New York City], the capital of the whole province, continued, greatly to their discontent, without a voice in the management of their municipal affairs. The government of the city still remained in the hands of the Director-General and his council."[6]

Colendonck, (Yonkers) was under the government of a patroon, such as is described above; and the following statement gives some idea of the "Charter of Privileges and Exemptions" issued by the West India Company's College of Nineteen, June 7, 1629, in accordance with which the grant was made to Van der Donck:

"The Patroon had power to appoint officers and magistrates in all towns and cities on his lands; to hold manorial courts, from which, in cases where the judgment exceeded fifty guilders, the only appeal was to the Director-General and Council; in short, to hold and govern his great manor with as absolute a rule as any baron of the Middle Ages. The power of the Patroons over their tenants was almost unlimited. No man or woman, son or daughter, man-servant or maid-servant could leave a Patroon's service during the time they had agreed to remain, except by his written consent, no matter what abuses or breaches of contract existed on part of the Patroon. This charter prescribed regulations and granted privileges with regard to trade, gave to the freemen all the land they could cultivate, and exempted them from taxation for ten years. Churches and schools were required to be established, and the manufacture of cloths was prohibited. The company retained the fur trade and fettered commerce. Several directors of the company availed themselves of the advantages offered. The Patroon of Rensselaerswyck, however, was the only one who established a manorial court, and he rendered the privilege of appeal nugatory by exacting of his tenants, as a condition to the occupation of land, that they would not avail themselves of it. This monopoly had a disastrous effect upon the colony. Differences arose between the company and the Patroons, and a new policy was, therefore, inaugurated. In 1638 free emigration was encouraged, and in 1640 (July 19) the College of Nineteen passed an ordinance materially modifying the Charter of Privileges and Exemptions. The policy of free emigration, free lands and free trade, incomplete as it was, increased at once the prosperity of the colony."[7]

In what is now Westchester County we have, therefore, both systems—in Colendonck the government of a patroon or feudal baron, in Oostdorf the commune or town, with some local autonomy.

The New Netherlands were governed by the "Dutch Roman [or Civil] Law, the imperial statutes of Charles V., and the edicts, customs and resolutions of the United Netherlands[8] and such ordinances as the Dutch West India Company should prescribe.

The boundary between the New England colonies and the New Netherlands had been in dispute. By the treaty of 1650 Greenwich on the main land and Oyster Bay on Long Island became the eastern limits of the latter.[9] November 15, 1668, Westchester was ceded by Stuyvesant to Connecticut, and English law and customs prevailed. Less than a year later, September 8, 1664, the New Netherlands surrendered to an English squadron under Richard Nicolls. The New Netherlands became New York, the Dutch West India Company were succeeded by the Duke of York (to whom his brother, Charles II., "by the most des-

[1] O'Callaghan's "History of the New Netherlands," vol. ii. p. 382.
[2] Civil List of State of New York, 1880, p. 57.
[3] O'Callaghan's "Hist. of N. H."
[4] O'Callaghan's "History of N. H.," pp. 312–313.
[5] There is among the records of the town of Westchester one entitled 'The Book of Courts Acts from 1657 to 1662.'
[6] O'Callaghan's "History of N. N.," pp. 391–393.
[7] Civil List of State of N. Y., 1880, pp. 57–58.
[8] Civil List of State of N. Y., 1880, p. 23.
[9] Bancroft's "Hist. of U. S." (last edition), vol. i. p. 508.

Digitized by Google

potic instrument recorded in the colonial archives of England," which ignored alike English charters and Dutch claims),[1] and the civil law gave place to the common law. With the exception of a brief period of Dutch occupation in 1673 to 1674, English rule remained until the Revolution. Anglo-Saxon ideas and customs still predominate. Richard Nicolls took Stuyvesant's place, and found it profitable employment, for the fees received, to issue new patents to the old settlers. The Duke of York, whose deputy the Governor was, promised more privileges than he ever gave.

County under English Rule.—Changes in the proprietors and systems brought with them local changes. Colendonck (Yonkers), the second civil division of what is now called Westchester County, had been blotted from the map by the massacre of its inhabitants by the Algonquin Indians in September, 1655.[2] Nothing remained but the charter. In 1664, only Westchester, formerly called by the Dutch Oostdorp, or Easttown, remained. "A convention of two delegates from each town on Long Island[3] was held at Hempstead in February, 1665, for the purpose of receiving from the Governor the code which he had prepared, and which was called 'the Duke's Laws.' The code was chiefly compiled from laws then in force in New England, 'with an abatement of the severity against such as differ in matters of conscience and religion.' The only popular feature of the code was the one organizing the town courts. It provided for the election, by a majority of the freeholders of each town, of eight overseers, to try minor causes, and adopt local ordinances, subject to the approval of the Court of Assize. Four were to retire each year, and from them a constable was to be elected on the 1st or 2d of April, to act with the overseers, his election being subject to confirmation by the justice, in whose hands the local administration was really vested. Long Island, Staten Island and parts of Westchester were united in a shrievalty called Yorkshire, and divided into three districts, called ridings. The English system of sheriff's courts was introduced. The Governor and the Council appointed each year a sheriff for the whole of Yorkshire, and three justices of the peace for each riding, who were to continue in office during the Governor's pleasure, and were to hold a Court of Sessions in each riding three times a year, in which the Governor or any of his councilors might preside. Besides their local duties, the high sheriff and justices were to sit with the Governor and his Council in the Supreme Court of the Province, called the Court of Assize, which was to meet at New York once a year, on the last Thursday in September. This court was also a legislative body, as it was invested with 'the supreme power of making, altering and abolishing any laws,' except customs laws, in which it could only recommend changes. Town officers were required to make assessments annually, and taxes were levied through the Courts of Sessions, which made requisitions upon the town authorities. The delegates to the convention asked for power to choose their local magistrates. This was denied, the Governor exhibiting his instructions from the Duke of York, 'wherein the choice of all the officers of justice was solely to be made by the Governor.'"[4] From 1665 to 1683 the inhabited portion this county formed, with Staten Island, Kings County and Newtown, the West Riding of Yorkshire.

Westchester County, with substantially the same boundaries as at present, was erected, November 1, 1683, by the following act of the General Assembly, assented to by the Governor and Council:

"*An Act to divide the Province of New York and dependencies into shires and countiet, etc.*

"Having taken into consideration the necessity of dividing the Province into respective countys, for the better governing and settling courts in the same, be it enacted by the Governor, Council and the Representatives, and by the authority of the same, that the said Province be divided into twelve countys as followeth. The County of Westchester to conteyne, West and Eastchester, Bronx-land, Fordham, Anne Hook's Neck, Richbell's, Minford's Islands, and all the land on the maine to the eastward of Manhattan's Island, as farre as the government extends, and the Yonker's land, and northward along Hudson's River as farre as the Highland. . . .

"The bill having been three times read before the governor and Council, is assented to the first of November, 1683."[5]

This act is confirmed by one passed October 1, 1691 (3d William and Mary).

The dividing line between this State and Connecticut was in dispute. As this was a border county, it was involved. Prior to the taking of the New Netherlands by the English a controversy was going on between the Dutch and colony of Connecticut. This was inevitable from the fact that the charters came from different nations. There could have been but one outcome—the Dutch were obliged to yield and the inhabitants of Connecticut would have pushed their settlements to the Hudson River. The charters granted by the English did not settle matters. The Duke of York's domain extended to the Connecticut River, that of Connecticut to the "South Sea."

The determination of the boundary line settled the civil status of Bedford and Rye. Both colonies acknowledging one supreme authority an amicable adjustment was possible. Commissioners were sent over for the purpose in 1664. The line decided upon was to be twenty miles east of the Hudson River and was located at the Mamaroneck River. The towns named above fell to our neighbor. The matter was reopened in 1683 and the dividing line placed by agreement at Byram River. Bedford and Rye became a part of

[1] Bancroft's "History of the U. S.," vol. i. p. 518 (last edition).

[2] *Ibid.*

[3] This is a mistake; Westchester was represented by Edward Jessup and John Quinby.

[4] Civil List of State of New York, 1880, pp. 45 and 46.

[5] Provincial Laws of N. Y., Co. Clerk's Office, Queen's Co., L. I., as quoted by Bolton—"History of West Co.," vol. i. pp. 7 and 8 (new edition).

Digitized by Google

New York. The King died before this settlement received his approval, and the subject was an open one once more. March 29, 1700, William III. approved of the agreement of 1683. The line was not finally established until May 14, 1731, by which the "Oblong," a tract of sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres, extending as far north as the Massachusetts line, was ceded to New York, in compensation for loss of territory along the Sound, in addition to the towns named above. That portion of the "Oblong" which belongs to this county was erected into the town of Salem (now Lewisboro). By an act entitled "An Act to ascertain Part of the Southern and Western Boundaries of the County of Westchester and Eastern Boundaries of the County of Orange and Part of the Northern Bounds of Queens County," passed December 31, 1768 (9th George III.), the water boundaries were given more definitely.

COURTS.—By the act of 1683, Westchester was made the county-town, and the courts there established. From the report to the Committee on Trade on province of New York, of February 22, 1687, made by Governor Dongan, who had summoned the General Assembly of 1683, we gain some idea of the courts established by the act referred to,—

Courts of Justice are now established by Act of Assembly, and they are:

"1. The Court of Chancery, consisting of Governor and Council, is the Supreme Court of this province, to which appeals may be brought from any other court.

"2. The Assembly finding the inconvenience of bringing ye peace, sheriffs, constables & other persons concerned from the remote parts of this government to New York, did, instead of the Court of Assizes which was yearly held for the whole Government of this province, erect a Court of Oyer and Terminer, to be held once every year within each county, for the determining of such matters as should arise within them respectively, the members of which court were appointed to be one of the two judges of this province, assisted by three justices of the peace of that wherein such court is held, which Court of Oyer and Terminer has likewise power to hear appeals from any inferior Court.

"4. There is likewise in every county, twice in every year (except in New York, where its four times, & in Albany, where its thrice), Courts of Sessions held by the Justices of the Peace for the respective counties, as in England.

"5. In every town within ye Government there are 3 Commissioners appointed to hear and determine all matters of difference not exceeding the value of £5, which shall happen in the respective towns."[1]

By the act of General Assembly passed May 6, 1691, and ordinance of 1699, several changes were made in the judicial system of the province. A Supreme Court was established, the Court of Oyer and Terminer as a distinct court was abolished, and its jurisdiction vested in the Supreme Court, which retained also the name for its criminal circuit, the functions of the Court of Sessions were confined to criminal matters, and a Court of Common Pleas, erected for each county, with cognizance of all actions, real, personal and mixed, where the value exceeded five pounds. From the civil list of the province of New York for 1693[2] we learn something of civil affairs in this county,—

"Justices in Westchester County: Caleb Heathcote, Esqr., Judge of Common Pleas; Joseph Theall, Wm. Barnes, Daniel Strange, James Mott, John Hunt, Thomas Chadderton, Thomas Pinckney, Esqrs.; Benj. Collier, Sheriff; Joseph Lee, Clerk of County; Collectors, Assessors and Constables elective.

"*An account of all Establishments of Jurisdiction Within this Province.*

"*Single Justice.*—Every Justice of the Peace hath power to determine any suite or controversy to the value of 40s.

"*Quarter Sessions.*—The Justices of the Peace in Quarter Sessions have all such powers and authorities as are granted in a commission of ye Peace in England.

"*County Court.*—The County Court or Common Pleas hath cognizance of Civil Accôns to any value, excepting what concerns title of land and noe Accôn can be removed from this court, if the damage be under £20.

"*Supreme Court.*—The Supreme Court hath powers of King's Bench, Common Pleas & Exchequer in England and noe Accôn can be removed from this court if under £100.

"*Chancery.*—The Governor & Council are a Court of Chancery and have powers of the chancery in England, from whose sentence or decree nothing can be removed under £300.

"*Prerogative Court.*—The Governor discharges the place of Ordinary in granting administracôns and proveing Wills, etc. The Secretary is Register. The Governor is about to appoint Delegates in the remoter parts of the Government, with supervisors for looking after intestate's estates and provideing for orphans."

Minor criminal offenses were looked after by the Court of Sessions, and the more flagrant by the judges of the Supreme Court in their circuits through the counties. They had for this purpose "a commission of oyer and terminer and general jail delivery, in which some of the county judges were joined."[3]

Smith, in his "History of New York," gives us an interesting account of the courts as they were in 1757,—

"Justices of the peace are appointed by commission from the Governors, who, to serve their purposes in elections, sometimes grant, as it is called, the administration to particular favorites in each county, which is the nomination of officers civil and military; and by these means justices have been astonishingly multiplied. There are instances of some of these who can neither write nor read. These Genii, besides their ordinary powers, are by acts of assembly enabled to hold courts for the determination of small causes of 5 pounds and under; but the parties are privileged, if they choose it, with a jury; the proceedings are in a summary way, and the conduct of the justices has given just cause to innumerable complaints. The justices have also jurisdiction with crimes under the degree of grand larceny; for any three of them (one being of the quorum) may try the criminal without a jury, and inflict punishments not extending to life or limb.

"*The Sessions and Court of Common Pleas.*—The Court of Common Pleas takes cognizance of all causes where the matter in demand is in value above 5 pounds. It is established by ordinance of the Governor in Council. The judges are ordinarily three, and hold their offices during pleasure. Thro' the infancy of the country, few, if any of them, are acquainted with the law. The practice of these courts is similar to that of the common bench at Westminster. They have each a clerk, commissioned by the Governor, who issues their writs, enters their minutes and keeps the records of the country. They are held twice every year. These judges, together with some of the justices, hold at the same time a court of general sessions of the peace. . . .

"*Supreme Court.*—The judges of this court, according to the act of Assembly, are judges of the *Nisi Prius*, of course, and agreeably to an ordinance of the Governor and Council, perform a circuit thro' the counties once every year. They carry with them at the same time, a commission of oyer and terminer and general jail delivery, in which some of the county justices are joined. They have but two clerks—one attendant upon the Supreme Court at New York and the other on the circuits."[4]

From these accounts and other sources we gain some idea of the judicial system of the county during

[1] O'Callaghan's "Doc. History of N. Y.," vol. i. pp. 147 and 148.

[2] O'Callaghan's "Doc. History of N. Y.," vol. i. pp. 315 and 319.

[3] Civil List, 1880, p. 209.

[4] Smith's "History of N. Y.," vol. i. pp. 369-377.

Digitized by Google

colonial times. Under the Duke's Laws there existed a Court of Sessions with both civil and criminal jurisdiction, held three times a year by the resident justices of the peace and the Town Court, held by the constable and at least five overseers of town. The latter court had both legislative and judicial functions, while the former exercised some of the functions of the supervisors.[1] From 1683 to 1691 we have the Court of Oyer and Terminer, with civil, criminal and appellate jurisdiction, held by one judge and three resident justices of the peace; a Court of Sessions, with civil and criminal jurisdiction and power to audit and levy the county and town charges, held twice each year; and a Town Court, held by three commissioners. From 1691 to 1776 there were Circuit Courts held annually by one of the Supreme Court justices, who had a commission of Oyer and Terminer, in which some of the county judges were associated; the Court of Common Pleas, composed of one judge and two or more justices of the peace, which took cognizance of all actions, real, personal and mixed, where the matter in demand exceeded the sum of five pounds in value; the Court of Sessions, whose jurisdiction was now confined to criminal cases; the Justice's Court in the various towns. The people had comparatively little voice in their own government. The judges of the various courts, justices of peace, sheriff, county clerk, surrogate, and, in fact, all officers, except the town officers (supervisors, collectors, assessors and constables), were appointed by the Governor, who was responsible only to the King. Most of the officers thus appointed held office during the pleasure of the Governor. This condition of affairs produced dissatisfaction among the people, and led to an almost perpetual conflict between the Government and the General Assembly. The elective officers were the overseers, supervisors, collectors, assessors and constables of the town, the mayor, aldermen and Common Council of the town or borough of Westchester,[2] (which had a special charter) and representatives in the General Assembly.

County under the Constitution.—When New York ceased to be a colony of England and became an independent State, great and radical changes in principle were made, yet the machinery of government was but little changed. The source of authority was changed, not its expression. The Constitution of 1777 substituted for a Governor appointed by the King one elected by the people; the Council appointed by the King or Governor became a Senate, elected by the people; and the General Assembly elected by the people remained. The apportionment in both branches of the Legislature was according to population,—a principle not previously recognized. The number of elective officers remained the same, but the appointing power was vested in the Council of Appointment, presided over by the Governor, who had a casting vote, consisting of one Senator elected annually by the Assembly from each of the four senatorial districts. A Governor and Council holding office at the pleasure of the King gave place to a Governor and a Council elected by the people for a limited term, and thus became directly amenable to them. The elective franchise in principle remained the same, with the single exception that there was no discrimination on account of religion. The property qualification was still retained. The judicial system remained largely the same. The common and statute law of Great Britain and the acts of Colonial General Assembly, except so far as they conflicted with the new order of things, were made the law of the State until modified by the Legislature. The radical change was in the constitution of the court of final resort. Under the colonial system the Governor and Council were the court for the correction of errors and appeals, from whom appeals, where the value exceeded five hundred pounds, or where the Episcopal Church was involved, lay to the King in Privy Council. Under the first constitution the executive had no judicial functions; the court of final resort was called the Court for the Trial of Impeachments and the Correction of Errors, consisting of the Lieutenant-Governor, Senate, chancellor and judges of the Supreme Court. One other important change was made. In England the granting of probates was a royal prerogative and in the colony was vested in the King's representative, the Governor. The Governor of the State was stripped of this authority, which was granted to the surrogates of the counties and the Court of Probate. With these exceptions, the colonial courts were recognized, and we have the Court of Chancery with equity powers, the Supreme Court, Court of Common Pleas, Court of Sessions and the Justices' Courts. Their powers remained substantially the same. The Supreme Court judges held Circuit Courts and Courts of Oyer and Terminer in each of the counties. In the latter, two or more judges of the Common Pleas were associated.

The Constitution of 1821 extended the elective franchise by virtually removing the property qualification, except in the case of colored persons, who were to be freeholders of two hundred and fifty dollars and tax-payers. The appointing power was vested in the Governor with the advice and consent of the Senate. The offices of sheriff and county clerk became elective (term of service three years). The justices of the peace were to be appointed by the supervisors and judges of the County Court.

The courts in name remained the same, but the constitution of the Supreme Court was somewhat changed and a Circuit Court was added. "The Supreme Court sat four times a year in review of their decisions and for the determination of questions of law. Each justice was empowered to hold circuit courts and any justice of the Supreme Court could

[1] See Supervisors, below.

[2] See History of Town of Westchester.

Digitized by Google

likewise preside at the Oyer and Terminer."[1,2] The Constitution provided that the State should be divided into not less than four nor more than eight circuits.[3] Each district had its circuit judge, who possessed the powers of a justice of the Supreme Court at chambers, in the trial of issues joined in the Supreme Court, and in the Court of Oyer and Terminer. The Courts of Common Pleas and Sessions and Justices' Court were continued. Prior to the adoption of this Constitution most offices were held either during good behavior or at the pleasure of the appointing power. The judges of the Court of Common Pleas were appointed for the term of five years, and the surrogates for four years. In 1823 the Court of Probates disappears, and appeals from the surrogates lay to the chancellor. The justices of the peace became elective in 1826.

The Constitution of 1846 extended the franchise to every resident white male citizen who was twenty-one years of age. The XV. Amendment to the Constitution of the United States erased the word white. All judicial offices of the State, all county offices and almost all civil offices in the gift of the State became elective. The Court for the Final Impeachment and the Correction of Errors disappears. A new Court of Appeals is established, the constitution of which was somewhat modified by the amendment of 1866. A new Supreme Court was erected, vested with the powers hitherto possessed by the Supreme Court, the Court of Chancery and the Circuit Court. The County Court takes the place of the Common Pleas and the county judge, with two justices of the peace, holds the Court of Sessions. The jurisdiction of the former was much greater than its predecessor. This county forms part of the Second Judicial District. At the present time the Supreme Court holds four terms and the County Court five each year at the court-house, White Plains.

COUNTY-SEAT.—By an act of General Assembly entitled "An Act for the more orderly hearing and determining matters of controversy," etc., passed October 29, 1683, it was directed that Courts of Session for Westchester County should be held on the first Tuesdays of June and December, one to be held at Westchester and the other at East Chester. On the first Wednesday of December a Court of Oyer and Terminer and General Jail Delivery was to be held. Westchester remained the shire or county-town until November 6, 1759, when the last session of the Court of Common Pleas was held there.[4] *The New York Post-Boy* of February 13, 1758, contained the following item: "New York, February 13th.—We hear from Westchester that on Saturday the 4th inst., the court-house at that place was unfortunately burnt to the ground. We have not heard how it happened."[5] The destruction of the court-house on February 4, 1758, and the felt necessity for a more central location for the county town, led to the passing of the following act on December 16, 1758: "An Act to impower the Justices of the Peace and Aldermen of the Borough of Westchester, in conjunction with the Supervisors of the said County, to ascertain and fix the place for erecting a new Court-House and Gaol for the said County; and for raising a sum not exceeding One thousand Pounds, on the Estates, real and personal, of all the Freeholders and Inhabitants of the said County, for and towards erecting the said Court-House and Gaol." White Plains was selected as the place, and on November 7, 1759, the Court of Common Pleas held its first session in the court-house.[6] The act of February 6, 1773, directed the supervisors to meet in the court-house. In July, 1776, the Provincial Convention met in it. November 5, 1776, the building was burned by some of the American troops, the records having previously been removed to a safe place. During the Revolutionary War the courts were held in the Presbyterian Church at Bedford until its destruction by the British, in 1779. From this time until November, 1884, they were held at the meeting-house in Upper Salem. The act of April 11, 1785, ordered them to be held in the Presbyterian meeting-house at Bedford until the court-house should be rebuilt or until further orders of the Legislature. The act of May 1, 1786, directed the erection of court-houses at both White Plains and Bedford and eighteen hundred pounds was appropriated for the purpose. Stephen Ward, Ebenezer Lockwood, Jonathan G. Tompkins, Ebenezer Purdy, Thomas Thomas, Richard Hatfield and Richard Sacket, Jr., superintended their construction. The first session of the County Court was held in Bedford court-house January 28, 1788, and that at White Plains on May 26th following. The courts were held alternately at these places until 1870, when, by chapter five hundred and fifty by the laws of 1870, it was directed that they be hereafter held in the new court-house at the latter. The present county buildings were erected in 1856–57, under the superintendence of a committee appointed by the Board of Supervisors, consisting of Abraham Hatfield, States Barton, William Marshall, Jr., Daniel Hunt and George G. Finch, at a cost of one hundred and twenty thousand dollars.[7]

ELECTIONS.—During the colonial period elections were held on the first Tuesday of April in each of the towns for choosing of town officers, and as often as writs of election directed to the high sheriff were issued for the purpose of selecting members of the Colonial Assembly. The places where the latter were

[1] Civil List, 1880, pp. 211 and 212.

[2] It seemed to have had same powers as general term of present Supreme Court.

[3] Westchester County was in the Second Circuit.

[4] See records of Court of Common Pleas.

[5] Bolton's "History of Westchester County," vol. ii. p. 299 (new edition).

[6] Court-house cost £2000. Additional appropriations were made in 1760 and 1762.

[7] Proceedings of Board of Supervisors, 1873, p. 714.

Digitized by Google

held were within the bounds of the civil divisions represented. The representative for the county was elected at first in the southern part of the county, and later near the Presbyterian meeting-house at White Plains.[1] The voting in all cases was *viva voce*. The Constitution of 1777 made provision for a trial of voting by ballot. The act of March 27, 1778, authorized the use of the ballot in the election of Governor and Lieutenant-Governor, and that of February 13, 1787, extended it to the election of members of the Legislature. Doubtless up to the passage of the latter act elections were carried on in much the same manner as they had been during colonial times. The act last mentioned provided that they should be held in every borough, town, district, precinct or ward under the supervision of inspectors chosen for that purpose. Until after the passage of the act of March 27, 1799, the canvassers were a joint committee of the Legislature, the boxes containing the ballots being sent by the sheriff to the Secretary of State for the purpose. After that date there were local canvassers. The result was recorded by the town clerk, who made return to the county clerk, who made record and transmitted it to the Secretary of State, who, with the comptroller and treasurer, constituted a State Board of Canvassers. The act of April 17, 1822, instituted a County Board of Canvassers, consisting of one inspector of election from each town. Each town or ward was made an election district. The act of April 5, 1842, made the supervisors the county canvassers, and provided for the division of towns and wards into a convenient number of election districts. This duty devolved upon the supervisors, assessors and clerks of towns, who were required to do it where the population exceeded five hundred.

Election Days.—The act of February 13, 1787, appointed the last Tuesday of April the day for the general election, which might be held for five days. By the act of April 17, 1822, it was changed to the first Tuesday of November, and the polls were opened, by adjournment from place to place, for three successive days. The act of April 5, 1842, the Tuesday succeeding the first Monday of November was designated, and the election was confined to one day. The election for town officers takes place on the last Tuesday of March.

Supervisors.—By the "Duke's Laws," promulgated in 1665, the Courts of Sessions levied the taxes upon the towns. By an act of the General Assembly, passed October 18, 1701 (13th William III.), the justices of the peace, in special or general session, were directed to levy once a year the necessary county and town charges and allowance for their representative in the General Assembly, to make provision for the poor, and to issue warrants for the election of two assessors and one collector, and for the collection of taxes.[2] These duties were transferred to a Board of Supervisors by an act of General Assembly passed June 19, 1703 (2d Anne), entitled "An Act for the better explaining and more effectually putting into Execution an Act of General Assembly made in the third year of the Reign of their late Majesties King William and Queen Mary, entitled an Act for defraying the publick and necessary charges thro'out this Province and for maintaining the poor and Preventing Vagabonds." The freeholders and inhabitants of each town were authorized to choose once each year, on the first Tuesday of April (unless otherwise directed), one supervisor, two assessors and one collector. The supervisors elected were directed to meet in the county town on the first Tuesday of October, ascertain the contingent charges of the county and such sums as were imposed by the laws of the colony, apportion to each town, manor, liberty, jurisdiction and precinct their respective quotas, and to transmit them to the assessors of the different towns, etc., who should apportion them among the inhabitants. The supervisors were authorized to choose annually a treasurer. The Court of Sessions was thus relieved of that portion of its duties which was legislative and not judicial. Supervisors had been chosen in several of the towns before the passage of the act of 1703 (East Chester, 1686; Mamaroneck, 1697; New Rochelle, 1700), but what were their duties it is impossible to state. The records of the proceedings of the supervisors prior to 1772 having been lost during the Revolutionary War, we can only surmise what sections of the county came under the provisions of the act. East Chester, Westchester, Philipsburg, Pelham Manor, Morrisania, Mamaroneck, New Rochelle, Bedford and Rye probably elected these officers. The census[3] for 1712 gives some idea of the civil divisions recognized by law or usage, with the population of each,—

"Westchester	572
East Chester	300
Rye	516
New Rochelle	304
Younkers	260
Philipsburg	348
Mo Marronack	84
Morrisania	62
Pelham	62
Bedford	172
Cortland's Pattent	91
Ryke's Pattent	32
Scarsdale	12
Total	2815 "

November 1, 1722 (9th Geo. I.), an act was passed entitled "An Act to increase the number of Supervisors in the county of Westchester, and that no wages of Supervisors shall be any part of the said county's rate for the future." After authorizing the choice of a freeholder by the freeholders and inhabitants, it was

[1] "An act to fix and ascertain the place for election of representatives to serve in General Assembly for county of Westchester, passed the 25th of November, 1751."

[2] Civil List, 1880, p. 209.

[3] O'Callaghan's "Doc. Hist. of N. Y.," vol. I.

Digitized by Google

provided that in case of failure to elect, or where there were not more than twenty inhabitants, the owner of the manor or his steward should be supervisor. The freeholders of the Manor of Cortlandt were authorized, by the act of December 16, 1737, to elect annually one supervisor, one treasurer, two assessors and one collector, and Ryke's Patent, by the act of January 27, 1770, were granted a similar privilege. While much is left to surmise prior to the year 1772, the records give both the towns and the supervisors who represented them from that day to this. The following is the list for 1773:

"Wm. Barker, Esq., for Scarsdale; Doct. Haverland, for Rye; Col. Cortlandt, for Yonkers; Jas. Pell, for Pelham; Col. Holmes, for Bedford; Jas. Ferris, Esq., for Westchester; Col. Morris, for Morrisania; Abijah Gilbert, for Salem; Wm. Davis, for Philipsborough; Doct. Daton, for North Castle; Stephen Ward, for Eastchester; Wm. Sutton, Esq., loan officer and supervisor for Memorineck; Justice Lockwood, for Poundridge; Maj. Cortlandt, for Cortlandt Manor; Jas. Cronkhite, for Ryks Patten; Doct. Graham, for the White Plains."[1]

The supervisors met at first in the county town, Westchester. This place being inconvenient, the supervisors were directed to meet in the school-house at Rye, by an act entitled, "An Act to alter the place of the supervisors' meeting in the county of Westchester," passed 29th of November, 1745, with the privilege of adjourning to such place as the majority should deem proper. The population of the northern portions of the county increased rapidly, and for their convenience the place of meeting was changed by act of February 6, 1773, to the court-house at White Plains, with the same privilege of adjournment. After the burning of the court-house, in 1776, the supervisors became a vagrant body, with no certain meeting-place. They met in Bedford, Manor of Cortlandt or Salem. But few towns were represented. All through these trying years we find about the same persons present,—Ebenenezer Lockwood, of Poundridge; Major Joseph Strang, of Manor of Cortlandt; Israel Lyon, of Bedford; Jacob Purdy, of North Castle; and Abijah Gilbert, of Salem. May 31, 1784, the supervisors met at the house of John Cromwell, in Harrison's Precinct, and there were present the following persons:

John Thomas, Rye; Wm. Paulding, Manor of Philipsburgh; Jonathan G. Tompkins, Manor of Scarsdale; Joseph Strang, Manor of Cortlandt; Thad. Crane, town of Upper Salem; Benj. Stevenson, New Rochelle; Israel Honeywell, Yonkers; —— Miller, Harrison's Precinct; Ebenezer Lockwood, Poundridge; Ebenezer L. Burling, East Chester; Abel Smith, North Castle; Daniel Horton, White Plains; Gilbert Budd, Mamaroneck; Abijah Gilbert, Salem.

The business was to levy two thousand pounds on Westchester, Yonkers, East Chester, New Rochelle, Mamaroneck, Manor of Scarsdale and the Manor of Pelham, as a war tax.

By the act of March 7, 1788, entitled "An act for defraying the necessary charges of the respective counties of the State," this county was divided into twenty towns viz.: Bedford, Cortlandt, East Chester, Greenburgh, Harrison, Mamaroneck, Mount Pleasant, New Rochelle, North Castle, North Salem, Pelham, Poundridge, Rye, Salem, Scarsdale, Stephentown, West chester, White Plains, Yonkers and Yorktown. "The name of the town of Salem was changed to South Salem April 6, 1806, and to Lewisboro February 13, 1840, and a part of North Salem was annexed April 26, 1844. Ossining was formed from Mount Pleasant May 2, 1845. New Castle was formed from North Castle March 18, 1781, and a part of Somers annexed May 12, 1846. The name of Stephentown was changed to Somers April 6, 1808. West Farms was formed from Westchester May 13, 1846. Morrisania was formed from West Farms December 7, 1855. King's Bridge was formed from Yonkers December 16, 1872. By an act of the Legislature passed May 23, 1873, the towns of Morrisania, West Farms and King's Bridge were annexed to the county of New York, to take effect on the 1st day of January, 1874.[2]

From 1784 to 1788 the supervisors met in different places, usually, however, at White Plains, once in the Presbyterian meeting-house at Bedford; after the latter date they met alternately at the court-houses, at Bedford and White Plains until 1870; since the latter date the court-house at White Plains has been their place of meeting.

CIVIL LIST.[3]

COLONIAL ASSEMBLY.—The history of the various assemblies and conventions of the colonial period is a very important part of that of the struggle which ended in the independence of the colonies. It began in the conflict between the people and the director-general and Council in the Dutch colonial period, in which the former claimed a voice in the government, and the "Twelve Selectmen" of 1641, "The Eight Men" of 1643 and 1645, and "The nine men" of 1647, '49, '50 and '52, which necessity wrung from the latter, are really the later Assembly in embryo. Our interest begins with the English period. March 1, 1665, a convention met at the summons of Governor Nicolls, at Hempstead, L. I., simply for the promulgation of the "Duke's Laws," which had been framed by the Governor under the authority of James, Duke of York and Albany. Westchester (later the borough and town of Westchester) was represented by Edward Jessup and John Quinby. The tyranny and the customs law of the Duke of York so exasperated the people that the Duke, fearing lest the expenses of the colony should become a charge on his private purpose, sent out Governor Dongan with authority to convene a General Assembly. He ordered, September 13, 1683, the election of an Assembly of fourteen representatives. The apportionment gave four to Westchester. Its first act was entitled "Charter of Liberties and Priviledges granted by his Royal Highness to

[1] See Record of Board of Supervisors.

[2] Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors, 1873, p. 715.

[3] We acknowledge our indebtedness to the Civil List of the State of New York, of 1884, for information, and even language to which special reference is not made.

Digitized by Google

the Inhabitants of New York and its dependencies." This act proves its authors worthy descendants of a liberty-loving ancestry, and the true progenitors of the founders of American liberties. James had become King of England, and it is scarcely necessary to add that this charter received the royal *disapproval*, and the General Assembly was abolished, June 16, 1686. Westchester was represented in this Assembly by Thomas Hunt, Sr., Jno. Palmer, Richard Ponton and William Richardson. At Leisler's Assembly, in 1690, Thomas Browne was Westchester's representative. He died and a new writ of election was issued. Governor Sloughter arrived March 19, 1691, with instructions from William and Mary to re-establish the Assembly and reinstate the people in their rights. It consisted of seventeen members, but was afterwards increased to twenty-seven. April 9, 1691, it met for the first time. From this date until it ceased to exist, April 3, 1775, it was engaged in one prolonged conflict with the Governor and the crown for the rights of the people. By the act of May 8, 1699, the representatives were elected by the freeholders of forty pounds in value, who were residents of the electoral district at least three months prior to the issue of the writ. The elections were held by the sheriff at one place in each county, and voting was *viva voce*. The act of November 25, 1751, directed the sheriff to hold his court of election near the Presbyterian meeting-house at White Plains. Previously it had been held in the southern part of the county, doubtless at Westchester. Catholics could neither vote nor hold the office, and at one time the Quakers and Moravians were also virtually disqualified by their unwillingness to take the oath.

The General Assembly legally dates from 1691, with which date the compilers of the colonial laws were directed to commence. In the first eight Assemblies the county of Westchester was represented. By the royal charter of April 6, 1696, the borough of Westchester (now town) was established, the freeholders of which were empowered to choose a mayor, six aldermen and six assistants or Common Council for the government of the borough; also one discreet burgess to every General Assembly. The borough of Westchester is represented from the Ninth Assembly. The Manor of Cortlandt was also entitled by its charter (dated June 17, 1697) to one representative after twenty years had elapsed. The General Assembly recognized this right June 11, 1734, and Philip Verplanck took his seat June 22d following. From this date what is now Westchester County had three representatives.

"On the day appointed for the meeting of a new Legislature the members-elect convened at the Assembly Chamber in the City of New York, and if they were above thirteen in number, sent the Clerk of the House to inform the Governor of their attendance. Commissioners, generally, the Judges of the Supreme Court were sent to the Assembly Chamber to qualify them, after which their presence was required before his Excellency, who requested them to return to their Chamber and elect a Speaker. For that purpose they again retired, and having made a choice, conducted the person elected to the Chair, which was placed at the upper end of the long table. He subsequently presented himself, accompanied by the members, to the Governor, for his approval, which was, of course, granted. The Speaker thereupon addressed the Governor, and, in behalf of the House, prayed 'that their words and actions may have a favorable construction; that the members may have free access to him, and they and their servants be privileged with freedom from arrests.' The Governor having granted this request, opened the session by reading his speech to both Houses, a copy whereof was delivered to the Speaker of the Assembly. Messages to the Council were conveyed by one of the members of the House, who was met at the bar of the Council by the Speaker of that body, into whose hands the message was delivered. All money bills originated in the Assembly, which, according to the practice of the House of Commons, allowed no amendment to be made thereto by the Council. Both houses were present in the Council Chamber when the Governor passed the bills sent him, on which occasion the custom was for his Excellency to ask the advice of his Council with respect to every bill. If approved, he signed them after these words, 'I assent to this bill, enacting the same, and order it to be enrolled.' The acts were thereupon published in the open street, near the City Hall, New York, in the presence of the Governor and both branches of the Legislature. All laws passed were subject, subsequently, to an absolute veto of the King."[1]

List of members of the Colonial Assembly from Westchester County.

Joseph Budd, Westchester, 1716–22.
John De Lancey, Borough of Westchester, 1768–72.
Peter De Lancey, Borough of Westchester, 1750–68.
John Drake, Westchester, 1698–1701, 1709–10.
Joseph Drake, Westchester, 1713–15.
Henry Fowler, Westchester, 1701.
Caleb Heathcote, Westchester, 1701–2.
John Holte, Westchester, 1712–13.
John Hunt, Westchester, 1699–1701.
Josiah Hunt, Borough of Westchester, 1702–10.
Josiah Hunt, Westchester, 1715–16.
Lewis Morris, Sr., Borough of Westchester, 1710–28.
Lewis Morris, Jr., Borough of Westchester, 1732–50.
Lewis Morris, Sr., Westchester, 1733–38.
Lewis Morris (3d), Borough of Westchester, 1769.
Jonathan Odall, Westchester, 1715–16.
John Pell, Westchester, 1691–95.
Adolph Phillipse, Westchester, 1722–26.
Fred. Phillipse, Westchester, 1726–50.
Fred. Phillipse (2d), Westchester, 1751–75.
Daniel Purdy, Westchester, 1739–43.
Joseph Purdy, Westchester, 1695–99, 1701–5, 1709.
Joseph Theale, Westchester, 1691–94, 1697.
John Townsend, Westchester, 1745–75.
Pierre Van Cortlandt, Manor of Cortlandt, 1768–75.
Philip Verplanck, Manor of Cortlandt, 1734–68.
Edmund Ward, Westchester, 1705–09, 1710–12.
Isaac Wilkins, Borough of Westchester, 1772–75.
Gilbert Willet, Borough of Westchester, 1728–32.
Isaac Willet, Borough of Westchester, 1772–75.
William Willet, Westchester, 1701–9, 1710–15, 1716–33.
William Willet, Westchester, 1738.

Of these members, Adolph Philipse and Lewis Morris, Jr., were elected Speakers. There were thirty-one Assemblies,—terms of service from two months to ten years. The compensation of the representatives from Westchester County and Manor of Cortlandt was six shillings (seventy-five cents) a day; that of the representative of the borough of Westchester, ten shillings ($1.25.) These allowances were paid by their constituents.

Delegates to the Provincial Convention of April 20, 1775.—This convention was summoned by the Committee of Sixty, because the General Assembly refused to comply with the recommendation of the Continental Congress to choose delegates to the

[1] Civil List, 1880, page 259.

Digitized by Google

Continental Congress. The Westchester County elected

Samuel Drake.	Jonathan Platt.
Robert Graham.	John Thomas, Jr.
James Holmes.	Philip Van Cortlandt.
Lewis Morris.	Stephen Ward.

PROVINCIAL CONGRESS.—The last session of the Colonial Assembly was held April 3, 1775. These conventions were four in number. The first Provincial Convention met May 22, 1775. The apportionment varied. Some of the members were elected for one year, others for six months. The vote was taken by counties. The First, Second and Third Congresses met in New York, while the Fourth was migratory,—meeting at White Plains, Fishkill and Kingston. The deputies were chosen from the counties in the same manner as representatives to the Colonial Assembly.

Deputies from Westchester County.

Name.	No. of Congress.
David Dayton	1st.
Gilbert Drake	2d, 3d, 4th.
Joseph Drake	1st, 2d.
Peter Fleming	3d.
Lewis Graham	1st, 2d, 3d, 4th.
Robert Graham	1st, 2d.
Samuel Haviland	3d, 4th.
James Holmes	1st.
Ebenezer Lockwood	2d, 3d, 4th.
Zebadiah Mills	4th.
Gouverneur Morris	1st, 3d, 4th.
Lewis Morris	4th.
William Paulding	1st, 2d, 3d, 4th.
Jonathan Platt	4th.
Benj. Smith	4th.
John Thomas, Jr	1st, 2d.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	3d, 4th.
Philip Van Cortlandt	1st.
Pierre Van Cortlandt	2d, 3d, 4th.
Stephen Ward	1st, 2d.

COMMITTEE OF SAFETY AND COUNCIL OF SAFETY.—During the recesses of the Congresses, a Committee of Safety from its members was entrusted with executive functions. After the formation of the Constitution of 1777 a temporary form of government, called the Council of Safety, was appointed until a Governor and Legislature should be elected.

Members from Westchester County.

Gouverneur Morris.	Jonathan G. Tompkins.

Pierre Van Cortlandt.

The latter was the presiding officer.

STATE CONVENTIONS.—The Fourth Provincial Congress, which assumed the name of the Convention of Representatives of the State of New York, resolved itself into a convention to frame a Constitution for the State. August 1, 1776, a committee[1] of thirteen members was appointed to prepare a form of government. This committee reported March 12, 1777, and the first Constitution was adopted April 20th, following. It is saturated with the principles for which the people had contended for more than a century. The three distinct functions of government were recognized. A Legislature, consisting of a Senate and Assembly, was the law-making body. The executive officer was called the Governor. The appointing power was vested in a Council of Appointment, which consisted of one Senator from each of the four Senatorial Districts. These members of the Council were appointed annually by the Assembly. The Governor, who presided over the Council of Appointment, was to have "a casting voice, but no other vote." The elective officers were Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Senators, Assemblymen and the clerks, supervisors, constables and collectors of the several towns. All other officers—civil and military—were appointed by the Council of Appointment. Male resident owners of freeholds of one hundred pounds' value elected the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor and Senators; while owners of freeholds of twenty pounds in value, etc., were entitled to vote for Assemblymen.

The Second Convention convened in Poughkeepsie June 17th, 1788, pursuant to an act of Legislature, to consider the Federal Constitution. On July 26th the convention ratified it by a vote of thirty to twenty-seven, seven not voting. The following were the delegates from Westchester, all of whom showed their good sense by voting to ratify:

Thaddeus Crane.	Lewis Morris.
Richard Hatfield.	Lott W. Saris.
Philip Livingston.	Philip Van Cortlandt.

The Third Convention is that of 1801, which was held at Albany October 13th to 27th, pursuant to an act passed April 6th of that year, to settle the controversy which had arisen regarding the relative powers of the Governor and Council of Appointment respecting nominations for office, and to consider the expediency of altering the Constitution in regard to the number of Senators and Assemblymen, with power to reduce and limit the same. The Convention unanimously decided that the Council of Appointment had equal powers of nomination with the Governor; fixed the number of Senators at thirty-two and the Assemblymen at one hundred, to be increased after each census, at the rate of two yearly, until they reached the number of one hundred and fifty.

Delegates from Westchester County.

Thomas Ferris.	Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr.
Israel Honeywell.	Ebenezer White.
Jonathan G. Tompkins.	

The Fourth Convention was held in Albany August 28 to November 10, 1821. The question of a Convention for the Revision of the Constitution was submitted to the people, It was carried by a very large majority. The burning questions of the day were about the Councils of Revision and Appointment. The former was objected to as exercising its veto power contrary to the ideas for which the colonists contended, and as being beyond the reach of the peo-

[1] For names of representatives of Fourth Provincial Congress, see list above. Gouverneur Morris, of Westchester County, was on the committee.

Digitized by Google

ple; and the latter, because it had assumed judicial authority. The Constitution of 1821 was ratified by the people February, 1822. The vote was put into the hands of all white male citizens, virtually without condition. The Councils of Revision and Appointment were abolished. Appointments, for the most part, were made by the Governor, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate. The number of elective officers was increased.

Delegates from Westchester County.

Peter A. Jay.[1]	Peter J. Munro.
Jonathan Ward.	

The Fifth Convention met, pursuant to the vote of the people and an act of the Legislature, at Albany, June 1, 1846, and continued in session until October 9th of the same year. The new Constitution was ratified by the popular vote November 3, 1846. Judicial officers were made elective. Members of Assembly in each county had been hitherto elected on a general ticket. The third Constitution of 1846 directed the Boards of Supervisors to divide their counties into Assembly Districts.

Delegates from Westchester County.

John Hunter.[2]	Aaron Ward.

The Sixth Convention, convened in the same manner as the preceding, met in the Assembly Chamber, in Albany, June 4, 1867, and adjourned, *sine die*, February 28, 1868. It consisted of thirty-two delegates at large and four from each Senatorial District. Only the judiciary article was ratified.

Delegates from the Ninth Senatorial District.[3]

Robert Cochran.	William H. Morris.
Abraham B. Conger.	Abraham B. Tappan.

THE CONSTITUTIONAL COMMISSION.—The Governor was empowered,[4] by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, to appoint thirty-two persons, four from each judicial district, as a commission to frame into amendments several provisions contained in the rejected Constitution of 1867. The commission began its work in Albany December 4, 1872, and completed it March 15, 1873. Most of the amendments proposed were submitted to and ratified by the people.

Members of the Commission, Second Judicial District.[5]

Jno. J. Armstrong.	Odle Close.
Erastus Brooks.	Benj. D. Silliman.

STATE LEGISLATURE.—The Legislature of the State of New York is composed of the Senate and Assembly, the members of both bodies elected by the people. *Viva voce* voting was done away with by the act of February 13, 1787, and since that the ballot has been used in elections.

SENATE.—Under the Constitution of 1777 the Senate consisted of twenty-four members, apportioned among the four districts, which bore the designations Southern, Middle, Eastern and Western. The Convention of 1801 increased the number of Senators to thirty-two, and the State was divided into eight districts. Since the adoption of the Constitution of 1846 there have been thirty-two districts, each entitled to one member. The term of office is two years; under the Constitution of 1777 it was four. Westchester County has belonged, successively, to the Southern, First, Seventh, Eighth, Ninth and Twelfth.

List of Residents of Westchester County who have Represented the various Districts to which it has belonged in the Senate.

Names.	Years in the Senate.
Benj. Brandreth	1850–51, 1858–59.
William Cauldwell	1868–71.
Darius Crosby	1815–18.
Samuel Haight	1797–1800.
Richard Hatfield	1795–1802.
John Hunter	1823, 1836–43.
Sir James Jay	1778, 1781–82.
Philip Livingston	1790–93, '95, '98.
Allen McDonald	1832–35.
Lewis Morris	1777–90.
Richard Morris	1778–79.
Henry C. Nelson	1882–84.
William Nelson	1824–27.
Ebenezer Purdy	1801–6.
William Robertson	1844–45.
Hezekiah D. Robertson	1860–63.
William H. Robertson	1854–55, 1872–81.
Edmund G. Sutherland	1866–67.
Thomas Thomas	1805–8.
John Townsend	1820–22.
Philip Van Cortlandt	1791–94.
Pierre Van Cortlandt	1777.
Jonathan Ward	1807–10.
Stephen Ward	1780–83.

ASSEMBLY.—Assemblymen are elected annually. Originally the Assembly consisted of seventy members. The Constitution of 1821 fixed the number permanently at one hundred and twenty-eight. Prior to the adoption of the Constitution of 1846 all the members of Assembly were elected on a general ticket; since then the counties have been divided into districts. The representation from this county has varied from six in 1777 to two in 1836. At the present time it is entitled to three.

List of Members of Assembly from Westchester County, 1777–1885.

1777 to 1847.

Names.	Years in Assembly.
William Adams	1798–99.
Jeremiah Anderson	1825.
Joseph H. Anderson	1833–34.
Benjamin Barker	1807.
John Barker	1796–98.
William Barker	1809–10, 1812–14, 1818–19.
Francis Barrette	1838.
James E. Beers	1847.
Joseph Benedict	1778–79.
Thomas Bowne	1705.
Aaron Brown	1829–30.
Joseph Brown	1789–90.
Nehemiah Brown, Jr	1823–24.
Ebenezer S. Burling	1784–85.
Joseph Carpenter	1796–97.
Joseph T. Carpenter	1841–42.
George Comb	18[illegible].

[1] Mr. Jay did not sign the Constitution.

[2] Did not sign the engrossed Constitution.

[3] Putnam, Rockland and Westchester for the Ninth Senatorial District.

[4] Laws, 1872, ch. 884.

[5] Westchester County belongs to the Second District.

Digitized by Google

I. Anthony Constant . . . . . 1845.
St. John Constant . . . . . 1823, '31.
Thaddeus Crane . . . . . 1777–79, 1788–89, 1825.
Darius Crosby . . . . . 1811–12.
Edwin Crosby . . . . . 1834–35.
Nicholas Cruger . . . . . 1838.
Lawrence Davenport . . . . . 1829–30.
Nathaniel Delevan . . . . . 1781–82.
Samuel Drake . . . . . 1777–81, '86, '88.
Benjamin Ferris . . . . . 1808, '24.
Samuel B. Ferris . . . . . 1839–40.
Andrew Findlay . . . . . 1843–44.
John Fisher . . . . . 1827–28.
William Fisher . . . . . 1836–37.
Peter Fleming . . . . . 1791.
Joel Frost . . . . . 1806, '08.
John W. Frost . . . . . 1832.
Niles Frost . . . . . 1824.
Abijah Gilbert . . . . . 1779–86, '88, '91, 1800–5.
Robert Graham . . . . . 1777–78, 1800–1.
James Guion . . . . . 1819–21.
Samuel Haight . . . . . 1782–84, 1789–92.
Mordecai Hale . . . . . 1796–97.
Richard Hatfield . . . . . 1794.
John R. Hayward . . . . . 1846.
Samuel L. Holmes . . . . . 1843.
Israel Honeywell, Jr . . . . . 1777–79.
Israel Honeywell . . . . . 1798–99.
Philip Honeywell . . . . . 1806.
Jonathan Horton . . . . . 1788–91.
Joseph Hunt . . . . . 1822.
Benjamin Isaacs . . . . . 1807, 1814–16, '18.
John Lawrence . . . . . 1782–83.
Elijah Lee . . . . . 1798–99.
Thomas R. Lee . . . . . 1745.
Philip Livingston . . . . . 1788–89.
Ebenezer Lockwood . . . . . 1778–79, 1784–88.
Ezra Lockwood . . . . . 1806.
Horatio Lockwood . . . . . 1833–36, 1841–42.
Ezra Marshall . . . . . 1846–47.
Seth Marvin . . . . . 1807.
Abraham Miller . . . . . 1808, 1811–14, 1816–17, 1820–21.
Zebediah Mills . . . . . 1777–84.
Bernardus Montross . . . . . 1837.
Nathaniel Montross . . . . . 1827–28.
Gouverneur Morris . . . . . 1777–78.
Richard V. Morris . . . . . 1814.
Peter J. Munro . . . . . 1814–15.
Thomas Murphy . . . . . 1831.
William Nelson . . . . . 1820–21.
Elias Newman . . . . . 1792–94, '96.
Abraham Odell . . . . . 1800–5, 1807–10.
Jacob Odell . . . . . 1811–12.
Ozias Osburn . . . . . 1808.
Prince W. Paddock . . . . . 1835–36.
William Paulding . . . . . 1779–80.
Philip Pell, Jr . . . . . 1779–81, 1784–86.
Ebenezer Purdy . . . . . 1779–80, 1782–85, '87, '91, '92, '95.
William Requa . . . . . 1814–16, 1818–19.
Nathan Rockwell . . . . . 1780–82, 1787–1800.
Joseph Scofield . . . . . 1825–37.
Walter Seaman . . . . . 1788–90.
Roger Skinner . . . . . 1810.
Abel Smith . . . . . 1794–96, 1798–1802, 1820–30.
John H. Smith . . . . . 1826.
Thomas Smith . . . . . 1922–23, '32.
Joseph Strang . . . . . 1780–81, 1787–88.
Joseph Strang . . . . . 1839–40.
Charles Teed . . . . . 1796–1800.
Thomas Thomas . . . . . 1786–88, 1792–93, 1800–4.
Enoch Thompson . . . . . 1822.
Caleb Tompkins . . . . . 1804–6.
Jonathan G. Tompkins . . . . 1780–88, 1791–92.
John Townsend . . . . . 1816–17.
Joseph Travis . . . . . 1802–5.
James Turk . . . . . 1828.
Philip Van Cortlandt . . . . . 1788–90.
Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr . . . 1792, 1794–95.
Aaron Vark . . . . . 1831.
Stephen Ward . . . . . 1778.
Israel H. Watson . . . . . 1832–33.
Ebenezer White . . . . . 1794–95.
Ebenezer White, Jr . . . . . 1816–17.
John White . . . . . 1814.
James Wiley . . . . . 1826.
Charles Wright . . . . . 1844.
Samuel Youngs . . . . . 1796, 1809–10.

1848 to 1885.

District.	Name.	Years in Assembly.
2.	Albert Badeau	1872.
2.	Alfred W. Bartlett	1871.
2.	Theodore H. Benedict	1851.
1.	Orrin A. Bills	1866.
2.	David Ogden Bradley	1879, '80.
3.	George A. Brandreth	1864, '65, '66.
1.	Daniel Clark Briggs	1851.
3.	Benjamin F. Camp	1861.
2.	William H. Catlin	1880–82.
1.	William Cauldwell	1874.
2.	Eli Curtis	1856.
3.	Chauncey M. Depew	1862, '63.
1.	Arnell F. Dickinson	1857.
1.	Claiborne Ferris	1869.
1.	George C. Finch	1853.
1.	George H. Forster	1876.
1.	Franklin W. Gilley	1864.
2.	Newberry D. Halsted	1862.
2.	Abraham Hatfield	1852.
1.	William Herring	1873.
	John Hoag	1883.
3.	Frost Horton	1858.
3.	Gaylord B. Hubbell	1859, '60.
1.	Daniel Hunt	1855.
2.	Lawrence D. Huntington	1866.
3.	James W. Husted	1869–78, '81, '84, '85.
	Samuel W. Johnson	1883–85.
	Edwin R. Keyes	1882, '83.
2.	Harvey Kidd	1849.
2.	Edward D. Lawrence	1869, '70.
1.	Elijah Lee	1854.
2.	Alsop H. Lockwood	1864, '65.
1.	George W. Lyon	1852.
2.	Jesse Lyon	1850.
2.	John E. Marshall	1863.
	Charles P. McClelland	1885.
1.	William J. McDermott	1861.
1.	William T. B. Milliken	1860.
2.	William F. Moller	1877, '78, '81.
1.	James J. Mooney	1870.
3.	Henry C. Nelson	1868.
1.	William W. Niles	1872.
2.	Jacob Odell	1853, '54.
2.	N. Holmes Odell	1860, '61.
	Norton P. Otis	1884.
2.	Jared V. Peck	1848.
2.	George J. Penfield	1867, '68.
1.	Ambrose H. Purdy	1877, '78.
1.	Samuel M. Purdy	1867, '68.
	George W. Robertson	1882.
1.	William H. Robertson	1849, '50.
2.	Charles M. Schieffelin	1875, '76.
	G. Hilton Scribner	1871.
2.	James S. See	1859.
1.	Dennis R. Schiel	1875.
1.	Abram R. Strang	1856.
2.	Edmund G. Sunderland	1857, '58.
1.	Pierre C. Tallman	1862, '63, '65.
1.	Abram B. Tappen	1858.
3.	David W. Travis	1867, '79, '80.
1.	R. M. Underhill	1848.
1.	Augustus Van Cortlandt	1859.
2.	Frederick W. Waterbury	1855.
1.	James Lee Wells	1879.
2.	Amherst Wight, Jr	1873, '74.

Digitized by Google

RESIDENTS OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY IN THE CONTINENTAL CONGRESS.—Originally these delegates were chosen by the Provincial Congress. The Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union adopted by the Continental Congress, November 15, 1777, directed the appointment annually of delegates by the State Legislatures. The number from each State was not to be less than two or more than seven. This State usually sent five, occasionally six. The votes in Congress were by States.

Name.	Years in Continental Congress.
Gouverneur Morris	1777, '78.
Lewis Morris[1]	1775.
Philip Pell	1788.

RESIDENTS OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY WHO HAVE REPRESENTED THEIR DISTRICT IN CONGRESS.—This county originally was divided; the northern tier of towns formed, with Dutchess County, one district, while the remainder was, with New York, in another. Later it formed with Richmond a district. Since then it has been in the following districts: Third, Fourth, Seventh, Ninth, Tenth and Twelfth. The term of office is two years.

Name.	Years in House of Representatives.
Joseph H. Anderson	1843–47.
Joel Frost	1823–25.
John B. Haskins	1857–61.
William Nelson	1847–51.
N. Holmes Odell	1875–77.
Jared V. Peck	1853–55.
Clarkson N. Potter	1869, 1875, 1877–79.
William Radford	1863–67.
William H. Robertson	1867–69.
Caleb Tompkins	1817–21.
Philip Van Cortlandt	1793–1809.
Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr	1811–13.
Aaron Ward	1825, 1829, 1831, 1837, 1841, 1843
Jonathan Ward	1815–17.

COLONIAL SUPREME COURT JUSTICES.—Appointment vested in the Governor; the term of office, his pleasure.

Chief Justices.

Name.	Appointed.
Joseph Dudley	May 15, 1691.
William Smith	November 11, 1692.
Stephen Van Cortlandt	October 30, 1700.
Abraham De Peyster	January 21, 1701.
William Atwood	August 5, 1701.
William Smith	June 9, 1702.
John Bridges	April 5, 1703.
Roger Mompesson	July 15, 1704.
Lewis Morris	March 13, 1715.
James de Lancey	August 21, 1733.
Benjamin Pratt	November 11, 1761.
Daniel Horsemanden	March 16, 1763.

Associate or Puisne Judges of Colonial Supreme Court.

Name.	Appointed.
Thomas Johnson	May 15, 1691.
William Smith	May 15, 1691.
Stephen Van Cortlandt	May 15, 1691.
William Pinhorne	May 15, 1691.
William Pinhorne	April 3, 1693.
Chidley Brooke	April 3, 1693.
John Lawrence	April 3, 1693.
John Guest	June, 1698.
Abraham De Peyster	October 4, 1698.
Robert Walters	August 5, 1701.
John Bridges	June 14, 1702.
Robert Milward	April 5, 1703.
Thomas Wenham	April 5, 1703.
James De Lancey	June 24, 1731.
Frederick Philipse	June 24, 1731.
Frederick Philipse	August 21, 1733.
Daniel Horsemanden	January 24, 1736.
John Chambers	July 30, 1751.
Daniel Horsemanden	July 28, 1753.
David Jones	November 21, 1758.
Daniel Horsemanden	March 26, 1762.
David Jones	March 31, 1762.
David Jones	March 16, 1763.
William Smith, the elder	March 16, 1763.
Robert R. Livingston	March 16, 1763.
George D. Ludlow	December 14, 1769.
Thomas Jones	September 29, 1773.
Whitehead Hicks	February 14, 1776.

STATE SUPREME COURT.—Under the Constitution of 1777 appointment was vested in the Council of Appointment, and the term was during good behavior or until sixty years of age. Under that of 1821 the Governor appointed with the advice and consent of the Senate. The term remained the same. The Constitution of 1846 made the office elective and the term eight years. The amendment to the judiciary article adopted November, 1869, lengthened the term to fourteen years.

Chief Justices of the State Supreme Court.

Name.	Appointed.
John Jay	May 8, 1777.
Richard Morris	October 23, 1779.
Robert Yates	September 28, 1790.
John Lansing, Jr	February 15, 1798.
Morgan Lewis	October 28, 1801.
James Kent	July 2, 1804.
Smith Thompson	February 3, 1814.
Ambrose Spencer	February 29, 1819.
John Savage	January 29, 1823.
Samuel Nelson	August 31, 1831.
Greene C. Bronson	March 5, 1845.
Samuel Beardsley	June 28, 1847.

Associate or Puisne Justices of the State Supreme Court.

Name.	Appointed.
Robert Yates	May 8, 1777.
John Sloss Hobart	May 8, 1777.
John Lansing, Jr	September 28, 1790.
Morgan Lewis	December 24, 1792.
Egbert Benson	January 29, 1794.
James Kent	February 6, 1798.
John Cosine	August 9, 1798.
Jacob Radcliff	December 27, 1798.
Brockholst Livingston	January 8, 1802.
Smith Thompson	January 8, 1802.
Ambrose Spencer	February 3, 1804.
Daniel D. Tompkins	July 2, 1804.
William W. Van Ness	June 9, 1807.
Joseph C. Yates	February 8, 1808.
Jonas Platt	February 23, 1814.
John Woodworth	March 27, 1819.
Jacob Sunderland	January 28, 1823.
William L. Marcy	January 21, 1829.
Samuel Nelson	February 1, 1831.
Greene C. Bronson	January 6, 1836.
Esek Cowen	August 31, 1836.
Samuel Beardsley	February 20, 1844.
Freeborn G. Jewett	March 5, 1845.
Frederick Whittlesey	June 30, 1847.
Thomas McKissock	July 1, 1847.

[1] Signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Digitized by Google

Circuit Judges (Second Circuit).

Name.	Appointed.
Samuel R. Betts	April 21, 1823.
James Emott	February 21, 1827.
Charles H. Ruggles	March 9, 1831.
Selah B. Strong	March 27, 1846.
Seward Barculo	April 4, 1846.

Justices of Supreme Court (Second District).

Name.	Elected.
Selah B. Strong	June 7, 1847.
William T. McCown	June 7, 1847.
Nathan B. Morse	June 7, 1847.
Seward Barculo	June 7, 1847.
John W. Brown	November 6, 1849.
Selah B. Strong	November 9, 1851.
William Rockwell	November 8, 1853.
Gilbert Dean	June 26, 1854.
James Emott	November 6, 1855.
Lucien Birdseye	August 13, 1856.
John W. Brown	November 3, 1857.
John A. Lott	November 3, 1857.
William W. Scrugham	November 8, 1859.
William Fullerton	August 30, 1867.
Stephen W. Fullerton	November 5, 1867.
John A. Lott	November 5, 1861.
Joseph F. Barnard	November 3, 1863.
Jasper W. Gilbert	November 7, 1865.
Abraham B. Tappen	November 5, 1867.
Calvin E. Pratt	November 2, 1869.
Jackson O. Dykman	November 2, 1875.

COUNTY JUDGES.—The Court of Common Pleas was erected by the act of 1691. It was composed of one judge and three justices, who were appointed by the Governor and held office during his pleasure. In 1702 the judge was assisted by two or more justices. Under the first Constitution there was one judge and several assistant judges. The act of March 27, 1818, abolished the office of assistant judge and limited the number of judges to five. Under the State government the appointment was at first vested in the Council of Appointment, and the office was held during their pleasure. Later, the Governor, with the advice and consent of the Senate, appointed the county judges, and the term was five years. The Constitution of 1846 made the office elective and the term four years. The amendment of 1869 extended it to six years.

Judges of the Court of Common Pleas and County Court (Colonial).

Name.	Appointed.
Caleb Heathcote	1695.
William Willett	1721.
Frederick Philipse	November 2, 1735.
Samuel Purdy	January 22, 1752.
John Thomas	May 8, 1755.

State Constitutions of 1777 and 1821.

Name.	Appointed.
Lewis Morris[1]	May 8, 1777.
Robert Graham	February 17, 1778.
Stephen Ward	May 6, 1784.
Ebenezer Lockwood	March 15, 1791.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	February 16, 1793.
Ebenezer Purdy	February 23, 1797.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	1798.
Elijah Lee	January 20, 1802.
John Watts	March 29, 1802.
Caleb Tompkins	June 8, 1807.
William Jay	June 7, 1820.
Caleb Tompkins	February 10, 1823.
Robert S. Hart	March 27, 1846.
Albert Lockwood	June, 1847.

[1] Appointed by ordinance of Provincial Convention.

Constitution of 1846.

Name.	Elected.
John W. Mills	November, 1851.
William H. Robertson	November, 1855.
Robert Cochran	November, 1867.
Silas D. Gifford	November, 1871.
Isaac N. Mills[2]	November, 1883.

SURROGATES.—The authority to grant probates was vested in the Governor as the representative of the King, and he was the ordinary of the Prerogative Court. All wills relating to estates in New York, Orange, Richmond, Westchester and Kings Counties were to be proved in New York. In the towns under the Duke's Laws the constables, overseers and justices took charge of the estates of intestates. Under the act of November 11, 1692, this duty was performed by two freeholders appointed or elected for the purpose. Surrogates were appointed by the colonial Governor at a very early date—for Westchester County as early as 1730. They had very limited powers. Since the organization of the State the surrogates have been vested with the authority to grant probates, subject to appeal to the Court of Probates. Counties where the population exceeds forty thousand may be authorized by the Legislature to elect such an officer. Otherwise the county judge acts as such. The office was filled by appointment of the Council of Appointment; later by the Governor and Senate. Under the Constitution of 1846 it became elective. The term was at first during the pleasure of the appointing power. From 1821 to 1846 they were appointed for four years. Since the office became elective the term has been six years.

Colonial Surrogates of Westchester County.

Name.	Appointed.
Gilbert Willet	1730.
John Barton	February 9, 1754.
Caleb Fowler	June 10, 1761.
David Daton	June 9, 1766.

Surrogates of Westchester County under the Constitutions of 1777 and 1821.

Name.	Appointed.
Richard Hatfield	March 23, 1776.
Philip Pell, Jr	March 13, 1787.
Samuel Youngs	October 31, 1790.
Edward Thomas	January 28, 1802.
Samuel Youngs	February 19, 1807.
Ezra Lockwood	March 10, 1808.
Samuel Youngs	February 16, 1810.
Ezra Lockwood	February 12, 1811.
Samuel Youngs	March 19, 1813.
Henry White	March 16, 1815.
Samuel Youngs	July 8, 1819.
Ebenezer White, Jr	February 17, 1821.
Jonathan Ward	March 28, 1828.
Alexander H. Wells	February 7, 1840.
Frederick J. Coffin	May 1, 1844.

Surrogates of Westchester County under the Constitution of 1846.

Name.	Elected.
Lewis C. Platt	June, 1847.
Robert H. Coles	November, 1855.
Silas D. Gifford	February 5, 1862.
John W. Mills	November, 1862.
Owen T. Coffin[3]	November, 1870.

[2] Present incumbent.
[3] Present incumbent.

Digitized by Google

DISTRICT ATTORNEYS.—By the act of February 12, 1796, the State was divided into seven districts, each of which had an attorney, called assistant attorney-general. The Assistant Attorney-General became, in 1801, district attorney. By the act of April 1818, each county became a district, and had its own district attorney. Under the Constitution of 1777 the Council of Appointment filled the office during pleasure; that of 1821 vested the appointment in the Court of Sessions, while under the present one the office is elective.

District Attorneys—First District[1]*—Act of* 1796.

Name.	Appointed.
Nathaniel Lawrence	February 16, 1796.
Cadwallader D. Colden	January 16, 1798.

Act of 1801.[2]

Name.	Appointed.
Richard Riker	August 19, 1801.
Cadwallader D. Colden	February 13, 1810.
Richard Riker	February 19, 1811.
Barent Gardenier	March 5, 1813.
Thomas S. Lester	April 8, 1815.

Act of 1818.[3]

Name.	Appointed
Robert P. Lee	June 12, 1818.
Aaron Ward	July 8, 1819.
William Nelson	February 21, 1822.
Richard R. Voris	September 27, 1844.
William W. Scrugham	June, 1847.
Edward Wells	November, 1856.
William H. Pemberton	November, 1859.
Pelham L. McClelan	November, 1862.
John S. Bates	November, 1865.
Jackson O. Dykeman	November, 1868.
Daniel C. Briggs	November, 1871.
Robert Cochran	November, 1874.
Nelson H. Baker[4]	November, 1877.

SHERIFFS.—During the colonial period the sheriffs were appointed annually by the Governor, usually in the month of October. The Constitution of 1777 vested the appointment in the Council of Appointment. The term was one year, and no person could hold the office for more than four successive years. The Constitution of 1821 made the office elective and the term three years. No sheriff is eligible for re-election for the next succeeding term.

Colonial—Yorkshire.

Name.	Appointed.
William Wells	March 11, 1665.
Robert Coe	1669.
John Manning	September 7, 1671.
Sylvester Salisbury	December 9, 1674.
Philip Wells	July, 1675.
Thomas Willett	July 1, 1676.
Richard Betts	1678.
John Young	1680.

Westchester County.

Name.	Appointed.
Benjamin Collier	November 9, 1683.
Thomas Statham	December 14, 1689.
Benjamin Collier	March 21, 1691.
John Shute	October, 1698.
Edmund Ward	October, 1699.
Jeremiah Fowler	October, 1700.
Isaac Dunham	October, 1701.
Roger Barton	October, 1702.
Israel Honeywell, Jr.	October, 1709.
Gilbert Willet	October, 1723.
Jacobus Van Dyck	October, 1727.
Gilbert Willet	October, 1730.
Nicholas Cooper	October, 1733.
Isaac Willet	October, 1737.
Lewis Graham	October, 1767.
John De Lancey	October, 1769.
James De Lancey	June 27, 1770.

State—Constitution of 1777.

Name.	Appointed.
John Thomas, Jr	May 8, 1777.
John Thomas	January 6, 1778.
Jesse Hunt	March 29, 1781.
John Thomas	March 8, 1785.
Philip Pell	March 13, 1787.
Thomas Thomas	March 22, 1788.
Samuel Haight	February 21, 1792.
Elias Newman	March 1, 1796.
William Barker	March 26, 1799.
Jonathan Ward	February 17, 1802.
Daniel Delevan	March 19, 1806.
Joseph Hatfield	March 23, 1807.
St. John Constant	March 10, 1808.
Elijah Ward	February 16, 1810.
St. John Constant	February 12, 1811.
Lyman Cook	February 26, 1812.
Zabud June	March 16, 1815.
Lyman Cook	February 25, 1818.
Ward B. Howard	February 14, 1821.

Constitutions of 1821 *and* 1846.

Name.	Elected.
John Townsend	November, 1822.
Allan McDonald	November, 1825.
David D. Webbers	November, 1828.
Aaron Brown	November, 1831.
Joseph H. Anderson	November, 1834.
Amos T. Hatfield	November, 1837.
Joseph Lyon	November, 1840.
William H. Briggs	November, 1843.
James M. Bates	November, 1846.
Benjamin D. Miller	November, 1849.
Alsop H. Lockwood	November, 1852.
Daniel H. Little	November, 1855.
William Bleakley, Jr	November, 1858.
Lieman B. Tripp	November, 1861.
Darius Lyon	November, 1864.
John Bussing	November, 1867.
Robert F. Brundage	November, 1870.
Ziba Carpenter	November, 1873.
Robert F. Brundage	November, 1876.
James C. Courter	November, 1879.
Stephen D. Horton[5]	November, 1882.

COUNTY CLERKS.—"The County Clerk, during the colonial period, was constituted by his commission clerk of the Court of Common Pleas, Clerk of the Peace and Clerk of the Sessions of the Peace in his county. Under the first State Constitution, it was his duty to keep the County Records and act as Clerk of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas and Clerk of the Oyer and Terminer. County Clerks are now likewise Clerks of the Supreme Court in their respective counties."[6] During the colonial period appointment was vested in the Governor; under the

[1] First District included Kings, Queens, Richmond, Suffolk and Westchester Counties.

[2] First District included Kings, Queens, Richmond, Suffolk, Westchester until 1816, and New York until 1815.

[3] Each county became a district.

[4] Present incumbent.

[5] Present incumbent.

[6] Civil List of State of New York, 1880, p. 384.

Digitized by Google

first Constitution of 1777, in the Council of Appointment; since then the office has been elective and the term three years.

Colonial.

Name.	Appointed.
John Rider	May 11, 1684.
Joseph Lee	September 13, 1684.
Edward Collier	1688.
Joseph Lee	March 14, 1691.
Benjamin Collier	October 17, 1698.
John Clapp	October 4, 1707.
Daniel Clark	1711.
William Forster	1722.
Benjamin Nicoll	May 14, 1746.
John Barstow	April 23, 1760.

State Constitution of 1777.

Name.	Appointed.
John Barstow	May 8, 1777.
Richard Hatfield	September 22, 1777.
Thomas Ferris	January 29, 1802.
Elijah Crawford	March 10, 1808.
Thomas Ferris	February 16, 1810.
Elijah Crawford	February 12, 1811.
Thomas Ferris	March 19, 1813.
Elijah Crawford	March 16, 1815.
William Requa	June 8, 1820.
Nehemiah S. Bates	February 17, 1821.

Constitutions of 1821 and 1846.

Name.	Elected.
Nehemiah S. Bates	November, 1822.
Nathaniel Bayles	November, 1828.
John H. Smith	November, 1834.
Chauncey Smith	December 7, 1839.
Charles A. Purdy	November, 1840.
Munson I. Lockwood	November, 1843.
Robert R. Oakley	November, 1849.
John P. Jenkins	November, 1855.
Hiram P. Rowell	November, 1858.
Chauncey M. Depew[1]	May 25, 1867.
William W. Pierson[2]	July 22, 1867.
J. Malcolm Smith	November, 1867.
John M. Rowell	November, 1876.
James F. D. Crane[3]	November, 1882.

COUNTY TREASURERS.—During the colonial period the treasurers from 1701 to 1703 were elected by the justices of the peace in the Court of General or Special Sessions; from 1703 to 1846 by the supervisors. The Constitution of 1846 made the office elective and the term three years.

Name.	Elected.
Elisha Horton	November, 1848.
Robert Palmer	November, 1851.
Lieman B. Tripp	November, 1854.
Henry Willetts	November, 1857.
Gilbert S. Lyon[4]	November 25, 1866.
N. Holmes Odell	November, 1872.
George W. Davids	November, 1875.
David Cromwell[5]	November, 1878.

COUNTY SUPERINTENDENTS OF COMMON SCHOOLS.—The Boards of Supervisors were directed, by the act of April 17, 1843, to appoint County Superintendents of Common Schools. The office was abolished March 13, 1847.

Samuel L. Holmes. John Hobbs.

[1] Appointed vice Rowell, deceased.
[2] Appointed vice Depew, who failed to qualify.
[3] Present incumbent.
[4] Appointed vice Willetts, resigned.
[5] Present incumbent.

SCHOOL COMMISSIONERS.—"Prior to 1857 School Commissioners were appointed by the Boards of Supervisors. Since that year they have been elected on a separate ballot. The first election under the act creating the office (chapter 179, Laws of 1856) was held in November, 1859. Term, three years."[6]

First District.

A. G. Reynolds.	Franklin W. Gilley.
Jared M. Horton.	Joseph H. Palmer.
Theodore Kent.	Joseph F. Wood.
William Miller.	Jared Sanford.[7]

Second District.

Samuel U. Berrian.	George W. Smith.
William G. Weston.	Casper G. Brower.
Isaac D. Vermilye.	Theodore B. Stevens.
Abel T. Stewart.	James B. Lockwood.[8]

Third District.

James W. Husted.	Isaac C. Wright.
John S. Bates.	Edward N. Barrett.
Henry White.	Platt R. H. Sawyer.
Henry A. Wells.	James F. Williams.[9 10]
Joseph Barrett.	

Census.

1698	1,063	1814	26,367
1703	1,946	1820	32,638
1712	2,815	1825	33,131
1723	4,409	1830	36,456
1731	6,033	1835	38,790
1737	6,745	1840	48,687
1746	9,235	1845	47,578
1749	10,703	1850	58,263
1756	13,257	1855	80,678
1771	21,746	1860	99,497
1782	7,330[11]	1865	101,197
1790	24,003	1870	131,348
1800	27,347	1875	103,564[12]
1810	30,272	1880	108,987

LIST OF SUPERVISORS,[13] 1772-1787.

1772.

William Davis	Philipsburgh.
William Sutton	Mamaroneck.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
James Holmes	Bedford.
Stephen Ward	East Chester.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.
Richard Willis	New Rochelle.
William Barker	Scarsdale.
David Daton	North Castle.
Robert Graham	White Plains.
James Van Cortlandt	Yonkers.
Pierre Van Cortlandt	Manor of Cortlandt.

1773.

William Barker	Scarsdale.
Samuel Haviland	Rye.
James Van Cortlandt	Yonkers.
James Pell	Pelham.
James Holmes	Bedford.
James Ferris	Westchester.
—— Morris	Morrisania.

[6] Civil List, 1890, p. 398.
[7] Present incumbent.
[8] Present incumbent.
[9] Appointed vice Sawyer, deceased.
[10] Present incumbent.
[11] Census of North Castle, Bedford, Poundridge, Salem, Manor of Cortlandt, Ryck's Patent.
[12] Towns of Morrisania, West Farms and King's Bridge annexed to New York City by chap. 613 of laws of 1873.
[13] Records of Board of Supervisors.

Digitized by Google

Abijah Gilbert	Salem.
William Davis	Philipsburgh.
David Daton	North Castle.
Stephen Ward	East Chester.
William Sutton	Mamaroneck.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.

1774.

Pierre Van Cortlandt	Manor of Cortlandt.
James Cronkhite	Ryck's Patent.
Robert Graham	White Plains.
Pierre Van Cortlandt	Cortlandt Manor.
James Holmes	Bedford.
Samuel Haviland	Rye.
David Daton	North Castle.
James Ferris	Westchester.
William Sutton	Mamaroneck.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
William Davis	Philipsburgh.
William Barker	Scarsdale.
James Cronkhite	Ryck's Patent.
Robert Graham	White Plains.
Stephen Ward	East Chester.

1775.

Samuel Haviland.	James Van Cortlandt.
William Davis.	William Barker.
Pierre Van Cortlandt.	Ebenezer Lockwood.
Stephen Ward.	Lewis W. Donald.
Joseph Drake.	James Pell.
Samuel Purdy.	Abijah Gilbert.
James Horton.	David Daton.

1778.

Ebenezer Lockwood.	Jacob Purdy.
Joseph Strang.	Abijah Gilbert.
Israel Lyon.	

January 5, 1779.

Ebenezer Lockwood.	Israel Lyon.
Joseph Strang.	Abijah Gilbert.
Jacob Purdy.	

February 19, 1779.

Jacob Purdy.	Israel Lyon.
Joseph Paulding.	Abijah Gilbert.

March 18, 1779.

Ebenezer Lockwood.	Joseph Paulding.
Joseph Strang.	Jacob Purdy.
Israel Lyon.	

May 13, 1780.

Samuel Haight	Manor of Cortlandt.
Jacob Purdy	North Castle.
Israel Loon	Bedford.
William Dancher	Poundridge.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.

October 9, 1780.

Israel Lyon	Bedford.
William Dancher	Poundridge.
John Van Tassel	Ryck's Patent.

1781.

Samuel Haight	Manor of Cortlandt.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.
Samuel Haight	Manor of Cortlandt.
Israel Lyon	Bedford
William Fancher	Poundridge.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.

January 28, 1782.

Zebediah Mills	Bedford.
Samuel Haight	Manor of Cortlandt.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.

May 29, 1782.

Peter Fleming	Bedford.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
James Cronkhite	Ryck's Patent.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.
Samuel Haight	Manor of Cortlandt.

1783.

Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
Joseph Strang	Manor of Cortlandt.
Peter Fleming	Bedford.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.
James Cronkhite	Ryck's Patent.

1784.

John Thomas	Rye.
William Paulding	Philipsburgh.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	Manor of Scarsdale.
Joseph Strang	Manor of Cortlandt.
Thaddeus Crane	Town of Upper Salem.
Benjamin Stevenson	New Rochelle.
Israel Honeywell	Yonkers.
William Miller	Harrison's Precinct.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
Ebenezer E. Burling	East Chester.
Abel Smith	North Castle.
Daniel Horton	White Plains.
Gilbert Budd	Mamaroneck.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.
Peter Fleming	Town of Bedford.

1784.

Abel Smith	Precinct of North Castle.
Thomas Hunt	Borough Town of Westchester
William Paulding	Manor of Philipsburgh.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	Manor of Scarsdale.
Thaddeus Crane	Town of Upper Salem.
William Miller	Harrison's Precinct.
Joseph Strang	Manor of Van Cortlandt.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Precinct of Poundridge.
Gilbert Budd	Town of Mamaroneck.
Ebenezer S. Burling	Town of East Chester.
Daniel Horton	Precinct of White Plains.
Israel Honeywell	Yonkers.
John Thomas	Town of Rye.
Philip Pell	Manor of Pelham.
Benjamin Stevenson	Town of New Rochelle.
William Morris	Manor of Morrisania.
Abijah Gilbert	Town of Lower Salem.

June 28, 1785.

Gilbert Budd	Mamaroneck.
William Davis	Manor of Philipsburgh.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	Manor of Scarsdale.
Joseph Strang	Manor of Cortlandt.
Ebenezer Lockwood	Poundridge.
Peter Fleming	Bedford.
Abraham Leggett	Westchester.
Daniel Horton	White Plains.
Abel Smith	North Castle.
James Cronkhite	Ryck's Patent.
James Hunt	East Chester.
William Miller	Harrison's Precinct.
Jesse Hunt	Rye.
Abijah Gilbert	Salem.

October 4, 1785.

Jesse Hunt	Town of Rye.
Benjamin Stevenson	Town of New Rochelle.
William Davis	Manor of Philipsburgh.
Daniel Hunt	White Plains.
Lewis Morris	Manor of Morrisania.
Philip Pell	Manor of Pelham.
Thaddeus Crane	Town of Upper Salem.
Peter Fleming	Town of Bedford.
Abraham Leggett	Town of Westchester.
James Cronkhite	Ryck's Patent.
Jonathan G. Tompkins	Manor of Scarsdale.
Joseph Strang	Manor of Cortlandt.
Abel Smith	District of North Castle.
Ebenezer Lockwood	District of Poundridge.
James Hunt	Town of East Chester.
William Miller	Harrison's Precinct.
Abijah Gilbert	Town of Lower Salem.

Digitized by Google

May 9, 1786.

William Morris . . . . . Manor of Morrisania.
Lake Hunt . . . . . Town of Westchester.
James Hunt . . . . . Town of East Chester.
Gilbert Budd . . . . . Town of Mamaroneck.
Jesse Hunt . . . . . Town of Rye.
William Miller . . . . . Harrison's Precinct.
Jonathan G. Tompkins . . . . . Manor of Scarsdale.
Abraham Guion . . . . . Town of New Rochelle.
Philip Pell . . . . . Manor of Pelham.
Daniel Horton . . . . . Precinct of White Plains.
Abel Smith . . . . . Precinct of North Castle.
William Hadley . . . . . Precinct of Yonkers.
Jonathan Horton . . . . . Manor of Philipsburgh.
James Cronkhite . . . . . Ryck's Patent.
Joseph Strang . . . . . Manor of Van Cortlandt.
Zebediah Mills . . . . . Town of Bedford.
Ebenezer Lockwood . . . . . Parish of Poundridge.
Hachaliah Brown . . . . . Town of Upper Salem.
Abijah Gilbert . . . . . Town of Lower Salem.

1786.

Jesse Hunt . . . . . Town of Rye.
Gilbert Budd . . . . . Town of Mamaroneck.
Abraham Guion . . . . . Town of New Rochelle.
Philip Pell . . . . . Manor of Pelham.
James Hunt . . . . . Town of East Chester.
William Hadley . . . . . Precinct of Yonkers.
Jonathan Horton . . . . . Manor of Philipsburgh.
Jonathan G. Tompkins . . . . . Manor of Scarsdale.
Daniel Horton . . . . . Precinct of White Plains.
William Miller . . . . . Harrison's Precinct.
Abel Smith . . . . . Precinct of North Castle.
Zebediah Mills . . . . . Town of Bedford.
Joseph Strang . . . . . Manor of Cortlandt.
James Cronkhite . . . . . Ryck's Patent.
Ebenezer Lockwood . . . . . Precinct of Poundridge.
Hachaliah Brown . . . . . Town of Upper Salem.
Abijah Gilbert . . . . . Town of Lower Salem.
Lake Hunt . . . . . Town of Westchester.

1787.

Gilbert Budd . . . . . Mamaroneck.
Theodocius Barton . . . . . New Rochelle.
Philip Pell . . . . . Manor of Pelham.
Jonathan G. Tompkins . . . . . Manor of Scarsdale.
William Miller . . . . . Harrison's Precinct.
Richard Hatfield . . . . . White Plains.
David Hunt . . . . . Yonkers.
Isaac Requa . . . . . Manor of Philipsburgh.
Abel Smith . . . . . North Castle.
Joseph Strang . . . . . Manor of Cortlandt.
Jonathan Ferris . . . . . Ryck's Patent.
Zebediah Mills . . . . . Bedford.
Ebenezer Lockwood . . . . . Poundridge.
Abijah Gilbert . . . . . Lower Salem.
Stephen Ward . . . . . East Chester.
Israel Underhill . . . . . Westchester.

CIVIL LIST FOR 1886.

Representative in Congress—14th District.

William G. Stahlnecker, Yonkers. (District composed of Westchester County and Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards of New York City.)

State Senator—12th District.

Henry C. Nelson, Sing Sing. (Senatorial district composed of Westchester and Rockland Counties.)

Members of Assembly.

First District, Charles P. McClelland, Dobbs Ferry. (District composed of Greenburgh, Mount Pleasant and Yonkers.)

Second District, Norman A. Lawlor, Mount Vernon. (District composed of East Chester, Harrison, Mamaroneck, New Rochelle, North Castle, Pelham, Rye, Scarsdale, West Chester and White Plains.)

Third District, James W. Husted, Peekskill. (District composed of Bedford, Cortland, Lewisboro, New Castle, North Salem, Ossining, Poundridge, Somers and Yorktown.)

Surrogate.

Owen T. Coffin, Peekskill; Clerk of Surrogate's Court, William M. Skinner, White Plains; Record Clerk, Benoni P. Platt, White Plains, Special Clerk, Elias P. Purdy, White Plains.

Supreme Court Stenographer.

D. C. McEwen, Tribune Building, room 77, New York City.

County Judge.

Isaac N. Mills, Mount Vernon.

Justices of Sessions.

Stephen Billings, Verplanck's; John H. Baxter, Peekskill.

Stenographer.

Harvey Husted, White Plains.

Interpreter.

A. R. Stalnach, White Plains.

District Attorney.

Nelson H. Baker, Sing Sing; Assistant District Attorney, David Ver-Planck, White Plains.

County Clerk.

John M. Digney, Yonkers; Deputy County Clerk, Franklin Couch, Peekskill; Record Clerk, M. James Mooney, Yonkers.

County Treasurer.

David Cromwell, White Plains; Deputy County Treasurer, Thomas R. Hodge, Mount Vernon.

Register.

Joseph O. Miller, New Castle; Deputy Register, B. Frank Palmer, Mamaroneck; Searcher, Benjamin S. Dick, White Plains.

Sheriff.

John Duffy, White Plains; Under Sheriff, William Ryan, Rye; Jailer and Deputy Sheriff, Frank G. Shirmer, White Plains; Clerk and Deputy Sheriff, Charles E. Johnson, Mount Vernon; Deputy Sheriffs: John C. Verplanck, White Plains; Stephen A. Marshall, Port Chester; Alfred Lawrence, Tarrytown; William H. Sommers, Mamaroneck; Erastus B. Finch, Purdy's Station; John T. McGrath, Yonkers; James Mabie, Peekskill; Mark Skennion, West Chester.

Stenographer to Grand Jury.

Warren C. Brown, Tarrytown.

Court Crier.

James E. Campbell, White Plains.

Librarian.

Harold T. Kinch, Pleasantville.

Chaplains to County Almshouse.

Rev. Lawrence H. Van Dyke, Rev. Patrick Egan, Tarrytown.

Physicians to County Almshouse.

Dr. N. C. Husted, Tarrytown; Dr. R. B. Coutant, ——.

Watchman Court-House.

Alexander Jones, White Plains.

Janitor Court-House.

Thomas Zimmerman, White Plains.

Keeper County Almshouse.

Charles Fisher, East Tarrytown.

Keeper Pelham Bridge.

David Blizzard.

Coroners.

Edward J. Mitchell, Yonkers; Leonard D. Tice, Mount Vernon; Elijah Purdy, White Plains; George H. Sutton, Sing Sing.

Superintendents of the Poor.

Aaron F. Read, Armonk; James E. Hoyt, Katonah.

School Commissioners.

Jared Sandford, Mount Vernon; James B. Lockwood, White Plains; John W. Littel, Peekskill.

Loan Commissioners.

Isaac B. Noxon, Sing Sing; Jonathan Vail, Yonkers.

Town Clerks.

Bedford	T. Elwood Carpenter, R.
Cortlandt	William H. Pierce, R.
East Chester	John Bowden, D.
Greenburgh	Frank Wiley, D.
Harrison	Charles C. Haviland.
Lewisboro	Frederic Howe, R.
Mamaroneck	William H. Lange, D.
Mount Pleasant	J. Benedict See, D.
New Castle	Elijah Crossman, D.
New Rochelle	James Connadine, D.
North Castle	William H. Creemer, R.
North Salem	Samuel B. Clark, R.
Ossining	Henry Austin, R.
Pelham	Thomas K. Morrill.
Poundridge	William Jones, R.
Rye	Purdy G. Sands, D.
Scarsdale	Peter M. Dobbs, D.
Somers	Jacob W. Tompkins, R.
Westchester	Alexander Devlin, D.
White Plains	Francis H. Hessels, R.
Yonkers	William H. Doty, R.
Yorktown	Theodore T. Tompkins, R.

List of Supervisors.

Towns.	Names.	Politics.
Bedford	Timothy C. Adams	Rep.
Cortlandt	William Mable	Dem.
East Chester	David Quackinbush	Dem.
Greenburgh	John Benson	Dem.
Harrison	George T. Burling	Rep.
Lewisboro'	John C. Holmes	Rep.
Mamaroneck	Mathias Banta	Dem.
Mt. Pleasant	Moses W. Taylor	Dem.
New Castle	Francis M. Carpenter	Rep.
New Rochelle	Henry D. Phelps	Rep.
North Salem	Odel Close	Rep.
North Castle	Joseph B. See	Rep.
Ossining	Gilbert M. Todd	Dem.
Pelham	Sherman S. Pell	Dem.
Poundridge	Miles Adams	Dem.
Rye	William Ryan	Dem.
Scarsdale	Chauncey T. Secor	Dem.
Somers	James P. Teed	Rep.
West Chester	Daniel J. McGrory	Dem.
White Plains	Lewis C. Platt	Dem.
Yonkers	Jacob Read	Dem.
Yorktown	William James Horton	Dem.

Democrats . . . . . 14; Republicans . . . . . 8.

N. J. Cumming

TOWN HISTORIES.

CHAPTER XV.

SCARSDALE.

BY ALLAN M. BUTLER, M.D.

THE town of Scarsdale is in its general outline rhomboidal, the long diameter running nearly due north and south and extending from a point about a mile south of the county court-house in White Plains in a southerly direction for two miles. The shorter diameter runs nearly due west from Scarsdale Station, on the New York and Harlem Railroad, for about a mile and three-quarters, until it meets "Branch Brook," a small stream forming part of the western boundary of the township. The area of the town is about six thousand acres, and the general regularity of its outline is broken just west of the southern angle by a projecting portion of the town of New Rochelle, nearly a mile in length and ranging from one-half to one-quarter of a mile in breadth. The town is bounded on the northeast by White Plains and a small part of Mamaroneck; on the southeast, by Mamaroneck and New Rochelle; on the southwest by New Rochelle and East Chester and on its entire northwest border by Greenburgh. In the centre of the town rises the Hutchinson River, which flows in a southerly direction, and on the east, another stream, the "Shelldrake,"—or as it appears on the old records, "Branch Brook,"—both flowing into the Sound, the latter being a tributary of the Mamaroneck River.

Along the northwest border of the town flows the river Bronx or Brunx, into which empty several smaller streams which drain the western portion of the town. The Bronx lies entirely within the township of Greenburgh, Scarsdale extending only to its eastern bank.

In its general topography the township is rolling country, though the eastern portion is comparatively high land, while the western portion forms one slope of the valley of the Bronx. The aspect of the town is relieved from monotony by many gentle undulations, frequent small ponds and streams and many tracts of wooded land. In former times the eastern angle of the town was heavily wooded and was known as the "Saxton Forest," from Wm. Saxton, whose name appears on a map of the town bearing the date 1779 as proprietor of a saw-mill in this locality. Although this forest once covered from twelve to fourteen hundred acres, most of it has been cleared, and, except for a few inconsiderable portions, the "Saxton Forest" remains only in name. Bolton, in his history of the county, says: "The most prominent features of Scarsdale, however, are the extensive tracts of woodland which completely cover its wild and romantic hills on the west, displaying themselves to great advantage from every part of the surrounding country. The *Saxton Forest*, which forms a large portion of this woody district, abounds with foxes, rabbits and other wild game, and retains much of its ancient grandeur." This description, however, is incorrect, for although the eastern bank of the Bronx is wooded almost continuously throughout its course along the border of the town, these portions of woodland never formed part of the Saxton Forest, which was on the far eastern side of the town. The brooks were formerly well stocked with trout and small fish, and the woods abounded in game,—the name "Fox Meadows" apparently having been given from the abundance of these animals,—but now there are few fishes in the streams and only an occasional rabbit or quail in the woods.

Digitized by Google

The Bronx, though unnavigable, was formerly a stream of some magnitude, furnishing water-power for a saw and grist-mill, which stood from before the days of the Revolution until the Rebellion near Scarsdale Station, but now fully one-half of the volume of water has been diverted to the new aqueduct or pipe-line which skirts the town on the Greenburgh bank of the river, contributing to the water supply of the city of New York. The general character of the soil of the town is light and sandy loam, but in former years there were many acres of swamp and marsh, most of which has now been drained and improved, furnishing large tracts of rich black loam. Only about half of the acreage of the town is under actual cultivation, the remainder consisting of meadow, pasture and woodland. The ownership of the town, according to the last State census (1875), is divided among ninety-four proprietors, few of whom hold over fifty acres. There is no farming on a large scale, the greater part of the farm product being devoted to home consumption.

The facts in relation to the first settlement of the part of Westchester now included in Scarsdale township are very meagre. It appears, however, that the town was once part of a large tract ceded by the Indian owners to one John Richbell, a native of England, about whom little is known. This tract formed part of the Indian district of "Quaroppas," then occupied by the Mohegans or Mohicans. This was in the year 1660, and Richbell was probably the first white man to settle in the town. For this purchase Richbell received a grant and confirmation from Francis Lovelace, Governor of New York, in 1668, and it had already been confirmed by the government of New Netherlands in 1662. In his patent Richbell received possession of "the three necks bounded on the east by Mamaroneck River, and on the west by Stony Brook, together with the land lying north of these bounds, twenty miles into the woods." Hence, afterwards arose the question as to the ownership of Quaroppas, in the time of Colonel Heathcote. Thirty-six years after this, Richbell's widow, Anne, granted to Caleb Heathcote, of New York, the right to purchase portions of the land included in the above mentioned purchase from the Indians. In 1701 the sale was concluded between Richbell's widow and Colonel Heathcote, the deed dating from March 30th of that year, and being signed by four Indians,—Patthunck, Beaupo, Kohawney and Wapetuck, representing the Mohegan tribe, and by a corresponding number of witnesses.

In this deed, which is still in the possession of the descendants of Colonel Heathcote, the said Indians, "for and in consideration of a certain sum of good and lawful money,"—the amount of which is not stated,—sold to Colonel Heathcote, free of all encumbrance or limitation, "a certain tract of land lying and being in the county of Westchester, bounded as follows: To begin on the west side, at the southernmost end of a ridge known by the name of Richbell's or Horse's ridge, at a great rock and so to run a Northwest line to Bronck's River and on the Eastermost side with Mamaroneck River and from the head thereof to Bronck's River." This he and his assigns were to hold forever, and the Indians faithfully performed their part of the contract, for there is no record of the settlers being molested by them in any way. This tract, together with the other large purchases of Colonel Heathcote—an exception being made of White Plains, to which Colonel Heathcote had a claim which he afterwards raised—was, on March 21, 1701, by royal patent of William III., John Nanfan, Lieutenant-Governor of the province, subscribing to it, erected into the "Lordship and Manor of Scarsdale," to be holden by Colonel Heathcote of the King in free and common soccage, "Paying therefore yearly and every year forever at our city of New York, . . . five pounds current money of New York upon the Nativity of our Lord." By the terms of the royal patent, the lord of the manor was permitted at his pleasure to hold "one court-leet and one court-baron," all fines and assessments going to himself, and it was furthermore granted that "ye tenants of him, ye said Caleb Heathcoate, within ye said manor, shall and may at all times hereafter meet together and choose assessors within ye manor aforesaid," according to the laws prescribed by the General Assembly of the province for cities and towns, "for defraying the public charge of each respective city, town and county aforesaid, and all such sums of money so assessed and levied, to collect and dispose of for such use as any act or acts as the said General Assembly shall exhibit or appoint, to have, hold, possess and enjoy all and singular the said Lorship and Manor of Scarsdale and premises, with all and every of their appurtenances, unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns forever."[1]

The entire Indian history of Scarsdale, so far as it is known, is summed up in the account of the transactions of Richbell and Colonel Heathcote with the Indian proprietors. There is no account of any disturbance from them since the town was settled, nor are there any Indian remains of any account, nothing more than a few arrow-heads and similar relics having been found to mark the former proprietorship of this territory.

Town Statistics.—The first recorded census of the town was taken in 1712, the inhabitants numbering 12, of whom but 5 were white. The next figures are for 1740, when the population had increased so rapidly that there was a total of 255 persons. During the next fifty years the population remained almost stationary, the census of 1790 giving a total of 281 persons; this was lowered within the next ten years, and in 1800 the inhabitants numbered 258. Of these, 224 were whites—107 being males, 117 females—and

[1] A sketch of Colonel Heathcote is inserted in Mr. De Lancey's chapter on the "Manors in Westchester County," in this volume.

Digitized by Google

the remainder were colored, of whom 24 were slaves. In 1810 the population was 259 and in 1814, 292. The next ensuing United States census, in 1820, gives the population as 329, including 42 colored. The State census of 1825 shows a decrease of 8 persons, the total in 1830 being again slightly reduced, the returns showing 317 inhabitants. In 1835 the number of the inhabitants was the same as in 1820, being 329. Of these, 162 were males and 167 females, among these being included 39 colored persons. The number of births this year was 10, and of deaths there were 4. It is interesting to note that up to this time, a constant rivalry had been going on between Pelham and Scarsdale in point of population. In 1790 Pelham was the smallest town in the county in this respect, and from then to 1835 the varying populations of the two towns put first one and then the other ahead in the census reports. Finally, in the census for this year Pelham took the precedence, and Scarsdale has ever since remained the smallest town in the county in respect to its population. Within the next five years the number of inhabitants fell off greatly, and in 1840 but a total of 255 was recorded—a smaller number than any recorded in the censuses of the last hundred years. In 1845 the number had again reached a higher limit than ever before, and 345 inhabitants, including 33 colored, were recorded on the census books. Of these, 170 were males and 175 females. The families of the town numbered 57, with 297 natives of the United States. The foreign born numbered 44, of whom 26 remained aliens. In 1850 the population had risen by one, while the next five years saw a rise of over a hundred, the census of 1855 showing a population of 445, including 28 colored. Of these 205 were males and 240 females; the total of foreign born was 123, of whom 87 were aliens. The families numbered 74, and of the total 322 were native born, 301 being born in the State and 285 in the county. There were 286 single and 138 married persons, 10 widowers and eleven widows. During the period from 1855 to 1865 the population was again increased by more than a hundred persons, reaching the figure of 557, of whom 22 were colored. There were 256 males and 301 females, the foreign born numbering 156. There were 91 families, of whose members 401 were natives of the United States, 377 of New York State and 237 of Westchester County.

As respects their civil condition, 352 were single, 171 married, 11 were widowers and 23 widows. In 1875 the population had dropped to 529, including a colored population of 35. The foreign born numbered 131 and the natives 398, of whom 344 were natives of the State, and 226 of the county. The males in the town numbered 244 and the females 285 and their civil condition was: single 346, married 153, widowers 13, widows 17, the number of families in the town being 91.

In respect to the finances of the town, the first record in relation to them is dated 1788, and is entered in the book of town records. It reads thus—"This may certify that on the 9th day of December, 1788, William Fisher, Collector of the Town of Scarsdale for the year 1788, produced a receipt from Johnathan G. Tompkins, in behalf of Abijah Gilbert, County Treasurer, for the sum of ten pounds, twelve Shillings and six pence, to bring the Town's proportion of money towards the Completion of the Court-House. Bearing date of October 4th, 1788. Entered by Benj. Cornell, clerk."

The taxes for the previous year, 1787, had amounted to £61 35*s.* 1*d.*, but there is no record of the valuation upon which those taxes were assessed. In 1875 the town valuation amounted to $588,850, and the town debt was $29,109, of which $3689 had been contracted on the account of war bonds and bounties, and $25,500 for roads.

In 1880 the town valuation was $620,084, of which $560,284 was real and $53,800 personal property. Thirty years ago there were in the town sixty-two dwelling-houses, valued at $84,550. Ten years after, in 1865, the dwellings numbered eighty-four and their valuation was put at $163,910. The next ten years witnessed a decrease in the number of the dwellings, but at the same time more than a doubling of the valuations. Thus the number of houses was seventy-seven, while their valuation was $438,230. It is hard to understand this apparent conflict of the returns under any other supposition than that the figures given by the census takers in respect to values are entirely erroneous. The owners of land in 1855 numbered forty-five; in 1865, sixty-one; and in 1875, eighty-four.

In regard to a problem which has agitated many a town deeply, the care of the poor, Scarsdale has had little anxiety. The number of paupers has been invariably small and the poor tax correspondingly low. Apparently this was greatest in the early days of the county, when Scarsdale's proportion of the poor tax amounted to £28 10*s.* This was in 1789. In 1785 overseers of the poor had been chosen for the first time, and the positions were afterwards filled at each annual election. In succeeding years the amount raised by the town for the support of the poor was much diminished, $25 being voted for this object in 1800, and $35 in 1804. This amount reached $100 in 1818, $130 the next year and $150 in 1822, but in the intervening years it was much less. Of late years the amount has been hardly noticeable, $50 being voted in 1876, while in 1882 the overseers of the poor were limited in their expenditures for the benefit of vagrants and tramps for that year to $15.

SLAVERY.—It is of considerable interest to note the conditions in which slavery has existed in the town, our first information dating back to 1712. This was eleven years after the formation of the Manor of Scarsdale; so it is probable that the figures apply to the whole manor, and not to the town in its present extent. At this date the inhabitants numbered only

Digitized by Google

twelve, of whom four were whites, all being males and over ten years of age; the remaining eight were slaves, of whom two were females over sixteen years of age, two males under sixteen and the remaining four males over sixteen.

Our next information is forty-three years later, and is gained from a "list of slaves taken April ye 5th, 1755, by Joseph Sutton, Cap^tn^." This information is, of necessity, inaccurate, as the names given are chosen from a list including inhabitants of other places beside Scarsdale, to which some of them may belong, although these names are all familiar in Scarsdale,—David Barker, one male slave; Richard Palmer, one female slave; Jonathan Cornell, one male and one female slave; Jonathan Griffin, one male and one female slave; Richard Cornell, two males and one female slave; Richard Cornell, Jr., one male and one female slave; Benjamin Griffin, one female; and William Griffin, one male and three females, giving a total of sixteen. Thus, in nearly half a century the number of slaves in the town (or manor) had but just doubled. In the town records are many interesting records of inquiries in accordance with the law into the age and condition of certain slaves, to determine whether they should support themselves or rely on the town. The following bears the date of August 10, 1791: "To all whom it may concern, this certifies that a negro man named Prime and a negro woman named Bell, belonging to Ferris Cornell, of the town of Scarsdale, in Westchester County, appears to us to be under the age of fifty years, and of sufficient ability to provide for themselves." This is signed by Jonathan Griffin Tompkins and Benjamin Cornell, poor masters. In another such document, dated three years later, a negro woman named "Sibb," the property of Abigail Cornell, was adjudged capable of maintaining herself without the assistance of the town. According to the census of 1800, the total number of slaves in the town, which then only included Scarsdale proper, was twenty-four, showing even a smaller ratio of increase than before for the half-century, while there were at the same time in the town twenty free colored persons.

About this time, 1799, the Legislature took steps for the gradual abolition of slavery, and shortly afterwards the following document appears in the town records, followed by others of a similar nature: "I, Bartholomew Ward, of the town of Scarsdale, County of Westchester, farmer, in conformity to an Act of Legislature of the State of New York, entitled An Act for the gradual abolition of slavery, do hereby certify to the town clerk of said town that I am now possessed of a female negro child named Doroty, being now of the age of five days, and born of a slave since the fourth of July, 1799. Bartholomew Ward, Scarsdale, October 27, 1801." From this time onward the slaves in the town slowly diminished until, in 1820, there remained but seven, while the free colored population numbered thirty-five souls. This was nearly the end of slavery in the town, and in 1835 not a slave remained.

INDUSTRIES.—Although Scarsdale has never contributed largely to the supply of the markets, the chief industries of the town have always been agricultural. There are no statistics in relation to agricultural products in the early days of the town, but from the records of the town-meetings we may infer—from the number of times the animals are mentioned—that much of the farm live-stock consisted of swine, and also that they caused considerable trouble. The following one of many instances sufficiently indicates: "Also it is the vote of this town-meeting that it shall be lawful, if any hogs are found on the highway not ringed or snouted, to drive them to pound, and the owner of said hogs shall pay the poundage." This appears on the minutes of the meeting of April 6, 1784, and was followed by many similar votes, as well as others in respect to the fencing of the roads to guard against the straying of swine. In the town-meeting of 1790 it was voted that all fences must be four feet six inches high and that they were "not to exceed six inches under the bottom rail, except well underpined with stones, nor to exceed six inches betwix rails until it comes to the fift rail." Even as late as 1887 we find that the office of "Hog Howard" was continued, the duties of the office presumably relating to the management of roving swine. By the State census of 1835 there were 3039 acres of improved land in the town and on the farms were 472 neat cattle, 84 horses, 624 sheep and 464 hogs. This is all we know of the agricultural interests of the town until 1845, the census for this year giving full and interesting particulars. The improved land aggregated 4391 acres, the inhabitants numbering 341 at this time. The acreage devoted to the principal products, together with the amount of the crops, was as follows: Buckwheat, 75 acres, 784 bushels; corn, 229 acres, 8200 bushels; oats, 186 acres, 4495 bushels; rye, 119 acres, 1452 bushels; potatoes, 104 acres, 5265 bushels. The same year 262 yards of homespun cloth were made and the dairy products amounted to 18,635 pounds of butter. The live-stock on farms consisted of 78 horses, 420 neat cattle, 416 swine, 386 sheep, yielding 730 pounds of wool. No returns are given in respect to the value of farm stock or of farm produce, but the latter, so far as the outside market is concerned, was probably inconsiderable, most being devoted to home consumption.

In 1855, when the next State census was taken, the population numbered 445, of whom 45 were landowners. The value of farms was estimated at $427,140 and the acreage of the town was classed thus: Improved, 2801 acres; unimproved, 1132 acres; pasture, 977 acres; and meadow-lands, 786 acres. The yield of hay was 1225 tons. The amount of the principal crops was as follows: Corn, 5982 bushels; oats, 2376 bushels; wheat, 1054 bushels; potatoes, 2080 bush-

Digitized by Google

els; turnips, 1395 bushels. The dairy products were: 17,339 pounds of butter and 19,540 gallons of milk, the latter being exclusive of that consumed at home; 435 pounds of honey were gathered this year, and poultry were sold to the value of $1853. The farm stock consisted of 116 horses, 375 neat cattle (including 213 milch cows and 68 working cattle), 325 swine and 261 sheep, yielding 636 pounds of wool.

The census for 1865, some of the statistics, however, referring to the previous year, gives the following figures: The population amounted to 557 persons, of whom 61 were land-owners. The farm valuation was $712,800, and the acreage divided thus: Improved, 3168 acres; unimproved, 948 acres; pasture, 1264 acres; meadow, 993 acres. The yield of the principal crops was as follows: Hay, 1436 tons; corn, 6435 bushels; oats, 4898 bushels; rye, 1850 bushels; potatoes, 7872 bushels; turnips, 2570 bushels. In the orchards were 5512 apple-trees, giving a yield of 13,663 bushels, and the cider product aggregated 450 barrels. The honey gathered amounted to 730 pounds, and the value of poultry and eggs sold was $1325. The dairy product was: Butter made, 12,143 pounds, and milk sold, 2800 gallons. The live-stock consisted of 142 horses, 322 neat cattle (including 190 milch cows and 60 working oxen), 219 swine (199 being slaughtered and yielding 32,440 pounds of pork), and 214 sheep giving a clip of 363 pounds.

The last State census, that of 1875, gives the following statistics, which, in general, show a falling off from previous figures. The population was 529, of whom 94 were land-owners. The farms of the town were put at a valuation of $630,500, and the acreage was described, thus: Improved, 2566 acres; unimproved, 875 acres; woodland, 531 acres; pasture, 503 acres; and meadow, 1207 acres. The crops were as follows: Hay, 1635 tons; corn, 5145 bushels; oats, 2490 bushels; rye, 2668 bushels; potatoes, 5275 bushels. The apple orchards contained 9950 trees and yielded 37,975 bushels of fruit. Grapes were produced to the amount of 6375 pounds. The value of poultry and eggs sold was $3358, and the dairy product was 9790 pounds of butter made and 4925 gallons of milk sold. The live-stock consisted of 131 horses, 259 neat cattle (including 149 milch cows), 177 swine (140 slaughtered and yielding 28,360 pounds pork), and 67 sheep giving a clip of 321 pounds. The gross receipts from farm produce during the previous year amounted to $32,945.

Although these figures are the latest official returns in regard to the agricultural interests of the town, it is very probable that the decrease in farm products mentioned for 1875 has been continued with little interruption ever since, and that the capital invested in farming in the town is not as large as in former years.

The figures in relation to the raising of sheep show the most marked decline. In 1835 there were six hundred and twenty-four sheep owned in the town, but in the ensuing ten years the number had decreased to three hundred and eighty-six. It is very probable that before the first-mentioned date the number was even greater; but the decrease has been steady, and at the present date the industry is practically extinct. The principal reason for this has been the havoc made by stray dogs. No exact figures are to be had in relation to their depredations among the flocks until the year 1874, when they killed at least twelve sheep. By 1884 they had thinned down the flocks so that they were but a small fraction of their original size, and in that year twenty sheep fell victims to them, thus practically putting an end to this branch of farming.

The following extracts relate to the number and size of the farms existing at the time of the last State census: The farms in the town aggregated forty; of these, two contained from three to ten acres, two from ten to twenty acres, five from twenty to fifty acres, eighteen from fifty to one hundred acres and thirteen from one hundred to one hundred and fifty acres.

Manufactures and Other Enterprises.—Manufacturing has always occupied a very secondary place in Scarsdale, but little capital being devoted to it and almost all capital going to farming. Just above and a short distance to the west of Scarsdale Station, on the Bronx River, and within the limits of the Popham estate, are the ruins of a grist-mill and its dam. This was built prior to the Revolutionary War and was used as a grist and saw-mill, a dam about fifteen feet high intercepting the river at this point and furnishing good water-power. This belonged to the estate of the Honorable Richard Morris, whose house was not far distant, and one Crawford by name was employed as miller. Here was the timber sawn out of which the Morris house and several others of the old mansions were built, but the mill has not survived as long as they. For many years it was put to its original purposes, but some time previous to the War of the Rebellion it was used for the manufacture of axles, and in 1862 it was converted into a manufactory of shoddy. As no mention appears to have been made of it in either the town records or census reports its output in either capacity was probably not great. Within a year from this time, in 1863, it took fire and was burned to the ground and has never since been rebuilt.

Nothing but a few ruins and several fragments of machinery remain to mark the site of this venerable mill, which was probably one of the first in the county. The dam, also, has almost entirely disappeared, having slowly fallen into ruin.

The building now known as "The Scarsdale Opera-House," but formerly the "Fox Meadow Chapel," was originally used as a carriage factory, but only for a comparatively short time, as in 1856 the building was added, together with the neighboring property, to the Fox Meadow estate and converted into a chapel. There are no figures to show the extent of the manufacturing interest carried on here, but it was doubt-

Digitized by Google

less of very limited proportions. Almost opposite this building, and about four hundred rods to the north of it, on the bank of the Bronx River, formerly stood a powder-mill, the property of a German named Haubold. This was erected about the year 1847, when the Hudson River Railroad was in process of construction, and furnished much powder for this work. Near the main building stood a magazine and a cooper-shop and other outbuildings. Although the manufacture of powder was successfully carried on here for a time, it was finally abandoned, as the works were ruined by several destructive explosions. Both the magazine and the cooper-shop were thus destroyed at different times, and although the mill has been partially repaired and used for other purposes, nothing remains of either cooper-shop or magazine.

About the year 1880 this property came into the hands of Mr. Leggo, who has erected several small buildings there and started an establishment for the manufacture of lithographic stones and plates, which is now most successfully carried on.

Political History.—The present township of Scarsdale was organized on the 7th of March, 1788, but previous to this meetings had been annually held for the election of town officers, under the acts of the Legislature as early as 1783, and before that even, by the terms of the royal patent granted to Colonel Heathcote, though no records are extant so far as we know of meetings or proceedings of the town prior to the latter date. The first entry in the town records is as follows, given verbatim:

"By order of the Council of Appointment, by the Act of the Legislature, Intitled an Act to provide for the temporal government of the Southern parts of the State, whenever the enemy shall abandon or be dispossessed of the same, and until the Legislature can be convened,—Passed Oct. 23d, 1779. And by virtue of direction, Jesse Hunt, Esq., Sheriff of Westchester County, Appointing Jonathan Griffin Tompkins, Thomas Cornell and Stephen Cornell to Superintend the town-meeting att the Manner of Scarsdale, on the 22d Decr., 1783, then and there to choose town officers until the next annual meeting. The town met on the said day at the house of Jonathan Griffin, near the usual place of holding said meetings; then and there the inhabitants proceed to choose town officers by a majority of votes,—Benjamin Cornell, clerk; Jonathan G. Tompkins, supervisor; Stephen Cornell and Thomas Cornell, assessors; Israel Herriott, constable and collector; Ferris Cornell and Samuel Fisher, overseers of highway; Ferris Cornell, pounder; John Compton and Thomas Cornell, fence and damage viewers. Extracted from the Original by Benjamin Cornell, clerk."

The second meeting was held on the 6th of April, 1784, "att the School house in Said Manner, near Capt. Jonathan Griffin's," this probably being the usual place for the town-meetings to be held, referred to in the minutes of the previous year. In 1785 the offices of overseers of the poor were instituted, John Barker and Francis Secor being the first incumbents. In the town-meeting of 1789 it was enacted that the "Fence and Damage Viewers" should receive for their services at the rate of six shillings per diem, this being the first mention of any remuneration for town officers. The next year three "Commissioners of Highways" were chosen in addition to the other officers, Jonathan G. Tompkins, John Barker and John Cornell being selected to fill the positions. In 1792, nine years after the first recorded town-meeting, the following officers were chosen: Caleb Tompkins, town clerk; Jonathan G. Tompkins, supervisor; J. G. Tompkins, John Barker, John Cornell and William Popham, commissioners of highways; William Popham and Jonathan G. Tompkins, poor masters; Elijah Cudney, constable and collector; John Barker, Caleb Tompkins and Thomas Cornell, assessors; Benjamin Underhill and Caleb Angevine, overseers of highways; Ferris Cornell and Elijah Purdy, Jr., fence and damage viewers; and Bartholomew Griffin, pounder. Up to this year Jonathan G. Tompkins and Benjamin Cornell had held the offices of supervisor and town clerk respectively since the first meeting. On April 5, 1796, commissioners of schools were chosen for the first time, as before mentioned. In 1801 and for several succeeding years Caleb Tompkins was chosen to the offices both of supervisor and of town clerk, thus being created a precedent which was frequently followed in subsequent town elections. In 1809 he was succeeded as town clerk by his brother Enoch, and held no local office of importance until 1822, when he was for the third time chosen supervisor, and that year Enoch Tompkins was succeeded in the town clerkship by Richard M. Popham. In 1823 William A. Popham held his first town office, that of school commissioner, and in 1825 he was chosen town clerk to succeed his brother Richard, holding the office for the next five years. In 1829 we find that the meeting was held on April 7th at "the house of James Varian, Innkeeper in said town," now known as the "Wayside Cottage." In 1830 the town clerk was Samuel Tompkins, and he was in turn succeeded, in 1831, by Caleb Tompkins, of a younger generation than the former one of that name. In 1832 the first mention is made of the election of justices of the peace in town-meeting, the following being chosen: Nathaniel Brown, Elijah Purdy and John Bennett, Jr., and in 1835 the first tax was laid upon the owners of dogs. For the next succeeding years the office of town clerk was held by the following persons: 1838, Francis Losee; 1839–40, Caleb Tompkins; 1841-42, George B. Varian; and 1843, Elias A. Travise. In 1848 the town-meeting was held for the first time in the "Fox Meadow" school-house, which had replaced the old building which had been burned early in the century.

In 1860 the following were chosen officers of the town: Francis Secor, supervisor (for the tenth time); James F. Palmer, town clerk; David Underhill, assessor; Elijah Tompkins, James F. Palmer, Lawrence Dobbs and Elias G. Drake, path masters; James Willetts, James D. McCabe and Elias G. Drake, pound masters; James Willetts, commissioner of highways; James F. Palmer, justice of peace; Richard Palmer, and Lawrence Dobbs, overseers of the poor; Richard Palmer, James Willetts and Jonathan G. Tompkins, inspectors of elections; Orrin A. Weed, constable

Digitized by Google

and collector; and William H. Boda, constable. At the next town-meeting it was voted "that the Rail Road depot, the School-House and the apple tree near and West of —— house, in the town of Scarsdale, be and hereby are designated as proper places for posting legal notices."

During the years of the Rebellion a number of measures were passed in relation to the encouragement of volunteering and the payment of substitutes. In September, 1863, it was voted to pay three hundred dollars each to those citizens that were conscripted or to their substitutes, and early in the next year it was voted to raise thirty-two hundred dollars for this purpose, this amount being afterward raised to four thousand dollars. In January, 1865, at a special meeting of the town, it was voted that seven hundred dollars should be paid for each substitute or volunteer, of which, in the case of substitutes, the town provided six hundred dollars and the person conscripted the remainder.

In 1867 an attempt was made to change the southern boundary of the town so as to include a part of the township of East Chester, but this was unsuccessful, and, although subsequent attempts to obtain this have been made, the boundary of the town remains unchanged. The next year the place of meeting was changed from the "Fox Meadow School-House" to the residence of James F. Palmer, near the centre of the town, on the Mamaroneck road, and this continued to be used for town-meetings, and, after 1872, for general elections, until the town voted, in 1879, to occupy the basement of the new school-house for town uses, which has since been known as the "Town Hall."

In 1870 the following town-officers were elected: Francis Secor, supervisor; James F. Palmer, town clerk; Benjamin Archer, Francis Secor, John Read and Elias G. Drake, pound masters; Oliver A. Hyatt, assessor; Elijah S. Tompkins, commissioner of highways; Alexander Taylor, collector; Robert C. Popham and Hiram K. Benedict, justices of peace; Benj. Archer and Gilbert Ward, overseers of poor; Alexander Taylor, Stephen Disbrow and John Forkle, constables; and Peter M. Dobbs and James F. Palmer, inspectors of election. In 1870 and the next succeeding years the town was obliged to put itself under a great burden of debt on account of the so-called improvements in the post road. Extensive and unnecessary alterations were made then under the management of the "ring" which was then in power in New York, and the debt of the town was thereby largely increased. In 1872 it was voted to raise four thousand and sixty-five dollars to pay principal and interest on the town road bonds, thus reducing the town indebtedness in part, and also to raise $569.30 to pay principal and interest on the town bounty bonds issued during the war. The next few years were very quiet in respect to the history of the town, the building of the new school-house being the chief object of interest. In 1880 the town met for the first time in the basement of this building, in accordance with the vote of the preceding year, and the following officers were chosen: Oliver A. Hyatt, supervisor; Gilbert W. Dobbs, town clerk; Charles Carpenter, assessor; George J. Willetts, commissioner of highways; John G. Sweet, collector; Chauncey T. Secor, Charles Griffin and Lewis C. Popham, justices of the peace; George H. Morse, Daniel Dows, John McNulty and William Drewry, constables; John H. Carpenter and Charles V. McNulty, inspectors of election; Lawrence Dobbs and Charles Griffin, overseers of poor; Francis Secor and Isaac Lepugy, town auditors, and C. Bayard Fish and Benj. J. Carpenter, commissioners of excise.

On the 11th of September, 1882, a town health board was organized for the first time, Charles Nordquist, M.D., being chosen town physician and Francis Secor health officer. In 1883 Dr. Nordquist was again chosen town-physician and C. Bayard Fish replaced Francis Secor as health officer.

Although in the main, the local and general elections of the town have been harmonious and unattended by undue friction, they have seldom failed to awaken interest, especially of late, and as a result a full vote has usually been polled, especially in presidential years. Our earliest ideas of the political leanings of the township are gathered from the result of the elections for governor of the state in 1822 and 1824. In the first mentioned year the election lasted for three days, but the vote polled was exceptionally small, aggregating but eighteen out of a population of more than three hundred persons. 1823 also proved to be an "off year," but six votes being polled in the election for members of the State legislature. In 1824 a total of twenty-eight was reached in the election for governor, De Witt Clinton receiving seven votes, Samuel Young nineteen, and Aaron and Stephen Ward, each a single vote. Two years afterward the total fell to nineteen votes in the election for governor, Clinton receiving eleven and Rochester eight. In the election for governor in 1828 Van Buren received twenty-four and Thompson twenty votes, and the same year in the choice of presidential electors Jacob Odell received twenty-four votes and John Odell twenty-one. In the next eighteen years the town-records are silent upon the subject of elections, and it is not till 1846 that we have any further returns. In this year the town voted unanimously in favor of "No License," but by a vote ridiculously small, considering that the males of voting age numbered more than sixty, but *six* votes were cast. That so little apparent interest was manifested in so important a question is explained by the fact that the town has always been opposed to liquor selling,—but one licensed inn having ever existed within the boundaries—so that there could have been no doubt as to the result and consequently the vote was light.

During the next decade the population increased

Digitized by Google

by one hundred and four souls, the number of votes rising to eighty-two in the same time. The next ten years saw the population again increased by more than one hundred souls, and the number of voters at the end of this period (1865) was one hundred and nine. In 1875 the total of voters had fallen to one hundred and three, but the population had likewise decreased by twenty-eight.

In the general election of 1840 Scarsdale gave Van Buren a majority of eight, Harrison receiving twenty-five votes to his opponent's thirty-three. In the next presidential election Polk's majority over Clay was fifteen in Scarsdale. For the election of 1848 the returns are wanting, but in 1852 the town gave Scott twenty-four votes and Pierce twenty-nine. In 1856 the vote of Scarsdale was as follows: Fremont twenty; Fillmore, thirteen; Buchanan, twenty-seven. In 1860 the town gave the Fusion candidates thirty-six votes against thirty-one for Lincoln and Hamlin, and the same year, in the gubernatorial contest, gave Morgan thirty-one votes, Kelly thirty-five and Brady one. In 1864 the presidential vote of the town stood for McClellan fifty-two votes and Lincoln thirty-nine. For the elections of 1868 the returns are more complete. For president, Grant, the Republican candidate, received forty-six votes against Seymour's forty-one. For governor, Griswold (Republican) received forty-five votes and Hoffman (Democrat) forty-three. For Congress, Potter (Democrat) received forty-four votes and Haggerty (Republican) forty-one. At the next general election the town went strongly Republican, giving Grant forty-eight votes for president against twenty-four for Greeley, and at the same time Dix (Republican) received fifty votes for governor and Kiernan but twenty-one. For congress Forman (Republican) received forty-seven votes and Cox (Democrat) twenty-four, and for Assembly Wright (Republican) received fifty-nine votes against eleven for Dusenberry (Democrat). In the election of 1876 Scarsdale gave Hayes sixty-four votes and Tilden fifty-three, and in 1880 Garfield received seventy-four votes,—the largest vote given in the town for any candidate,—and Hancock fifty-five. In the last general election, 1884, Scarsdale was greatly stirred by the questions at stake and the fight was very bitter, though without any undue manifestation of feeling. In the end the scale was turned by the independent vote, Cleveland receiving a majority of three over Blaine.

From the above it will be observed that Scarsdale has come out on the winning side in all but three of the presidential contests there recorded, whence it has been said—as of many other towns also, however,—"As Scarsdale goes, so goes the country."

Military History.—Although the scene of no battle or famous military exploit during the Revolution, Scarsdale was situated in the midst of the tract known as the "Neutral Ground," which was the scene of many a dark and inhuman deed at the hands of the prowling "Cow Boys" or "Skinners," as the guerrilla bands of the British and Americans respectively, were called, and so the town of Scarsdale came in for a full share of their depredations. Many of the inhabitants were Tories. It is stated that only three families in the town were in favor of the patriot cause, and although this may not be strictly true, it sufficiently indicates the drift of feeling in the township. What few patriots there were suffered severely for their patriotism. The Varian family, who occupied what is now known as "Wayside Cottage," after enduring for some time the importunate demands of the guerrillas fled to Connecticut for refuge, not returning till the end of the war; while Caleb Tompkins was obliged to leave his home and flee for his life, before the British. In the "Spy," Cooper treats of this time and locality with great force and interest, but of less romantic and more matter-of-fact details there is great lack. In regard to the troops furnished by the town of Scarsdale, Baird in his "History of Rye," says, "New York was required by the Continental Congress to contribute her quota of three thousand men. Four regiments were raised in the province. The call for soldiers was promptly responded to by this town (Rye). Three companies were formed, mostly within the limits of Rye, which as yet included Harrison and the White Plains. These companies were embraced in the 'Second Battalion of Westchester County.' The second company included the men from Scarsdale, White Plains and Brown's Point. The number furnished by Scarsdale is unknown, but the name of James Verian (Varian) appears as first-lieutenant of the company. Of him, we find that during the war, he rendered service under the Colonial flag, and his possessions were despoiled by the human wolves infesting this part of Westchester County during the war, and who were known as 'Skinners' and 'Cowboys.' For twenty years prior to his decease he was a helpless paralytic, caused by exposure in the patriotic cause."

Michael Varian, a brother, likewise moved to Scarsdale in 1775 and took an active part on the patriotic side, but returned to New York at the close of the war. At one time during this troublesome period Judge Caleb Tompkins, who had rendered himself obnoxious to the Royalists, and whose residence formerly occupied the site where now stands the house of Charles Butler, was obliged to gather together what he could of his household goods into an ox-cart and flee before the advance of the British. When he arrived at the swamp just northeast of the village of White Plains he was so closely pursued that he abandoned his cattle, sending them on into the woods near Kensico, while he himself descended into the swamp and hid in the water, his head only above the surface. In this way he managed to escape from his pursuers and afterwards was able to return to his home. Scarsdale was the scene of the movements of the patriot and royal troops prior to the battle of White Plains,

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF C. W. DICKEL,
SCARSDALE, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

as well as again when the British were commanded by General Howe.

It is said that the old Fish house was occupied by Sir William Howe for some time as his headquarters, and that near by are the graves of several of his officers who fell in service. It is probable that the British army was for some time within the limits of Scarsdale previous to the battle of White Plains, for they moved but slowly after their landing near New Rochelle. Speaking of this battle, Baird says, "Meanwhile the enemy had advanced from Scarsdale, and after a skirmish near the present village of Hart's Corners, a little more than a mile south of the lines, had arrived in view of the American forces."

Still another account is as follows: On the 21st the British removed and encamped on New Rochelle Heights, north of the village and on both sides of the road leading to Scarsdale. This camp was broken up on the 25th, and the army moved forward to a position upon the high grounds of Scarsdale, on the site of the late John Bennet's farm, and there remained till the morning of the 28th of October. Then they moved from camp in two columns, the right under command of General Clinton and the left under that of General de Heister, and coming in sight of the Americans by 10 A.M., there followed the battle of White Plains.

After this, Scarsdale was the scene of but few military movements, unless we except the uninterrupted ravages of the marauding parties, but in 1781 it is unimportantly mentioned in a letter from Captain Marquand to Sir Henry Clinton, dated July 15th. He says: "Waterbury (a British Captain) re-inforced by some militia arrived the 13th, at Van Hart's, at Scarsdale, a district between White Plains and Mamaroneck." At this time the whole county was more or less occupied by the British, who were watching the movements of Washington on the hilly country further north. A few relics relating to this period which are now in possession of James McCabe, are some bullets and a cannon-ball found in the vicinity of his residence, as well as a silver ornament from the front of a cap—presumably that of a British officer.

During the second war with England, or the War of 1812, Scarsdale varied its peaceful routine little if at all. It furnished the State, however, with its War Governor, Daniel D. Tompkins, who so thoroughly identified himself with his work that the history of these times in New York is the history of his own life. Besides Governor Tompkins, Scarsdale furnished the country with another brave man, Colonel Jonathan Varian, a son of the James Varian who fought so well in the Revolution. At one time the peace of the town was threatened, when it was announced that the British forces would attempt a landing at Mamaroneck, and many volunteered to repel the threatened attack. Among them was William S. Popham, who died June 18, 1885.

At the time of the outbreak of the Rebellion there were eighty-one persons in the town returned as liable for military duty, of whom twenty-four were members of various regiments of the National Guard as follows: belonging to the Seventh Regiment, three; to the Fifty-first, one; to the Seventy-first, two; and to the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Regiment, seventeen; while one is enrolled quarter-master. There are no accurate records of the exact number volunteering from the town of Scarsdale, and of those sent as substitutes or drafted, but the most reliable figures give the number credited to Scarsdale during the Rebellion as follows: Serving in the army, thirty-eight, and in the navy, eleven. Fourteen of those credited to the army were enlisted as follows: Fifty-first Infantry, one; Ninety-fifth Infantry, one; One Hundred And Thirty-fifth Infantry, four; One Hundred and Seventy-eighth Infantry, one; Fifth Artillery, one; Second Kansas Regiment, one; Seventh Militia Regiment, one; and Navy, one. But one citizen of Scarsdale died in the war, he being a member of the Sixth Artillery.

CHURCHES.—According to Bolton, Scarsdale, under the Provincial government, constituted one of the seven districts of Rye parish in 1763, contributing twenty-five pounds four shillings and sixpence to the vestry tax and the poor of the parish. He further says: "The parochial clergy appear to have officiated here at a very early period, as the Rev. Robert Jenney, writing to the Bishop of London in 1724, says: 'I officiate eight times per annum at Mamaroneck for Scarsdale and Fox's Meadows.' In 1727 there were thirty persons in Scarsdale upon whom the parochial tax was levied. Mr. Wetmore, writing to the Gospel Society in 1744, observes: 'I have a considerable congregation at the White Plains and Scarsdale, above seven miles west of the parish church, which I also attend once in two months." By far the oldest religious organization actually settled in the town is the Society of Friends, who have had a meeting-house of their own here for more than a century, but their history is chiefly connected with Mamaroneck, where they held their first meeting in the county in 1702. In six years they had built a meeting-house in Mamaroneck, and we find that a "monthly meeting" was appointed to be held there in April, 1725, by order of the "Yearly Meeting" of Friends in Flushing, L. I., at that time the centre of the sect in the colonies. In 1728 the Mamaroneck meeting was constituted a "Preparative" meeting, and in 1739 a new meeting-house was erected. The records in the possession of the Scarsdale meeting are very voluminous, but scarcely refer to the Society as it exists here, being chiefly occupied with the past. The meeting-house was moved "to a central location" between the years 1768–1770, and this probably refers to the first meeting-house in Scarsdale. This meeting-house dated from about this time, being set down on the site of the present structure upon a map "of the White Plains constituting part of Scarsdale,"

Digitized by Google

bearing the date 1779. Two buildings are now used by the Society—one by the Orthodox Friends and the other by the Hicksites, both being of comparatively recent construction, occupying the site of the former venerable structure. The house and church is a plain frame building of two stories, about forty feet square, with a porch in front into which open the doors. Both meeting-houses are quite unpretending, of the plainest type of architecture, and painted in quiet drab colors quite devoid of ornamentation. They stand in the far southeastern corner of the town, at the junction of Lincoln and Griffin Avenues, and are surrounded by a small grove of handsome trees. According to the census of 1845 the Society possessed two buildings valued at one thousand one hundred and fifty dollars, and twenty years later the value of the buildings and lot was put at three thousand dollars. At the latter date the seating capacity of the buildings was three hundred and eighty, and the usual attendance seventy persons.

But while on the eastern side of the town the Society of Friends was slowly growing and becoming firmly established, the western side, and in fact all the rest of the town, had no religious organization of any kind. At odd times the services of the Episcopal Church were held in private residences by visiting clergy, and an occasional visitation was made by the rectors of neighboring churches, but beyond this there was nothing.

The Episcopal Church was incorporated September 3, 1849, under the name and style of "The Rector, Church Wardens and Vestrymen of the Church of St. James the Less, in the township of Scarsdale," and steps were at once taken towards the building of a church edifice. Pending the completion of this, services were held for some months in the former residence of Hon. Richard Morris, then occupied by William S. Popham, son of Major Popham of Revolutionary fame, at which the Rev. Dr. Morton, of Philadelphia, and others of the clergy officiated.

The corner-stone of the first church was laid on the 29th of June, 1850, by the Rt. Rev. W. R. Whittingham, D.D., bishop of Maryland. The consecration of the completed edifice took place on the 28th of June, 1851, the services being conducted by the Rt. Rev. W. H. De Lancey, bishop of Western New York, acting in the disability of the bishop of New York. The first wedding in the new church was celebrated on the 27th of May, 1852, and the first confirmation service took place on the 12th of September of the same year, seventeen persons receiving the rite.

Owing to the small population of the parish the building of the church had been no easy task, but all gave as they could, and heartily seconded the efforts of the original movers, and the result was the possession of a church building that proved a great blessing to all. To quote from a sermon of the present rector of the parish, Rev. Francis Chase, which was delivered the Sunday after the destruction of the church by fire: "Doubtless few churches have ever been erected into whose walls have been built more self-denial and sacrifice. Even children, I am told, used to go without their customary indulgences in order to have something to contribute toward the structure or its appropriate furniture. The poor gave freely of their labor, or else, to bring a money offering, deprived themselves of things which they could ill have spared for any other cause. Seeing the goodwill and earnestness shown by the initiators of the enterprise, others outside became interested, and came forward with gifts and helpful deeds, so that a great many persons not immediately connected with this church had a substantial investment in it." In June, 1850, the grounds immediately surrounding the church, to the amount of about three and a quarter acres, were conveyed to the parish by William H. Popham in the form of a lease for a thousand years upon the following terms: "Yielding and paying therefor unto the said party of the first part and his heirs yearly and every year during the said time hereby granted the yearly rent or sum of one silver dime, lawful money of the United States of America, on the Festival of St. Philip and St. James in each and every year; and, also, the parties of the second part, or their successors in office, shall not at any time during the continuance of the time hereby granted, let, underlet, assign, sell or convey the whole or any part of said premises to any person or persons, sole or corporate whatever, except the right or privilege of burial in said ground; and upon the further condition that religious services in said church during said time shall be performed according to the form prescribed by the Book of Common Prayer, or the administration of the sacraments and other rites and ceremonies as prescribed in said book for the use of the Protestant Episcopal Church of the United States of America, and of the doctrine and discipline therein set forth, and the canons of said church by a duly and regularly ordained minister of said Protestant Episcopal Church, or by one allowed by the canons of said church to officiate, or by a duly ordained minister of the Church of England as now by law Established, and none other; provided always, nevertheless, that if the rent above reserved shall not be demanded by, or paid to, the said party of the first part, or his heirs on or before the Feast of St. Andrew in every year, after the same shall have been due, that then said parties of the second part shall forever thereafter be discharged from the payment of the same."

The church is situated upon a slight eminence, a quarter of a mile from the Bronx River and the Harlem Railroad, and about the same distance from the old Boston turnpike, in a convenient location, while to the south and west of the building is the portion of the grounds set apart as the parish burying-place. Bolton gives the following concise and interesting description of the first church edifice: "The style of

the building is early English, or first pointed, according to Riskman's Nomenclature. It is constructed of native stone, with dressings of the white dolomitic marble, and consists of a nave, chancel, with sacristy attached, and porch. The nave, which is 50 feet by 24 feet in the clear, with sittings for about 211, is divided into four bays, the flank walls of which are pierced with couplets, excepting the first bay from the west end, on the south side, which contains a door leading to the porch. The roof is open, with rafters diagonally traced. The pulpit is in the northeast corner of the nave. A font of the largest size (2 feet 6 inches across the bowl) stands in the southeast corner of the nave. It is circular, supported on a central octagonal stem, surrounded by four detached pillars of white marble, and was presented by the sisters of the first rector of the parish. The seats are open and entirely free of any charge for rent or use—the church being supported by voluntary contributions at the offertory. The organ, presented by a member of the vestry, is situated at the west end of the nave. The chancel, 20 feet by 16 feet, in the clear, is separated from the nave by the chancel arch. The choir is raised two steps above the nave and has two stalls on the south side. On the north it opens, by a door, into the sacristy. The sanctuary, elevated above the choir by two steps, is about 8 feet in depth, containing an altar 6 feet by three feet, on a foot pace, a credence-shelf on the south side and bishop's seat on the north. The chancel is lighted by a triplet of richly-stained glass, the middle lancet of which contains a cross within the *Vesica piscis;* the south, a dove and font; and the north, a paten and chalice. The rest of the glass (excepting the west end of the nave, which is richly grisailed, and the southern windows of the chancel, which have colored borders) is plain enameled. The whole of the stained glass was manufactured by Mr. John Bolton, of Pelham. Over the central lancet, in the chancel, and in the middle of the west gable, are triangular, trifoliated lights, with colored glass." Frank Wills, of New York, was the architect, and the cost of the entire edifice is put by Mr. Bolton as about five thousand dollars; but this is probably too small, as much labor and material were contributed by individuals which are probably not included in the above estimate. The following description of the communion service is likewise taken from Bolton's "History of Westchester:" "The communion service, presented on the day of consecration, consists of the following articles: A flagon, inscribed 'The blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth from all Sin;' two silver chalices, each having the following inscription: 'I will receive the cup of Salvation;' a paten, with the legend 'I will offer unto Thee the Sacrifice of Thanksgiving;' and a silver alms-basin." The bishop's chair, bearing on the back the symbol of the episcopal office—the bishop's mitre—was the gift of the builder, Henry Cornell, while the altar-cloth and linen, as well as the service-books, were likewise presented by friends. The triplet, which lighted the chancel, was subsequently filled with beautiful, stained-glass windows, in memory of Miss Cornelia H. Guion.

The central lancet contained a representation of the Saviour holding in his arms the Sacramental Loaf. The glass of the left lancet represented St. Philip, and that of the right, St. James the Less. The large bell, cast by Meneely, of Troy, was a present to the parish, and, as it was found to be too large for the small belfry at the summit of the west gable, it was put in position near the porch, upon the ground. On October 15, 1864, William Sutley Lang, a resident of the parish, communicated to the vestry the offer of a chapel, to be attached to the church. This offer was promptly accepted, and the chapel, being a memorial of the lately-deceased wife of the donor, was erected shortly thereafter. The structure was to the north of the chancel and communicated directly with the sacristy. It was lighted by a couplet at the east end, facing which was the entrance-door and the reading-desk. In the north wall, and facing the entrance to the sacristy, was cut a tablet to the memory of Susan Bailey Lang. This edifice contained sittings for about thirty-three persons, and was chiefly used for the Sunday-school and for week-day services.

On the evening of Palm Sunday, April 2, 1882, the beautiful little church was almost totally destroyed by fire,—owing apparently to a defective flue,—and the chapel and almost all the furnishings were involved in the general destruction. The ruin was nearly complete, nothing but a small portion of the walls remaining.

Fortunately, there was an insurance on the building, and, although much difficulty and delay were experienced in settling matters with the insurance companies, who preferred to rebuild themselves rather than pay the insurance, work on a new church was finally begun, and after many months of anxiety and trouble the new building was completed, services being meanwhile held in private houses.

The services of re-consecration took place on the 4th of November, 1883, just nineteen months after the conflagration, and were conducted by the Right Rev. H. C. Potter, assistant bishop of New York, aided by several others of the clergy. Of these ceremonies the *Churchman* for November 17th has the following account: "This church was re-consecrated on Sunday, November 4th, by the assistant bishop of the diocese, aided by the Rev. Francis Chase, rector; the Rev. Dr. Olsen, a former rector; the Rev. W. W. Montgomery, of Mamaroneck; the Rev. F. B. Van Kleeck, of White Plains; and the Rev. Messrs. Forbes and Drisler. The church, repaired and rebuilt after the fire of last year, and adorned with many gifts from parishioners and friends, was bright and cheerful. A large congregation was in attendance and the music, though simple, was perfect. The bishop delivered the sermon, which was worthy to be heard in

Digitized by Google

every quarter of the commonwealth. Three persons were confirmed. In the afternoon the Rev. Dr. Olsen preached to his former flock. It was a day to be long remembered in Scarsdale."

In external appearance the new church is very like the first building, differing in no essential particular, although the workmanship in parts is inferior to that of the former. Within, also, the church is little changed, the arrangement and construction of chancel, nave, roof and windows being as before. The tone of the walls and woodwork is, however, much lighter than in the former building, while the stained glass is but a parody upon the beautiful chancel windows of the old church. The font has been almost exactly restored, and stands just outside of the chancel, on the right. The new furniture, consisting of altar, chancel-chair, double stall, reading desk, pulpit and brass lectern, is quite different in style from that which it replaces, but is handsome, and harmonizes well with the surroundings. It is the gift of friends of the parish, in memory of Mrs. Valeria Baugess, a former parishioner, whose remains lie in the little churchyard. Other gifts include a full set of lesson-books, and pulpit-lamp, altar-cover, altar-vases and alms-basin, all in brass. The organ,—of one manual,—from the shops of Hood & Hastings, Boston, is very prettily decorated, and was purchased with the insurance money of the former organ, occupying the same position,—at the western end of the nave. The chapel is nearly an exact counterpart of the one it replaces.

Belonging to the church is a commodious rectory, situated on a pleasant spot nearly due north of the church, and about five minutes' walk from it.

Following is a list of all the rectors of Scarsdale:

Election or Acceptance of Call.	Resignation.
January 31, 1850, Rev James F. Le Baron	
April 1, 1851, Rev. William M. Olsen	October 1, 1871.
December 3, 1871, Rev. Stephen F. Holmes . .	May 1, 1872.
July 1, 1872, Rev. Henry Webbe	August 31, 1873.
January 28, 1874, Rev. William A. Holbrook . .	October 8, 1877.
February 1, 1879, Rev. Francis Chase.	

In 1853, two years after the consecration of the church, the following were the published statistics of the parish: Families, 20; souls, 115; baptisms, 4; communicants, 50. In 1855 the church building and lot were valued at $6500, and the seating capacity of the former was for 211 persons. The attendance was 120 persons, and the communicants numbered 53. In 1865 the valuation of the property had risen to $8000. There were 60 communicants and an average attendance of 40 persons. The following are the latest parish statistics: Families, 45; souls, 214; baptisms, 7; confirmations, 3; marriages, 3; burials, 6; communicants, 74; Sunday-school scholars, 44; teachers, 7. Total amount collected for all objects, $2555.02.

The following were the original officers of the parish: William S. Popham and Mark Spencer, church wardens; Charles W. Carmer, William H. Popham, Francis McFarlan, Joshua Underhill, Edmund Ludlow, Samuel E. Lyon, Augustus Bleecker and Orrin Weed, vestrymen. The following are the present officers of the parish, the senior wardenship being now vacant on account of the recent death of the Honorable William S. Popham, who had held the office of senior church warden continuously since the foundation of the parish, viz.: Lewis C. Popham, church warden; Alexander B. Crane, James Bleecker, Charles K. Fleming, Oliver A. Hyatt, S. Bayard Fish, Lewis B. Atterbury, Henry W. Bates and Cornelius B. Fish, vestrymen.

The interments in the parish graveyard number one hundred and ten. To the southwest of the church are the vaults of the Bleecker, McFarlan and Popham families, and in the last-named repose the remains of the late William Popham, of Revolutionary fame, and his son, William Sherbrooke Popham. In this churchyard lie the remains of several unknown persons who died within the town limits, and so were given burial here. The following curious epitaph,—the only peculiar one in the little burying-ground,—appears on the tombstone of James Bell. The stone was prepared by him and the lines were presumably of his own composition,—

"All you friends who are gathered here to weep,
Behold the grave wherein I sleep;
Prepare for death while you are well,—
You'll be entombed as well as Bell."

At the northwest corner of the Fox Meadow estate, and within a few rods of Hartsdale Station, stands a small two-story frame structure formerly known as the "Fox Meadow Chapel." This building was first used as a carriage factory, but soon after the estate passed into the hands of Charles Butler, in 1856, it was converted into a private chapel under the above name. The first floor contained seatings for about a hundred persons and at the south end of the room was a dais with a small pulpit. The second story was merely used as a loft. For many years the chapel was used by no organized society, but its pulpit was occupied, upon invitation, by various Presbyterian clergymen, among others, by the Rev. Drs. Lyman Abbott and Irenæus Prime. At a later period the chapel was used by the Methodist Society of Hartsdale, who held there their Sunday-school and afternoon services,—their own church being inconveniently situated. This was continued until the building of a new church by the society rendered the use of the chapel unnecessary. Since then the chapel has not been used for religious purposes beyond the holding of an occasional prayer-meeting within its walls. For some time thereafter the upper floor was occupied by a local temperance club as its meeting-room, and in 1875 and again in 1882 the lower floor was used as a theatre for the presentation of amateur performances, under the name of the "Scarsdale Opera-House." The building is now arranged for such purposes, with a stage, etc., on the ground floor, the auditorium

Digitized by Google

having a seating capacity for about one hundred and twenty-five persons.

Although, until the building of the Church of St. James the Less, Scarsdale had no place of worship besides the Friends' Meeting-House, services were held in the town for many years previous to that date. For this purpose use was made of the old "Fox Meadow" school-house, which formerly stood on Fish's Hill, the Methodists and Presbyterians holding services on alternate Sundays. The Rev. George Donovan, a clergyman of the former denomination, who contributed so much to the early success of the public school, often officiated here as pastor as well pedagogue. Again, during the Rebellion, when there appears to have been some interruption in the services at Fox Meadow Chapel, services were frequently held in the house of Dr. Bruen, on the former Cooper estate.

SCHOOLS.—Although the early records of the Scarsdale public school have entirely disappeared, there appears to have been such a school in existence at the end of the last century, for the town-meeting of 1784 was held "att the School-house in said Manner near Captain Jonathan Griffin's." The building here mentioned was probably the first one in the town and stood at the top of the steep bank to the west of the White Plains road, just north of the road to Hartsdale Station. Nothing now remains to mark the spot but a portion of the foundations, the building itself having been destroyed by fire early in the present century. In 1796 the offices of "Commissioners of Schools" were first instituted in the town, J. Barker, William Popham and Caleb Angevine being chosen to fill the position for the first year.

In 1809 was built a new school-house to replace the one destroyed, and this still remains, but is now occupied as a dwelling. It formerly stood part way up Fish's Hill to the north of the roadway, but was moved many years ago to its present site, to the north side of the Hartsdale road. There is much of interest connected with this old school-house, though in itself it is quite unpretending. It is a small frame building of two stories, measuring about twenty-five by twenty feet in the ground plan, and unpainted. The school-room was on the ground floor and above was a loft. Soon after the erection of this building the school acquired considerable prominence from the scope of its curriculum, and it is related that people living in New York sent their children to board in the town that they might enjoy the advantages of its public school. This prominence was largely due to the ability of the Rev. George Donovan, before mentioned, a graduate of Trinity College, Dublin, who, on becoming a resident of the town, in 1802, at once interested himself in the school, and introduced there the study of the ancient languages, in addition to the common-school branches. In 1817 we find that he was elected "Inspector of Schools," his colleague being William Popham, their offices being in addition to the school commissioners before mentioned. During these early days of the century the school came to be known as the "Scarsdale Academy," from the high grade of its instruction. Later on, however, when the conduct of the school passed into other hands, much of its reputation was lost, and it is stated that two of the old time pedagogues came to untimely ends from their fondness for strong drink. One was drowned, while intoxicated, in the deep spring on the west side of Dobb's Hill, just south of the site of the birth-place of Governor Tompkins and the other in a drunken frenzy committed suicide in a field nearly opposite the present school. This second building was known as the "Fox Meadow School-House" and we find it thus mentioned as a frequent place for holding town meetings. The State census of 1845 gives figures in relation to the school as follows, Value of building, one hundred dollars; Number of pupils, 35; average attendance, 18.

The present school records only cover a period of about twenty years, and are very brief. In 1870 the school trustees were Philip Waters, James McCabe and John Carpenter, Benjamin Palmer being clerk. In this year five hundred dollars was voted for the expenses of the school, and the teacher was Miss Eliza Algood, who occupied the position for a number of years.

In 1874 it was determined to erect a new and more suitable building for school purposes, and a thousand dollars was voted by the town for procuring the necessary land, while in the following year twenty-five hundred dollars was appropriated for the building itself and nine hundred for furnishing it suitably. The building committee consisted of Benjamin F. Butler, Benjamin Carpenter, Peter Dobbs, James McCabe and John Read. The building was begun early in February of the centennial year, and was ready for occupancy the following September. In 1880 the school-tax amounted to $796.25, being assessed at the rate of $1.86 per thousand dollars. For that year the statistics were as follows: There were one hundred and twenty-six children in the school district between the ages of five and twenty-one, and sixty between the ages of eight and fourteen. School was held during forty-two weeks of the year. The trustees were John H. Carpenter, Peter M. Dobbs and James D. McCabe, Gilbert W. Dobbs being clerk. The teacher was Miss Ameigh. At this time the library contained one hundred and fifty volumes.

The following are the statistics for 1884: Trustees, David A. Weed, Benjamin J. Carpenter and F. W. Brooks; Clerk, Gilbert W. Dobbs; Teacher, Miss Marsland; number of weeks of school, forty-three; children in district between the ages of five and twenty-one, one hundred and thirty-six; between the ages of eight and fourteen, sixty-six. Books in library, two hundred and fifty. The school-tax for the year amounted to $841.25, being assessed at the rate of $1.92 per thousand.

Digitized by Google

The new school-house is situated at the junction of the old and new White Plains post roads, just at the foot of Fish's Hill, a little north of the Hartsdale road, and faces due west. It is about fifty by thirty feet on the ground plan, with two stories and a basement, the entrance to which is on the east. The latter is now used by the town as a place of meeting and for the holding of elections. In its external aspect the building is very pleasing, the basement being of stone and the upper part frame, clapboarded, and a slate roof. The front gable is surmounted by a small open cupola, in which hangs the school bell. The building is neatly painted in a light shade of gray, with darker trimmings. The ground floor proper is occupied by a commodious and well-arranged school-room, fitted up with modern school furniture, and adjoining are the vestibule and cloak-rooms, the former opening upon a small porch. The loft above is unfurnished, but the basement is fitted up for the uses of the town with benches and a small dais at the west end of the room, the walls being finished in plaster.

In this connection it is interesting to note that the percentage of illiteracy in the town has of late years been very low, as is evidenced by the following figures, taken from the State census reports: In 1855 it was 1.10 per cent.; in 1865, 1.07 per cent.; and in 1875, 1.51 per cent.

Shortly after the erection of the Church of St. James the Less the organization of a parish school was undertaken, and the first notice of this is found in the report of the convention of New York for 1853, which says, "A small building for the purposes of a Parochial School is now being built." This stood in a pleasant situation a few hundred yards to the northwest of the church, and on a private road leading through the Popham property to Scarsdale Station. The next year the convention records contain no report of the parish school, but in 1855 we find the following: "Daily Parish Schools, One, part free—Males, 6; Females, 11." That year eighty dollars was contributed by the church toward the parish school building. The next year the number of scholars had risen to twenty—males, fourteen; females, six—and one hundred dollars was contributed by the parish towards the support of the school. Two years after, there were thirty scholars in the school—males, seventeen; females, thirteen—and the reports say of the school, "Teacher boarded free of charge; otherwise self-supporting." In 1859 the number of scholars was largely increased, the average attendance being, males, twenty-five; females, seventeen; and the total number of those who had attended at least one quarter was sixty-four. The parish contribution towards the school this year was seventy-five dollars. The following year, 1860, is the last in which mention is made of the school in the convention reports, and it shows a great falling off in the attendance,—namely: males, twenty; females, ten. During the winter a night-school had been held for three months, which probably accounts in some measure for the decrease. The attendance at the night-school aggregated twenty-one, thus giving a total of fifty-one scholars. The parish contribution had fallen to fifty dollars for this year. Shortly after this last report the school was given up, apparently from lack of support, and the school-building was used for other purposes. It was moved from its original situation to a position nearly adjoining the rectory of the church, which was built in 1860.

Of private schools there have been several in Scarsdale at different times, but none of them have been sufficiently successful to remain. The census report of 1845 makes brief mention of two private schools, but this is the only record that remains of them. Another was started about the year 1871, but proved unsuccessful, and shortly after was closed. Thus the public school is the only one now in existence, but, owing to the excellence of its management, it leaves little to be desired by the townspeople.

Leading Residents and Families.—Among all the natives of the town, past or present, no one has been more prominent in the history of the county than Daniel D. Tompkins,[1] Governor of the State, and afterwards Vice-President of the nation. His ancestors were among the first to settle in the town, and they have at all times figured conspicuously in its history. It is said of him that he embodied in himself, besides the noble virtues, the more commonplace, but none the less important ones of activity, energy and perseverence, while his talents, no matter how tried, were always equal to an emergency. The reputation he gained at the bar and in the gubernatorial chair, was one of unflinching integrity combined with an uncommon charm of manner and the greatest consideration for the feelings of all. His administration of the office of Governor during the trying times of the second war with Great Britain was unimpeachable, while his generous and entirely unsolicited financial aid to the government was especially noteworthy. In the capacity of military commander he likewise succeeded admirably, being especially thanked for his services by the President. Governor Tompkins died on Staten Island June 11, 1825, and his remains are interred in the vault of the Tompkins family, at St. Mark's "in the Bowerie," New York City.

Jonathan Griffin Tompkins, father of the Governor, though not as distinguished in the history of the nation, was more identified than his son with the history of the town. But besides holding very many town offices, he was a member of the State Convention which adopted the Declaration of Independence and the first Constitution of the State. Mr. Tompkins was one of the inspectors of the first town meeting held under the national government, and was chosen first supervisor of the town. This office he

[1] A full sketch of Vice-President Tompkins and his father and brothers will be found in the first volume, in the chapter on the Bench and Bar.

Digitized by Google

held for ten years, from 1783 to 1792, by annual re-election, besides other minor town offices. After the death of his adopted father Mr. Tompkins removed from the house where his son Daniel was born to the Griffin homestead, now known as the Sedgwick house, on the northern crest of Dobb's Hill, and the old mansion was afterwards torn down.

The Tompkins family were of English extraction, and emigrated from the north of England to Plymouth, Mass., during the times of religious persecution. According to Bolton's narrative, from Plymouth they went in turn to Concord, Mass., Fairfield, Conn., and East Chester, N. Y., and thence finally to Scarsdale. It is probable that the family was represented in the town as early as the beginning of the last century, for as many as six generations have lived here. Of the sons of Jonathan G. Tompkins, several settled permanently within the town, and proved useful and worthy citizens. The first of these was Caleb, the oldest of the Governor's brothers, who was born in 1759, and he left a son, J. G. Tompkins, Jr. The former held the offices of poor master, town clerk and supervisor in the town, being chosen to the last-named office at three different times, while his son was twice elected supervisor. Another of the brothers, Enoch, born in 1771, held this office for ten years continuously, besides at other times holding numerous minor offices. Another brother still, George Washington Tompkins, likewise made Scarsdale his home for a time, and here was born to him a son, Warren Tompkins, who afterwards took up his residence in White Plains.

HON. DANIEL D. TOMPKINS.

The Popham Family.—About one-half mile from the railroad depot at Scarsdale, and shadowed beneath the branches of huge trees, whose leaves entirely obscure its inmates from the gaze of the curious, stands the ancient homestead of Chief Justice Richard Morris. It is one of the oldest houses in the county, and although it has from time to time been altered and extended in order to meet the requirements of modern life, it still retains, in its sloping roof and ample chimney, a general appearance of antiquity. It is now in the possession of the Popham family, of whom we subjoin a sketch.

The Pophams trace their English ancestry as far into the past as the beginning of the thirteenth century, when their records show that one Gilbert Popham, of the Manor of Popham, married Joan, a daughter of Robert Clarke, also of that manor. Members of the family held high offices during the reigns of Henry III. Edward III. and Henry IV. Sir John Popham, Knight, was lord chief justice in the reign of Elizabeth, and so popular had the family become that Charles I. made John Popham, one of its members, a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber upon the occasion of his coronation. The family was also represented at the coronation of Charles II. by Sir Francis Popham, who was a Knight of the Bath.

At the time of the civil war in England the family became divided, and Sir Francis, who was sixth in descent from the chief justice, rendered himself so obnoxious to Charles I. by his course at that time, that his son John, who was colonel in command of a cavalry regiment, was forced to remove into Ireland, where he purchased the estate of Bandon. Mindful of the family reverses, he named his oldest son Ichabod.

John Popham, the son of Ichabod and father of William Popham, from whom are descended the family so long identified with the history of Scarsdale, was a linen draper, of Cork, and was widely known for his learning, intelligence and piety.

His three children were James, William, and Elizabeth, who married the architect, John Cook.

William Popham, the second child, married a daughter of Rev. William Millet, a Presbyterian clergyman of Bandon, whose family numbered nineteen daughters and three sons. Of their children, Alexander, John and William, the last only, who was born at Bandon, September 19, 1752, came with his father to this country.

He was but nine years of age at the time, and was left in the care of two maiden aunts living in New Jersey. By them he was entered at Princeton College, from which he graduated just as the Revolution was breaking out. Joining the Continental army, he almost immediately rendered himself famous by the capture of the notorious Captain Rugg and eighteen others at the battle of Long Island. As a reward for his bravery, he received a captaincy, which was subse-

Digitized by Google

quently supplemented by a major's commission, in recognition of distinguished services rendered at the battles of White Plains and Brandywine.

At the close of the war Major Popham resided for a few years at Albany, New York, where he studied law. While there he met and became enamored of Miss Mary Morris, daughter of Chief Justice Richard Morris, with whom, being forced by her father's hostility, he eloped.

In 1804, having meanwhile effected a reconciliation with his father-in-law, he established a legal practice in New York City and became in time clerk of the Court of Exchequer. He retired in 1811 to his farm in Scarsdale, where he resided till the death of his wife, in 1836. His own death occurred in New York eleven years later, in 1847.

Wm. S. Popham

While Major Popham was yet a young man his father, journeying a second time to this country, was taken sick upon the voyage and died. He was buried by his son at Perth Amboy, N. J.

The major at the time of his death was president of the New York State Society of the Cincinnati. He was also its president-general by virtue of his right as oldest member. Upon the occasion of his decease his name received honorable mention in general orders and his loss was lamented by many who had been his warm friends and acquaintances.

Major Popham left six children—Richard, William S., John, Charles W., Sarah, wife of Leonard Bleecker, and Elizabeth.

William Sherbrook Popham, the second child of this family, was born at Scarsdale, May 9, 1793. In 1815 he entered the Bank of America as clerk, having previously served as a soldier in the War of 1812. In 1832 he established himself in the coal business in New York City, continuing the same till 1857, when he retired to the ancestral farm in Scarsdale. Here he led the life of a retiring and respected citizen. To his efforts was mainly due the organization of the Episcopal Church of St. James the Less, of which he was senior warden at the time of his death. He married Eliza, daughter of William Hill, of East Chester, and after her decease was united to her sister Jane.

Mr. Popham closed a long life of quiet usefulness June 18, 1885, in the same room in which he was born more than ninety years before. His unassumed humility and his simplicity of manner charmed all with whom he came into contact, and made his loss both to his family and to the county in which he lived an irreparable one.

He had eight children; William Hill, Mary Morris, wife of Charles W. Carmer; Alethia Hill, wife of Augustus Bleecker; Laura Sherbrook, wife of Lewis C. Platt, Esq., of White Plains; Gertrude, wife of Allen S. Campbell; Richard Morris, Robert C. and Lewis C. Two of these, William Hill and Richard M., he survived.

William Hill Popham, oldest child of William Sherbrook Popham, was born at Scarsdale, October 7, 1817. His education was partly obtained in the old town school of his native place and partly in New York City.

His inclination led him at an early age to enter as a clerk the office of a firm in New York which was heavily interested in the iron trade. In 1857, however, upon his father's retirement, he took his business in charge and for some years conducted it successfully. He was finally induced by his father-in-law to enter the oil business with him, and in this he was engaged at the time of his death, June 27, 1880.

While in the oil trade he was also associated with William C. Haxton, now vice-president of the Washington Life Insurance Company.

Mr. Popham was a gentleman of peculiarly cordial disposition, and his genial manner made him many warm and enthusiastic friendships both in business and social life.

He was a member and for the last ten years warden of the Episcopal Church of St. James the Less at Scarsdale, for which he gave the ground. At the time of his death he was a property holder in New York City and a director of the Mutual Life Insurance Company. He had also been a member of the Produce Exchange from its organization. Mr. Popham married Miss Sarah Spencer, daughter of Mark Spencer, of New York.

Their children are Harriet Spencer, Mark Spencer,

[illegible]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF THE LATE WM. H. POPHAM.
SCARSDALE, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Wm. H. Popham

Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Eliza Hill, William H. Jr., George Morris, Lewis T., Sallie and James Lenox.

Lewis C. Popham, youngest child of Wm. Sherbrook Popham and brother of the preceding, was born in the old homestead at Scarsdale, April 15, 1833. Receiving his education at the well-known school of Rev. Dr. Harris, at White Plains, he joined his father in business, and in due time succeeded to it and the family estate. Beside carrying on his large business interests in New York City, he has been for the last sixteen years justice of the peace of the town of Scarsdale. Like his brother, William H., Mr. Popham is of an exceedingly social disposition, and he is justly reckoned among the most popular citizens of Westchester County. He married Annie J., daughter of Alexander Flemming, of Bellows Falls, Vermont. Their children are Emma A., (wife of Cornelius B. Fish), Alice H., Annie F., Alexander F. and Louise C.

Mr. Popham still resides in the old homestead, which was built by his grandfather Major Popham, in 1783. It adjoins the Morris property and is rich in its collection of antiques, bric-a-brac and old paintings. A portion of the tea-set presented to Major Popham by General Washington is still in possession of the family.

Another distinguished citizen of the town in the early days was the Hon. Richard Morris, son of the Hon. Lewis Morris, and father-in-law of Major Popham, whom we have mentioned. He resided at the Morris homestead, now occupied by Mrs. William F. Popham, and owned considerable land in the vicinity, in which was included the former mill-seat on the Bronx River near Scarsdale Station. Mr. Morris was commissary or judge of the Court of Admiralty, as well as at one time chief justice of the State, and filled both these offices with much distinction. The Morris house stands on the eastern slope of the ridge, running parallel to the post-road on the west, and is a few hundred yards to the south of the Popham mansion. Although more than a century and a half old, the house shows few signs of age, for though old-fashioned in appearance and construction, it still stands firmer and stancher than many a more modern building.

The mansion was constructed about the middle of the last century by a man named Crawford, the material used being prepared at the old saw-mill heretofore mentioned. The frame is composed of oak and locust, with oaken joists, and is covered with cedar shingles put on with wrought-iron clinched nails. The mansion presents a very picturesque appearance with its low slanting roof and broad veranda running along the eastern and southern sides. Being on the side of the hill, the house presents three full stories on the east and two on the west, and, with the lawns and flower-beds which surround it makes a most pleasing picture. It is stated that here General Washington halted and lunched on the march to White Plains, some days previous to the engagement with the British at that place. Prominent among the families of the eastern side of the town in former years were the Secors, the Angevines, the Griffins and the Palmers. The first-named family has always figured prominently in the town's history. In 1809 and for the next two years James Secor held the office of supervisor, while Francis Secor, lately deceased, of a generation later, held the same office at different periods for a term of twenty-nine years and extending from 1849 to 1878. Chauncey T. Secor, the present incumbent, son of the preceding, is now serving his third term in the same office. The family is supposed to be of French origin, and probably settled in the town some time prior to the Revolution, for the name "Secord" appears in documents relating to that period. The old Secor homestead, known as the "Hickories" is in the far eastern side of the town. The Angevines, originally tenants under Colonel Heathcote, have almost disappeared from the town, and the Griffins, who formerly were scattered throughout the township, are almost entirely confined to the eastern part. Of the Palmer family, Richard served as supervisor of the town for thirteen years, between 1831 and 1837 and again from 1839 to 1844, and James F. Palmer, besides holding other offices, was town clerk in 1860. In the house of the latter, on the Mamaroneck road and in a central location, town-meetings and elections were held for a number of years until the erection of the new school-house, and the occupation of its basement for town purposes.

The Drakes, whose name has been associated with Scarsdale for over a century, are of English descent, and the first to emigrate to this country, according to Bolton's account, was John Drake, who came to this continent early in the seventeenth century. On his death, he left several sons, one of whom, Samuel, settled in East Chester, and a grandson of the latter, also Samuel, was probably the first to settle in Scarsdale. The only record in connection with Scarsdale pertaining to this member of the family is that of his death, showing that Samuel Drake, son of Joseph Drake, of East Chester, "died at the Fox Meadows in 1774, aged seventy-five years." The present head of the family in Scarsdale is the venerable Elias G. Drake, now in his eighty-sixth year, having been born just before the close of the last century, December 9, 1799. Mr. Drake is the great-grandson of Benjamin Drake, a brother of the Samuel just mentioned, and settled within the town about thirty years ago. Although of late years not taking an active part in town politics, he has figured in many of the older records as the holder of various offices in the town.

Another of the prominent families of the town in former days were the Varians, of Huguenot descent, who occupied the house now known as the "Wayside Cottage" just north of the Popham estate. Of this

Digitized by Google

family, the first of the name in this country was Isaac Varian, who "appears as a butcher in the city of New York in the year 1720, located in the 'Old Slip' market." He was admitted as a "freeman" of the city of New York January 23, 1733. In 1737-38 he was a member of the military company of Captain Cornelius Van Horne. He accumulated considerable property and died at his residence in Bowery Lane, about the year 1800. He left five sons, of whom three—James, Richard and Michael—were ardent patriots and warmly espoused the Revolutionary cause. Of these, however, only James and Michael appear to have been identified with Scarsdale. In the "Book of the Varian Family" the following record is given of these members: "James Varian, second son of Isaac, born in New York City, January 10, 1734; died Scarsdale, N. Y., December 11, 1800; was a butcher in New York until the capture of that city by the British during the War of the Revolution, at which time, in company with other patriots, he removed. He withdrew to a farm at Scarsdale, in the Neutral Ground, where he remained until his decease." Both he and his family were subsequently driven from their farm by the British, and took refuge in Danbury, Conn., whence they returned after the peace was proclaimed. He married, February 25, 1759, Deborah Dibble, of Connecticut, by whom he had seven children, five of whom were born in Scarsdale. "Michael Varian, butcher, born in New York City, December 9, 1738, and was in that vocation for many years at that place. At the time of the Revolution (1775) he moved to Scarsdale, Westchester County, N. Y., but returned at the close of the struggle, in which he took an active part on the patriot side." He left two sons, but neither they nor their descendants were connected with this town.

Of the family of James Varian, Jonathan, the eldest, was born in New York, November 13, 1763, and died February 14, 1824, being by occupation a drover. In 1811 he married into the Angevine family, and had four children, of whom one, Andrew J. Varian, served during the Rebellion as sergeant in the New York Volunteer Engineers. Jonathan Varian appears to have kept the old homestead as a tavern and inn from very early in the century until his death. His brother James was born in Scarsdale, November 22, 1765, shortly after his parents settled in the town, and died December 26, 1841. He was engaged in transporting the Boston mail on the first stage of the route,—from New York to New Milford, Conn. This was performed in the old-fashioned four-horse mail-coaches, and a stop was made at the old Varian tavern. He married a daughter of John Cornell, by whom he had nine children. On the death of Jonathan, in 1824, the estate in Scarsdale appears to have been occupied by James, and after his death, in 1841, by his son, James, from whom it passed into the hands of Charles Butler in 1853. Another son, William A. Varian, is now living at Kings' Bridge, being a practicing surgeon, and in his possession is the old family Bible mentioned below. Of the remaining children of the original James Varian, three left descendants, one of them, Deborah, having married Caleb Tompkins, brother of Governor Tompkins, and for forty years county judge of Westchester County.

Six of the ten town officers chosen at the first election after the Revolution in the Manor of Scarsdale bore the name of Cornell[1]—then the most numerous and one of the most respectable families in the manor; and some record should be made of them here. The Cornells of Scarsdale and vicinity were descended from Richard Cornell, a member of the Society of Friends, who came from Hempstead, in Queens County, to Scarsdale in 1727. But Richard Cornell's grandfather, Thomas Cornell, more than eighty years before that date, had a plantation, long called Cornell's Neck, in what is now the town of Westchester. Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, was also an ancestor of the Westchester Willets, once a prominent family in the county and in the province—and also of the Woolseys, of Bedford and elsewhere, and therefore should be named here. Cornell's Neck was situated on the East River and was granted to Thomas Cornell in June, 1646, by the Dutch Governor, Kieft, who described it as running "from the Kill of Broncks land, east southeast along the River."[2]

[1] Prepared and inserted by the publishers.

[2] Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, was from Essex, England, born about 1595, and emigrated to Boston about 1636. In interesting illustrations of the rigorous self-watchfulness of the infant Boston Colony, then only eight years old, it was voted at town-meeting on the 20th of August, 1638, that "Thomas Cornell may buy brother William Balstone's house and become an inhabitant." He was in Rhode Island in 1641, with Roger Williams, and came to New Amsterdam in 1642, with John Throckmorton, seeking shelter among the Dutch from the rigors of Massachusetts orthodoxy. Throckmorton, for himself and thirty five associates, obtained in 1643, from Governor Kieft, the original grant of what is now, in abbreviation of his name, called Throgg's Neck, and he and Cornell, and some of their associates, immediately began settlements, for the Dutch records relate that in the massacre of October, 1643, the Indians "killed several persons belonging to the families of Mr. Throckmorton and of Mr. Cornell." Probably the slain were servants, and Thomas Cornell and his family were then in New Amsterdam, where his eldest daughter, Sara, married, on the 1st of September, 1643, Thomas Willett, of Bristol, England, the ancestor of a distinguished family. William Willett, the eldest son of Thomas Willett and Sarah Cornell, was baptized in New Amsterdam on the 6th of July, 1644, and their second son, Thomas, on the 26th of November, 1645. Thomas Willett, the father, died about the time of the birth of his second son, and his widow, Sara Cornell, in 1647, married Charles Bridges, well known in New Amsterdam, where the Dutch translated his name into Carel Ver Brugge, and the Willett children were brought up in their stepfather's house. William, the elder, inherited Cornell's Neck through his mother after the death of his grandfather, Thomas Cornell, but ultimately died without issue. Thomas, the younger son, became the distinguished Colonel Thomas Willett, of Flushing—long prominent in colonial affairs, and member of the Governor's Council from 1690 to 1698, where he sat with Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Frederick Philips, Colonel Van Cortlandt and other magnates of the province. He was colonel of the Queens County militia, then the most numerous regiment in the province, and was publicly thanked by the Governor, Lord Cornbury, in November, 1704, that, on an alarm of an invasion by a French fleet, he had in ten hours brought a thousand men to within an hour's march of New York. Colonel Thomas Willett's cousin, Colonel John Cornell, of Rockaway, subsequently commanded the Queens County militia until his death, in 1745. After his brother's death, Colonel Thomas Willett, of Flushing inherited his grandfather's plantation of Cornell's Neck, and in 1709

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

[illegible] for in 1853. A[illegible], William A. [illegible]

Digitized by Google

Lewis C. Popham

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

[illegible], and these forms, as well as Cornwall, Cornell and some others, appear on the tombstones in the family burial plot.

Earl of Cornewall, second son of King John, younger brother of Richard Cœur de Lion. Richard long remained a family name.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Richard Cornell, grandson of Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, and eldest son of John and Mary (Russell) Cornell, of Cowneck, in Hempstead, was born about 1670, and died at Scarsdale in 1757. He married, in 1701, Hannah Thorne, of Flushing, and brought her and their ten children to Scarsdale in 1727. He early became a Friend, and most of his descendants have been of that faith. Friends had settled early in Scarsdale, and the "Mamaroneck Meeting-house" is now within the Scarsdale borders. Richard Cornell was a diligent and prosperous man, and his will, dated in 1756, divides among his children much land in Scarsdale, Mamaroneck, and New Rochelle, besides other property and slaves. For even Friends then held slaves, although influences were already at work which abolished slavery in the Society before the American declaration of the inalienable right to liberty in 1776, and even required Friends to continue to maintain the negroes who had grown old or infirm in their service. Richard Cornell, the patriarch of

Of Scarsdale, Æ. 80, born 1761, died 1841.

his family in Scarsdale, like the ancient patriarch, had a special regard for his "youngest son Benjamin," and his will, after providing him a competence, adds the special bequest, "to my son Benjamin, my Clock."

Richard, Jr., the eldest son of the first Richard

conveyed it to his eldest son, William Willett, who had removed to the county of Westchester and made the Neck his home. He sat in the Provincial Assembly as one of the representatives of Westchester County, with but brief intermissions, from 1702 to his death, in 1733, and was appointed "Judge of the Common Pleas in the County" in 1721. But this is not the place to pursue the history of the Willetts of Westchester, further than to show their descent from Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck. The Neck has sometimes been called Willett's Neck.

Rebecca Cornell, a younger daughter of Thomas Cornell, was with her sister Sara, in New Amsterdam, and there married, in 1647, George Woolsey, of Yarmouth, England, said to have been of the family of Cardinal Woolsey; and their descendants are numerous in Westchester County and elsewhere, several having obtained eminence, one of them being Theodore Dwight Woolsey, president of Yale College from 1846 to 1871.

Ezra Cornell, the founder of Cornell University, was born at Westchester Landing, between Cornell's Neck and Throgg's Neck, on the 11th of January, 1807, and was descended from Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, through his son Samuel and grandson Stephen, who settled in Swansea, Massachusetts, where Elijah Cornell, the father of Ezra, was born in 1771. Elijah Cornell married Eunice Barnard, born in Dutchess County, but of a New Bedford family. He, however, had been but a short time in Westchester when his son Ezra was born, and soon after removed to Tarrytown, and thence in 1819 to De Ruyter, so that neither Ezra Cornell nor his son, Governor Alonzo B. Cornell, can be called Westchester County men.

Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, had eleven children—six sons (Thomas, Richard of Rockaway, William, Samuel, John of Cowneck and Joshua) and five daughters (Sarah, Ann, Rebecca, Elizabeth and Mary). Several of his children settled in the Eastern States, and he subsequently returned to Rhode Island and died there about 1657. Two of his sons settled in Queens County. The first, Richard Cornell, was in New Amsterdam under the Dutch, and was one of the patentees of Flushing, in the first English charter of 1665 and was long justice of the peace there. He had an estate at Little Neck, and subsequently removed to Rockaway, where he died in 1694. He is hence usually distinguished as Richard Cornell, of Rockaway. He left a widow, Elizabeth, and five sons,—Richard, William, Thomas, Jacob and John. His grandson, Thomas Cornell, long represented Queens County in the Provincial Assembly, sitting from 1739 till his death, in 1764. A little later, Sarah Cornell, daughter of his grandson Samuel, married General Matthew Clarkson, of New York, and her sister Hannah, married Herman Leroy, and their sister, Elizabeth, married William Bayard. One of the grandsons of Thomas Cornell, of the Provincial Assembly, was Whitehead Cornell, who represented Queens County in the State Assembly in 1788-98, and lived in dignity in the old homestead of his grandfather, while his elder and his younger brothers, who were Royalists in the Revolution and officers in the British Army, were glad, after the war, to take refuge in Nova Scotia. One of Whitehead Cornell's grandsons is John B. Cornell, now for many years the head of the well-known iron-works of New York.

John Cornell, of Cowneck, another son of Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, and the ancestor of the Scarsdale Cornells, had been in Dartmouth, Massachusetts, perhaps also on the Penobscot, but came in 1676, with his wife, Mary Russell, and several small children, to Hempstead, under the protection of Governor Andros, having been driven, the records say, from his home in the East by the Indians. This was the date of King Philip's War. Governor Andros granted to John Cornell, in 1677, a tract of land on Manhasset Bay, a couple of miles south of Sand's Point, on which he spent the remainder of his life, and on which some of his descendants are still living. In a sheltered valley of his grant, John Cornell set apart a burial plot, where are interred the remains of himself and of his wife and of many of their descendants. His children were: 1. Richard of Scarsdale, born 1670; married Hannah Thorne. 2. Joshua, married Sarah Thorne. 3. Mary, born 1679; married James Sands. 4. John born 1681; married Mary Starr. 5. Caleb, born 1683; married Elizabeth Hagner. 6. Rebecca, married —— Starr.

John of Cowneck, always wrote his name Cornwell, and many of his descendants still retain that form. The name of Richard of Rockaway was often written Cornhill, and these forms, as well as Cornwall, Cornell and some others, appear on the tombstones in the family burial plot.

The early English name was written Cornewall. Two generations before Thomas, of Cornell's Neck, "Richard Cornewall, Citizen and Skynner of London" (as it stands in his will), who died in 1585, left a portion of the wealth he had made in hides to found and endow "a free grammar Schole in New Woodstock, the town where I was born," and the school stands there yet, near the handsome church of Woodstock. Some of the English branches of the family still write the name Cornewall. Burke's "Landed Gentry of Great Britain" gives two branches, the senior one writing Cornewall and the other Cornwall. Burke's "Peerage and Baronetage" adds a third branch, a family of Baronets in Hereford, who retain Cornewall, and Burke traces the lineage of the whole family up through the Barons of Burford to Richard de Cornewall, son of Richard, Earl of Cornewall, second son of King John, younger brother of Richard Cœur de Lion. Richard long remained a family name.

Digitized by Google

Cornell, of Scarsdale, was born in 1708. He settled near his father and has had many descendants, esteemed among their neighbors in Scarsdale and elsewhere. One of them, Thomas Cornell, now of Rondout, born in White Plains in 1814, removed to Ulster County, where he was elected, in 1866, to the Fortieth Congress of the United States, and in 1880, to the Forty-seventh Congress, in each case a Republican elected by a large majority in a strongly Democratic district. He is president of the First National Bank of Rondout, of the Cornell Steamboat Company, etc., and has long been prominent in political and financial circles.[1]

The second son, Joseph, also left many descendants. The third son, John, lived to be sixty years old, but left no issue. The youngest son, Benjamin, above mentioned, married in 1743, Abigail Stevenson, and, like

[1] The four sons and six daughters of the first Richard Cornell, of Scarsdale, were as follows:

I. Mary, born at Cowneck, 1703, died 1762; married Rev. Henry Sands.

II. Deborah, born at Cowneck, 1705, died 1772; married Matthew Franklin, a Quaker preacher.

III. Richard Cornell, Jr., born 1708; married Mary Ferris, and had Peter of Mamaroneck, born 1732, died 1765, married 1751. Sarah Haviland, born 1734, died 1787, and had:

First—Mary, born 1753; married Nathan Palmer and had many descendants.

Second—Thomas of Scarsdale, born 1754, died 1817. His name often appears among the town officers of Scarsdale. He married, 1779, Hannah Lynch, born 1762, died 1813, and had:

(1.) Peter, named after his grandfather, born 1780; married Margaret Gedney, and had:

(a.) John G., born 1812, died 1834.

(b.) Thomas Cornell, of Rondout, born 1814; married Catharine Ann Woodmancie—member of Congress etc., named in above text.

(c.) Hannah, born 1816.

(d.) Nathaniel, born 1818.

(e.) Anthony, born 1820.

(f.) Elizabeth.

(g.) Mary, born 1824.

(h.) Charlotte, born 1826.

(i.) Margaret, born 1828.

(2.) Sarah, born 1782; married John Bates and had many children.

(3.) Hester, born 1787; married Timothy Haviland.

(4.) Samuel, born 1792, died 1823.

(5.) Thomas Lynch Cornell, who changed his name to Thomas Wildey Cornell, born 1802, died 1884; married Emeline Lawrence, of Tarrytown, and removed to Ulster County, where he acquired wealth and position.

Third—Richard, born 1760; married 1st, Elizabeth Angevine; married 2d, Ann Purdy.

Fourth—Ebenezer, born 1761, died 1794; married Elizabeth Purdy.

Fifth—Haviland, born 1764; married 1st, Mary Gale; married 2d, Lavinia Storms—left several children.

IV. Joseph, born in Cowneck, 1708, died 1770; married, 1734, Phebe Ferris, daughter of Peter Ferris, and had:

First—Joseph, of Mamaroneck, who married Sarah Hadden and had: Susannah, born 1757; married Newberry Fowler. Deborah, born 1760; married John Fowler. Richard, born 1762, died 1795. Jonathan, born 1764, died 1834; married 1st, Lydia Carpenter; married 2d, Jemima Acker, and left several children. Willett, born 1770; married Mary Corks, and had a number of descendants.

Second—Hannah, born 1736; married James Fowler.

Third—Richard, born 1738; died a child.

Fourth—Sarah.

Fifth—Mary, born 1741; married Jonathan Merritt.

Sixth—John, of Mamaroneck, born 1743, died 1817; married Alice Williams, and left Isaac, born 1767, died 1832, who married Sarah Bennett, and had a number of children; and John L., born 1781, who married 1st, Margaret Williams; married 2d, Hannah Anderson, and left a family.

Seventh—Ferris Cornell, born 1748, whose name appears among the officers of the manor. He married 1st, Anne Cornell; married 2d, Hannah Quimby; married 3d, Sarah Cox, and left Thomas I., born 1779; married 1st, Amy Fisher; married 2d, Gulielma Wood, and had several children—and Samuel, born 1782; married Martha Bonnett, and left a family.

V. Hannah, born 1711; married Joshua Quimby.

VI. Phebe, born 1715; married Ebenezer Haviland.

VII. John, born 1717; died 1781, without issue.

VIII. Rebecca, born 1718; married Edward Burling.

IX. Elizabeth, born 1720, died 1795; married 1st, Aaron Palmer; married 2d, Aaron Quimby.

X. Benjamin, born 1723, died 1771; married 17th of 9th month, 1742, Abigail Stephenson, daughter of Stephen Stephenson, of Rye, and Jane Clement, of Flushing, his wife, and had:

First—Hannah, born 1774; married John Burling.

Second—Jane, born 1746; married Joseph Griffen.

Third—Stephen Cornell, of Mamaroneck, born 1749, died 1802. His name also appears among the officers of the manor about the time of the Revolution, and later. He married Margaret Haviland, and had:

1st. William H., born 1776, died 1856; married Dorcas Carpenter, daughter of Joseph Carpenter, of Harrison, who represented the county in the New York Legislature in 1796–97. William H. Cornell lived near Mamaroneck Meeting-house, in Scarsdale, and had:

(a.) Deborah, born 1809; married Henry M. Carpenter.

(b.) Mary, born 1812; married Jacob Miller.

(c.) Stephen, born 1815, died 1852; married Rachel Tompkins, and left William H., Jr., Charles W. and Albert.

(d.) William, born 1818; was supervisor in 1845–62; married 1st, 1842, Sarah Theall, who died, 1848, leaving: I. William T., born 1845; married Lucinda V. Rushmore and has three children: Lily Rushmore, born 1880. Florence S., born 1883. Thomas R., born 1885. He lives in Mamaroneck, and is cashier of the Union Bank in Wall Street. II. Edwin T., born 1848; married Mary Robinson. William Cornell married 2d, Elizabeth Theall and has: III. Frank S., born 1857. IV. Frederick L., born 1860. V. Ella Louise, and VI. Howard M., twins, born 1863.

2d. Richard, born 1781, died 1798.

3d. Stephen, born 1785, died 1815; married Anna Titus, and left Richard and Titus.

4th. Deborah, married John Schurman.

5th. Benjamin, born 1788; married Sarah Titus.

6th. Mary, married Henry Griffin.

7th. Abigail.

8th. Samuel, born 1796; married Hannah Carpenter and left Richard, Stephen G., Henry, Rebecca, Jane and Elizabeth.

Fourth—Deborah, born 1751; married Willett Browne.

Fifth—Anne, born 1753; married Benjamin Haviland.

Sixth—Phebe, born 1755; married John Gibbs.

Seventh—Sarah, born 1755, died 1764.

Eighth—Abigail, born 1758, died 1834.

Digitized by Google

his father, had ten children, three sons,—one of whom died in infancy, and seven daughters. His eldest son, Stephen, of Mamaroneck, is now represented by his grandson, William, who was supervisor of Scarsdale in 1845–46 and in 1862, and by William's son, William T. Cornell, of Mamaroneck, now cashier of the Union Bank in Wall Street. Benjamin gave to his youngest son, born in 1761, his own name, again the "youngest son Benjamin," of his father, and specially bequeathed to him the old clock of his grandfather. The younger Benjamin also inherited the ample farm, and the ancient low-beamed shingled house of his grandfather, in which he had been born; but in the early part of the present century he built the "new house" on the Mamaroneck road, where he lived in dignity and ease until indorsements for his friends left him poor in his old age. His name appears in early manhood as town clerk, about the time of the Revolution and for some years after, and then as supervisor. Like his father and his grandfather, he was in dress and manner a strict member of the Society of Friends, of high character and fine personal appearance, nearly six feet in height, and bearing himself with grace and dignity. The only portrait of him is here copied from a pencil sketch, said to have been a good likeness at the time, made when he was eighty years old, in 1841, by his grandson, Thomas C. Cornell, now of Yonkers, to whom the old gentleman then promised the inheritance of the family clock, which had now come down to him from his grandfather; and the old clock, now, for at least five generations in the family, has been standing for the past twenty years in Mr. Cornell's house in Yonkers.

The name of the Secor[1] family has been variously spelt Sicard, Secord and Secor. In 1690 Ambroise Sicard came to this country. He was a French Huguenot, and was forced to the step in consequence of the persecution to which he was subjected at home. He married Jennie Perron, and the first entry upon the records of the Huguenot Church in New York City (now the French Church Du St. Esprit) is that of the baptism of a daughter of Ambroise Sicard, the exile.

Five children were named in his will, as follows: Ambroise, Daniel, Jacques or James, Marie, wife of Guillaume Landrian, and Silvie, wife of Francis Coquiller.

Ambroise Sicard settled with his sons at New Rochelle, N. Y., and on the 9th of February, 1692, purchased one hundred and nine acres of land in that place from one Guillaume Le Count, for which he paid thirty-eight pistoles and eight shillings, current money of New York, equal to about one hundred and fifty dollars in gold.

It is from the second son, Daniel, that Francis Secor is descended. How many children Daniel had is not certain. James, his son, born in 1700, married Mary A. Arvon in 1724, and had seven sons and three daughters. Their fourth child, Francis, was born in 1732. He purchased the present homestead at Scarsdale in 1775, the original deed of which is still in possession of the family. He married Sarah Horton in 1761, and had three sons and five daughters. His oldest son, Caleb, born in 1763, married Anna Tompkins, sister of Daniel D. Tompkins, Governor of New York in 1806.

He had one son and three daughters. The son Francis, subject of this sketch, who was also the oldest child, was born June 5, 1810. He spent his early life upon the farm, from which, as a result of his labors, he accumulated a considerable property. He was a man of fixed and unswerving principle, quick to decide, and ever ready to perform any labor to which his conscience pointed him as a duty. In 1849 he was elected supervisor of the town of Scarsdale, and the office remained in his hands for twenty-six years.

For thirty years he was an active and consistent member of the Presbyterian Church of White Plains, and the confidence of his brethren in his integrity was manifested by their election of him to the eldership. Ten years afterward, when the church adopted the rotary system, he was re-elected, but two years previous to his death, feeling that his strength would not admit of a longer service, he declined the honor

Ninth—Benjamin, born 1760, died 1760.

Tenth—Benjamin, born 1761, died 1841; married 1st, 19th of 3d month, 1783, Alice Sutton, daughter of William Sutton and Dorcas Clapp; married 2d, on the 9th of 5th month, 1804, Pamelia Farrington, and had ten children, as follows:

- 1st. John, born 1783, died 1864; married Sarah Matthews; 2d, Mary Ann Porter, and had: William H., of Newtown, Elizabeth, Andrew J., Jesse, Arvin Alice, Anna Maria, Sarah and Emily and John H.
- 2d. Jesse, born 1785, died 1805.
- 3d. Jane, born 1787, died 18 ; married David Arnold.
- 4th. Silas, born 1789, died at Rochester, 1864; married, 1815, Sarah Mott, born 1791, died 1872, daughter of Adam and Annie Mott, and had:
  - First—Thomas Clapp, of whom further mention is made in our account of Yonkers, born 1819; married, 1850, Jane E. Bashford, born 1829, daughter of John and Esther A. (Guion) Bashford, of Yonkers.
  - Second—James Mott, born 1820, died 1868; married Eliza Leavens, of Kingston, Canada.
  - Third—Richard Mott, born 1822, died 1823.
  - Fourth—Anna Mott, born 1824; married, 1847, Aaron Barnes, of White Plains.
  - Fifth—Sarah Alice, born 1830, died 1874; married, 1859, Ebenezer Walbridge, of Toledo, and left Carlton H., Silas Cornell and Ebenezer Franklin Walbridge.
- 5th. Phebe, born 1791; married Stephen Underhill.
- 6th. Thomas, born 1794, died 1797.
- 7th. Dorcas, born 1796, died 1878; married Joseph Arnold.
- 8th. Thomas Tom, born 1807, died 1823.
- 9th. Mary F., born 1809, died 1874; married Edmund Field.
- 10th. Benjamin, born 1813, died 1814.

[1] Prepared and inserted by the publishers.

Digitized by Google

which was for the third time proffered him. His death took place at his home, May 8, 1885. He was connected with all the laudable enterprises of Scarsdale and was lamented by a large circle of acquaintances and friends.

His son, and only child, Chancey T. Secor, still lives at the old homestead and is its owner. He is a prominent Democrat, and was formerly justice of the peace in Scarsdale. For three years he has held the office of supervisor.

The family from which Green Wright[1] is descended were early settlers in Putnam County, N. Y. His grandfather, Caleb Wright, a resident of Carmel, married Mary Cunningham. Their children were Sarah, wife of David Travvis; Polly, wife of Budd Sloat; Eunice A., wife of Newell Bayley; Green, Stephen T. and Gilbert. Gilbert married Eliza, daughter of Solomon Wright, and they were the parents of ten children—Green; Elizabeth, wife of Lewis Travvis; David; Jackson, who married Sarah A. Hall, and is now living at White Plains; Susan, wife of Ampelias Youmans; Zilphia, wife of David Parent; Simon, who married Eliza Hance, and resides in New York; Pheda, wife of Nathaniel Springsteel; Amanda, wife of Fletcher Adams; and Mary A., wife of Fields Hall, of Mount Pleasant.

Francis Secor

Green Wright was born in Carmel, Putnam County, N. Y., April 24, 1824. Until reaching his twentieth year he remained at home with his father, who was a farmer and contractor. Seeking a wider sphere, he then went to Morrisania and commenced business as a contractor, and followed it for many years with great energy and success. In the prosecution of this pursuit he entered largely into the building of mason-work, grading streets, excavating rock and building sewers, having very extensive contracts with the Port Morris Company. A very large part of the grading of the streets of Morrisania was done by him. In 1854 he built the dam on Bronx River at West Farms, and, in addition to his public work, performed extensive contracts for private individuals, including improvements on the estates of Colonel Richard M. Hoe, William Fox and many others. The grading of Third Avenue was one of the most important of his works. About 1861 he became connected with the Morrisania Steamboat Company, and was made a director in 1876. This company ran freight and passenger boats to Fulton Slip, and in 1881 he purchased the boats and organized the North and East River Steamboat Company the following year. Of this company he was elected president, and still holds the position. The new company runs three boats—the "Morrisania," "Harlem" and "Shady Side"—and charters boats from other companies.

Mr. Wright became an extensive owner of real estate in Morrisania at an early date, his city residence being at One Hundred and Fiftieth Street and Westchester Avenue, where he owns twenty-three lots. He is the possessor of extensive tracts in other portions of the Twenty-third Ward of New York. His country residence is an extensive farm, east of the post road and near the north bounds of the town of Scarsdale. It is a part of the estate formerly owned by Thomas Cornell, and the old Cornell mansion stood very near the site of the present elegant residence which was erected by Mr. Wright in 1878. For picturesque elegance this is excelled by few places in the county. As a man of business he is well known and respected throughout this section of country, and his skill and ability are attested by his success.

He married Elizabeth, daughter of Moses Hall, of Mount Pleasant. They have five children—Moses G. (who married Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. M. D. C. Van Gasbeeck), Sarah A. (deceased), Gilbert A. (who married Louise, daughter of John Prophet), Etta and Alma.

Solomon Wright, mentioned above, married Zilphia, daughter of Elisha Baldwin, whose family are very prominent in Putnam County. Their children were Baldwin, Eliza (who married Gilbert Wright), Mary, Emiline, Elisha, Cornell and William, who is now living in Putnam County. At the age of seventy, Solomon Wright, with three of his sons and one daughter, removed to Illinois and settled near Elgin.

THE HALL FAMILY.—William Hall, whose ancestors are said to have been of Dutch origin, was an old resident of Mount Pleasant, and a tenant of a farm in

---

[1] Prepared and inserted by the publishers.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Green Wright

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the Manor of Phillipsburg, which he afterwards purchased. His son, Isaac Hall, who married Elizabeth Fields, was the father of Moses Fields, who married Mahala Fowler. Their children were Nathaniel F., Tamar J., Sarah A., Aaron, Daniel, Mary A. and Elizabeth, who married Green Wright, as mentioned above. The old homestead of the Hall family is now owned by Fields Hall (brother of Moses Hall), and his son Jackson is now of the fourth generation on the inheritance.

About a half-mile from the northern limit of the town, and just west of the post road, among a group of trees, stands a pleasant old house dating from the end of the last century. This was formerly the residence of George Washington Tompkins, a brother of Governor Tompkins, who built the mansion in 1799, and here was born his son, Warren Tompkins, afterward a resident of White Plains. In 1802 the building came into the possession of the Rev. George Donovan, elsewhere mentioned in connection with the public school. The homestead is now occupied by the venerable Mrs. McCabe, a daughter of the former, together with several of her family,—two daughters and a son, John D. McCabe, well known in the town. Mrs. McCabe has lived in the town, always occupying her present residence, since 1802, and although now in her eighty-fifth year, is possessed of an excellent memory and relates many events of interest connected with the early history of the town. Mr. McCabe has for many years been prominent in the affairs of the town, especially in connection with the management of the school, of which he has for some years been commissioner, besides holding other offices. In the vicinity of this house have been found a few relics of the former Indian proprietors,—arrow-heads and the remains of their primitive utensils—as well as some relics of the Revolutionary War.

About half a mile to the southeast of the McCabe mansion, and at the top of Fish's Hill, on the Mamaroneck road, stands another building of an even earlier date, having been erected prior to the Revolution. For a short time during this war it was occupied by General Sir William Howe as his headquarters, and near by are the graves of several of the British who died at this time. Since the war the house has been successively occupied by Captain De Kay, a Mr. Sherbrooke and the late William H. Fish. The first-named lived here in the early part of the century, and met with a tragic end at the old mill near the station. A lover of fishing, he was accustomed to pursue the sport in that neighborhood, and on the day of his death he had wandered to the old mill, and was sitting upon the dam with his pole, when, by some mischance, he fell from his position to the rocks below, dying shortly thereafter. After him came Mr. Sherbrooke, an eccentric old gentleman, whose constant companion in the ancient house was a fine large dog, who accompanied him everywhere. About the year 1850 the house passed into the hands of Mr. Fish, who made his home there until his death, in 1875, and from that date till 1885 the mansion was occupied by his widow and family—now, however, no longer residents of the town.

On the crest of the hill just south of the schoolhouse, and to the west of the old post road, stands the Sedgwick house, now the residence of Bernard Tone, but before the Revolution occupied by Jonathan Griffin, and celebrated as the place where was held the first town-meeting under the new government of the country in the year 1783. The house has been changed very much of late years, but still preserves in part its original shape and appearance. It stands very near to the road, surrounded by tall locusts and in the midst of pleasant lawns, presenting a picturesque appearance. Upon the death of Jonathan Griffin, Jonathan G. Tompkins, his adopted son and father of Daniel D. Tompkins, moved thither from his old mansion, which was subsequently torn down, and made it his home until his death, when it passed into the hands of the Sedgwick family.

Just west of this, and within a stone's throw of it, stands "Maplehurst," the residence of the late Benjamin F. Butler, originally part of Fox Meadow. The mansion, formerly known as the Travis house, was built about the year 1840. The original building was enlarged shortly after it came into the hands of Mr. Butler, in 1868, and again in 1873, when a large octagonal extension was added. Mr. Butler was one of the comparatively new residents of the town, having made it his home in 1867, and the only town office held by him was that of member of the committee on the new school building. Directly adjoining this residence on the south is the large estate of Charles Butler, an uncle of the preceding, known as the "Fox Meadows," which has so often been mentioned in the town's history. Mr. Butler first made the town his home in 1853, purchasing the original "Fox Meadows" from the heirs of Caleb Tompkins, and has since added largely to its extent by the purchase of the Travis farm on the north and part of the Varian farm on the south.

Previous to this the Vail house, which stood in the midst of a locust grove about midway up the hill, and celebrated as the birth-place of Governor Tompkins, had been entirely dismantled and nothing but the foundations now remain to mark the spot, and they are almost gone from sight. The old roadway, however, still remains, now all grass-grown, and near it a small clear spring,—the scene of the death of one of the old-time school-masters. At the time of the purchase of the estate by Mr. Butler the residence of Caleb Tompkins stood on the rising ground, just west of the site of the old Vail house. This mansion was almost entirely remodeled and rebuilt in 1869, and little remains of the original structure. The present estate of "Fox Meadows" includes nearly four hundred acres, and extends from the post road to the Bronx, and from the Sedgwick property on the north

Digitized by Google

to the Popham estates on the south. Much of the estate was swamp and marsh when Mr. Butler made his purchase, but nearly all has been reclaimed and the whole estate laid out and beautified with great taste. There are large lawns surrounded with many stately trees and for nearly a mile along the bank of the river Bronx stretch many acres of woodland, through which run several small tributary streams, and a beautiful drive is thus afforded entirely within the limits of the estate. The "Fox Meadow Garden" occupies the low land facing the post road and is very picturesque, with its many long graperies and flower-beds and well-kept lawns and shrubberies. It is an interesting coincidence that the "Fox Meadows" should now be occupied by a brother of the late Hon. Benjamin F. Butler, Attorney-General of the United States under Presidents Jackson and Van Buren, who was one of Vice-President Tompkins' most intimate and valued friends. Just previous to the purchase of the estate, in 1858, the mansion of Caleb Tompkins was occupied by his son, Jonathan G. Tompkins, grandson of the former J. G. Tompkins, who, like his grandfather, was prominent in the town, occupying the office of supervisor during the years 1847 and 1848. Adjoining the "Fox Meadows" on the south is the "Locusts," for almost a century the residence of the late William Sherbrooke Popham and his youngest son, Lewis C. Popham, who now occupies the homestead. The mansion was built in 1784 by William Popham, Sr., who made it his home, with the exception of a few years spent in the city of New York, until 1835, since which date his son and grandson have resided here. The mansion stands a few rods west of the post road, in a small valley surrounded by a grove of locusts, being a few hundred feet south of the Varian tavern. The edifice is one of the most picturesque in appearance and location of any in the town, and, although it has passed its century of existence, still stands almost unchanged, an excellent example of the thorough building of the last century. Both within and without the old mansion is charming in its suggestions of the early days of our national life, and with its near neighbors, the Varian and the Morris homesteads, forms a picture vividly remindful of the past.

Adjacent to the Popham estate on the north, and extending north along the old post road, as far as the southern line of the Tompkins farm, was, in former days, the property of the Varian family. The house, now known as the Wayside Cottage, is one of the oldest in the town, dating from a period prior to the Revolution, and, although considerable additions have of late years been made to it, the old part has changed in no essential particular. It stands in the shade of several handsome trees, close to the road, at the very southeast corner of the property, and was built and owned by a farmer, Haddon by name, from whom it passed into the hands of the Varians. During the Revolution it was occupied by James and Michael Varian, who, with their brothers, Richard and Isaac, were actively engaged on the patriot side. When the British army moved towards White Plains, in October, 1776, from their landing near New Rochelle, the Varians, hoping to secure some of their possessions from plunder, removed a favorite cow from her stable —on a level with the road and under the main roof— to the cellar for safe-keeping. When the British came up, those in search of plunder effected an entrance into the house by hacking at the door with their sabres and afterward in the same way got into the cow-stable, only to find the cow gone. Tradition has it that at this moment the unfortunate cow "lowed," thus disclosing her hiding-place, but in point of fact, the cow, and the family Bible, which was likewise hid in the cellar, escaped observation and were preserved for their owners. It is an interesting fact that the sabre-marks of the British are still to be seen in the woodwork of both the front-door of the house and the door to the stable—vivid reminders of the depredations practiced in the Neutral Ground. After the war the house and estate passed into the hands of Colonel Jonathan Varian, who also brought credit upon the family by his services in the War of 1812, and for many years he kept there an inn. Just south of the house stood a large barn, under which was driven the mail-coach, while the stop was made on its way to the city. This tavern was the favorite resort of the drovers, who, with their cattle, made there the last stop on their journey from the Ohio towns to New York City. Arriving at the Varian farm, they would turn their droves of several hundred head of cattle out to graze and themselves would rest at the tavern for several days, making their sales with the dealers, who would drive out from the city and select their purchases. Then, after this interval of rest, the cattle, much improved after their long march, would be driven directly to their various destinations by their new owners. The pastures of the tavern extended to the north and west of the house, and until of late years the barns, in which were stored large quantities of fodder for the droves, stood, as of old, to the west of the tavern itself.[1]

[1] The following extract from a letter in the New York *Evening Post* for December 6, 1879, is of interest in connection with the Varian family: "In the good keeping of Dr. William Varian, of Kingsbridge, New York City, is now, and has long been, the ancient family Bible of his ancestors, the Varians of Westchester County, New York, the proud lot of which was to be preserved, uninjured, through the War of the Revolution, by being buried in the cellar of their dwelling-house, the old residence in the town of Scarsdale, near the former Morris and Popham Estates, still standing, and occupied by a Varian. Although being much exposed (the family being patriotic) to the depredations of British soldiers, and especially of the 'cow-boys'—those notorious brigands of the period, so well described in Cooper's 'Spy' and Bolton's 'History of Westchester County'—this farm-house escaped both the torch and their pillage, and the dark cellar at the dawn of peace, true to its trust, delivered up the remarkable volume as good as ever, to be the household companion of subsequent generations, whose names are registered therein. This ancient *English* Bible is a large folio, with thick embossed lids, fitted originally with clasps, and bears the date 1715 on the title page, but not the name of the place where it was published. Strangely, too,

Digitized by Google

"THE LOCUST."

RESIDENCE OF L. C. POPHAM,

SCARSDALE, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.

Google

by Google

"GREYROCK."
RESIDENCE OF D. J. GARTH,
SCARSDALE, N. Y.

by Google

Just below the Varian cottage, and close by the roadside, stands an ancient mile-stone, dating many years back, and being one of the few antiquities of the town. Its inscription, still quite legible, is as follows:

"XXI
Miles to
N. York,
1773."

A short distance southwest of the Episcopal Church stands a spacious stone mansion, formerly the residence of George Nelson, supervisor of the town in the year 1867, now occupied by Henry W. Bates. This mansion was built about a quarter of a century ago by the father of the Rev. Dr. Olssen, for many years rector of the parish, and is one of the two stone residences in the town. The only other one is the former residence of the late Edward Nelson, brother of the preceding, and is now occupied by Charles P. Crane, a lawyer practicing in New York City. The mansion is a spacious structure, with turreted tower on the southeast corner and broad verandas on the south and west, and stands among a number of handsome trees, on the north side of the back road to Scarsdale Station, at some distance from the road.

On the Mamaroneck road, about quarter of a mile beyond the Fish mansion, stands the residence of Dr. Alexander M. Bruen, built upon the site of what was formerly known as "Cooper's Folly." The latter was at one time the residence of the famous novelist, Jas. Fenimore Cooper, who lived within the township for a few years, but never made it his permanent residence. The above name was given to it by the townspeople, from the peculiar nature of its architecture and the wretchedness of the workmanship. In its general appearance it resembled the typical Swiss châlet, and the timber of which it was composed was so unseasoned and so poorly put together that the house had to be taken down within a few years of its erection. The novelist resided here for about three years after the date of building the house, 1840, and upon his departure the property passed into the hands of Dr. Bruen, who, upon the same site as "Cooper's Folly," built the present large mansion. Just north of this stood, till within a few years, a small, weather-beaten cottage of two stories and steep, pitched roof, where, it is reported, Cooper wrote the "Spy," his famous novel, the scene of which is the "Neutral Ground" of the Revolution, of which Scarsdale formed a part. About eight years ago this cottage was torn down to make way for the large and more pretentious dwelling which occupies a site close by, and is the residence of Green Wright.

But a few rods from Hartsdale Station, and just within the town limits, stands a peculiar mansion, which has long been an object of wonder to many, and which is, perhaps, the most unique structure in the town. This was built for a residence, by the proprietor of the powder-works before mentioned, about the year 1847, and is now occupied in connection with the lithographic works near by. The building is situated on the steep hill-side in such a manner that, although it presents two stories in front, behind the roof barely comes above the top of the terrace. The material is stone or brick, stuccoed and whitewashed. The building is of two full stories, nearly square in plan, with flat roof, on which is a square cupola, with a minaret surmounting the whole. The front is deeply recessed to form the porch or veranda, which is two stories and supported by large round pillars. On either side of the building the hillside is terraced and an avenue of shade-trees extends from the main road to the front door. Altogether the building closely approaches the Tuscan style of architecture and presents an appearance of much greater antiquity than really belongs to it.

Nearly opposite "Fox Meadow Gardens," on the post road, stands the residence of George Burgess, who, with his family, settled in the town about thirty years ago. This is an interesting old mansion, built in an old-fashioned, rambling style, and surrounded by shade-trees, while to the north and northeast extend the farm lands of the owner. Another interesting mansion is "Rowsley," formerly the property of William B. Lang. This stands on the north side of the road which runs eastward from the post road from "Drake's Corner," surrounded by handsome lawns and shaded by beautiful trees. The house is a long and roomy structure, but of only two stories, the upper of which is in the mansard roof. A wide veranda skirts the mansion on the east, south and part of the west side, and is covered with creeping plants and vines. One room in particular is especially interesting as being an exact counterpart of one of the rooms of the famous Clûny Palace in France. This room has a large tiled fireplace on the north, opposite the entrance, while on either side of the room are large windows filled with diamond-shaped panes. The floors, walls and raftered ceiling are of polished oak or similar wood, and, together with the mail-clad figures which stand on either side of the fireplace and the ancient furniture and hangings, they lend to the room a quaint appearance, very suggestive of past centuries.

Early Mails and Traveling Facilities—Noted Localities, Etc.—At the beginning of the present century the mail and traveling facilities of the town were of the most primitive kind. Of regular stage lines there were none, while the mail service was limited to a single trip each way during the week. The mail was carried to and fro in saddle-bags by an old man, Calhoun by name, mounted upon a small horse, the down trip being made on Wednesday and the return on Friday. The route at this time was from New York City to Danbury, Conn. Thus the service remained until about 1810, when, in-

the illustrative pictures, of which there are several, are explained in the Dutch language."

Digitized by Google

stead of on horseback, the mail was transported in a small box-wagon with an arched canvas top, drawn by a single horse. This was in turn superseded by a more suitable conveyance drawn by a pair of horses, and finally this gave way to the regular old-fashioned mail-coach, with its four horses and the typical guard tooting upon his long horn. At this time the service had been increased to a trip each way every day, the coach going down to the city in the morning and returning at night, the route being from New York to North Castle, with a change of horses at White Plains. The stopping-place of the coach in Scarsdale was the Varian Tavern, where the coach drew up at the large barn which formerly stood just to the side of the tavern proper. In these early days of the republic, private as well as public conveyances were few in the town, the respectable vehicles in Scarsdale numbering but three. These were in the possession, respectively, of the Popham, Tompkins and McCabe families, and the impression made by them upon the rustic minds of the population was not inconsiderable. The route of the mail-coach through the town lay along the old "Boston turnpike," or post road, which is about half a mile from the railroad and nearly parallel with it. This has always been the main thoroughfare of the town, and until its doubtful improvement at the hands of the Tweed ring of New York City, in 1872, it was a pleasant and well-shaded country road. In that year the road was broadened, leveled and straightened so as to retain little of its former attractiveness, but the past few years have done much to cover up the traces of the improving hands of thirteen years ago. At this time a short cut was made for the road around the foot of the hill on which were situated the Griffin and Tompkins farms, and a portion of the old road was thus left, which runs over the hill and past the site of the birth-place of Governor Tompkins, the present residence of Charles Butler, at the "Fox Meadows, "Maplehurst," formerly on the "Travis" farm, and the old Griffin and Fisher homesteads, until it again joins with the main road at a point just north of the public school.

The principal offshoots of this road are as follows: At the northern part of its course through the town, the Mamaroneck road, on which are the Fish and Bruen mansions, and from which turn off the "Saxton Woods" road, running in a northeasterly direction; and "Lincoln Avenue," on which, at almost the very limits of the town, stands the Friends' Meeting-House; and at the southern part of its course, a road running to the eastward, past the Drake and Lang mansions; and just south of this, the "Scarsdale depot road," running westward, on which are the old Morris homestead and, near by, the Church of St. James the Less. On this road and just opposite the Morris mansion took place in the time of the Revolution the tragic event described in Bolton's history of the county. It seems that an officer of the French cavalry, accompanied by several companions, went one Sunday to the smithy of Gilbert Vincent to have his horse shod. A son of the smith, alone, was at the house, and he refused to perform the work, partly from religious scruples and also on the ground of lacking the necessary fuel for the forge. The officer, thinking this merely a pretext, or that he was unwilling to do the enemy a service, provoked a quarrel with the young man, which ended in the death of young Vincent. To quote from Bolton: "When his brother, Elijah Vincent, who belonged to De Lancey's refugee corps, heard of the outrage, he vowed revenge on the murderer, and the better to accomplish his purpose, determined to lay in wait and watch the French scouting-parties as they passed to and fro from Scarsdale to their encampment on the Greenburgh hills. For several nights he watched in vain, but at length the opportune moment for revenge arrived. It so happened that a party of the Duke of Lauzun's patrols were passing the very spot where Vincent lay concealed behind the bushes. He immediately rose and fired upon the unsuspecting company, and a captain of the Hussars fell from his horse, mortally wounded." Vincent made his escape and finally went to Canada, where he died.

Within a few feet of this spot, and at the bottom of a small valley, the road crosses a little stream. Here, on one side of the road, is a quicksand of unknown depth, which has remained until the present day, notwithstanding repeated attempts to fill it up, and into this unfortunate cattle have from time to time strayed and been rescued only with difficulty.

On the road to New Rochelle, and just beyond "Castle Cosy," formerly the residence of the late George M. Wheeler, there is another small brook, known as the "Hutchinson," a branch of the Mamaroneck River, and this is spanned by a small wooden bridge. Just at this point the road is closely bordered on either side by dense thickets and small trees, making it rather a lonely spot, and the story in the town is that many years ago a pedlar was waylaid here one dismal night and murdered for his money. There seems to be no actual record of this deed of blood, but the bridge is known as the "Pedlar's Bridge" from the circumstances of the story.

Another legendary tale in which Scarsdale takes much pride is that, during the Revolution, one of the British generals, presumably Sir William Howe, hearing of the existence of the Bronx and imagining it to be navigable, ordered the commander of the fleet, then lying at New York, to sail up the river in time to participate in the battle of White Plains. As the depth of the river at no point in its course along the border of the town was much over three feet, the humor of the legend may be appreciated by all. The following poem, from the pen of William A. Butler, the poet, appeared in the *Scarsdale Gleaner* during the summer of 1875, and fitly expresses the state of the case:

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF MRS. J. M. FULLER,

SCARSDALE, WESTCHESTER CO., N. Y.

Google

Digitized by Google

"After rockets, and blue-lights, and so forth,
On the night of the glorious Fourth,
At midnight I thought I would go forth
To the Bronx, fairest stream of the North;
There I met the old naval commander
(Or his ghost), in a shocking bad hat,
Who was ordered up here to meander
With his fleet, and his guns, and all that;
He stood where the water was wettest—
It almost came over his shoes—
And he cried, 'O my soul that regrettest
The glory the Fates did refuse,
What a mercy to all these Scarsdalers—
That they in this stream couldn't lie;
For at once with my frigates and sailors
I had blown their rebellion sky-high,
When these shores, which I now have my eye on,
Had been fuller of 'scars' than of 'dales,'
And the unicorn here, and the lion,
Would have roared and erected their tails.
O where this fine sylvan drapery,
Or these villas of wonderful shape,
Or hot-house, or green-house, or grapery,
Had they once got a taste of my grape'!
Because Washington pulled at their trigger
They fancy 'twas up with our jig,
But if only the Bronx had been bigger,
Then hers had not been so big,'
'Then, quoth I, 'this old salt should be throttled,
If his long yarn is false, as methinks,
But if true then the Bronx should be bottled
To mix with Centennial drinks!"

Another statement, presumably not a legend, in which Scarsdale can justly take great pride, and which is vouched for by excellent authority, is "that no Scarsdale-born person was ever in jail or the poor-house." Considering that the town has had a corporate existence of over a century, this indeed may be a source of just satisfaction to all the inhabitants.

SCARSDALE STATION. — At the extreme southern portion of the western border of the town the tracks of the Harlem Railroad run within the town limits for about a quarter of a mile, and here, just where the road to Ashford and Dobbs Ferry crosses the line, is situated Scarsdale Station. The building is a frame structure of two stories, with a steep-pitched roof. On the lower floor is a large waiting-room, with ticket and post-office adjoining, while beyond is a freight-room. The building has not been materially altered in its external appearance for many years, but within it has been gradually improved from time to time. The station stands to the west of the line, and near by is the residence of the station-master, one of the celebrities of the town, who has held his position for more than twenty years. The Harlem Railroad was extended slowly from its original terminus at Harlem until it reached Tuckahoe, the station next below Scarsdale, and in 1847 it was finally pushed through to White Plains. At this time it was but a single track line, and there was no station within the town. In consideration, however, of the fact that the company had been given the land required for its roadway through the Popham estate, a platform was built on the grounds of the family, just below the railroad bridge, and trains were stopped here on signal to receive or land members of the Popham family. After a few years a signal station was established in nearly the present location and in the "sixties" the road was double-tracked as far as White Plains, and its course through the town slightly altered.

The distance by the railroad from New York to Scarsdale is eighteen miles, and not many years ago the running time of the "way" trains was a full hour. Of late years a slight improvement has been made in this respect, and the "way" time is now slightly over fifty minutes, while the "express" time is thirty-six minutes. In former days the service on the road was very limited, Scarsdale being ranked merely as a way station; but in 1877, after strong efforts on the part of those citizens who did business in New York, Scarsdale was made a stopping-place for the morning express south and the evening express north, while during the summer still another express stops here on each trip. Besides this, the way service has been improved in time and frequency, and of the fifteen trains that pass each way daily, thirteen stop at Scarsdale, of which two are express trains. The rate of fare was for many years exorbitant, being fifty-five cents for a single trip and no excursion tickets issued; but in 1878 a reduction of ten cents was made in the single fare; excursion tickets were issued, good for three days, for eighty-five cents and within the last year the time of these has been extended to fifteen days. Commutation tickets, good for a year and allowing for two trips each week-day, are sold for sixty-five dollars. The number of commuters from Scarsdale varies from fifteen to twenty-five, and there is, besides, a considerable number of transient passengers. As there are no manufacturing interests in the town, the freight traffic is entirely local, and although formerly a considerable quantity of milk was daily sent to the city over the line, the high freight charges have caused this to be diverted from the railroad, and it is now carried to the city by a daily wagon service.

RECENT TOWN HISTORY.—In the year 1878 the town was visited by the most severe wind and rain-storm ever known in the county, which, indeed, almost amounted to a tornado. This occurred on the afternoon of Sunday, July 20th, and although lasting barely over four or five minutes, did a great amount of damage. The path of the storm lay almost directly from west to east, and although the houses in its track escaped with merely the loss of blinds and other trifling damage, many beautiful and valuable fruit and shade-trees were laid low. The scene in the path of the storm was almost indescribable, the sky being of a dark leaden hue, the atmosphere thick with torrents of rain and hail, and in the midst of this huge trees reeling and swirling round in the furious wind and then falling with a terrific crash of boughs, while in all directions were flying fragments of light timber and indeed of anything that lay in the storm's track. On the "Fox Meadow" farm alone over five hundred

Digiti

fine trees were destroyed, while on other estates the damage, though less, was nevertheless considerable. The storm ceased about as suddenly as it had begun, and in a few minutes the afternoon sun shone gloriously upon the dripping and tangled masses of *debris* that lay scattered everywhere in the path of the storm.

In the year 1882 an innovation occurred in the extension to Scarsdale of the lines of the Westchester Telephone Company from White Plains as centre. Up to 1885 the subscribers in the town numbered but five, but a new central office for Hartsdale, Scarsdale and Tuckahoe has been started at the Hartsdale Station, with over twenty-five subscribers, most of them within the town of Scarsdale.

It is only within late years, also, that Scarsdale has possessed telegraphic facilities. In 1881 the Western Union Telegraph Company established a testing station for their lines on the Scarsdale bank of the Bronx, within a stone's throw of Scarsdale Station. To this run nearly a hundred wires from all parts of the surrounding country and here is established a public telegraph office.

Although so sparsely settled, Scarsdale has been visited by several severe fires, which have invariably run their course, the facilities for fighting them being entirely wanting. In 1863 the old mill which had stood for more than a century just above Scarsdale Station, on the Bronx, was totally destroyed by fire, nothing but the foundations and a few fragments of machinery remaining, and no attempts at rebuilding have since been made. In the fall of 1874 the residence of Benjamin Carpenter, on the high ridge to the east of the post road, was set on fire by an incendiary, and in a short time was burned to the ground, together with numerous out-buildings and barns and some live-stock. Some years after this a house of considerable size, which stood close by Scarsdale Station, on the Popham estate, at one time the residence of Robert C. and afterward of his brother, Lewis C. Popham, was totally destroyed by fire, nothing but the chimneys and foundations remaining to mark the dwelling once a familiar landmark.

The last large conflagration in the town was the burning of the pretty little parish church of St. James the Less, which occurred on the evening of Palm Sunday, 1882. Although the neighborhood was speedily aroused, all efforts to save the building proved unavailing, very little of value being saved of the inside fittings, and soon only the walls and part of the little chapel remained of the church which was so dear to all the inhabitants of the neighboring country.

SCARSDALE LAWN TENNIS CLUB.—The only organization of a peculiarly social nature existing in the town is the Scarsdale Lawn Tennis Club, just entering upon its third season. The club was organized early in the spring of 1883, and the first year had a membership of about twenty,—including honorary members. The club had two courts at "Fair View," the residence of Mr. Hamilton, where the members met for practice every Saturday afternoon during the warm months. The season was marked by a handicap tournament open to all the members. In the spring of 1884 the club opened its season with a membership of nearly thirty, ladies being admitted to active membership. The club occupied four courts in Fox Meadow Gardens, which were put at their disposal by Mr. Charles Butler. During the year two tournaments were held, open to members only,—the first, ladies' singles, and the second, doubles, of a lady and gentleman. The last season was inaugurated on the 7th of June, at the Fox Meadow Gardens, the number of courts having been increased to six and the membership aggregating forty-four. The original officers of the club were:

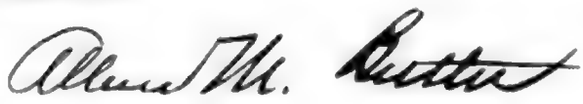
President.
THOMAS F. BURGESS.
Secretary.
CORTLANDT FISH.
Treasurer.
JAMES BLEECKER, JR.

The officers for 1885 were the following:

President.
ALLEN M. BUTLER.
Secretary.
JAMES BLEECKER, JR.
Treasurer.
H. GRANVILLE BUTLER.

The club meets for practice every Saturday afternoon, but the grounds are open for the use of members on any week-day. The routine business of the club is entrusted to a governing committee of seven members, including the officers ex-officio. Although of very recent origin, the Scarsdale Tennis Club now forms a prominent feature in the social life of the town, and the scene at the grounds on a bright Saturday afternoon is charming and full of interest.

AMATEUR NEWSPAPER.—Scarsdale has never been represented by a newspaper of its own except during a few months of the year 1885. In June of that year appeared the first number of *The Scarsdale Gleaner*, a small four-page monthly, devoted to the interests of the town. This was entirely an amateur enterprise, being printed as well as edited within the limits of the township. Although but a modest undertaking, the *Gleaner* proved a great success, the circulation amounting to more than two hundred copies, and the subscription list embracing many outside of the town. With its fifth number the paper was obliged to suspend publication, owing to circumstances beyond the control of the amateur editors, and so, after a short but highly successful career, the only journalistic attempt on the part of the citizens of the town came to a conclusion.



Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

NEW ROCHELLE.[1]

BY REV. CHARLES E. LINDSLEY, D.D.

THE settlement of the Huguenots at New Rochelle is believed to have been begun as early as the year 1686–87, by certain refugees from the town of La Rochelle, France. This was the year following the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, by which unjust and impolitic act fifty thousand French families were driven from their homes to other countries. Many of them fled first to England, but subsequently found their way to America. Those who came first to New Rochelle were landed, it is thought, by an English vessel at Bonnefoy's Point, now Davenport's Neck. Their exact number is uncertain, but the names of some of the early settlers are found upon the town records, between the years 1695 and 1710, and are as follows:

Allaire.
Angevin.
Badeau.
Bonrepas.
Bongrand.
Bonnefoy.
Beignor.
Besly.
Bolts.
Bonnett.
Barnard.
Bouteillier.
Clapp.
Clark.
Cothonneau.
Caillard.
Coutant (i),
Das.
Devean.
Fannel.
Flandreau.
Fourrestier.
Ganyard.
Guion.
Girand.
Gouqeon.
Guerin.
Jouneau.
Lambent.
Le Roux.
Lespinard.
Le Villain.
Landrin.
Lavinge.
Le Count.
Machet.
Mastier.
Mercier.
Naudin.
Neufuille.
Palcot.
Peneau.
Pinckney.
Rayneau.
Scurman.
Sycard.
Thevoulde.
Thaunet.,
Thauver.
Velleau.

In the year 1710 the population of New Rochelle amounted to two hundred and sixty-one persons, including fifty-seven slaves. This enumeration is from a census of the town supposed to have been taken in that year.[2] The Rev. L. J. Coutant, however, in his sketches of Huguenot New Rochelle, asserts that the total number of inhabitants at this time was three hundred and twenty-five.

The same gentleman, who, in all that relates to the early history of this town is peculiarly well-informed, observes that "the two oldest individuals living in the town at that date, Mary Badeau and Frederick Schureman, were each eighty years old. The family name having the greatest number of representatives (sixteen) was that of Schureman. There were eleven of the name of Le Doof. The next most numerous family names were those of Guion, Bonnett, Sycard, Frederick, Neffveille and Angevine. Of the fifty-four family names existing in the town of New Rochelle when this census of 1710 was taken, only six at the present time survive. These are the Le Counts, Seacords, Badeaus, Renouds, Bonnetts and Coutants. The rest, forty-eight in number, have all disappeared from the town, either by death or removal, or have been merged by marriage into other family names." Many portions of the Huguenot stock came to New Rochelle at a later period.

There is a distinct and unbroken tradition, dating back much more than a hundred years, and handed down through several separate families, notably the Guions and Coutants, that the first settlers of the town landed at Bonnefoy's Point. The fact is perhaps as well established as any other not a matter of written record. An excavation existed, and perhaps still exists, upon that point, which from time immemorial has been designated by those who should know, as the cellar of the first house ever built in New Rochelle. All we can say is that there are those living now whose great-grandfathers might have helped to dig that cellar. Members of the Guion family have been known to assert that the first child born in the town was born in that house, and was a Guion.

THE GUION PLACE,
Huguenot Street, New Rochelle.

In the early division of the town, that part of it now known as Davenport's Neck is designated as Leisler's and Le Count's Neck. It contains about two hundred acres. This neck subsequently became the property and residence of the Lespinard family, one of whom came to New Rochelle with the Huguenots in 1689.

The Lespinard Cemetery is situated on the south side of the Neck and contains several memorials of this family. In 1786 this piece of land was purchased by Newbury Davenport, father of the late proprietors, Lawrence and Newbury Davenport.

Bonnefoy's Point, situated on the northeast side of the Neck, has already been mentioned as the landing-place of the Huguenots, about 1689. A very different landing was made there on the 22d of October, 1776. On the 18th a huge British fleet had landed rein-

---

[1] See reminiscences of New Rochelle by Rev. Wm. Hague at the end of the chapter on "Pelham."

[2] See Bolton's Hist. vol. i. p. 670.

Digitized by Google

forcements for the army in New York. There were, in all, seventy-two sail, having on board four thousand Hessians, six thousand Waldeckers, two companies of chasseurs, two hundred English recruits and two thousand baggage horses. The most of these German troops were at once ordered to join Howe in his march to White Plains. The main body of his army had already crossed from Throg's Neck to Pell's Point, and on the 21st of October was encamped on the Heights, north of the village of New Rochelle, Howe's headquarters being at a house on the White Plains road, about one mile from the village. On the 22d General Knyphausen landed with the Second Division of German hirelings, on Bonnefoy's or Bauffet's Point. He encamped his troops the same day on the E. K. Collins place (now Larchmont Manor), and from there joined the main body in time for the battle of the 28th. The one was a landing of peaceful and persecuted emigrants, seeking in America that religious freedom which was denied them in their native France; the other, a disembarkation of German mercenaries, nearly a century later, to carry war, plunder and desolation to the homes and hearts of the descendants of the Huguenots, the plunderers and the plundered being of the same religious faith.

A VIEW OF HUGUENOT STREET, NEW ROCHELLE, IN 1798.
Showing the old Episcopal church with the district school-house.

The village of New Rochelle was situated on a level tract of land, upon the line of the old Boston road, extending from a large pond, now drained, but for many years known as the Ice Pond or Crystal Lake, to a point near to where the Presbyterian Church now stands, being about one mile in extent and constituting what is known as Huguenot Street. The road was only roughly marked out at first, but avoided the steep hill which had to be surmounted by the present Boston turnpike.

In 1693 a road was opened at right angles to Huguenot Street, known as North Street, the same which now extends to Upper New Rochelle.

Centre Street was the first road laid out in a direct line from Huguenot Street to the Salt Water, it is believed, and it was on that part of Huguenot Street, between North and Centre, that the Huguenots erected their first dwellings. The land here is dry and level, and is said to be seventy feet above tidewater. Next to Centre, it is reasonable to suppose that the street now called "Cedar Avenue" was opened, running along in a tortuous course, as close to the creek as possible, from the northeastern part of Huguenot Street to the foot of Centre Street, and then to the line of boundary between New Rochelle and Pelham. This road was the way of approach to Bonnefoy's Point.

The farms or lots were narrow and long,—in some places nearly, or quite a mile in length, and, for the most part, not more than one field wide. Some of these retain their original width and length to the present day, while a few have been subdivided, and others, perhaps, have been doubled, two into one. The road leading from North Street, by the way of the Coutant Cemetery to the Pelham boundary line, which it strikes at what was formerly known as "Newport's Corner," must have been opened at an early period of the settlement of the town, perhaps simultaneously with the opening of North Street, as it would seem to be the only road in those times north of Huguenot Street by which the town of East Chester could be reached. This road runs in a direct westerly course and was the location of several Huguenot families.[1]

The Huguenots "seem to have been an industrious and order-loving people." What their worldly circumstances were, might easily be inferred from the persecutions they had suffered and from the precipitate manner in which most of them had been compelled to abandon their homes and flee to foreign lands. Their means were small, and it was, no doubt, some years before the lands which they acquired were paid for; and even when this was accomplished, by patient toil and frugal management, the problem still remained of how to extract a living from their small farms. That they found this a work of no small difficulty, we may conclude from the following letters, written shortly after their arrival. On the 20th of September, 1689, they purchased from John Pell a tract of about six thousand acres, the price for which was not far from one dollar an acre. This was divided into lots on the 20th of November, 1693, by a surveyor; each occupant paying his just proportion of the total value. The letters, taken from

---

[1] These statements as to early localities have been taken, by permission, from an interesting sketch of the first settlement of New Rochelle, by the Rev. L. J. Coutant.

Digitized by Google

the "Documentary History of the State of New York,"[1] are as follows:

"NEW ROCHELLE 20th Oct, 1690.

"Sir,— * * * * * * * * * * *

"Mr. Pinton has delivered me this day, an order to be communicated to the s'd inhabitants (of New Rochelle), relative to the election and nomination of Assessors, Collectors and Commissioners, for laying, impesing and receiving Taxes for his Majestie's service. The time is very short, since it is the twenty seventh instant they must be at W'chester, but they look for some forbearance and delay from your goodness, in case, notwithstanding their diligence, they may not be able punctually to answer. It is not through any unwillingness to exert themselves to meet it, but you know their strength as well as I. Notwithstanding, despite their poverty and misery, they will never lack in submission to the orders of his Majesty, both for the public good and interest. This they protest to me, and I pray you to be persuaded thereof. I am with respect, and pray God for your prosperity,

"Sir,

"Your very humble and very Obedient Servant, D. BONREPAS,
pastor of this French Colony.

"Address: a Monsieur de Leislar, Lieut Gouverneur pour le Roy D'Angleterre, du Fort William, a La Noie York."

Governor Fletcher arrived in New York on the 29th of August, 1692. To him, soon afterwards, probably in 1693, the inhabitants of New Rochelle addressed the following humble petition:[2]

"To His Excellency, Col. Benjamin Fletcher, Governor in Chief, and Captain General of ye Province of New York and dependencies &c.

"The humble petition of ye inhabitants of New Rochelle, Humbly sheweth.

"That your petitioners having been forced by the late persecutions in France to forsake their country and estates, and flye to ye Protestant Princes. Their Majestyes, by their proclamation of ye 25th of April, 1689, did grant them an azile in all their dominions, with their Royall protection; Wherefore they were invited to come and buy lands in this province, to the end that they might by their labour help the necessityes of their families, and did spend therein all their small store, with the help of their friends, whereof they did borrow great sums of money, having been compelled to sell for that purpose the things which are most necessary for their use. Wherefore your petitioners humbly pray that your Excellency may be pleased to take their Case in Serious Consideration, and out of charity and pity to grant them for some years what help and privileges your Excellency shall think Convenient, and your petitioners in duty bound shall ever pray &c.

"THAUVET ELSI COTHONEAU."

The patents of the towns of New Rochelle and Pelham are both of them ancient and curious documents, illustrative of the quaint orthography and prodigious legal verbiage of a past age.

The following is John Pell's grant of New Rochelle in 1689:

"*To all Christian people* to whom this present writing shall come, John Pell, proprietor of the Manor of Pelham, within the County of West Chester, in the province of New York, within the dominion of New England, gentleman, and Rachel, his wife, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting. Know Yee that the said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, for and in consideration of the sum of sixteen hundred and seventy-five pounds and twenty-five shillings sterling, current silver money of this province, to him in hand paid and secured to be paid at the or before the ensealing and the delivery thereof by Jacob Leisler, of the city of New York, Merchant, the receipt whereof they, the said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, do thereby acknowledge themselves to be fully satisfied and contented, and thereof, and of every part and parcel thereof do hereby freely and clearly acquit and Exhonerate and discharge the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs, executors, administrators and every of them, by these presents have granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents do grant, bargain and sell unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, all the tract of land lying and being within said Manor of Pelham, containing six thousand acres of land and also one hundred acres of land more, which the said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, do freely give and grant for the French church, erected, or to be erected, by the inhabitants of the said tract of land, or by their assignees, being butted and bounded as herein is after expressed, beginning at the west side of a certain white oak tree, marked on all four sides, standing at high water mark at the south end of Hog Neck, by shoals, harbour and runs northwesterly through the great fresh meadow lying between the road and the Sound, and from the north side of the said meadow, to run from thence due north to Bronckes river, which is the west division line between the said John Pell's land and the aforesaid tract, bounded on the south-easterly by the Sound and Salt Water, and to run east-northerly to a certain piece of salt meadow lying at the salt creek which runneth up to Cedar Tree brook, or Gravelly brook, and is the bounds to Southern. Bounded on the east by a line that runs from said meadow north-westerly by marked trees, to a certain black oak tree standing a little below the road, marked on four sides, and from thence to run due north four miles and a half, more or less, and from the north side of the said west line, ending at Broncke's river, and from thence to run easterly till it meets with the north end of the said eastern most bounds, together with all and singular the islands and the islets before the said tract of land lying and being in the sound and salt water, with all the harbors, creeks, rivers, rivulets, runs, waters, lakes, meadows, ponds, marshes, salt and fresh, swamps, soils, timber, trees, pastures, feedings, enclosures, fields, quarries, mines, minerals (silver and gold mines only excepted), fishing, hunting, fowling, hawking and also the messuages, houses, tenements, barns, mills, mill dams, as they were at the time of the ensealing and delivery of the articles of agreement of sale for said land, bearing date the second day of July, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and eighty seven. As relation being thereto had, doth more fully and at large appear, as also the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders of a certain lott of land and meadow now in the tenure and occupation of John Jefferd and Olive, his wife, being part of the aforesaid six thousand acres of land, with all the privileges belonging thereto, or in any wise appertaining or therewith now used, occupied and enjoyed, as all the right, title, interest, reversion, remainder, property, claime and demand whatsoever, of, in, and to the same, and any part thereof as hereafter expressed.

"To have and to hold the aforesaid tract of land, with all other the above granted premises, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assigns, for ever, to his and their own sole and proper use, benefit and behoof, for ever yielding and paying unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns, lords of the said Manor of Pelham, to the assigns of him or them, or their or either of them, as an acknowledgment to the lords of the said Manor, one fat calf on every four and twentieth day of June, yearly and every year forever—if demanded.

"The said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, for themselves, their heirs, executors and administrators, respectively, do hereby covenant, promise and grant to and with the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, in manner and form following, that is to say, at the time of the ensealing hereof, they, the said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, do avouch themselves to be true, sole and lawful owners of all the aforebargained premises, and that they are lawfully seized of and in the same and every part thereof in their own proper right of a good and indefinable estate of inheritance in fee simple, and have in themselves good right, full power and lawful authority to sell and dispose of the same as aforesaid; and the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, shall and may from henceforth and forever, peaceably, quietly, have, hold, occupy, possess and enjoy the above granted premises, and every part and parcel thereof, free and clear without any charge or intimidation, caused, made, suffered or granted by said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, or either of them, their or either of their heirs in estate, right, title, interest in law or equity, trust, charge or other molestation whatsoever.

"And the said John Pell, and Rachel, his wife, for themselves respectively and for their respective heirs, do covenant, promise and grant to warrant and defend the above granted premises with their appurtenances and every part and parcel thereof, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees forever, against the lawful charges and demands. In witness whereof, the said John Pell and Rachel, his wife, have hereunto set their hands and seals in New York, the twentieth day of September, in the first year of the reign of our sovereign lord and lady, William and Mary, King and Queen of England, &c., &c., in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and eighty-nine.

"JOHN PELL.
"The Mark of
"RACHEL—R—PELL.

Leisler purchased the lands from Pell for the Hu-

[1] Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. ii. p. 304.
[2] Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. iii. p. 926.

guenots, to whom he released them as rapidly as possible during the year 1690, preceding the year in which he was executed on a charge of high treason. The township was surveyed and divided into lots or farms on the 20th of November, 1693, by Alexander Allaire, one of the purchasers from Leisler, and Captain Bond, who was a surveyor.

MILITARY HISTORY.—The town of New Rochelle appears to have suffered somewhat during the Revolutionary War, although by no means so severely as some other parts of the county:

"On the 18th of October, 1776, the British army crossed to Pelham Point from Throg's Neck, and marching northerly, encamped the same night on the high ground between Hutchinson's River (East Chester Creek) and New Rochelle village, where it remained till the 21st. On the 21st the British removed and encamped on New Rochelle Heights, north of the village, and on both sides of the road leading to Scarsdale. During the march of the two armies towards White Plains, frequent skirmishes happened. General Sullivan attacked the vanguard of the British on their road from New Rochelle, and in the fight which ensued, as well as in most of the other smaller engagements, the advantage was with the Americans.

"But their greatest troubles befell the inhabitants after the battle at White Plains was over, and the British army had retired to Dobbs Ferry; for the whole region between the Sound and the Hudson River was overrun and laid waste by a partizan warfare, and became, as it were, the battle-ground of the disaffected, and the prey of both friend and foe. Scenes of cruelty and bloodshed, unknown in civilized warfare, marked these predatory excursions from both lines, and in defense of their homes, the valiant sons of Westchester exhibited frequent instances of personal bravery unexcelled in ancient or modern times." [1]

The following incidents, related in Mr. Coutant's Historical Reminiscences, may serve as specimens of the annoyances and dangers to which the inhabitants occupying a position between two hostile armies were subjected. In many instances, no doubt they were of a far more tragical character.

In 1776, when a portion of Howe's army was encamped upon the high land a few hundred yards east from the old Coutant homstead (upon which is now located the Coutant Cemetery), the surrounding country suffered much from the soldiery and camp followers. Of this kind of annoyance the premises and family of Isaac Coutant, by reason of their proximity to the army, had their full share. The fields were stripped of their fences for fuel, and the live-stock of every kind disappeared, while the granaries and barns were speedily emptied of their contents. But while the soldiery were engaged in this external department of plunder, the Hessian women ransacked the house from kitchen to garret in quest of food, clothing or any article that might seem of use to them. So frequent were their visits, and so importunate and imperious their demands, that even the meat and vegetables were taken from the pot in the process of cooking. At length Isaac Coutant was compelled to apply to General Knyphausen for protection, since his family were in danger of starvation. A stalwart Highlander from one of the Scotch regiments was detailed to guard the premises. Hardly had he entered upon this duty when one of these female harpies entered the house, and, with meat-hook in hand, made her way, as usual, to the dinner-pot suspended over the fire. But as she stooped to raise the lid the Scotchman dealt her a blow with the flat of his sword which materially interfered with her investigations, and when she arose in wrath and advanced upon him with the meat-hook (without giving the countersign) he dealt her another thwack with his broadsword which sent her staggering to the door, from which she retreated in the direction of the camp, hurling anathemas like Parthian arrows at the soldier, by which, however, as they were couched in an unknown tongue, he was not much dismayed.

"As the war progressed it assumed an aspect of increased and continuous peril. Families living between the lines of the two hostile camps were constantly exposed to plunder and violence. One night, as the family at the old (Coutant) homestead were sitting quietly around the hearthstone, the doors were unceremoniously burst open by a company of these unscrupulous plunderers. Isaac Coutant, a man advanced in years, was by them greeted roughly. He and his sons were ordered out into the yard, and their money demanded at the point of the bayonet. What they had about them was given up. Suspecting him of having a concealed horde somewhere, they punched him in the back with their guns at full cock, to induce him to surrender it. Failing to discover what did not exist, they marched the young men across the fields to the north of the house, down to the border of a dense swamp, and tried by means of threats and promises to induce them to confess the locality of the supposed concealed treasure. The boys, however, were no wiser than their father with regard to this imaginary deposit; so that, in the end, their captors seem to have become convinced of their mistake and allowed them to return home. The boys becoming, as may well be supposed, tired of this sort of thing, which was liable to happen at any hour of the day or night, sought concealment on such occasions under the floor of the old kitchen (a detached building, as was commonly the case in the days when slavery prevailed, and as may still be seen on the old Quintard homestead), which was elevated sufficiently above the ground to admit of a person crawling under and lying down between the huge oaken beams. After two or three years of lodgment in this strange dormitory, matters becoming worse and worse, and fearing that they might be smoked out or burnt out, as animals are sometimes from their burrows, they were literally compelled to take to the woods, where, in company with other young men of the neighborhood, they built a hut like an Indian wigwam in a secluded and unfrequented spot. This hut they thatched over with wattles and straw, in such wise as to make it water-tight, and thus had quite a safe and comfortable sleeping place.

"The Beyeau Tavern, an old Huguenot landmark, was situated on North Street, directly opposite where the Paine Monument now stands. It was a popular place of resort for the young people during the Revolutionary War. Dancing and card-playing seem to have been the favorite amusements, in which they indulged at all hours of the night, at the imminent hazard of being caught by prowling bands of refugees and Skinners, who scoured the middle portion of Westchester County in small squads, in quest of forage and indiscriminate plunder. An incident which took place at this tavern, and which was related to Mr. Coutant by his father, may serve to illustrate the character of some of the experiences of those days." [2]

A number of the young men of the neighborhood, who were convened there for amusement, found themselves suddenly surrounded in the midst of their merriment by a troop of light horsemen from the British lines.

Several of the party made their escape from the house through the rear windows and fled across the fields to the woods. The rest were captured and searched. As very little money was found upon them they were accused of having concealed it, and, as a

[1] Tompkins' address at White Plains, October 28, 1845.

[2] Coutant's "Reminiscences."

Digitized by Google

punishment, were lashed to the heels of the soldiers' horses and the animals spurred into violent action, so that the prisoners were dashed about at the peril of their limbs and lives. After this cruel treatment they were compelled to kneel down in the road and repeat after their brutal captors a profane burlesque on the Lord's Prayer. This ceremony ended, they were stripped of their coats, hats and shoes, and left to find their way home as best they could, or, if they preferred it, to return to their merriment in the tavern.

During the War of 1812 a panic took place among the militia who had been stationed upon Davenport's Neck as a guard against the possible landing of a force from the British men-of-war which were cruising in the Sound. It was a false alarm, but their fright was such that they fled in every direction, taking refuge in the neighboring woods and swamps, and some of them failing to report themselves until many hours had elapsed. This was not a victory to be proud of, nor even a masterly retreat, but when we recall the history in more modern times, of the battle of Bull Run, we will not be too hard on the heroes of Davenport's Neck. It requires time, discipline and, above all, active service to make soldiers out of the raw material of farmers, mechanics and business men. The rout was not any more complete or disgraceful than at the battle of Camden, South Carolina, where Gates' new levies ran so fast and so far, that some think they are running still.

The Paine Farm and Monument.—Writers upon the history of New Rochelle have usually referred to the fact that the noted Thomas Paine lived here for some time, upon a farm bestowed upon him by the Legislature of the State of New York for his political services during the War of the Revolution. This farm, said to have consisted originally of about three hundred acres, was, at the commencement of hostilities, in the possession of one Frederic Deveau, called in the records of the Confiscation Act, Bevoe, by mistake, and styled "Yeoman." As the name indicates, he was doubtless a descendant of the Huguenots.

At the close of the war, being a Tory, his property was confiscated and given to Paine. It was called by some "The Paine Farm" and by others "Mount Paine." Thomas Paine came to live upon his property in New Rochelle during the first years of the present century (1801–2). In his "Field-Book of the Revolution," Benson J. Lossing, in referring to this monument, speaks of the inscription, "Thomas Paine, Author of Common Sense," as though no other words had been placed there. If he had taken the trouble to examine more closely, he would have ascertained that his admirers have placed extracts from his work, "The Age of Reason," in the rear. If (as has been stated by those who ought to know) the likeness of Paine placed by his admirers upon the monument is a good one, the one given by Mr. Lossing is not so, for there is very little resemblance of the one to the other. A part of the house in which Paine lived still remains intact, and is thought to be one of the most ancient dwellings in the town.

THOMAS PAINE'S MONUMENT.

As he died on the 8th of June, 1809, in New York, Paine could only have lived in New Rochelle four or five years. He was buried in a corner of the Paine farm ; but in the year 1819 the remains were disinterred by William Cobbett, and conveyed to England. I once met with an aged man, who informed me that he was living a small boy at the time, in a house almost directly opposite the place where Paine was buried. At a very early hour one morning, when going to the pasture to drive up the cows for milking, he discovered several men hard at work digging near the road. He was alarmed and watched them from a distance. They placed something contained in a box, in a wagon, filled up the empty grave and drove rapidly away. That was the last of the mortal remains of the author of "Common Sense" ever seen in this country. What became of them is not known, and probably never will be. They are supposed, however, to have been taken by Cobbett to England.

Digitized by Google

At a much later period a monument was erected near the spot and facing the road to White Plains.

There, on the eastern side of the house, is the little sleeping-room, with its antique "Franklin fire-place, over which the arch infidel warmed his shivering limbs before returning to his bed of straw." During his abode here he was accustomed to make frequent excursions into the surrounding country, calling on the principal families and farmers of the neighborhoods of New Rochelle and East Chester, whose cellars in those days were well supplied with hogsheads of good old cider, which they never failed to serve up in bountiful libations, to the great pleasure of their distinguished visitor.[1] A late resident of New Rochelle stated that his grandfather once called on Mr. Paine to serve him with some legal paper or process. Upon discovering the nature of it, he was greeted with a perfect shower of imprecations from the aged, blear-eyed, little old man. But his wrath soon spent itself, and the visitor was invited in. They entered the sleeping-room above mentioned. There was a fire burning in the Franklin fire-place. In the middle of the room stood a small pine table without a cloth or cover of any kind. Upon it were the remains of a loaf of rye bread, a pitcher of milk and a piece of butter, from which Mr. Paine had evidently recently made his frugal breakfast. Another visitor at another time found this table adorned with a cover of old newspapers. The Franklin stove has been removed from the place which it occupied for so many years, and is now (1885) exhibited as a curiosity in the show window of Messrs. Bell & Harmen, of New Rochelle. At the time of the interview above described Mr. Paine was clad in a most extraordinary-looking outer garment, being nothing less than a dressing-gown made out of an old army blanket. The house was originally a small wooden building, one and a half stories in height, with a kitchen attached to the south gable. The removal of the remains of Paine from their burial-place in New Rochelle had its effect, too, upon English literature, for it led to the famous but irreverent epigram of Byron, beginning,—

> "In digging up your bones, Tom Paine,
> Will Cobbett has done well," etc.[2]

OTHER HUGUENOT HOUSES.—The dwelling upon Centre Street formerly owned and occupied by the late Mr. Samuel Davis, and still in good repair, although it has been much altered and added to, is undoubtedly one of the oldest in the town. It was the residence for thirty years consecutively of the Rev. Theodosius Bartow, pastor of the Protestant Episcopal Church, who was settled in 1790, and died in New Rochelle, November 12, 1819. The venerable old tamarind tree at the east end of the house is said to have been planted by Mr. Bartow himself. The chimney jambs in this house, in the principal room, are ornamented with the Dutch titles inscribed with Scripture mottoes so much in vogue in the olden time. It is probable that Mr. Bartow was not the first occupant, and that the house dated from long before the Revolutionary War.

THE PINTARD MANSION also has a pre-Revolutionary history; and yet, notwithstanding its antiquity, it is one of the most desirable residences in New Rochelle. There are eleven rooms in the main build-

THOMAS PAINE'S HOUSE.

---

[1] Coutant's "Reminiscences."

[2] *Note by Mr. Coutant.*—"It is naturally supposed by many that the residence of Thomas Paine in New Rochelle must have exerted an injurious influence upon the moral and religious character of the inhabitants, and the presence of a public monument to his memory is calculated to confirm this impression. In so far as this relates to the contemporaries of Paine, the majority of whom at the time in New Rochelle were of Huguenot descent, it must be acknowledged that the author of the 'Age of Reason' was not entirely destitute of followers and admirers among them; and it is possible, and even probable, that this evil influence might have become more extended and permanent than it ever has become, but for the counteracting power exerted by the early Methodist Church, especially at Upper New Rochelle and along the entire extent of North Street. It is a remarkable fact, and might be regarded by some in the light of a special providence, that immediately subsequent to the death and burial of Paine in this neighborhood, and for over twenty years afterwards, the powerful appeals made to the hearts and consciences of the people by the early itinerant preachers of Methodism, as well as the combined efforts of the whole membership of that church, were attended with extraordinary results, producing a complete change in the religious views and feelings of the community, and dealing to infidelity of the Paine type a blow from which it has never recovered. Nor was this counteracting influence confined to the place where it originated, in the vicinity of the Paine monument, at Upper New Rochelle, but it spread to the adjacent towns of East Chester, Mamaroneck and White Plains. In a word, so general and so popular was this religious reformation in all the localities above referred to, that, for a time, any man thereabouts who should have openly professed himself to be a disciple of Thomas Paine would have been (and in a few cases actually was) regarded as a sort of a moral monster by the general community. This

Digitized by Google

ing, with two wings attached, one occupied as a kitchen. The ceilings of all the rooms on the ground floor are fully ten feet in height, and there is an open fire-place in every room in the house, but one. It stands almost directly opposite to the Presbyterian Church.

The front line of this old place, previous to the year 1800, extended through to Huguenot Street. The making of Main Street cut off from it a triangular piece of land, which, lying thus between the two streets, was given by the trustees of Lewis Pintard to the Presbyterian Church, in the year 1827, and forms part of the site of the present edifice.

In digging a deep drain along that portion of Main Street in front of the church, in the spring of 1884, a copper coin was thrown up by the workmen from a depth of ten or eleven feet below the surface. How it came to be buried there is a matter of conjecture. It was in a good state of preservation. The head of George III., King of Great Britain, is faintly discernible. The date is almost obliterated, but seems to be 1780 or 1790.

OLD HUGUENOT HOUSE,
On Mr. Simeon Lester's Place, North Street, New Rochelle.

The grounds adjacent to the house consist of over twenty-three acres, and there is upon them one of the finest springs in the town of clear, cool water, the depth of which never varies at any season of the year. Coins issued before the Revolutionary War have been found there, while ploughing, but none of American origin. In the year 1884 an additional room was built over the front porch, and, while removing a part of the roof for this purpose, a number of papers and letters of Huguenot origin were discovered. The letters are addressed to Mr. Lewis Pintard, of New Rochelle, and some of the papers are in his own handwriting. There were also found a pointed shoe, of ancient make, and a small vial of olive oil, a few drops of which still adhered to the sides and bottom of the glass. One of these papers is a bill against John Pintard for "7 Reemes of paper, and 1 p" Bukrom;" dated "July 14th 1738 | £6 : 12 : 2."

Another is a bill dated New York, January, 1774,—

"Mr. Louis Pintard to Peter Goelet, Dr.
"To nails, hinges and other hardware, £8 9s. 8d.

This is signed, "Paid: Peter Goelet." All the bills are in English currency and are dated before the Revolutionary War. They had remained there undisturbed behind the ceiling, where they had accidentally fallen, for the greater part, if not the whole, of a century. The penmanship of some of these documents is of a superior kind. The writing of all of them is quite legible, and, while the paper is somewhat discolored by time, the ink is entirely unchanged.

It was not at first my purpose to print any of these old letters; but, upon further consideration, I have decided to give a translation of the letter addressed to the French Church in New York, as a specimen of the very polite style of a French commercial correspondent of the last century, and also as showing the communication which was kept up between the old French Huguenot Church in New York, and its sister churches abroad. A copy of this letter may be found among the records of the French Church in New York (so Dr. Baird informs me) at the present time,—

["Copy"] "AMSTERDAM, Oct. 5th, 1764.

"Messrs. Vallad, Daniel Bonnet, Jaques des Brosses and others, heads of the French Church of New York.

"Fearing that Mr. Daller may not be able to reach London in time to proceed thence to Falmouth and take advantage of the packet which should sail from thence for your place on the 13th inst., I think it my duty to communicate to you the preceding, which I have remitted to him and sent yesterday to the Texel in order that you may be informed of the departure from this place of my friend Daller, whom I continue to recommend to you as strongly as possible. He merits it in every respect. Meanwhile, I remain unchangeably and without any restriction whatever, Yours &c."

"Nov. 6th, 1764.

"*Gentlemen:*

"Since the preceding, which I had the honor to write to you on October 5th, which letter I hope will have reached you by the Packet that sailed from Falmouth, Oct. 13th, of which your pastor, Mr. Jacob Daller could not take advantage, but has since embarked at London, in the ship Thomas and Waddel, Capt. Chambers, sailing directly for your city, and which sailed October 29th; hoping ardently that you will have had the pleasure of seeing him in good health before the receipt of this letter, which I send to London, whence I flatter myself that it will be forwarded in time to go by the Packet, which ought to sail the 10th inst. This, Mr. Daller will tell you that he received from Messrs. Chabanel and Whithoff, in London, as per his receipt of October 23d,

	£.	s.	d.	
[the sum of]	59	3	9	
Paid besides which it seems found it necessary		4		for permits Capt. Chambers to procure
	59	7	9	
Provisions in London		12	3	
	60	0	0	sterling @ 37.

		[1]f666
negotiating 4%		26.13
		f692.13
"to which I add the amount I remitted you	f275	
and postage on your letters and mine in London since March 28th, 1764, including several from Geneva, Switzerland &c., Current money of Holland	42.7	
		317.7
		f1010

---

statement is in no respect exaggerated. I am here speaking advisedly, and from my own personal knowledge of the state of things at that time."—*Unpublished Manuscript of Huguenot, New Rochelle.*

[1] Florins.

"Which I place to the debit of your account, and if I do not shortly advise you of my drafts on you, gentlemen, you will oblige me by remitting the amount, since I have but too frequently to make disbursements for my numerous friends on your place. Thus, instead of my making remittances to them, I have on the contrary to make drafts on them; therefore oblige me by remitting the above sum in £100 sterling Draft on London, upon receipt of this, as, on reflection upon what I have stated to you, I will not draw upon you, Gentlemen, for anything I received, only on October 27th, via. Rotterdam, your above mentioned package of July 15th. I sent the same evening the inclosure to the Church at Haarlem. Mr. Magnet has acknowledged its receipt, and informed me that his church has written to ours, to the sexton of which I have myself just remitted your inclosure. With it I enclosed all the letters of the Sieur Menanteau which you have taken the trouble to copy. I postponed until to-day the delivery of your communication to our Consistory, inasmuch as the second meeting of that body is at present in session. I wish that, at last, there might be due reflection, and that I might have the satisfaction to communicate to you in my next an agreeable result. In this expectation, I continue beyond all expression.

"Gentlemen, your very humble and very obedient servant,

"JACOB HENRY CHABANEL."

While none of these documents are of any special historical value, they show that the merchants of a century and a half ago were careful men. They used good stout paper, without ruling. Many of them wrote their own commercial letters in a clear and distinct hand. There is no mistaking their signatures. The names of old Peter Goelet, Lewis Pintard and the others are their own, and well calculated to last another hundred years.

The lapse of a hundred and fifty years (one of these letters is dated 1738), though passed in a garret, —has not obscured a word, nor obliterated a signature. It will be observed, moreover, that fashions revolve in circles of a century or more. The extremely sharp-pointed shoe which came to light with these papers, and from the same hiding-place—is the very same which has been fashionable in recent years, although from its small size and coarse make, it seems to have belonged to a female servant of those ancient days. But the inquiry arises; if this was the pattern of shoe worn by the servants; did not those of the masters and mistresses of—say 1750–60 "come to the point" still more sharply? The oil found with the shoe may have been intended for "its lubrication," but fate willed it otherwise.

THE HUNTINGTON HOMESTEAD was perhaps the most venerable monument of Huguenot architecture in the town, and there were few, if any, older houses in the county. It is believed to have been built about the year 1690, by Alexander Allaire, one of the first settlers, who, as has been stated, landed at Bonnefoy's Point. It was therefore well on towards the completion of its second century. It was constructed of unhewn stone. Its situation "was highly picturesque commanding a view of the varied scenery of marsh, and creek, and wooded point; and away to the eastward over the islets in the vicinity of Bonnefoy's Point. For a number of years past the woodwork of the interior had been decayed, and the house itself untenantable, until at length it was removed and replaced by a more modern structure. There can be little doubt that some houses built of wood, will outlast others built of stone, because the former can be more readily altered and adapted to modern ideas." But sooner or later all must go.

"Out upon Time! he will leave no more
Of the things to come than the things before!
Out upon Time! who forever will leave
But enough of the past for the future to grieve."

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.—There is abundant evidence, that the early settlers of New Rochelle loved and valued the Protestant religion, for adhering to which they had suffered so much. Like the New England Puritans, whose situation and circumstances their own almost exactly resembled,—they soon found means in despite of all difficulties to erect a place for Christian worship. It was a harder task to support a preacher. When they had a pastor, the sacrament was administered four times a year. When without one they walked to New York for the sake of enjoying this privilege. Tradition relates that they often set out for the city on communion Sundays at a very early hour, reached the old French Church in Pine Street in time for the service, and returned to their homes on the afternoon or evening of the same day, the distance by the road to New York being fully twenty miles.

Meanwhile, the religious instruction of the children was not neglected. Sabbath-schools, as now conducted, were unknown; but they were taught the catechism of their church, and often received scripture lessons from the pictures upon the ancient Dutch tiles, which, in the better class of houses, ornamented the mantel-pieces and fire-places. Such were formerly to be seen in the house where the writer of this sketch now resides, the old Pintard place. Unfortionately, in the progress of modern *improvement!* they have now mostly disappeared, like the old stone church on Huguenot Street. But they may still be found in the house for many years owned and occupied by the late Samuel Davis, which stands near by.

The first church edifice was of wood, built in 1692. It stood a little west of the house now occupied by Mr. Stephen Carpenter, which is one of the most ancient dwellings in New Rochelle. The church fronted directly upon the old Boston post-road,—then the main street of the village, and was only a few yards distant from the triangular piece of ground which forms the site of the present Presbyterian Church. This church was burned in the year 1723, and afterwards rebuilt. This first church edifice was used by the Huguenots for many years as a place of worship, and continued to be occupied as such by a number of them, who protested against the transfer of their church and church property to Episcopacy, as without authority of law, and contrary to the wishes of the people. Such is the view still held by many of their descendants, large numbers of whom are now members of other churches. The views of the Rev. Dr. Baird upon this subject, who is one of the highest authorities in this country upon all matters pertain-

Digitized by Google

ing to Huguenot History, may be found, supported by documentary evidence (in the third volume of) his new work, (two volumes of which have just been issued from the press), "The Huguenots in America." Those of the Rev. L. J. Coutant, a descendant of the original settlers of New Rochelle, and who was personally acquainted with some of the non-conformists are as follows:[1] It is reasonable to suppose, that a people so warmly and conscientiously attached to the principles and forms of a religion for which they had suffered exile, confiscation and almost every imaginable form of persecution, would not willingly submit to be transferred *by law*, and to be swallowed up within the pale of a church, whose rites, ceremonies, form of government and mode of worship, were entirely dissimilar to their own. We are disposed to think, therefore, that the statement,[2] "*All but two individuals* of Mr. Boudet's congregation unanimously conformed to the Church of England," is *misleading* and calculated to convey the impression, (which is certainly a false one) that the *entire body* of the French settlers at New Rochelle, except two individuals gave their cheerful and willing assent to the change. This *may* be true, but it does not state the whole truth by any means.

"Mr. Boudet's congregation may have formed, as we have seen that it did, but a small part of the whole French Colony at the time, and on the occasion referred to; consisting no doubt of the officials and principal men of the town, to whom had been committed in good faith the management of church matters, and the religious interests of the colony in general. This class always has existed, and does still exist in all church establishments; men, who by their pecuniary means and prominence in society, as well as by their official relations to the church and state, exercise a controlling influence. But it is equally certain, that the acts and doings of this class of persons cannot always be held to represent the views and wishes of *a majority of the people*, or even the *unanimous* approval of their own number, since even in the case we are considering, there were at least two dissenting voices. There were doubtless many more. But we have not now the means of ascertaining how many more would have voted against this transfer (which carried with it the whole of their valuable church property, as was proved by the event), had they been allowed and encouraged to deposit their votes. That there would have been a considerable number of these protestants is probable, for this, among other reasons.

"John Coutant, who died in the year 1848, at the age of 96, informed me several years before his death, that there was considerable dissatisfaction among the French Hugenot families in New Rochelle, and many complaints of unfairness, in the course pursued by the conformists in this transaction. By it, not only was their church property taken away from them, under the new charter or grant of Queen Anne, and their ancient form of worship abolished by the adoption of that established in the English church; but, as they could not conscientiously adopt the form of religious service and worship,—they [who decline to conform] were left without any place of worship, and deprived of the ministrations of their own chosen pastors."[3]

Soon after this separation, a new church was built by those who had seceded from the French Huguenot to the Episcopal Church, in the autumn of the year 1710.[4]

This new edifice stood a little east of the present Episcopal Church. It was constructed of stone; was forty feet in length and thirty in breadth, and perfectly plain within and without. The first pastor of the new Episcopal Church was the Rev. Daniel Boudet, who was ordained by the Bishop of London, a minister of the English Church and came to this country in 1686. He died in 1722. During an interval of two years, between his death and the appointment of his successor, services were performed by the Rev. John Bartow, who seems to have had a pretty wide field for his labors, as he says in a letter still extant, that he preached "in *four towns;* East Chester, Westchester, Yonkers and New Rochelle; the last eight miles, Yonkers six miles and East Chester four miles from home;" and "does other occasional offices." The horse of this rector, one would think, must have had a lively time and fairly earned his living, as there were then (1722) very few public conveyances (if any) between these four towns. For his extra services to the New Rochelle Church during these two years, Mr. Bartow received from the English Missionary Society the sum of ten pounds, the purchasing power of which, however, was more than double and perhaps three or four times what the same sum would be at the present time.

Mr. Boudet was succeeded, in 1724, by the Rev. Pierre Stouppe, also a native of France, and ordained in 1723 by the Bishop of London. The conflict between the two branches of the church—the French Huguenot and the Episcopal—was maintained with great severity during his pastorate, as appears from a letter of his to the Secretary of the English Missionary Society, dated 1725, in which he complains bitterly and laments mournfully over the unhealed schism.

He was followed upon his death, in 1760, by the Rev. Mr. Houdin, another Frenchman by birth, who was bred a Franciscan friar. Mr. Houdin died in 1776. The Rev. Theodotius Bartow was called to the church in 1790, they having been without a minister for fourteen years, during the troubles connected with the War of the Revolution. He continued to serve the church until 1819—nearly thirty years—but in June of that year resigned his charge.

The list of ministers and rectors of the Episcopal Church in New Rochelle is as follows:

Rev. David De Bonrepas, D D	1689
Rev. Daniel Boudet, A.M	1695
Rev. Pierre Stouppe, A.M	1724
Rev. Michael Houdin, A.M	1761
Rev. Theodotius Bartow	1790
Rev. Ravaud Kearny, A.M	1819
Rev. Lewis P. Bayard, A.M	1821
Rev. Lawson Carter, A.M	1827
Rev. Thomas Winthrop, Cirt. D.D	1839
Rev. Richard Unstead Morgan, D.D	1849
Rev. John H. Watson	1874
Rev. Chas F. Canedy, A.M (Present incumbent.)	1876

It appears from the records that those of the French Huguenots who were unwilling to conform to the doctrine and discipline of the Church of England,

[1] Contents unpublished manuscript.

[2] See Bolton.

[3] The views of those who conformed were presented in Bolton's History, vol. i. p. 630.

[4] Badeau's Pen and Ink Sketch.

Digitized by Google

continued their connection with the old French Church, in New York City, and received their pastors, when they had any, as missionary bishops from that body. This relation existed from the year of the separation (1709), until 1764, as is proved by the records, and probably much longer. But in February 1808, a new church was incorporated, composed partly of the members of this ancient French Huguenot body, and partly of Presbyterians, but still with the title "The French Church in New Rochelle." Matson Smith, John Reid, Thomas Carpenter, Robert Givan, Gideon Coggeshall and James Somerville being trustees. On the 30th of May, 1812, it became a Presbyterian church in name as well as in fact, and was received into the care of the Presbytery of New York. The first pastor of the French Church after the separation was the Rev. Jean Brumand de Moulinars. The first pastor of the New Presbyterian Church was Rev. Isaac Lewis, Jr., 1815, who was succeeded in turn by the following:

Rev. Elijah D. Wells . . .	1823
Rev. J. D. Wickham . . .	1825
Rev. George Stebbins . . .	1828
Rev. John Mason	1835
Rev. Gorman D. Abbot . .	1837
Rev. P. Snyder	1841
Rev. Henry Martyn Scudder	1844
Rev. Chas. Hawley	1845
Rev. Charles E. Lindsley .	1849
Rev. James H. Taylor . . .	1859
Rev. Erskine N. White . .	1862
Rev. David Hopkins	1869
Rev. Edward R. Burkhalter	1870
Rev. Anthony R. Macoubley	1877
Rev. R. Randall Hoes . . .	1878
Rev. William B. Walles (present incumbent).	

Charles E. Lindsley.

The first church edifice erected by the Presbyterians was built of wood, in the year 1815. In 1860 it was removed, to make room for a new building. It was fitted for use as a parsonage, and presented to the trustees for that purpose by the late Albert Smith, M.D., of New Rochelle. The new church, built in 1860–61, is constructed of stone, and occupies nearly the same position as the old one. Its cost when completed was about seventeen thousand dollars. The church edifice of the Episcopalians (one of the finest structures of the kind in the county), is also of stone, and was built under the supervision of the celebrated architect, Upjohn. It stands a few rods to the west of the shop once occupied by the quaint old stone edifice built for their worship by the Huguenots in the year 1710, and which, if it had been allowed to remain would now be one of the greatest curiosities in the country. If anything had to be removed it should have been the road, and not the venerable old church of their forefathers. Upon the subject of this ancient edifice one of the descendants of those who built and worshiped in it, has the following feeling remarks:

"The Second French Protestant Church edifice in New Rochelle was erected in 1710-11. It was situated a little to the eastward of the former church, on Huguenot Street (called in Queen Anne's charter *The High Street*), and just in front of the residence of the late Doctor Peter Moulton. Its ground dimensions were thirty by forty feet. The roof was in the form of a square pyramid. The body of the structure was of rough, unhewn stone, and pierced by arched windows. The entrance, which was on the south side, was also an arched door-way. It has been conjectured that its external shape was modeled after the famous Huguenot Temple of La Rochelle, in France. The interior arrangements were equally primitive and unadorned,—plain, unpainted, uncushioned, high-backed pews! An elevated box pulpit, built against the face of the wall opposite to the door-way. The desk was surrounded by a plain railing, which formed the chancel or altar, and furnished with a small communion table made of wood of the wild cherry (which survived the old church for many years and which I have seen). From its peculiar shape, this church was popularly known and is still remembered by some of our oldest inhabitants as '*The Old Stone Jug*.' Alas, that this venerable relic of antiquity should now have to be numbered among the things that were! The changes incident to the lapse of years, and the vandalism of progress, or rather, shall I say, the progress of vandalism? have so completely annihilated every vestige of the ancient structure, that even *its exact situation*, like that of its predecessor, cannot be definitely determined, but is more or less a matter of conjecture. And why, we ask, could not the grasping, all-absorbing spirit of change and novelty which characterizes the age have spared to us this one, humble monument of the past, to build which, it is

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

in the year [illegible], and which, if it had been answer to [illegible] humble monument of the past, to build which, it is

Digitized by Google

said, that the men carried stones in their hands, and the women mortar in their aprons? If for no other reason, it should have been suffered to remain that it might guard the sleeping dust of two of its earliest and most faithful pastors, Rev. Daniel Boudet and Pierre Stouppe, whose remains, together with those of the wife of the latter, were deposited beneath its floor. O irony of Time and Fate! While the emblazoned images of these two good men, arrayed in full clerical costumes, are displayed in glowing colors upon the chancel windows of the present Gothic edifice, their bodies moulder beneath the stones and dust of the public highway, once by law and usage the burial-place of suicides!"[1]

The Methodist house of worship on Banks Street is a neat and commodious structure. The organization is the second of that name in the town, the first being at Upper New Rochelle. The Baptist Tabernacle, at the corner of Main Street and Locust Avenue, is sufficient for the requirements of the growing congregation at present, but there is ample room upon the grounds for its enlargement whenever that may be found to be desirable. The Roman Catholics have a capacious house of worship of wood, and by far the largest congregation in the town, on Centre Street. Besides these, there are a German Lutheran and a German Methodist Church, making in all eight Protestant Churches and one Roman Catholic. At the present time (1884) all of these churches are furnished with pastors, and are in a flourishing condition, with a membership of nearly or quite one thousand.

THE BEECHWOOD CEMETERY.—For many years the town of New Rochelle had felt the need of some better place for the burial of the dead, the growing population having no other facilities for this purpose than the private or denominational burying-grounds afforded. On the 30th of January, 1854, the Beechwood Cemetery was incorporated upon land owned by the late Dr. Albert Smith, of New Rochelle. It was chiefly by Dr. Smith's energy and liberality that this new burial-place was opened to the public, he having contributed largely both of time and money to this object. The position is convenient and well adapted to the purpose designed, and it is now the principal place of interment, both for the town and the vicinity.

EDUCATION.—For a long time after the settlement of the town the facilities for education, owing to the peculiar circumstances, were exceedingly limited. The clergy, as usual, were the principal teachers. "Our French ancestors," says the Rev. L. J. Coutant, in his valuable historical reminiscences of Huguenot New Rochelle, "who settled this town, and gave it the name which it now bears, about eighty-nine years before the Revolutionary War, received their education in the French language, and, consequently, during the greater part of the period above named (eighty-nine years), the rising generation was educated in French. The writer's grandmother received her education in that tongue, and used to read her French Bible and prayer-book. They were not destitute of good scholars, who understood both French and English, and could converse fluently in both languages. The education of their children in those times devolved chiefly upon the pastors of the French Protestant Church. David Bonrepas, their first minister, gave instruction to the young people in letters and religion."

Daniel Boudet was an excellent scholar and educator; his library it is said, consisted of over four hundred volumes, which for those times was large. Pierre Stouppe, his successor in the pastorate of the French Church, was a well educated man, and for many years kept a day and boarding-school for instruction both in French and English. It is no trifling comment on his ability as a competent teacher, that the Hon. John Jay, subsequently American minister to the court of France, and of Huguenot descent, and General Schuyler, of Revolutionary fame, were among his pupils. Indeed, the general knowledge of letters, in so far at least as reading and writing are concerned, may be inferred from the fact that among a list of sixty names subscribed to a petition to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in connection with the Church of England in 1743, only five individuals signed by making a cross. But alas, for poor human nature! All the devotion of these people to their religion, and such learning as they could command, did not prevent them from perpetrating an act of barbarism. In 1776 they burned to death a negro by the sentence of three of the magistrates of the town, for the crime of murder. The revolting details are given in Coutant's "Reminiscences," with a minuteness and particularity that are sickening. Mr. Bolton, in his history, says: "In a portion of the Guion property once owned by the late George Case, Esq., nearly opposite the old Eels mansion, on North Street, the remains of a large bed of charcoal were discovered a few years since, marking the site of this summary execution."[2]

"Tradition[3] reveals to us the existence of two school-houses in the town of New Rochelle, used as such probably before the Revolution and during the closing years of the 18th Century. One was situated in the neighborhood of the old tollgate, and the other on North Street, opposite the residence of Mr. Simeon Lester, and just in front of a high clump of rocks, which at this place divided the road into two parts, running around the rock on both sides, leaving a triangular space between them, and on this gore of land the school-house was built."

The school-house in District No. 2 was on North Street, at the junction of this street with the road

[1] Coutant's Manuscript.

[2] Bolton, vol. 1. p. 671.

[3] Coutant's, "Reminiscences."

Digitized by Google

from New Rochelle to East Chester. That in District No. 3 was at Cooper's Corners, on the east side of North Street. The interior of these primitive school-houses (1795–1796) is thus described by Mr. Coutant:—"The inside of these houses was of the crudest and cheapest finish. As to the outside, they were small, unpainted *shanties*, usually located on some surplus angle of the streets, or rocky land, unfit for cultivation, thus economizing ground, and making these barren spots, where no vegetation could grow, produce the precious fruits of education. The houses were ceiled round with unpainted boards, shrunken from their grooves; consequently no *ventilators* were needed! Their 'fixtures' were extremely rude and simple, consisting for the most part of pine boards nailed up to the sides and ends of the room for desks, with sometimes a shelf underneath, on which to keep books and slates. They were furnished with seats of long oaken slabs, with legs driven into auger holes at each end, and all of the fixtures and furniture were curiously notched and carved into many fantastic forms and grotesque images by the busy jack-knives of the mischievous tyros. The school-room was sometimes warmed by a fire in an open fire-place; but mostly by a small cast-iron stove, set upon a pile of bricks in the middle of the room."

The teachers were stern and severe in their methods of teaching, using the ferrule and birchen rod with great frequency and freedom. In those days flagellation was thought to be a fundamental part of education. Most of these teachers were imported from England and Ireland. They had left their own country in search of a wider field for the exercise of their great powers for stimulating the minds of their pupils by external applications. They found it here in America, and in carrying out their peculiar methods they only followed the customs of their native land. But their path was not always a flowery one. The application of force to the inculcation of learning was sometimes attended with disastrous results to themselves. From this severity of discipline very unpleasant affrays took place between the teacher and his scholars, ending occasionally in the expulsion of the teacher from the school-room. As to qualifications, "If the teacher could make a good quill pen, and write with facility a neat and fair hand, and solve the sums and repeat the tables in Daboll's arithmetic, he was considered a competent teacher, and received a certificate entitling the school taught by him to receive its proportion of the public money." The reading-books were "The New Testament," "The Sequel," "The American Preceptor," and "The Child's Instructor" for larger and more advanced scholars, and a few primers for small children. The scarcity of books rendered it necessary that the teachers of these primitive schools should be well versed in all the English branches which they had to teach. But grammar and geography were at that time not commonly taught in the public schools. These ancient school-houses, schools and teachers were the pioneers of the extensive and wonderful common-school system of the days in which we live. They were but the stepping-stones, so to speak, of those magnificent temples of science and learning which have since sprung up in almost every part of our favored land. As to those primitive structures in New Rochelle, they have vanished even from the recollection of most of the inhabitants.

Every vestige of the two old Huguenot school-houses is swept away, and they live only in tradition. The only teacher who taught school in either house, within the recollection of the writer, was Andrew Dean, Esq., some of whose descendants are still living in New Rochelle.[1] In the year 1857 three school-houses were built (under the act of 1795), dividing the town into as many districts. The first was on the corner of a lane leading to the old French burying-ground. It was on Huguenot Street, nearly in front of the present Episcopal Church. It was quite a stately school-house for those times, being about eighteen by thirty-two feet on the ground and two stories high. Its pre-eminence in size and other considerations procured for it the name of "Academy." This school had quite a wide-spread reputation as a place of learning; and some who received the rudiments of education here have subsequently obtained celebrity as professional men. Bishop De Lancey, whose parents resided at Mamaroneck, came down to this school. Daily the boy bishop might be seen, to the great wonderment of the other scholars, jogging along on horseback with his dinner-basket dangling at his elbow, to take his place among his fellow-students in the High School, at that time taught by a Mr. Fox. Some time between 1825 and 1827 this old hive of learning gave place to the school in Mechanics Street, which, in 1856–57, was exchanged for the building on Trinity Street, to which David Miller, one of the teachers of the former school, bequeathed by will the sum of eighteen hundred dollars, which was invested in an addition to the Trinity Street brick school-house.

Present Educational Facilities.—It is only within the last few years that any decided advance has been made in the public schools of this town at all commensurate with the requirements of the age and the wants of the people. The accidental burning (March 30, 1882) of the school-house on Trinity Street, built 1856–57, has led to the erection of a very superior building upon its site. This building was planned by the school board and erected under the supervision of Messrs. D. & J. Jardine, architects. The grounds are about three acres. Before entering upon the work, members of the board examined every school-house noted for superior advantages within their reach, their aim being to combine and concentrate the best elements from all in the building

[1] Coutant's "Reminiscences."

"CORNELL HOMESTEAD."
RESIDENCE OF R. C. CORNELL,
NEW ROCHELLE, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

which they intended should be a model school-house in every respect. In this they have largely succeeded. The building is H-shaped, eighty-four feet front, one hundred and fifty feet deep. There are thirteen class-rooms, one library-room, one board-room, one principal's room, one assembly-room, fifty-four by ninety-three, with accommodations for about eight hundred pupils. There is an above-ground cellar, divided into play-rooms for wet weather, furnace, coal and store-rooms.

The building is heated by steam from a fifty horse-power boiler. The system of ventilation is the "Gouge," and is working satisfactorily. There are five lines of hose, supplied with water from a tank in the top of the building, for the extinguishing of fires. The teachers are one principal, salary twenty-three hundred dollars; twelve lady teachers at salaries from four hundred to seven hundred dollars.

There are in the town two other schools—one primary, West New Rochelle; one school for colored pupils, in Harrison Street—with one teacher for each school.

Library and Gymnasium.—It is impossible to conclude this sketch without some notice of the liberal benefactions of one of our citizens, Mr. Adrian Iselin, for the public benefit; more especially as this is, so far as I am aware, the only instance of the kind in the entire history of the town.[1] Mr. Iselin has not only fitted up at his own expense a fine building, containing a reading-room, library and billiard-room for the instruction and amusement of the young people, but he has expended many thousands of dollars in the erection of a gymnasium for physical exercise, which, when complete, will be an ornament to the town, and ought greatly to promote the health and enjoyment of the inhabitants. This building is entirely unique, and has no rival, so far as I know, in this country; certainly not outside of the great cities.

I have been furnished by Mr. William Le Count, of New Rochelle, with an elaborate description of the gymnasium, which is here given (in a form slightly condensed) from his manuscript:—"It is built of Calabar brick, and trimmed with blue stone and Philadelphia brick. The mason-work is of a superior quality. The arches over the windows and doors are a most attractive feature. Every brick exposed to view in these arches was specially chiseled and shaped on the premises, requiring a great amount of skill and labor to make this seemingly small part of the building. The roof is covered with red Akron tiles, which, on the main roof are flat, and on the towers and turrets corrugated, and ornamented with terra-cotta crestings and finials. The wood-work is of the best yellow and white pine and oak. The extreme length of the building is 114 feet; extreme width, 56 feet. Every attention has been paid to drainage and ventilation. The entire outside surface, where it rests upon the ground, is covered with asphaltum or damp-proof material, and the bottom of the excavation for the structure is covered with asphalt, laid upon a bed of cement concrete, and the whole covered with cement. The walls of the building are hollow, and every room is connected with ventilating tubes, which extend to the outside top of the walls. Two immense cisterns supply rain-water, which is passed through double filters before being used. Steam-heat is employed for warming and gas for lighting. The style of architecture is that of French military structures. The front corners are ornamented with two large towers, through one of which is the main entrance. In front of this entrance is a heavy balustrade of terra-cotta, surmounted by ornamental lamps. Over the main door is a panel of terra-cotta, containing a bas-relief representation of 'The Young Athletes.' There is a beautiful winding stair, of oak, which conducts from the base of one of the towers to the topmost story of the building. The floor of the entrance is laid in a Roman Mosaic of tiles, black, red and salmon color, three-quarters of an inch square. The gymnasium proper is a room forty by eighty feet, without a post or pillar resting upon the floor. Light but beautiful trusses, which are self-supporting, sustain the heavy roof. The floor is of the choicest vertical grain yellow pine; the walls of buff terra-cotta brick; ceilings, trusses and window-work of white and yellow pine, finished in their native color; the windows of French plate; the doors of polished oak; trimmings and gas-fixtures of solid bronze, and polished brass, made expressly for this building. The running track, which is elevated about eight and a half feet above the floor of the main room, extends entirely around the building, and is suspended from the roof. Behind it (at one end) there is a gallery for the accommodation of visitors. Under the floor of the main room is the bowling alley, one hundred by twenty feet. It is on the south side, and is fitted with four alleys, in the most approved modern style. This room, although below the surface of the ground, is most admirable lighted by a row of windows in amber-colored cathedral glass, in circular form and set in lead. On the opposite side of the building are the dressing-rooms, fitted up with lockers and all suitable modern conveniences. Beyond these are the boiler and fuel-rooms. A handsome iron fence surrounds the building in front. The entire sidewalk is flagged and curbed in a style equal to that of any of the public buildings in the large cities. The gymnasium occupies a central position at the corner of two of the principal streets of the village. The intention of its founder is to have it a perfect gymnasium. It will be furnished with everything required to make it so, and a competent professor will be appointed to superintend and direct the exercises."

On the whole, it may be safely pronounced to be

[1] Mr. Miller's gift of one thousand eight hundred dollars for education should not be forgotten.

Digitized by Google

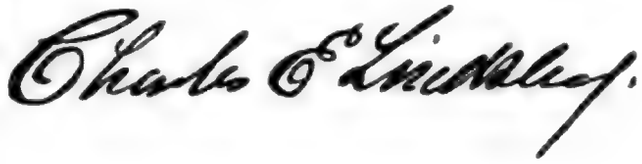
one of the finest institutions of the kind in the United States, and it is hoped and believed that it will be practically free for the physical training and education of the people.

The donor of these important gifts is one who does not covet notoriety. He is too modest to approve of any extended eulogy on account of the good he has done. Let him, therefore, enjoy the consciousness of having tried to benefit his fellow-men; and let these two solid and useful structures stand in the midst of our village as the enduring memorials of his benevolence.

Statistics of professions, trades and occupations in the town of New Rochelle:

Agents (insurance and real estate)	5
Bakers	5
Banks	1
Blacksmiths	4
Barbers	5
Book-stores	3
Butchers	5
Carriage makers	4
Master carpenters and builders	8
Cabinet-makers	5
Clothiers	3
Churches	9
Average Sabbath attendance:	
Catholic (1)	700
Protestant (8)	750
Total	1450
Average death rate, five years (1880–85) pr. cent	2.0024
Druggists	3
Dry-goods	2
Engineers (civil)	2
Feed stores	4
Grocers	10
Hardware	3
Harness	2
Jewelers	3
Livery stables	4
Liquors and beer (licensed)	44
" " (unlicensed)	12
Lawyers	7
Masons and stone-cutters	20
Millinery and mantua-makers	12
Ministers	11
Newspapers	2
Painters, house, sign and carriage	17
Printers	7
Population about	5500
Physicians and surgeons	7
Shoemakers	10
Stoves and tinware	3
Undertakers	3
Veterinary surgeons	2

A number of substantial brick buildings have been erected in the village during the past few years. The addition of any more structures of wood, as the population increases, is to be deplored and dreaded as a source of danger from fire. The town hall, which stands on the corner of Main and Mechanic Streets, no doubt fulfils to a certain extent the purposes for which it was erected. But it is totally destitute of all pretensions to architectural beauty. A much better and more convenient public building might have been erected for the same amount of money. The absence of a clock that strikes the hours upon its tower was an absurd blunder, and it is to be hoped that, at no distant day, the demands of the public will compel the erection of something more ornamental and more suitable to the spirit of the age.



BIOGRAPHY.

SIMEON LESTER.

In the northwestern portion of New Rochelle, and upon the old road leading to White Plains, stands the tasteful house of Mr. Simeon Lester. He is in his ninetieth year, but enjoys the best of health and the possession of a strong active mind. The family is of English origin, and descended from Sir Nicholas Leicester, a knight of the thirteenth century. Upon their emigration to New England early in the eighteenth century, the spelling of the name seems to have been changed from Leicester to Lester, and William, Mr. Lester's grandfather, who served under Colonel Ledyard at Croton Fort, wrote his name in this way.

Though they had but lately left the mother country and were still bound to it by ties of noble blood, the Lesters did not hesitate to embark both their property and their lives in the struggle for American freedom. From fifteen to twenty of the family perished at the capture of Groton Fort. Their martial spirit descended upon the father of Mr. Simeon Lester, and though not in active service he was captain of the Grenadier Company of Norwich, Conn., where the subject of this sketch was born, April 16, 1796.

He spent the early part of his life on his father's place, and became captain of the Norwich Light Infantry Company. In 1820 he married Hannah Maria Brewster, who was born at Preston, Conn., February 6, 1795, and died at her home in New Rochelle June 12, 1865. She was a descendant in the seventh generation of Elder Brewster, who came to this country in the "Mayflower."

Five years after his marriage Mr. Lester, at the suggestion of his brother-in-law, moved with his family from Norwich to New Rochelle, where he purchased the extensive farm, upon which he now resides. The place has become famous as the previous home and property of Thomas Paine, it having been presented to him by the United States government. His grave, the house in which he lived, and the monument raised to his memory are still standing upon it, and have not only, not been mutilated by Mr. Lester, as

Digitized by Google

Simeon Scott

Digitized by Google

lation
source of
stands on the co
no doubt fulfils to a
which it was erected. Bu
all pretensions to architectural
ter and more convenient public buil
been erected for the same amount of mo

Digitized by Google

Simeon Lester

Google

RESIDENCE OF SIMEON LESTER,
NEW ROCHELLE, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF JONATHAN CARPENTER.
NEW ROCHELLE, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Jonathan Carpenter

Digitized by Google

"SANS-SOUCI."

[illegible] of W. H. Peck

[illegible]

"SANS-SOUCI."
RESIDENCE OF W. W. EVANS,
NEW ROCHELLE, N. Y.

Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

W. W. Evans

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

W. W. Crane

Digitized by Google

was charged by the daily papers, but have been preserved by him with special care.

When Mr. Lester took possession of the property it was merely a rolling plain, thickly strewn with boulders. By unremitting toil he converted it into the highly fertile and splendidly improved property, whose appearance enchants the eye of the spectator. For many years Mr. Lester was obliged to rise from his bed at midnight, collect the produce which he had forced the stony soil to yield and depart by one o'clock in the morning for No. 22 Bowery, and other stands in New York City, where he would await purchasers.

It was his habit of industry and perseverance which made Mr. Lester the successful man he is, and now that he has attained financial prosperity, he rests in the consciousness of a life well spent. In 1825, upon his removal to New Rochelle, he presented his letter of membership, and was admitted to the Presbyterian Church, of which he has been an elder for sixty years, and superintendent of the Sabbath-school for thirty years. He has deeply interested himself in young men, and several who have attained success in business life attribute the habits which have gained it for them to the educating influence of their old friend. His only surviving child, David Brainard Lester, of the firm of Joseph Lester & Co., hatters at No. Broadway, New York, is a resident of Brooklyn, and is a member of the Congregational Church.

Some years ago Mr. Lester transferred his property to his son, Joseph W. Lester (deceased), and it is now in the possession of his daughter-in-law, with whom he resides.

In proportion, as one differs from his fellows, so does he become famous. In such proportion only as his life benefits others, does he attain true greatness. Judged by these considerations Mr. Lester, whose Christian life has been wide in its influence, may look from his window in pity upon the monument of the man whose genius dazzled the world, rejoicing in his own possession of the milder quality.

JONATHAN CARPENTER.

Mr. Carpenter is of Welsh origin. Jonathan Carpenter, his grandfather, born September 7, 1749, was a son of Benedict Carpenter, who died June 22, 1791, and, because of British persecution during the Revolution, was forced to remove from Scarsdale to Long Island, where he married, on April 18, 1782, Miss Esther Coles. After peace was declared, he returned to Scarsdale, and took up his trade of a blacksmith. Jonathan Carpenter, Sr., had five children, the fourth of whom, Joseph Carpenter, was the father of the Jonathan who is the subject of this sketch. Joseph Carpenter, even before the War of the Rebellion, attained to wide celebrity because of his opposition to slavery. He was born at Scarsdale September 3, 1793, and on September 15, 1814, he married Margaret W. Cornell, who was of French descent.

There were two children,—the oldest Esther and the second Jonathan, who was born at Scarsdale, September 11, 1816. While he was yet in infancy, his parents removed from Scarsdale to New Rochelle, and until his eighteenth year he was engaged in farming. At that time his poor health obliged him to give up the active work to which he had accustomed himself, and he did not resume it again till he was thirty.

Mr. Carpenter's father then retired, and the whole working of the farm fell into his hands. For nearly forty years he has continued perseveringly at his labor, till at last, by dint of hard work and strict integrity, he has amassed a fortune. Since the place came into his possession he has added to it the Haviland property, containing seventy-seven acres of good farming land, with a saw-mill upon it, which he continues to operate at this time.

He married January 11, 1862, Miss Phila Jane Benedict at Scarsdale. There are no children. He is a member of the Society of Friends, and is a strong temperance advocate. In politics he was formerly a Whig, but is now a Republican. He lives at present in his newly-erected residence at New Rochelle, from which he continues to direct his large interests.

W. W. EVANS.

Walton White Evans of "Sans-Souci" near New Rochelle was born in 1817, at Sunderland, on the Raritan, N. J. He is descended from many of the leading colonial families of New York, New Jersey, Virginia and South Carolina. After spending, or as he says, wasting six of the most important years of his life in classic studies, he was invited by his old and much honored friend General Stephen Van Rensselaer, the patroon of Albany, to come to the polytechnic school the latter had founded at Troy. This suited his inclinations, as his tastes were for natural sciences and technical studies. Graduating from that school in 1836 and sharing the first honors with a friend, nephew of the patroon, he was again favored by General Van Rensellaer, who as president of the canal board placed him in the engineer corps of the State canals, and so influenced and cared for his promotion that in three months he was elevated to a position, that under ordinary circumstances, he would have spent two years of hard work in reaching. Remaining on the State canals (that severe school of hydraulic engineering) for seven years, and there getting disciplined to industrious habits and love for work he left that service, entered on railway engineering and was actively employed in railway construction for some years. In 1850 he went to Chili, South America, to take a leading part in directing the construction of the first railway ever built south of the equator, remaining there for most of the next ten years. He directed the construction of several public works, among which were two railways for English companies of London, returning to the United States

Digitized by Google

in 1860. He has during a quarter of a century devoted most of his time to professional labors as consulting and advising engineer to government work in Cuba and Peru, and to other public works in the Argentine Republic, Mexico, Central America, Australia, New Zealand and Russia.

His zeal and energy have been devoted with much success to promoting American interests in foreign countries. In the early part of 1886 he was appointed on a commission with several English engineers to sit in London, and determine some engineering questions of great importance in connection with extensive and costly bridges to be built in Australia, but was unable to accept the honor.

His aim has been to so elevate national character that Americans can with pride say when traveling, I am an American citizen, and find it all sufficient, as he says, he found it in Russia, as his trunks were never opened when he presented his passport and the officials saw the name of Wm. H. Seward on the document.

GEORGE FERGUSON.

The life of Mr. Ferguson strikingly illustrates the working out of a great principle, namely, that strict attention to business, accompanied by industrious habits, thorough integrity, and a true appreciation of the smaller matters of life, will give its result, just what it has given us in his case—a sound financial success.

Mr. Ferguson was born December 15, 1831, at Esopus, Ulster County, N. Y., where his father, James Ferguson, was engaged in building. For a short period he enjoyed the privilege of the public school in his native place, and when the family removed to Fairfax Court House, Va., he attended its local school. The circumstances of the family early compelled him to contribute his share toward the general support, which he did by helping his father in the building trade.

At the age of nineteen he was visiting with a friend at New Rochelle, N. Y., when he was offered a position as clerk in the store of Samuel Underhill, and it is from the small beginning thus obtained that he has succeeded in developing the extensive business interests which to-day command his attention.

For three years he remained with Mr. Underhill and then was induced by Mr. Vanderburg, of the firm of Geo. E. Vanderburg & Co., wholesale notion dealers in New York City, to enter their establishment as a salesman.

But Mr. Underhill, trading in a small way behind his country counter, missed the active and energetic young clerk who had left him and finally, after two years had elapsed, offered him a partnership. Mr. Ferguson accepted the offer, and the firm began business in 1857, under the name of Underhill and Ferguson. The partnership expired by limitation in the spring of 1861. He then leased a property upon the Main Street, opposite the old store, and resumed business under the firm-name of Geo. Ferguson & Co. After three years his partner retiring on account of ill health left Mr. Ferguson the sole proprietor.

He finally purchased the leased property, improved and enlarged his store, and continued the business alone till the spring of 1875, when he formed a partnership with a friend doing business in New York City. A fire in a neighboring building one night in the autumn of 1875, consumed his store and about seventy-five thousand dollars worth of property, but with characteristic promptness he hired a vacant store, set men cleaning and scrubbing, and by sunrise the next morning had a large sign posted up and his clerks ready, books in hand, to take orders for immediate delivery.

His prompt action at this time not only saved him much money but enabled him to hold his trade till he could replace the destroyed building by the elegant brick one, which is at present devoted, with the exception of a public hall occupying a portion of the second floor, to the purposes of his business. The property has a frontage of eighty-two feet on Main and one hundred and forty upon Centre Street, and is probably the largest establishment of its kind in Westchester County.

Ever since he started in business Mr. Ferguson has been gradually adding to his financial strength and is now in possession of a large amount of property in and about the village which has been the scene of his success.

He married, February 3, 1856, Miss Julia F. Hudson, and has one son and three daughters, two of whom are married. In politics he is a Republican, and has been since the organization of the party. Formerly he was village clerk and afterward was also town clerk of New Rochelle. At present he is a useful member of the board of education, for the duties of which office he continues to find time, even amid the press of private business.

JOSEPH B. BREWSTER.

Mr. Brewster is descended from Elder William Brewster, who came to this country with the Puritans in the "Mayflower." His father was the celebrated physician, Dr. Elisha Brewster, who moved from Norwich, Conn., to White Plains, N. Y., early in the century. Dr. Brewster married Mary Burling, of a family famous in the Revolutionary history of Westchester County, and Joseph B. is the second of their nine children. He was sent at the age of thirteen to a boarding-school at Jamaica, Long Island, and among his earliest recollections is that of crossing the East River in a sail ferry-boat. After spending one year at school he was obliged by the death of his father to return to New York. He entered the hat-store of his cousin, Joseph Brewster, where he continued as a clerk for nearly ten years, when he engaged in the

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Geo Ferguson

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

business on his own account at No. 57 Bowery, New York City.

Mr. Brewster remained in this pursuit for forty-three years, steadily maintaining the while an integrity and fixedness of purpose which formed the ground-work of his financial success. He was at one time a large property-holder in New York, and the spot upon which the Oriental Bank stands was formerly in his possession. In 1869 he retired from business, having meanwhile purchased from Charles Van Benscoten the beautiful residence at New Rochelle which he now occupies.

Mr. Brewster is a director in the Westchester Fire Insurance Company. In politics he was formerly a Whig, but is now a stanch Republican. He was a member of the Lafayette Guards, and was with them at the reception of the distinguished Frenchman upon his second coming to this country, in 1824, when it was also his pleasure to shake the Marquis by the hand. He married Miss Sarah Ann Hutchinson, of Huguenot descent, whose mother died in the ninety-third year of her age, at the residence of Mr. Brewster. Of their twelve children, five daughters and one son still survive. The son is a lieutenant in the Twenty-second Regiment N. G. S. N. Y., and resides with his parents at New Rochelle.

JOSEPH B. BREWSTER.

Mr. Brewster is a Quaker of the Orthodox branch, and though he is now over eighty years of age, he is foremost in every good word and work.

CHAPTER XVII.

PELHAM.

BY REV. CHARLES E. LINDSLEY, D.D.

Of New Rochelle.

Pelham is situated to the southeast of New Rochelle. It has for its southern boundary Long Island Sound. A small stream, called by the Indians the Aqueanouncke, and by the English Hutchinson's River, separates it from East Chester. It appears to have been purchased from the Indians some time previous to the year 1666 by Thomas Pell, and by him called Pelham, an old English name composed of Pel (remote) and Ham (mansion). By Governor Nichols it was granted and confirmed, in 1666, "To Thomas Pell. Esq., of Fairfield in Connecticut, together with the island adjacent and all its privileges," and erected into "an enfranchised township or manor" and secured to him and his heirs.

The Pells are of English origin and a family of very old standing in the counties of Norfolk and Lincolnshire. Thomas Pell, commonly known as Lord Pell, the first proprietor of this township, appears to have been an adherent of the popular party in the great struggle between the Parliament and the crown, called the English Revolution. Having been identified with the Puritans under the protectorship of Cromwell, after the restoration of the monarchy, in 1660, he fled from the vengeance of the Royalists into France. He afterwards removed to Onckaway, or Fairfield, in Connecticut, and from thence came to Pelham, where he purchased of the Indians the right to the soil. After his death, which happened about 1680, the manorial proprietorship descended to John Pell, his nephew, son of the famous Dr. Pell, ambassador of Oliver Cromwell to the Swiss Cantons.[1] In 1691 the name of John Pell is found on the list of members returned by the sheriff to represent the county of Westchester, New York.[2]

The territory now within the limits of the town of Pelham was claimed both by the Dutch of New Amsterdam and the colony of Connecticut. There can be no doubt that the Dutch were the first to discover and settle upon the island of Manhattan and the territory between the North and East Rivers. Both professed to have purchased their title from the Indians. But we know what that meant in those days. The whites took what they wanted and paid the Indians what they pleased. All transactions were with the chiefs, and the chiefs were not usually in a condition, when the land was bought, to look out very carefully for their side of the bargain. So it hap-

---

[1] Vaughan's "Protectorate of Cromwell."

[2] Smith's "Hist. of New York," p. 72.

Digitized by Google

pened that afterwards, when the Indians came to be dispossessed of all their favorite resorts upon the shore, and driven back by the tide of white immigration into the interior, and when they found, moreover, that they had received no just equivalent for their homes and hunting and fishing-grounds, there was trouble along the whole line. In all the Indian wars in which the aborigines were involved with the Puritans, the Dutch, and the Virginians, and which cost thousands of lives and an untold amount of suffering on both sides, it may fairly be doubted whether the Indians were in a single instance the aggressors. The Quakers of Pennsylvania, under William Penn, had no difficulty with them. The Indians in the British possessions of North America are and for almost a century have been peacefully disposed. But when Hendrick Hudson sailed in the "Half-Moon" up the river which bears his name, one of the very first acts of himself and crew was to make a wanton and unprovoked attack with firearms upon the inoffensive natives, whom curiosity had brought down to the shore.

The general plan of our ancestors in those good old days, with regard to those whom they found in possession where they wanted to settle, was robbery and murder first; afterwards war, negotiation and then missionaries. This, too, with the exception of the missionaries, was the course pursued towards them by the redoubtable William Kieft, the Dutch Governor of New Amsterdam, about the year 1643. The Puritans in their treatment of the aborigines were often harsh and unjust. But they were men governed by certain religious ideas, and never did anything approaching in wanton wickedness the act of Kieft which led to the outbreak, in which Anne Hutchinson lost her life, in Pelham in 1643.

In the year 1626 the munificent sum of twenty-four dollars had been originally paid to the Indians for the whole of New York Island—(twenty-two thousand acres); paid too, in "beads and trinkets," on which, very likely, there was a large profit to the buyers. No doubt the Indians ought to have been satisfied; but, strange to say, when they were crowded out, not only from the island, but from Staten Island, Long Island and the shores of the bay, the Hudson River and the Sound by the new settlers, they took it to heart in a way for which neither beads nor trinkets proved a solid consolation. Hence came troubles and difficulties which, through the insane course of Governor Kieft, culminated in his ordering a general attack to be made upon the neighboring tribes, at the very time when their distress and dissatisfaction had reached the highest point. Not only had the Dutch traders sold whiskey to the Indians in abundance, but firearms and ammunition as well.

In the middle of the winter, when the river (Hudson) was full of ice, and the savages were collected in their winter camps, a war-party from the powerful Mohawks at the north came sweeping down upon them, armed with the guns the Dutch had furnished, and drove before them far greater numbers—whole settlements indeed—of the Algonquins. This was the opportunity chosen by Kieft, to cross the river with his Dutch soldiers from Fort Amsterdam, make an attack upon the defenseless savages, peacefully sleeping in their wigwams, "just at midnight, the winter's night being cold and still." "Eighty Indians were killed at Pavonia, Hoboken, and forty at Corlaer's Hook that night, with horrible barbarities that might have given the savages themselves a lesson in the art of torture." The consequence was, that "all about the lower river and the bay, and on Long Island, the Algonquin people rose furiously against the whites." The terrors of an Indian war broke forth with a suddenness which appalled the colonists, and every swamp and wood from the country of the Hackensacks, New Jersey, to the Connecticut seemed all at once to be swarming with hostile savages. The outlying "bouweries" and plantations were laid waste, their men killed and their women and children made prisoners. After this there was a brief respite, from March until midsummer. But the war broke out again in August with renewed fierceness among the tribes above the Hudson Highlands. By September the conflict was raging with full force. In the south a band of savages fell upon the quiet home of Anne Hutchinson, at Anne's Hoeck, Pelham Neck, and she, her son-in-law Collins, her son Francis and all the other members of her family, with one exception, were killed.

The youngest daughter, a little girl, was carried into captivity and lived for four years among the Indians. The sad fate of this woman has tinged with romance her whole history. She was not so bad as her enemies have painted her, nor was she, on the other hand, the mild and blameless saint, some recent historians have imagined. But she was a religious enthusiast; a female theological polemic, armed with a tongue and a temper which made her no unequal match even for the stern and unyielding fathers of New England. In fact, the controversies which she raised, engendered such divisions among them as to threaten the safety of both church and State. Wherefore, by a decree of the General Court, she was banished from the colony. She went to Connecticut, and afterwards to New York, where we find her in the summer of 1642, permission having been given to her by the Dutch authorities to settle at Pelham, in connection with other English families. Her portrait is thus drawn by an impartial historian. "She was a woman of superior intelligence, bright, witty, good at a fencing match of tongues, versed in Scripture and theological literature; never so happy as when descanting on her own views. Her temper was resolute; she ruled her weak husband, and had a taste for ruling: To be an influential centre of opinion was her ambition, which she took no trouble to conceal. She claimed to be "inspired," and that

Digitized by Google

it had been "revealed to her" that she would come to New England to be persecuted, but that God would ruin the colony for her sake. She narrowly escaped procuring the verification of her own prediction."[1]

For a woman so constituted the change must have been great from the heated discussions at Boston to the unsettled wilderness around Pelham Bay. That name was not known, it is true, for many years afterwards. But the names "Annies Hoeck and Hutchinsons River" still bear testimony to the presence and fate of this remarkable woman. It seems a strange providence that, after her troubled and stormy career, she should not have been permitted to pass the evening of her days in peace, where no controversies, theological or otherwise, and no religious opinions, orthodox or heterodox, Calvinistic or Arminian would ever have disturbed the profound repose of the inhabitants, even could her life have been prolonged to the present day and hour.[2]

In the year 1654, Thomas Pell bought of the Indians (so he stated in his testimony before a Court of Assize, held in New York, September 29, 1665), the title to the lands afterwards known as Pelham, Westchester and New Rochelle. This whole tract of land was originally included in the grant made by the Indians to the Dutch West India Company in the year 1640.[3] What Pell paid to the Indians for it does not clearly appear. Probably not so much as the Dutch had paid them twenty-eight years before for the whole of Manhattan Island—twenty-four dollars in beads and trinkets. "A valuable consideration" are Mr. Pell's own words, but as no specification is given, this phrase has little meaning.

In the year 1666 Pell's title was confirmed by royal patent, issued by Richard Nicholls, as follows:

"RICHARD NICHOLLS, Esq.:

"Governor under His Royal Highness the Duke of York, of all his Territories in America. To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: *Whereas*, there is a certain Tract of Land within this Government upon the Main Situate, lying and being to the Eastward of West Chester bounds, bounded to the Westward with the river, called by the Indians 'Aquasnonncke,' commonly known by the English by the name of Hutchinson's river, which runnith into the Bay lying between Throgmorton's Neck and Ann Hook's Neck, commonly called Hutchinson's Bay, bounded on the east by a brook called Cedar Tree Brook, or Gravelly Brook, on the South by the Sound which lieth between Long Island and the main land, with all the islands in the Sound not already granted or otherwise disputed of, lying before that tract of land so bounded, as is before expressed, and northward to run into the woods about eight English miles in breadth, as the bounds to the Sound, which said tract of land hath heretofore been purchased of the Indian proprietors, and ample satisfaction given for the same.

"*Now Know Ye*, That by virtue of the Commission and authority unto me given by His Royal Highness, James, Duke of York, &c., upon whom by lawful grant and patent from His Majesty, the proprietary and government of that part of the main land, as well as of Long Island and all the islands adjacent, among other things is Settled, I have thought proper to give, grant, confirm and ratify, and, by these presents do give, grant, confirm & ratify unto Thomas Pell, of Onckway, *alias* Fairfield, His Majesty's Colony of Connecticut, gentleman, his heirs and assigns, all the said tract of land bounded as aforesaid, together with all the lands islands, seabays, woods, meadows, pastures, marches, lakes, waters, creeks, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments and hereditaments to the said tract of land and islands belonging with them, and every of their appurtenances, and of every part and parcel thereof; and that the said tract of land and premises shall be forever after held, reputed, taken and be an enfranchised township, manor and place itself; and shall always, from time to time, and at all times hereafter have, hold and enjoy like and equal privileges and immunities with any town, enfranchised place or manor within this government, and shall in no manner of way be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependance upon, or in any wise be under the rules, orders or directions of any riding, township or township place, or jurisdiction, either upon the Main or upon Long Island, but shall in all cases, things and matters, be deemed, reputed, taken and held as an absolute, entire, enfranchised township, manor and place of itself in the government, and shall be ruled, ordered and directed in all matters as to government accordingly, by the Governor and his Council and the general Courts of Assizes; only always provided that the inhabitants of the said tract of land granted, as aforesaid shall be obliged to send forward to the next towns, all public packets and letters or hue and cries coming to this place or going from it to any other of His Majesty's Colonies; to have and to hold the said tract of land and grant, with all and singular the appurtenances, premises, together with the privileges, immunities, franchises & advantages herein given and granted unto the said Thomas Pell, his heirs and assigns, to the proper use and behoof of the said Thomas Pell for ever, firmly, freely & clearly, in as large and ample manner and form, and with such full and absolute immunities and privileges as before is expressed, as if he had held the same immediately from his Majesty the King of England, &c., &c., &c., his successors as of the Manor of East Greenwich, in the County of Kent, in free and common soccage, and by fealty, only yielding, rendering & paying yearly & every year unto His Royal Highness, the duty forever and his heirs, or to such Governor as shall, from time to time, be by him constituted and appointed, as an acknowledgment, one lamb, on the first day of May (if the lamb shall be demanded.)

"Given under my hand and Seal at Fort James, in New York, on the Island of Manhattan, the Sixth day of October, in the 18th year of the reign of our sovereign lord Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland & Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., &c., &c. and in the year of our Lord God, 1666.

"RICHARD NICHOLLS."

The above grant to Thomas Pell was confirmed to his successor and heir, John Pell, on the 20th day of October, 1687, by the then Governor of New York, Thomas Dongan, as follows:

"Thomas Dongan, Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over the province of New Yorke, and the territories depending thereon, in America, under the Most Sacred Majesty, James the Second, by the grace of God, Kinge of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the faith. &c.,—to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting:

---

[1] Bryant's "Hist. of U. S."

[2] The following appeared in the *New York Daily Tribune* of April 23, 1886:

RECALLING A MASSACRE OF INDIANS.

"The skeletons which are being unearthed at Communipaw Avenue and Halliday Street, Jersey City, are now believed to be those of Indians. Twenty-eight had been excavated last evening. It was supposed at first that the place was the site of an ancient and forgotten burying-ground, but some historical facts were discovered yesterday which throw light on the subject. On the night of February 25, 1643, Governor Kieft, of New-Amsterdam, sent a company of Dutch soldiers across the river to what was then known as 'Jahn de Dacher's Hoeck,' with orders to exterminate a village of Indians encamped there. The soldiers, so the story goes, surprised the Indians and massacred nearly every person in the village. A few escaped and made their way back into the country, toward the present site of Newark. Trenches were dug and the bodies thrown into them indiscriminately. The scene of the butchery is now known as Lafayette, and, after nearly two and a half centuries, one of the trenches has been opened. Crowds gathered around the place yesterday while the excavating was going on and looked at the skulls and bones. The number of bodies can only be determined by means of the skulls, as the bones are all mixed together, and many of them crumble at the touch into fine dust. The best preserved portions of bodies are the teeth."

The discovery of these bones at this time is certainly a marked coincidence. There can be little doubt that the conjecture as to their being the remains of the Indians slain near this spot in the attack made upon them by Kieft is the true one.

[3] See Bolton's "Hist. Westchester County," article New Rochelle.

Whereas, Richard Nicholls, Esqr., late governor of this province, by his certaine deed in writing, under his hand and seal, bearing date the sixth day of October, in the eighteenth year of the reigne of our late sovereigne lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King & defender of the faith, &c., and in the year of our Lord God one thousand six hundred sixty and six, did give, grant, confirm and rattefye, by virtue of the commission and authoritye unto him given by his (then) royal highness, James, Duke of York, &c., (his now Majesty) upon whome by lawful grant and pattent from his (then) Majesty, the propriety and government of that part of the maine land, as well as Long Island, and all the Islands adjacent. Amongst other things was settled unto Thomas Pell, of Oukway, *alias* Fairfield, in his Majesty's Colony of Connecticut, gentleman, all that certaine tract of land upon the maine land lying and being to the Eastward of Westchester bounds, bounded to westward with a river called, by the Indians, 'Aquaconounck,' commonly known to the English by the name of Hutchinson's River, which runneth into the bay lying between Throgmorton's Neck and Anne Hooke's Neck, commonly called Hutchinson's Bay, bounded on the east by a brooke called Cedar Tree Brooke, or Gravelly Brooke; on the South by the Sound, which lyeth between Long Island and the maine land, with all the islands on the Sound not before that time granted or disposed of, lying before that tract of land So bounded as is before expressl, and northward to runne into the woods about eight English miles, the breadth to be the same, as it is along by the Sound, together with all the lands, islands, soyles, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, lakes, creeks, waters, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profitts commodityes, heridetaments to the Said tract of land and islands belonging, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof; and that the said tract of land and premises should be forever thereafter held, deemed, reputed, taken and be an entire infranchised townshipp, manner and place of itself, and should always, from time to time, and at all times thereafter, have, hold and enjoy like and equall priviledges and immunities with any towne, infranchised place or manner within this government, &c., shall in no manner or way be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependance upon or in anywise, bounds or the rules under the direction of any riding, or towne, or townesshipps, place or jurisdiction, either upon the maine or upon Longe Island, but should in all cases, things and matters be deemed, reputed, taken and held as an absolute, intire, infranchised townesshipp, manner and place of itselfe in this government, and should be ruled, ordered and directed in all matters as to government, accordingly, by the governour and Councell and General Court of Assizes, only provided, always, that the inhabitants in said tract of land, granted as aforesaid, should be obliged to send ffforwards to the next townes all publick packquetts and letters, or hew and cryes coming to New York or going from thence to any other of his Majestie's Collonys; to have and to hold the said tract of land and islands, with all and singular the appurtenances and premises, together with the priviledges, immunities, franchises and advantages therein given and granted unto the said Thomas Pell, to the proper use and behoofe of the said Thomas Pell, his heires and assignes forever, ffuly, ffreely, clearely, in as large and ample manner and forme, and with such full and absolute immunities and priviledges as before is expressl, as if he had held the same immediately ffrom his Majesty the Kinge of England, &c., and his suckcessors, as of the manner of East Greenwich, in the County of Kent, in free and common sockage and by fealty, only yealdeing, rendering and payeing yearely and every yeare unto his then royall highness the Duke of Yorke, and his heires, or to such governour or governours as from time to time should by him be constituted and appoynted, as an acknowledgement, one lambe on the first day of May, if the same shall be demanded as by the said deede in writeing, and the entry thereof in the bookes of records in the secretarie's office for the province aforesaid, may more fully and at large appeare.

"*And whereas*, John Pell, gentleman, nephew of the said Thomas Pell, to whom the lands, islands and premises, with appurtenances, now by the last will and testament of him, the said Thomas Pell given and bequeathed, now is in the actual, peacable and quiett seazeing and possession of all and singular the premises, and hath made his humble request to mee, the said Thomas Dongan, that I would, in the behalfe of his Sacred Majesty, his heirs and suckcessors, give and grant unto him, the said John Pell, a more full and firme grant and confirmation of the above land and premises, with the appurtenances, under the seale of this his Majesties province: *Now Know Yee*, that I, the said Thomas Dongan, by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his said Majesty, and power in me being and residing, in consideration of the quitt-rent hereinafter reserved, and for divers, other good and lawfull considerations me thereunto mouving, I have given, rattefied and confirmed, and by these presents doe hereby give, grant, ratefie and confirme unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns forever, all the before mentioned and rented lands, islands and premises, with the hereditaments and appurtenances, priviledges, imunetics, ffranchises and advantages to the same belonging and appertaining, or in the said before mentioned deede in writing expressl, implyed or intended to be given and granted, and every part and parcell thereof, together with all and Singular Messuages, tenements, barns, stables, orchards, gardens, lands, islands, meadows, inclosures, arable, lands, feedeings, commons, woods, underwoods, soyles, quarreys, mines, minerally (royall mines only excepted), waters, rivers, ponds, lakes, hunteing, haucking, fishing, ffowleing, as alsoe all rents, services, wasts, strayes, royaltyes, liberties, priviledges, jurisdictions, rights, members and appurtenances, and all other immunityes, royaltyes, power of franchises, profitts, commodeties and heredatements whatsoever to the premises, or any part or parcell thereof, belonging or appertaining; and further by vertue of the power and authority in mee being and residing, I doe here grant, ratefie and confirme, and the tract of land, island and premises aforesaid are, by these presents, erected and constituted to be one lordship and manner, and the same shall from henceforth be called the lordshipp and manner of Pelham; and I doe hereby give and grant unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns, ffull power and authority at all times hereafter, in the said lordshipp and manner of Pelham aforesaid, one court leete and one court barron, to hold and keepe at such times, and so often yearly as he and they shall see meete, and all sines, issues and amerciaments at the said court leete and court barron, to be holden and kept in the manner and lordship aforesaid, that are payable from time to time, shall happen to be due and payable by and from any the inhabitants of or within the said lordshipp and manner of Pelham abovesaid; and alsoall and every the powers and authorities hereinbefore mentioned, for the holding and keepeing of the said court leete and court barron, from time to time, and to award and issue forth the customary writs to be issued and awarded out of the said court leete and court barron, and the same to beare test and to be issued out in the name of the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, and the same court leete and court barron to be kept by the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, or his or their steward, deputed or appoynted; and I doe further hereby give and grant unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, full power to distraine for all the rents and other sums of money payable by reason of the premises, and all other lawful remedys and meanes for the haveing, receiving, levying and enjoying the said premises and every part thereof, and all waifts, strayes, wreck's of the sease, deodands and goods of fielons happening and being within the said manner of Pelham, with the advowson and right of patronage of all and every of the Church and Churches in the said manner, erected and to be erected—to have and to hold all and singular the said tract of land, islands and manner of Pelham, and all and singular the above granted or mentioned to be granted premises, with their rights, members, jurisdictions, priviledges, heredaments and appurtenances, to the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, to the only proper use, benefitt and behoofe of the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, forever; to be holden of his Most Sacred Majestye, his heirs and successors, in free and common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the County of Kent, in his Majestye's kingdom of England, yielding, rendering and paying, therefore, yearly and every year forever, unto his said Majestye, his heirs and successors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be appointed to receive the same—twenty shillings, good and lawful money of this province, at the City of New York, on the five and twentyeth day of the month of March, in lieu and stead of all rents, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof, I have signed these presents with my handwriting, caused the seale of the province to be thereunto affixed, and have ordained that the same be entered upon record in the secretary's office, the five and twentyeth day of October, in the third yeare of the Kinge Majestyes reigne, and in the year of our Lord, one thousand six hundred eighty and seven.

"THOMAS DONGAN."

In the year 1689, John Pell sold to the Huguenots of New Rochelle, through the agency of Governor Leisler,[1] a tract of land consisting of six thousand

[1] The fate of Leisler through whom this purchase was made is fully related in the contemporaneous history of those times. He took the lead in a popular movement, in 1688, against the constituted authorities, and assumed or was chosen by his partizans to the government. For this act, he was tried, found guilty of treason, and hung in chains, on the 17th of May, 1691, on the spot now occupied by the City Hall

Digitized by Google

one hundred acres, from the Manor of Pelham, for the sum of about one dollar per acre. The one hundred acres was a free gift to the French Huguenot Church, erected or to be erected by the inhabitants. The Manor of Pelham had originally contained nine thousand one hundred and sixty-six acres, so that nearly two-thirds of it now constitute the town of New Rochelle.

The islands in the sound opposite Pelham, belong to that town. These are Minneford's (now City Island) containing about two hundred and thirty acres; Hunter's Island, two hundred and fifty acres; and Hart Island, eighty-five acres. The heir of Thomas Pell to the Pelham Manor, was John Pell, his nephew, whose death, according to the inscription upon his monument, happened in the year 1700. He is said to have lost his life by the upsetting of a boat off City Island, in the autumn of that year. His eldest son, Thomas, succeeded to the inheritance, and died in 1739 at the Manor House, which stood not far from the present Barton dwelling. The subsequent history of the Pell family may be found, given at length in Bolton's history.

On the 18th of October, 1776, the British forces landed upon Pelham Neck, ten days previous to the battle of White Plains. They came from Throgmorton's, now Throg's Neck. They were met by the Americans and a heavy skirmish resulted. After some loss, the Americans fell back, and the British advanced towards New Rochelle. Though largely outnumbered, the retreat of the Americans was orderly and their resistance obstinate. The loss on both sides was probably about equal.

The owners of the islands along the Pelham shore suffered more severely from this invasion than those in the interior, because a portion of the British fleet was always anchored in the Sound, and boats were constantly landing to obtain supplies, which they often and perhaps intentionally forgot to pay for. One Benjamin Palmer, who lived upon City Island, after the war was over sent a petition to Governor Clinton, complaining loudly of his wrongs and grievances. He stated that he had been driven off the island, his stock destroyed, his effects plundered, his family taken prisoners, and, as a last indignity, the commander of the guard-ship "Scorpion" ordered him to cut his wood at a certain place and nowhere else, "upon penalty of having his house burned down." Mr. Palmer's case was not a peculiar one. These acts of petty tyranny were universal during the occupancy by the British of all parts of the country. But in his case there was a special reason for the enemy's severity. He had ventured to write to General Howe a letter in vindication of the Americans. Our sympathies, even at this late hour, are elicited on behalf of Mr. Palmer and his fellow-sufferers. Their treatment was shameful and the conduct of the British in inflicting such acts of oppression upon private individuals, not in arms against them, was barbarous and indefensible. But inasmuch as the petitioner afterwards removed to New York City with his family, and had besides, abundance of good company in his sufferings, and since his oppressors were finally defeated and driven from the country, and he, if present, might have witnessed the hauling down of their flag on the Battery, in New York, on the 25th of November, 1783, it seems that Mr. Palmer might be content to call it square (with the British) and withdraw his petition. One hundred years have made a great change in the value of the "plantation" once held by him, and from which he was then driven, on City Island. If he owned it now, it would a great deal more than compensate him for all his losses in that war. The oyster business is now carried on largely there, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars. The building of vessels—mostly pleasure yachts—has led to the establishment of a dock-yard, in which a number of men are employed, and where some of the swiftest yachts in the country have been built.

It was near City Island that a daring and successful enterprise was accomplished by a few of the Americans in the year 1777, being no less than the capture of a British gun-boat used as a guard-ship, and stationed at the mouth of East Chester Creek. The particulars, as related by one of the party engaged in the capture to an aged citizen of Pelham, now in his ninety-second year, and by him communicated to the writer, are as follows:

"The guardship 'Schuldam' was one of several vessels stationed by the British along the shores of the Sound, through whose instrumentality most of the hardships complained of by the Americans, such as those referred to in the petition of Benjamin Palmer, were inflicted. The officers and crews of these vessels often treated the inhabitants of the towns and villages along the shore with great severity. They were consequently regarded with no friendly feelings by the oppressed people, and plans for their capture were frequently discussed.

"A party of whale-boatmen from Darien, Connecticut, were fortunate enough to carry such a design into execution. They conveyed their boat by hand across the Neck, and took possession of the market sloop which plied regularly between East Chester and New York. From the master of this sloop they ascertained that on his weekly passages to the city he was sometimes hailed from the guardship, and requested to sell them fresh provisions, such as eggs, chickens, vegetables, &c., for which, to insure their delivery, he was liberally paid. These Connecticut whale-boatmen, to the number of ten or twelve, armed, concealed themselves in the hold of the sloop. Their leader, however, remained on deck, and forced the owner to lay his craft alongside the sloop, as if for the purpose of furnishing the usual supplies. It was early in the morning, before daylight, and the moment the two vessels touched, the boatmen rushed up from below, boarded the British vessel, and took the crew prisoners before they were fairly awake. They then compelled some of the prisoners to help navigate the vessel, and making sail on the prize, ran her into the port of New London."

There are two persons still living, one in Pelham who witnessed and the other in New Rochelle[1] who

in New York City. At a later period, his attainder was reversed, and his estates restored to his family by Act of Parliament. The general verdict of history at the present time is, that he was innocent of the crime for which he was condemned and executed.—(See Bolton's, Bancroft's and Bryant's Histories.)

[1] The Sound opposite New Rochelle and Pelham is a ticklish place, even

by Google

heard the sound of the cannonade between the British men-of-war and the American gun-boats, which took place off New Rochelle and Pelham in the month of August, 1814. After the British had bombarded Stonington (August 9th), two of their vessels, a frigate and a sloop-of war, made their appearance near Mamaroneck. The government, or perhaps the people of New York, had prepared a fleet of thirteen gun-boats, each armed with a thirty-two-pounder gun, for the protection of the harbors along the Sound. One sultry morning in August the ships of war moved down the Sound and attacked these gun-boats, which had been ordered to rendezvous near Huckleberry Island and along the shores of Long Island. The action continued at long range for about an hour, and was very exciting to the inhabitants in the vicinity. The militia of two or three of the towns had been ordered out, and every height and headland was thronged with spectators. It soon became evident that the gun-boats were no match for the men-of war. Probably all that saved them from being sunk or captured was the superior familiarity of the Americans with the navigation of the Sound. Among so many rocks and reefs, the heavy war-vessels of the British were afraid to venture, and after a sharp but distant cannonade, in which but little damage was inflicted, the gun-boats withdrew in the direction of New York, and the ships of war returned to New London. It was in connection with this bloodless naval engagement that the panic broke out among the militia on Davenport's Neck, an account of which is given in the history of New Rochelle. The Rev. Lewis J. Coutant,[1] then a boy often or twelve years, distinctly remembered to have heard the echoes of the cannonade upon that sultry August morning, rolling and reverberating among the hills back of the town of New Rochelle. Mr. Peter Roosevelt, of Pelham, now in his ninety-second year, is understood to have witnessed the engagement from some convenient hill near the shore.

Hunter's Island, now the property of Mr. Iselin, was, in the year 1800, owned by a gentleman named Henderson, a Scotchman and a surgeon in the British army. It has changed hands many times and is probably, upon the whole, the most desirable situation for a residence along the shores of the Sound. It is sufficiently secluded, yet within easy reach of several railway stations. The land, about two hundred and fifty acres, is fertile and well timbered; the fishing and bathing in the vicinity are excellent, and the view from the south side unsurpassed. The mansion, constructed of stone, and supposed to have been erected by Mr. Hunter, is still a very fine one. If that ancient worthy, Thomas Pell, Esq., the original owner of this spot, had been informed by some prophetic revelation, that, in the year 1885, the city of New York would conclude to take possession of the whole of that part of Pelham "lying and being upon the waters of Long Island Sound," for a city park, proposing to issue bonds, run in debt and tax the inhabitants of both town and county to pay for the same, it may be safely presumed that he would have been an unbelieving Thomas. Yet it is well known, not only that such a plan has been devised, and that a bill for its accomplishment has passed the Legislature of the State of New York, but that there is a strong probability that the entire sea-front of Pelham will, in a few years, be within the corporate limits of the city.[2]

The Pelham Bridge, over the mouth of East Chester Creek, has long been famous for the size and quality of the fish taken in and around the waters of the bay and river. The fishing, it is true, is not now what it used to be, either there or in other parts of the Sound, having declined from causes which may be known to those who have made themselves familiar with the subject. Still, within the past twenty years, bass of large size and weighing from fifty to sixty pounds, have been taken with the hook in this vicinity. Black fish are still numerous around the rocks and reefs along the shore. But old fishermen are unanimous in the assertion that there has been a steady falling off in both the number and size of the fish taken during the period of time mentioned above.[3]

for navigators well acquainted with the obstructions above and below the surface. It is related that some years ago one of the Le Counts, who lived upon the shore in New Rochelle, near the Pelham line, and had been familiar with the navigation of the Sound in that vicinity from his youth, took a party of friends out for a sail. The day was fine, the wind fair, and the passengers were delighted until the boat, under full sail, ran plump upon a large flat rock about a foot under water, near the mouth of Echo Bay. As the tide was falling, it became evident that their sail for the day was over. "Captain," was the indignant remonstrance of the party, "I thought you knew every rock in this Sound." "I do," replied Captain L. C., "and this here is one of the worst."

One of the Schuylers also, residing at Pelham, is said to have been thus upset while sailing in his boat near City Island. But, more lucky than the Pell who was drowned in the same manner, he was picked up by a passing vessel while calmly floating, seated upon the bottom of his boat, and smoking his pipe, which he had managed in some way to keep lighted. Incredible as this may seem, it is nevertheless a fact, as I have been assured, and old General Schuyler himself never did a *cooler* thing.

Mr. Coutant has died since the above was written.

[2] The bill contemplates the appropriation of about four thousand acres of land in Westchester County for the erection of three parks: the Pelham Bay Park, the Bronx River Park and the Van Cortlandt Park. The Pelham Park is to consist of about seventeen hundred acres.

[3] What the character of the fishing about Pelham Bay was in the olden time may be gathered from the following little poem, taken by Mr. Bolton from "Wilson's American Ornithology," and well worthy of being preserved for its originality and beauty:

"FISHERMAN'S HYMN.

"The osprey sails above the Sound;
The geese are gone, the gulls are flying,
The herring shoals swarm thick around;
The nets are launched, the boats are plying.
Yo ho, my hearts! let's seek the deep,
Raise high the song, and cheerly wish her,
Still as the bending net we sweep,
God bless the fish hawk and the fisher.

"She brings us fish, she brings us Spring,
Good times, fair weather, warmth and plenty;
Fine store of shad, trout, herrings, ling,
Sheepshead and drum, and old wives dainty

Digitized by Google

The wooden structure which once connected the Neck with the Westchester shore, and which was a toll-bridge, has been replaced by one of iron, which is free. It is said to have cost sixty thousand dollars. The ancient oak-tree under which the Indian sachems made the transfer of the Pelham Manor property to Thomas Pell, and a piece of which is in the writer's possession, stood until within twenty or thirty years past on the Bartow estate. The Indians received, it is said, as an equivalent for their deed of the land, sundry hogsheads of Jamaica rum. There is not far from this spot a singular freak of nature—a split rock, with a tree growing out of the crevice. This was a surprise to the writer, when, for the first time, he visited this region, nearly forty years ago. It stands on the cross-road between the Pelham and New York roads, and the oldest inhabitant has never seen it otherwise than it looks to-day. In the year 1790 the population of Pelham was as follows:

Free white males	45
Under sixteen years of age	31
Females	84
Slaves	38
Total	198[1]

The interests of education in Pelham were greatly advanced when the school board of the town, a few years ago, erected in the First School District a new building at an expense of four thousand dollars. The architect was Mr. G. K. Radford, of New York City' and the old school-house, which is still standing, bears testimony to the very decided improvement. The new edifice, as well as the one recently built in New Rochelle, is considered by competent judges a very fine structure, and both are among the best in the county in their interior arrangements and architectural style and finish. For nearly forty years the Pelham Priory was a marked feature of the town. It is not too much to say that for a very long period this institution was among the foremost in this country in the work of female education. The site chosen for the school by the Rev. Robert Bolton was unexcelled for beauty. It was an elevation commanding a wide view of Long Island Sound and the many islands adjacent to the Pelham shore. During the life-time of Miss Bolton it was justly celebrated for the thorough intellectual and moral training bestowed upon the young ladies who attended it, coming from every part of the United States and sometimes from foreign countries. Miss Nannette Anne Bolton was herself an enthusiast in the cause of Christian education. Under her watchful care nearly a thousand young girls were educated in such a manner as to prepare them thoroughly for the higher as well as for the ordinary duties of life. While by no means sectarian, the influence of the Priory was always decidedly religious, and made itself felt, not only in the town of Pelham, but throughout a wide extent of the surrounding country. The decline of such a school, through the death of its principal founder and teacher, is much to be lamented. It is a loss to the county and State not entirely overestimated, and the more so that nothing has since arisen in the town or vicinity to take its place.

Besides the Priory, Pelham is indebted to the Bolton family for the first, and for many years the only, Episcopal Church within its bounds—namely, Christ Church, of which the Rev. Charles Higbee is the present rector, and from whom the information contained in this sketch, with regard to the churches of the town, is derived. It is safe to say that without the persistent labors and sacrifices of this family, neither of these institutions—the church or the priory, both so potent for good to Pelham and the whole region around it—would ever have existed.[2]

From this church two others have since sprung—Grace Church, on City Island, of which the Rev. Mr. Winsor is the present rector, and the Church of the Redeemer, at Pelhamville, whose rector is the Rev. Cornelius Winter Bolton, a son of the founder of the parent church and the Priory in Pelham.

Yo ho, my hearts! let's seek the deep,
Ply every oar and cheerly wish her,
Still as the bending net we sweep,
God bless the fish hawk and the fisher.

"She rears her young in yonder tree,
She leaves her faithful mate to mind 'em;
Like us, for fish she sails the sea,
And plunging, shows us where to find 'em.
Yo ho, my hearts, let's seek the deep,
Ply every oar and cheerly wish her,
While the slow bending net we sweep,
God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."

The man who wrote this hymn (whoever he was) was a close observer and lover of nature. He had music in his heart, and, it is to be hoped, fish in his basket, and could his name be discovered, deserves to have this Fisher's Hymn inscribed on his monument.

[1] The writer, having been urged to introduce some observations in this place upon certain Indian graves in Pelham, made an attempt to find them, but failed to do so. Nor was he able to discover any public burying-place at all in Pelham. The longevity of many of the ancient inhabitants was remarkable. The late Albert Roosevelt was alert and active until past his ninetieth year. His son Peter is now living in Pelham with unimpaired mental powers, in his ninety-second year. The Rev. Dr. William Hague, the distinguished author of the article upon Old Pelham and New Rochelle, subjoined to this chapter, appears like a sprightly gentleman of sixty years or thereabouts, whereas, if the records of history can be depended upon, he must be in the neighborhood of seventy-five or eighty.

The Indian burying-ground is said to have been situated upon the northwest side of Pell's Neck, but very few vestiges of it can now be seen. This is not wonderful, however, when we consider the changes which time produces, even among the living. There is scarcely a family of the ancient residents of Pelham which maintains its ancestral place and possessions. The Pells have long been gone. The Schuylers have removed to another part of the town. The Roosevelt family have retained their hold upon the property near Hunter's Island for almost ninety years but must soon yield to the advancing tide, which flows not from the waters of the Sound, but from New York City.

[2] No candid historian of the county of Westchester can fail to acknowledge his obligations to the labors of Mr. Robert Bolton in this field. Notwithstanding, his history has grave faults. It is as full of ecclesiastical bigotry as of research, and ought to be entitled, "A History of Episcopacy in the County of Westchester." More than ten times the space accorded to all other denominations is given to this one, and the matter introduced is often tediously minute, dry and uninteresting.

Digitized by Google

It is to be hoped that the great debt which the town of Pelham owes and must forever owe to the members of the Bolton family will never be forgotten. Their names ought to be cherished along with that of the father and founder of the manor itself.

The Pelham Manor and Huguenot Heights Association is an incorporated company, formed about the year 1875, for the improvement of that part of the town lying between the station of the Harlem Branch of the New York and New Haven Railroad and the Boston turnpike road. The new village thus formed has grown rapidly, and is for many reasons a very desirable place of residence. It is easily accessible from the Pelhamville Station of the New Haven Railroad, so that a large number of trains upon both roads are available daily, and almost hourly.

The Huguenot Memorial Chapel, a pretty Presbyterian Church, was built to accommodate the residents of that denomination. It was opened for worship on the 9th of July, 1876, under the pastoral care of the Rev. Charles E. Lord. The Rev. Daniel N. Freeland is the present pastor.

As a place of residence, this part of Westchester County presents decided claims to public regard. The rapid growth of the city of New York, the rise of rents there and the pressure of the population on this account into the surrounding country, render it certain that the suburban towns and villages must ultimately and indeed speedily share in its prosperity. Several of them have already been absorbed within the city limits, and others must shortly follow. The value of land has increased enormously within a few years, both upon the North and East River sides of the county, and there is also a steady growth in population. As an example of this increased value, land in the towns of New Rochelle and Pelham, which, in the year 1850, could be readily purchased for three hundred dollars per acre, cannot now be bought for ten times that sum. In such large towns as Yonkers the advance in price is proportionally greater. There is not probably in the entire country a section better adapted for improvement than the lower part of Westchester County. The soil is good, the scenery romantic, the climate salubrious, and the old historic associations are such as to lend an added interest to these material advantages.

Some of the finest sites in the world for country-seats are to be found around the shores of Pelham Bay, the islands that dot the Sound, and, in fact, throughout the whole shore-line from Hell Gate to Connecticut. The same is true, to a greater or less extent, of the bays and headlands of the opposite Long Island shore.

The enhanced value of the real estate in Pelham since the year 1800 may be inferred from a brief history of one of the oldest residences in the town—that owned and occupied by the late Albert Roosevelt, merchant of New York, and his family.

In the above-mentioned year Mr. Roosevelt purchased of Mr. Bailey a tract of two hundred and fifty acres of land upon the main shore, opposite Hunter's Island, and of which the Pelham Priory then formed a part, for twenty-five dollars an acre.

Bailey had bought at the close of the war three hundred acres of land confiscated by the government because the owner had taken part with the British in the war. For this tract he paid five dollars and twenty cents an acre. Of this, he sold two hundred and fifty acres to Mr. Roosevelt at the above-mentioned price, twenty-five dollars. The Roosevelt place is one of those proposed to be taken for the new Pelham Bay Park. But the commissioners will find that the price has advanced considerably since the year 1800. The dwelling was erected in 1802.

The Pelham Industry was established by Mrs. W S. Hoyt, daughter of the late Chief Justice Chase, and other ladies of Pelham, and was in successful operation for over two years. Its object, a benevolent one, was to afford to young persons of both sexes instruction in the decorative and industrial arts. Teachers were provided for the various departments of drawing, decoration, designing, carving in wood, embroidery, tapestry, upholstery, carpentry, and joiner-work and working in metals. A depot was provided in the building for receiving orders for work and for the sale of articles manufactured.[1]

The Country Club is one of the notable institutions of Pelham. In looking about for a suitable place for its establishment, the gentlemen who organized it made choice of one situated directly upon the Sound, and which was owned and occupied for many years by the family of the late Dr. Richard Morris. The grounds and the view to be seen from them are admirably adapted to the purposes of such a club. It has a membership of about two hundred and fifty persons, and is in a flourishing condition.

In the ample grounds and well-equipped club-house every means is provided for the comfort, convenience and amusement of the members; various athletic games and field sports are engaged in, while fishing, bathing and boating are afforded by the waters of the Sound adjacent, and which wash the picturesque shores of the place.

At David's Island religious services are held every Sunday evening at the military post, which is one of the depots of recruits for the United States army. It should seem that it is a position of sufficient importance to secure the services of an army chaplain, as large numbers of soldiers are frequently gathered there, to be dispersed from time to time, as the needs of the government may demand, to all parts of the country. The Rev. Mr. Higbee, of Pelham, has for years conducted occasional services there. In the absence of any clergyman, they are conducted by the surgeon of the station, Major A. A. Woodhull, or by Captain (now Colonel) Trotter.

[1] This institution, after a very successful beginning, is, for various reasons, temporarily suspended.

Digitized by Google

In closing this sketch of the history of Pelham, I am permitted, by the kindness of my friend, the Rev. Dr. William Hague, one of the most eminent ministers of the Baptist denomination in this country and a native of the town of Pelham, to subjoin his very interesting article, published in the *American Magazine of History*, and entitled "Old Pelham and New Rochelle."

Charles E. Lindsley.

"OLD PELHAM AND NEW ROCHELLE."

BY REV. WILLIAM HAGUE.

"It was my fortune to revisit, recently, after a long interval of absence, two homes of my childhood, the birth home at Pelham, Westchester County, in the vicinity of New York, and the church home at New Rochelle, the town adjoining, originally a part of Pelham, comprised within the area of the manor by the royal charter of 1666, in the reign of Charles II. That charter was granted to Thomas Pell, Esq., 'Gentleman of the bed-chamber to King Charles I.,' and afterwards, in 1687, was granted anew and confirmed to his legally recognized heir, the only son of his brother, the first resident proprietor, 'Lord John Pell,' according to the usage of address hereabouts in the seventeenth century.

"The first object of interest that won attention within view from the railway station, two or three minutes' walk westward along the old historic 'King's Highway,' was the beautiful church edifice of stone, designated 'Trinity Church, of New Rochelle,' presenting itself to the eye of the inquiring visitor as the successor of the old 'French Church,' that hallowed that surrounding in the reign of Queen Ann. Having noticed, in a musing mood, the contrast between the showing of the rude, small, stony structure that I had first known in childhood as a house of worship, and that of the finely proportioned modern temple whose graceful spire now casts its shadow over the old site, I turned my steps toward the church burial-ground, seeking the graves of my grandparents. Long-slumbering memories were aroused, first of all, by the sight of the marble that marked the grave of my grandmother—Sarah Pell, widow of Captain William Bayley—whose funeral service, ministered in the church-yard by her aged relative, the rector, Rev. Theodosius Bartow, I had attended with a large family gathering in the month of March, 1819, being then eleven years of age. The form of the venerable clergyman in his official robes at the grave, his bald head uncovered, despite the chill of a heavy snow-fall, is vividly remembered now as if it had figured in a scene of yesterday.

"Meanwhile, however, memory had let slip the date of my grandfather's departure, and I was desirous to regain it from the chiselled record at the head of the grave nearly adjoining. What a bewilderment! I could scarcely believe my eyes, as I read, 'Died March 3, 1811.' It seemed altogether abnormal, that such minute remembrances of him as had been familiar to me, scores of particulars pertaining to his individuality, even the tones of his voice and his handicraft in making toys for my amusement, should have been thus long kept within the brain as in a photographic or phonographic cabinet. Yet thus it must have been, despite all seemings to the contrary, I said, soliloquizing in the presence of the facts: at the age of three and a half, hereabouts, began my outlook upon the world. Here I approximate the starting point of conscious thought; and this outlook over the life area of 'three-score and ten" discloses its varied scenes of light and shadow, from infancy to age, as one broad panoramic unity.

"Child memories, no doubt, are effective factors in shaping 'the make-up' of any personality. The image of my grandfather, associated as it is with the old homestead, and with his flow of talk while occupying his easy-chair upon the piazza, where he was wont to enjoy one of the finest of landscapes, taking within its scope Hunter's Island, Pelham Creek, the expanse of Long Island Sound, has never become dim; so that he has ever represented to me the ideal 'grandpa' of poetry or song, of fiction or graphic art, as pictured by Sir Walter Scott or 'Peter Parley.' Thus has he ever been to me in thought 'a living presence,' although the obtruding question as to the possibilities of a baby brain will put itself over and over again like a mocking puzzle.

"Despite the puzzle, the fact asserts itself. From the view-point occupied at the time of this writing, March, 1882, looking back to the last sickness and to the funeral services at Pelham and New Rochelle, the succession of years and order of events are clearly traced by memory and substantiated as a personal history. There is no break in the outline, although many things, thoughts, words, deeds may be missed from 'the filling up.'

"But now, while occupying the old church-yard as a retrospective view-point, it seems noteworthy that the first advent of death into the household, and this first funeral that shadowed the path of my young life, cannot be described without the joining of two old town names, French and English, New Rochelle and Pelham. Thus, too, looking upon the head-stones that memorialize the many graves in this 'God's Acres,' as the old English called the consecrated burial-ground, we notice the alterations or intermingling of English and French surnames, denoting the quick fusion of English and French blood in the homes of the early settlers nearly two centuries ago. On the tomb-stones of the dead and on the door-signs of the living, the same old names present themselves,—Pells, Bayleys, Bartows, Pinckneys, Sands, Hunts, Guions, Le Counts, Allaires, Leroys, Coutants, Secors, Badeaus, Flandreaus, De Peysters, De Lanceys and others, signalizing the spontaneous union of Saxon and celtic elements in the historic home-life and church-life of the colonial days.

"These first exiles from France, seeking permanent homes and religious liberty, though, to a great extent, 'spoiled of their goods,' realized actually the sentiment so well emphasized by Daniel Webster in addressing the young Americans, namely, 'character is *capital*,' being in the best sense, 'well to do,' free and inclined to contract family alliances from choice, taste and personal qualities rather than from considerations of mere expediency or goading necessity. Few and weak though they seemed, their place in history is as clearly defined as that of the 'ten thousand' retreating Greeks whom Xenophon has immortalized, having been long ago distinguished as a part of that heroic 'fifty thousand' who fled from France to England about four years before the annulling of the edict of Nantes, signed by Henry IV. in 1598, for the protection of Protestants, and revoked by Louis XIV. in 1685; having been in force, nominally, though not really, nearly four-fifths of a century. Having emigrated from England to New York, some of them by way of the West Indies, particularly St. Christopher's and Martinique, they found the most beautiful lands of the vicinity chartered under English manorial proprietorship, whereby it was made easy for them to establish themselves in new and permanent homes. All antipathies of blood or race melted away in the presence of a common Christianity. An area of six thousand acres, a part of the Manor of Pelham, was conveyed to their friend and agent, Jacob Leisler, merchant of New York, on acceptable terms, in 1689, surveyed and divided into lots or farms by Alexander Allaire and Captain Bond, in 1692; named New Rochelle in memory of the old fortress of Protestantism in France, and then the family life of the two people, by its own interior law of development, grew into a civil and social unity, 'compact together,' under the sway of a common sentiment, as if all gloried in the same genealogical origin.

"In this retrospective view of Bi-centennial history we can hardly trace the fortunes of rich domain so beautiful as was this broad, picturesque area of almost ten thousand acres, so near the rising metropolis, constituted by royal, ducal and colonial authority, under lawful grant and patent of his majesty, Charles II., and also of his sterner brother, King James II., 'an absolute, entire, enfranchised township and place of itself, in no manner of way to be subordinate or under the rule of any riding, township, or place of jurisdiction,' and then observe how it was 'willed' at once by its first proprietor, Thomas Pell, into the possession of an English heir, his nephew, a young man, only twenty-five years of age, without being sympathetically alive to the import of the doubtful questioning put by the more advanced of the exiles. 'What manner of man is this lord of the Manor? What have been his antecedents? Is his spirit akin to that of the intriguing, persecuting royal duke, James of York, now king, through whom, by special permission of his majesty, Charles II., the earlier charter of proprietorship was received?' The inquiry was serious, the answer was encouraging. The young lord's biography was easily traced. His environment suggested cheerful prophecies, although his youthful years had been passed amid a general unsettlement of things in church and state. Adverse to the pursuit of his studies continuously in due course, his home-life and school-life under his father's eye furnished advantages quite exceptional for liberal self-culture, adapted to qualify him for the place of lordly eminence be-

Digitized by Google

queathed to him in this new world as the protector of an oppressed people, the founder of a community truly unique as to condition and character.

"At this point of our retrospect let us take up the exiled Huguenot's question. What were this young lord's antecedents? His father, whose name figured largely in the state papers of the protectorate as the right Honourable John Pell, was eminent among English educators. Born on the first day of March, 1610, at Southwycke, Sussex County, England, of which parish his father, the Rev. John Pell, was then rector, he entered Trinity College, Cambridge, in the year 1623, and, before the end of another decade, had won European fame as an author in the higher range of philosophical and mathematical studies. Having accepted the offer of a professorship in Amsterdam, he then attracted the regard of the Prince of Orange, by whom he was appointed to the professorship of mathematics at Breda, in Holland, where a Military and Naval Academy had been established. Thus, having achieved a brilliant career in the prime of life, he was chosen by Oliver Cromwell, in April, 1654, English resident ambassador to the Swiss cantons. This confidential relation to the lord protector at the time when he stood forth at the height of his power, the recognized protector of Protestant Switzerland against the persecuting powers of the continent, gives ample proof of an enlarged statesman-like style of mind in harmony with the liberal ideas and progressive spirit that have throughout our own century thus far ruled the course both of English and American history. A single fact recorded by Mr. Bolton in his 'History of Westchester County'[1] puts this inference beyond all questioning: 'In the Landsdowne MSS. are eleven volumes of Dr. Pell's, written in excellent style. The first volume contains a vast fund of information respecting the persecutions of the Piedmontese.' Evidently his sympathies were with the true leaders of the age; not with the oppressors, but the oppressed.

"In connection with a fact so significant we are not surprised to learn that while serving the government of his country at Zurich, Mr. Pell's letters to his wife, at home, indicate minute attention to the elementary education of his only son, the future 'Lord John,' of Pelham, particularizing the most suitable schools, the studies and the teachers appropriate to the young scholar's situation or turn of mind, even urging special care as to the style of penmanship required by the boy 'eleven years old,' in danger of forming wrong habits at the outset. Four years after his many educational counselings had been written from Zurich, while the school-life of John was still in progress, the English mission to Switzerland was terminated, the minister was commended, called home, and informed on his arrival that the Lord Protector was dying. Very soon the whole country was convulsed; but, despite the agitations of that disastrous period, the youthful heir of a trans-Atlantic 'Lordship,' fifteen years of age at the time of his father's return, was exceptionally favored as to his opportunities for receiving the best possible training under the eye of his watchful parents, who had already taken rank with the best educators of England.

"Fortunately for the professor, while occupying so effectively his chair at Breda, he found it within his power to confer personal favors upon the exiled King, Charles II, then sojourning there. These were gratefully remembered, and opened the way, soon after the restoration, for his being admitted into 'holy orders,' by the Bishop of London, in 1661, for his being honored with the degree of doctor of divinity, gifted by the crown with the rectory of Fobbing, in Essex, and afterward by the Bishop, with that of Lavingdon, in the same county; all showing that the change of government from commonwealth to kingdom, brought to him no great distress, nor interfered with the educational interests of his family. The scholar, the diplomatist, the statesman, who had been recognized throughout Europe as the representative of the Lord Protector in defence of the peoples oppressed for conscience sake, was eminently qualified, of course, to train his only son into sympathy with his own ideas and the martyr spirit of the exiles who were to seek transatlantic homes within his own lordly domain.

In this timing of events the Huguenot Pilgrims discerned a divine adjustment of means to ends as real and apt as was that traced by the Israelites in the predicted exaltation of the youthful Joseph to that ancient 'Lordship' that prepared their way to the land of promise. Of the fine qualities of character exemplified by these heroic people, and the possibilities of their future, he was thoroughly appreciative. How different might have been their fortunes had he, like some leading men of the period, favored the exclusive policy of the reigning monarch by whom the manorial charter had been granted, and whose measures, ere long, rendered the English Revolution a logical necessity. But all antipathies were overruled, and in the annals of the following century we trace the gradual growth of a well-ordered and happy community, distinguished by an inherited refinement of manners and a degree of intellectual culture that made New Rochelle of Pelham what the legal phrase of the charter designated the manor, 'a place of itself;' unique; winning to its homes and schools the best elements of family life and social advancement. At the opening of the nineteenth century, the French language, spoken in purity and elegance, still lived as the vernacular of home life, attracting the more progressive class of students, whereof the names of Washington Irving, John Jay, Philip Schuyler, and Gouverneur Morris may be taken as exponents. A few who were children at that period are yet living, and remember the ladies who, like Mary Beslie, the sister of Dr. Oliver Beslie, possessed home libraries containing the standard works of French Literature that had nourished the intellectual youth of their mothers in France. As it has been well-said by Macaulay, that the fusion of Norman and Saxon elements in the thirteenth century produced the England that has figured as a power in a world of history, so that we may truly say that the fusion of English and French elements in this manorial tract, bought originally of the Indians by Thomas Pell, Esq., in 1654, confirmed by an English King, James II, as a "lordship," in 1687, produced a social growth of fine typal character, and furnished a contribution distinctively its own to the progress of American Colonial civilization.

"The incidental reference by name to an excellent lady who had passed the border line of 'three-score and ten' before the nineteenth century began, recalls to mind one whose image is associated with my earliest memories and with my first impressions of the primitive style of the cultivated Huguenot's life and manners. Madame Beslie, while in thought I replace her amid the old surroundings in Pelham, New Rochelle and New York, reappears in my retrospective musing as I saw her often in my school days, a queenly woman of ninety-five years, not bent by age, retaining her natural ease and grace of movement, still able by her winning ways to draw us young folk to her side as listeners to her talk while she rehearsed the memories of her youth. The younger children of the family circle, usually speaking of her as 'Aunt Mollie Bayley,' were obliged, each in turn, to take a lesson on the different spellings of French words that sound alike. When her memory became unretentive of things recent, it kept fresh as ever the things long past; hence whensoever I greeted her after absences of a month or week, she would place her hands upon my temples, then kissing me upon the forehead, would pleasantly allude to the old French mode of salutation. At once, as if making a new communication, she would repeat, with an interest as lively as ever, the story of the exodus, the deadly persecution in France and the fate of her grandmother, who had been dragged through the streets of Paris by the hair of her head. Having ended her narrative, the turn of her familiar talk would be suggested, often by the old French book that she would happen to be holding in her hand, or by a reference to some volume or pictured page within the glass doors of her book-case. Gifted as she was with communicative power, she was, at the same time, one of the best of listeners, calling forth from her company the best they had to offer; and, indeed, I have sometimes wondered whether the charms of her conversation were to be regarded the more eminently as an inherited talent; as the incidental outcome of favoring social influences, or the product of some kind of educational training that had grown into 'a second nature.' Though uncertain just now as to the date of her departure from earth (not far from the close of 1817), I can truly say that her beautiful example of refined Christian womanhood has been ever before me as an exponent of Huguenot character, shaping my conceptions of Huguenot home-life and keeping alive my sympathies with the spirit of Huguenot history.

"Coincident with these sentiments, as to inherited culture, was the impression made upon the mind of New England by the example of public spirit exhibited in the city of Boston by a native of New Rochelle more than a century and a quarter ago. From the earliest days of the American Revolution Faneuil Hall has been to Boston a household word, familiar to the lips of men, women and children as the memorial of Huguenot munificence, rendered classical by historic associations that quicken the pulse of patriotism and call forth the spirit of song in commemoration of the 'cradle of liberty.' Thus the name of a Huguenot of New Rochelle has not only held a shining place in the annals of the colonial commonwealth, but lives in the nation's history as a source of inspiration, awakening memories that are an uplifting power.

"Although the name of this man, thus memorialized, has been daily repeated in the first city of New England by four or five successive generations, yet his short and inspiring life-story had been permitted almost to fade away from memory until its late restoration to the popular range of home reading by the pen of Charles Smith, who has contributed a

[1] Volume ii., p. 51.

choice chapter to the memorial history of Boston. The uncle of Peter, the founder and donor of the hall, was Andrew Faneuil, who fled from France to Holland in 1685, and thence, as the record shows, had become, in 1691, a tax-payer and citizen of Boston. At the opening of the eighteenth century he had taken rank as the leading merchant of the city in point of wealth, trusted by all as a man of honesty and honor. His death, in 1737, seemed indeed an untimely event. The sense of loss was universal, expressed by the gathering at his grave—a procession of eleven hundred persons, representatives of the whole people. His property was 'willed' to his nephew Peter, who, at eighteen years of age, had left his native town, New Rochelle, and sojourned for a short period in Rhode Island, whither he had accompanied his father, Benjamin. Proceeding thence to Boston, he entered into the service of his Uncle Andrew, and soon won the confidence and the love that issued in his appointment as his uncle's executor and residuary legatee. His career was brief but brilliant. Though he lived only five years after his uncle's decease, he rendered that small fraction of life a fine historical episode in the municipal record of his time.

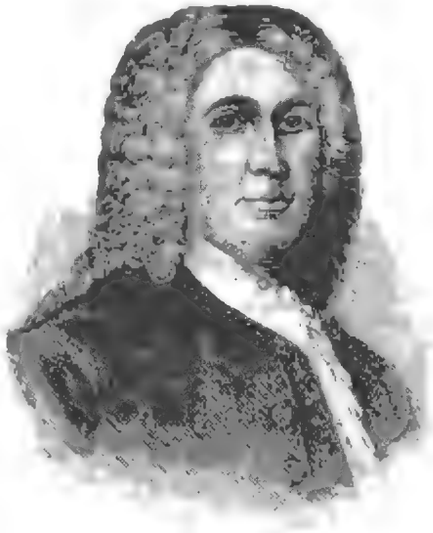
"In the year 1740 the people were divided into two parties, nearly equal in numbers, by the discussion of a proposal to meet a public need —the erection of a central market-house. The opponents of the enterprise were persistent, though the grounds of their action are not clearly discernible. In this state of the public mind Peter Faneuil came forward and offered to erect the building at his own cost, 'to be improved for a market for the sole use, benefit and advantage of the town, provided that the town of Boston would pass a vote for that purpose, and lay the same under such proper regulations as shall be thought necessary, and constantly support it for said use.'

"The selectmen called a meeting to act upon the proposal; 367 votes were cast for accepting the gift, 300 against it. Mr. Faneuil enlarged his plan, and over the market erected a splendid hall, capable of accommodating a thousand persons. At a town-meeting in the town-house, September 13, 1743, a vote was unanimously passed accepting the gift, and appointing a committee, consisting of the moderator of the meeting, the selectmen, the representative to the general court and six other gentlemen, 'to wait upon Peter Faneuil, Esq., and in the name of the town to render him their hearty thanks for so bountiful a gift, with their prayers that this and other expressions of his bounty and charity may be abundantly recompensed with the divine blessing.'

"The first town-meeting held within the walls of Faneuil Hall, 1743, was the occasion for delivering a eulogy on the life and character of the donor by Mr. John Lovell, master of the Latin school. In his oration Mr. Lovell said, after referring to private charities, 'Let this stately edifice which bears his name witness for him what sums he expended in public munificence. This building, erected by him at his own immense charge, for the convenience and ornament of the town is incomparably the greatest benefaction ever yet known to our western shore.' Thus Boston a century and a quarter ago gratefully declared to the world that, although the Huguenot element did not much affect the population as to quantity, it was an effective factor of sterling worth as to *quality*, and that the finest expression of its spirit and style was to be found in the magnificent record left there by the large-souled young Huguenot of New Rochelle.

"Having mentioned the year of Mr. Faneuil's departure, 1743, it may be noted, incidentally, that in 1843 the celebration of our national independence in Faneuil Hall awakened into new life old historic associations, and imparted to that day's observance somewhat of the dignity of a centennial recognition. On the fourth of July of that year Mr. Charles Francis Adams delivered his first public oration, and, as had been expected, in the presence of the venerable ex-president, his father. Having been invited to officiate as chaplain on that occasion, I repaired to the council chamber of the city hall half an hour before the time of forming the procession. While reclining alone upon the old-fashioned window-seat, enjoying its pleasant outlook, the ex-president entered the room. Ere long, taking his seat beside me, he touched upon a few reminiscences of the past, and then said in a tone expressive of profound feeling, 'This is one of the happiest days of my whole life. Fifty years expire to-day since I performed in Boston my first public service, which was the delivery of an oration to celebrate our national independence. After a half century of active life I am spared by a benign providence to witness my son's performance of his first public service—to deliver an oration in honor of the same great event.' To this I answered, 'Mr. President, I am well aware of the notable connection of events to which you refer, and having committed and declaimed a part of your own great oration when a school boy in New York, I could, without effort, repeat it to you now.' To 'the old man eloquent,' as well as to myself, the coincidence was an agreeable surprise. At the close of the services connected with the delivery of the oration, the guests of the city were gathered at the festal banquet in Faneuil Hall. There I was called upon as chaplain, not only to invoke the divine benediction, but to respond to a patriotic sentiment that awakened memories of the heroic dead. To me, certainly, it was an uplifting thought, that, like the founder of the hall, belonging by birth to Pelham and New Rochelle, at the end of a century from the year of its completion and his departure, I was standing in the thronged edifice that memorialized his name, alive to the significance of the position, well assured that by every uttered word I was but voicing the ideas that he loved, that he expressed in deeds more eloquent than words, and made his record a treasured legacy.

"This early colonial civilization, which we have traced from its beginning, with its style of culture so unique on account of its variety of elements fused into newly developed characters, ere long put forth a power of attraction that gathered to it and around it people of congenial tastes, appreciative of the social qualities and educational aspirations recognized as a transmitted heritage. Long remembered among those who, at the close of the last century, sought a home in old Pelham, was a man of large fortune, an educated gentlemen, a bachelor just touching the border of middle life, of whom, as it seems, only one memorial can now be found, and that the marble slab at the head of his grave, hinting briefly at the beginning and ending of his life-story. A single sentence utters its whole message, thus,—In memory of Alexander Bampfield Henderson, Esq., a native of Charleston, in South Carolina, but late of the town of Pelham and county of Westchester, who departed this life 26th December, 1804, aged 47 years.



PETER FANEUIL.

"On a bright summer's day, about ten years ago, in a solitary walk among the tombs of the old French Burial Ground, my attention was arrested by the inscription here copied. Although I had never seen the man, nor been his contemporary, I felt myself closely related and greatly indebted to him. For I was familiar with the story that from his beautiful residence, separated by Pelham Creek from the land estate of my grandparent, William Bailey, he daily used to walk across the causeway and bridge to our homestead and relieve the loneliness of 'Bachelor Hall,' in the sympathetic enjoyment of our family life. Such was his habitude, indeed, during the most important period of my mother's history, her later school days. His private library, a true index of his cherished tastes, was one of the best, at the time, outside of the metropolis; and it greatly intensified his enjoyment of it, often recognizing in my mother, *née* Anne Bayley, a keen appreciation of books, to minister to her intellectual development by placing at her command the freshest productions of English literature, rendering her familiar with the standard works of Essayists and Poets, with most of those English classics, indeed, that would be found in the choicest home library at the close of the Eighteenth Century. Thus, working 'better than he knew,' he was providing the main topics of interest that ruled the course of our household talk throughout my school days, and was qualifying my mother to become, not professionally, but incidentally and really, the attractive companion and educator of her five children. Her grateful allusions to him made his name familiar to our ears; and often curious fancy would invest with the golden haze of romance the unwritten history of this 'Lone Lord of the Isle.' Rumor had sometimes whispered that, in his expe-

Digitized by Google

rience, the glow of youthful hope had been dimmed by the death of a first love, for whose vacant place no substitute could be found on earth.

"In this connection it remains to be said, however, that, whether this suggestion were true or not, a few well-remembered facts, outlining his life course, were recently rehearsed to me by Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., whose life long residence in Pelham, near the Island, suggest a series of memories related to the whole vicinity, extending over two-thirds of a century. These conversational statements supply what was lacking to give a desired unity to the story.

"Mr. Henderson, born in South Carolina, was of Scotch origin; was educated at the University of Edinburgh, and then took rank as a Surgeon in the English Army. Thus he was brought into communication with the British Ambassador in India, and was by him introduced to the Court of the reigning Prince, who engaged the Surgeon's professional services in behalf of his favorite wife, then seriously ill. The treatment was a success, and the delighted Prince honored Mr. Henderson, in his own way, by the presentation of a beautiful Circassian slave girl, about thirteen years of age. This present the Army Surgeon did not bring away with him from India; 'but, after establishing his home at the Island,' said Mr. Roosevelt, 'he commissioned your father (Captain James Hague, of Pelham, commanding a ship in the India trade) to look after this princely gift, and bring with him the young Circassian as a passenger on his return voyage from Calcutta. With her, accordingly, Captain Hague sought an interview, but found her so well pleased with her position in the household of a British officer that she could not be induced to leave her new protector. Nevertheless, the Captain was accompanied with an Indian lad, the Surgeon's protégé, who was welcomed, treated as an adopted son, and bore the name of William Henderson. The lad survived the retired Surgeon eight years, and was buried by his side in the old French Burial Ground at New Rochelle. The two graves are surrounded by a well-wrought iron fence, and the smaller marble headstone bears this brief inscription: 'In memory of William Henderson, who died January 19, 1812, in the 25th year of his age.'

"In his last sickness the young man was most kindly attended by Dr. Rogers, through whose influence or advice he bequeathed the sum of twelve hundred dollars, appropriated to the erection of a town house, 'for the use and convenience' of the people of New Rochelle. With the recognition of this gift the townspeople of our time generally associate the name of the owner of the Island Home; it is, however, the East India youth's memorial.

"Henderson's Island, beautiful for situation, distinguished by its homestead, so greatly enriched by the best of home libraries in Pelham, became well known as Hunter's Island, more distinguished than ever by its new palatial mansion, with the best private art gallery in the United States. The propriety of this characterization by the use of the superlative degree was, probably, undisputed by any rival during the first two decades of this century. We may safely say that no one of the earlier generations of the Pells, or of the Huguenots, however aspiring, would have dreamed of such a possibility for a family home within the bounds of the manorial grant so recently chartered by an English king in troublous times, and then so thoroughly impoverished by the Revolutionary War. Under what conditions could it have seemed possible that some of the choicest treasures of ancient Italian galleries could be transferred to a secluded little island, fifteen miles from the city of New York, the purchase of a young American?

"The explanation, as received from Mr. Hunter personally, was this: At the the time of his graduating from Columbia College, twenty-one years of age, it so happened that he came into full possession of his property. A friend and fellow-student, traveling in Europe while Napoleon was campaigning in Italy, wrote earnestly, reminding him that, on account of insecurity, art treasures were offered for sale at great sacrifice, and that an opportunity to indulge cherished tastes had now arrived, the like of which had not been known before and might never come again. 'My answer was prompt,' said Mr. Hunter, 'availing myself of his service, with faith in his judgment and discretion.'

"Here, at this point of writing, I have arrested my pen in order to read aloud to a friendly caller what, as it happens, I have just now written, and have thus drawn forth this critical questioning: Surely, the Italian art dealers must have seen their opportunity in negotiating with a young commissioned American, and might have been quite equal to the occasion. How have the claims of these choice treasures been verified? However fair and apt that questioning may be, suffice it here for me to say that it is not within the scope of my purpose to determine the origin of the pictures, and that with a youth's faith in the keen insight and critical judgment of so highly educated an amateur as the Hon. John Hunter, it was my fortune to realize, amid our surroundings in the gallery, all possible delight and mental quickening, limited only by the measure of receptivity. Outside of the family circle, Mr. Hunter, who, in his spirit and style of manners, represented a high ideal of the typal gentleman, the courteous and accomplished State Senator, reappears to the eye of memory as the first personality that I can recall as associated with my early life in Pelham. Ere long, after the death of his son, Des Brosses Hunter, Esq., the gallery was sold, the island passed into other ownership; yet, whatsoever may be its fortunes in the future, its relations to old Pelham and New Rochelle as a source of intellectual and æsthetic culture to several suggestive generations will brighten the record of its past and render its name a cherished memory in the annals of local history.[1]

"The mention of these names pertaining to the island's history, in connection with that of the manor and town, carries us back in thought to the Anglo-French life of old Pelham, as pictured out sixty or more years ago in our family talks, and illumined now by our memories of those who represented the remoter past. Fortunately for us our dear grandparents, uncles and aunts were lovingly communicative, rehearsing to us of the third generation the local annals of the manor and the familiar facts of the revolutionary era; little episodes as lively as any that Fenimore Cooper has woven into his romance of the 'Spy.' These incidental stories of the home life that followed the establishment of Independence and the 'Union' were equally winning, making us acquainted with our kindred and neighbors, with our parents, associates in their early days throughout rural and suburban surroundings.

"Prominent among these was Dr. Richard Bayley, the only brother of my grandfather, whose mother was a Huguenot, *nee* Susanne Leconte, and whose eminently distinguished daughter, Eliza Ann Bayley Seton, has been historically recognized as the presiding genius of the Roman Catholic academic institute at Emmetsburg, Md., and the founder of the order of the Sisters of Charity in the United States. Dr. Bayley, himself, a favorite student of the celebrated Hunter, of London, the first professor in the medical department of Columbia College, an accepted authority as a professional writer in England and France,[2] though living within an environment of churchly influences at home, acknowledged no connection with any ecclesiastical organism. Hence, the position of his accomplished daughter, biographically commemorated as 'Mother Seton,' the gifted educator, as well as the founder, of the most eminent sisterhood (and we may add here, parenthetically, the more recent positions of his grandson, James Roosevelt Bayley, as having been, at first, rector of the Episcopal Church, at Harlem, and then, at last, Roman Catholic Archbishop of Baltimore, Primate of America) seems the more particularly noteworthy. In a widening circle of relationships thus made up there could be evidently no lack of conversational topics adapted to keep us all mentally alive and wide-awake to note the driftings of thought throughout the whole community, so recently set free from the *regime* of a colonial church establishment, whose ideal aim had been, of course, the legal maintenance of religious uniformity.

"Touching the first of the ecclesiastical transmutations here mentioned, profoundly sad, indeed, was the tone of amazement discernible in the exclamation of Mrs. Seton's elder sister, Mrs. Dr. Wright Post, of Throgg's Neck, addressed to my mother and by her repeated to me regarding the talented Ann Eliza, 'She has gone over to the church that persecuted her ancestors.' As we now look back over the seven decades that have gone by since that day, we may safely say that no change of ecclesiastical relations on the part of an individual has stirred 'society' at the time with questions so keenly conducting or has been effective of influences more widely felt in the homes of the country.

"To many, even personal friends, the change seemed inexplicable; a mystery, a fact untraceable to any adequate cause. Numerous and earnest were the questionings as to what influences had been secretly working at the starting-point of this new career. By some, especially those who had been associated with her from childhood in the communion of 'dear old Trinity,' the explanation was found in the sensibility of her

[1] When first penning the closing lines of this paragraph, the writer supposed that there was still occasion in alluding to the designation of the island, to use the phrase, its *former* name. Since then we have welcomed the intelligence that since the estate has passed into the hands of Mr. C. Oliver Iselin, the old familiar name, "Hunter's Island," whereby our sires and grandsires knew the place, has been restored and chiselled upon the granite pillars of the causeway,—a work of good taste in which we all have a common interest.

[2] Thacher's "Medical Biography," Art. Bayley.

Digitized by Google

emotive nature, under the stress of sorrow, to loving appeals during her stay in Italy, where, in the year 1804, her honored husband, William Seton, Esq., died after a lingering illness, and where her depressed spirit found relief in the ministrations of the Roman Catholic Church, as well as in the hospitable home of the noble-souled Felichi. The truth is, however, that the trend of her steps toward the Roman Catholic Church, strengthened by her æsthetic tastes, was noticed in her earlier days before she had left her native land; and after her return from Italy to New York she was still a communicant of Trinity Church, for weeks, as she said, 'in an agony of suspense,' engaged in discussions, oral and written, with the Rev. John Henry Hobart, then rector of Trinity, afterward Bishop of the Diocese of New York, and Archbishop Carroll, of Baltimore, in regard to the main principles of Protestantism. At that earlier period, her cousin, Ann Bayley, of Pelham, only eight years younger than herself, was living in the environment of the same religious atmosphere, keenly sympathetic, constantly interchanging sentiments as well as visits.

"The leading idea that then engaged the thoughts of those two cousins pertained not so much to the emotive nature as to the intellectual; for a main subject of discussion emphasized in the chief pulpits of New York at that day, was the relation of the sacraments to personal salvation. At that point the life course of the two cousins diverged. The affirmation, sometimes eloquently argued, that the sacraments, administered through a regular priestly succession, are the divinely appointed channels through which saving grace flows forth from the fountain of life into the human soul, took the strongest possible hold upon the spirit nature of the elder cousin, calling forth, even then, painful doubts over a suggested question, namely this: 'As the Anglican church recognizes the perfect validity of the Roman Catholic sacraments, while on the other hand, the older Roman church has never recognized the validity of the Anglican administration, am I not required, by a proper regard for my own soul's peace and safety, to place myself upon the ground that remains to both sides undisputed?' Strange as it may seem to many that her early faith should have faltered before such a question, from that starting-point of thought she advanced in due time, after her return from Italy, through 'an agony of suspense' to the positions taken in her printed correspondence with Bishop Hobart and the Primate of Baltimore. At the same time her younger cousin, then residing at the paternal home in Pelham, equally interested in the new inquiry, as to them it seemed, having been attracted as a listener to the teachings of the eminent preacher of the Presbyterian Church in Murray Street, Rev. Dr. John Mitchell Mason, who occasionally delivered a discourse in New Rochelle, she embraced, with a responsive spirit, the formulated statement of pure protestantism, 'justification by faith alone,' so eloquently put forth by him as 'the true spirit union with Christ, embracing within it character and condition.' Thenceforward her favorite characterization of Christianity was 'the religion of the New Testament,' emphasizing thus, as she thought, by this short phrase, the two distinguishing qualities of the primitive church teachings, simplicity and catholicity.[1]

"It is a curiously suggestive study, this tracing of mental histories. From the same starting-points of intellectual, emotive, or spiritual development, even of congenial minds, how strangely far apart the issues! Some time before her departure for Italy, the elder cousin visited her younger, sisterly cousin at Pelham; at the moment of taking leave, bidding her good-bye while presenting her an article of skilfully wrought needle-work as a love token, she kissed her and said, 'I hope we will meet in heaven.' They never met on earth again. Both lived, however, to an advanced age. The elder, having wept for the last time over the grave of her husband in Italy,—the English burial-ground at Pisa,—and having returned to New York, welcomed ere long, the comparative seclusion of a conventual life in Maryland; the younger, having been joined in marriage, by Rev. Theodosius Bartow, rector of New Rochelle, at her father's house in Pelham, to Captain James Hague, commander of a ship in the East India trade, lived happily, the life of her family circle, until nearly 'fourscore years' of age; and then, after fourteen years of widowhood, died at the house of her only daughter, Mrs. Dr. Alexander W. Rogers, Patterson, New Jersey, amid the benedictions of her children, who, in accordance with the old scripture's voicing of filial love, 'rise up and call her blessed.'

"The contrasted issues of two lives thus realized by two friends of Huguenot descent imparts significance to a saying noted at Paris in a tourist's journal, that the trend of the French nature is toward intellectual freedom, and that where there is French blood it will assert itself in individuality of character, tempered and toned by inherited tastes and manners into social and civil concord. The fortunes of Pelham and New Rochelle illustrate this view. In this connection it seems a noteworthy fact that the English monarch who gave to Pelham its first manorial charter, was himself the sole, self-determined donor of the charter of Rhode Island to Roger Williams, openly declaring the reason of his action to be his sovereign will to 'experiment whether civil government could consist with such liberty of conscience.' It may seem strange that a notably careless, pleasure-loving king, like Charles II., should rise to the height of the grandly exceptional opportunity presented to him as a means of solving a great problem for the world through all time. The thought has been naturally suggested that he had no higher aim than a provision for unlimited freedom of the Roman Catholics. In that combination of events, however, the founder of Rhode Island recognized a divine ruling or overruling, when he said, 'the father of spirits has impressed his royal spirit,' and added, in his letter to Major Mason, 'this, his majesty's grant, was startled at by his majesty's high officers of state, who were to view it in course before the sealing, but fearing the lion's roaring, they couched against their wills in obedience to his majesty's pleasure.' Major Mason's Letter Mass. Hist. Coll. vol. I., 3 note. As here we repeat this marvellous testimony, we are tempted to wish that the experiment king who gave to Pelham, as well as to Rhode Island, a charter of self-government, could have lived long enough to hear from the whole area of the old manor, after embracing within its limits the town of New Rochelle, the experimental response of a thriving population with all its diversities of age, taste and traditions, a live civil unity; their homes all vocal with the ancient song of the Hebrews, 'the borderlines have fallen to us in pleasant places; we have a goodly heritage.'

"In his retrospective monograph, I have had occasion to refer by name to women of the Huguenot family. Now last of all, our thoughts are drawn to a late suggestive event in the annals of New Rochelle, attracting the attention of the nation at large to one funeral scene: namely, the death of a lady in whose veins flowed the blood of an Anglican and a French ancestry.

"The quiet departure of Mrs. Caroline Leroy Webster, on Sunday, February 26th, at the Leroy Mansion, was announced generally by the press, and awakened many slumbering memories of her life, associated with New York, Boston and Washington, as well as with Pelham and New Rochelle. Born at the house of her father, Jacob Leroy, Esq., New York, 1797, a considerable proportion of her early remembrances were associated with scenes of rural life pertaining both to the manor and the town.

"Mr. Webster having met Miss Leroy at her city residence, recognized at once the rare qualities of her intellectual culture, her graceful manners, her conversational gifts and her queenly power as a leader of society. In the year 1829 she became his second wife, and in the more extended sphere of social and public life that she thus entered was, from first to last, perfectly at home.

"The storm that raged on Wednesday, March 1st, was at its height when the funeral service was ministered in Trinity Church, New Rochelle, by the rector, Rev. Mr. Canedy and Rev. Mr. Higgins, rector of Christ Church, Pelham, and as the attendance of ladies was necessarily limited, the large gathering of gentlemen, from homes far and near, was remarkable, indicating the profoundly cherished memories relating to the career of the great statesman, the completed close of whose home-life on earth seemed as if now emphasized by the funeral dirge within the temple and the majestic voice of the tempest without.

"Not long after the death of Mr. Webster, as we well remember, one hundred citizens of Boston contributed one thousand dollars each to a fund of one hundred thousand dollars, which was invested for Mrs. Webster's benefit, and the interest of this she duly received at her home in New Rochelle, a timely and welcome contribution to the cheer of her tranquil life evening.

"Thus it may be truly said that the men of Boston, in our own time, have given back a fitting response to the munificence of a Huguenot native of New Rochelle, expressed in the gift of Faneuil Hall to their honored city more than a century and a quarter ago, exemplifying the perfect fusion of Anglican and French elements into a vital unity, to endure throughout centuries to come.

W. Hague

[1] Dr. Mason's physique, his figure and manner, were majestic and commanding. On one occasion, after listening to him at New Rochelle, Hon. John Hunter said to my mother, "That man was born to command, not to persuade; he has mistaken his calling; he ought to have been a major-general in the United States Army."

Digitized by Google

BIOGRAPHY.

JAMES HYATT.

Mr. James Hyatt, former supervisor of the town of Pelham, was a son of James H. Hyatt, who married Eliza Balcom, and resided in New York City. He was born there December 1, 1830, and was educated in the district school, which he left at the age of fifteen to engage in the butcher business.

He first entered as a clerk the shop of James Kent, in Tompkins' Market, at the corner of Sixth Street and the Bowery, New York. Here he remained during four years, at the expiration of which he removed to Mott Haven, and was engaged in the business with his uncle there for five years. He then left Mott Haven for the town of Westchester, and entered the butcher store of William Cooper, which he left after five years to open a market for himself in the same town.

One year afterward he removed the concern to City Island, where he still remains.

He is well known throughout Westchester, especially in its political life. He is an earnest Democrat and has held several political positions, both elective and by appointment. In 1863 he was appointed board clerk of the town of Pelham, and one year later was elected to the position, being re-elected to it for seven terms. In 1873 he was elected supervisor and re-elected to the office eleven times successively. He was also town constable for one year, and at one time was collector of school taxes.

Mr. Hyatt's consistent political life, and his earnest advocacy of correct principles in the government of his town and county, entitle him to the respect and esteem of the citizens of Westchester, wherever found.

CHAPTER XVIII.

WHITE PLAINS.

BY JOSIAH S. MITCHELL.

WHITE PLAINS, the shire-town of Westchester County, was described in an act of the Legislature of the State of New York, passed in 1788,[1] as "All that part of the county of Westchester bounded easterly by Mamaroneck River, northerly by North Castle, westerly by Bronx River and southerly by the town of Scarsdale," and by this act was erected into a town, containing four thousand four hundred and thirty-five acres.

As late as the year 1683 this territory was still in the possession of its aboriginal owners. The chiefs were sachems of the Weckquaskeeh tribe, a portion of the powerful Mohican nation, whose territory lay between the Connecticut River and the Hudson, the Weckquaskeeh family occupying the more limited region between the Byram River and the Hudson. No woodman's axe had yet invaded the quietude of its forests; but amid the leafy hedges, and beneath the sheltering branches of overhanging trees, the tawny savage and his tawny mate, rearing their black-eyed little ones in the primitive simplicity of their remotest ancestors, remained the sole human inhabitants of the soil.

But now the hum of civilization is beginning to be heard on their borders. The irrepressible and irresistible New Englander, advancing with rapid strides, having in 1666 settled Rye as far as the Mamaroneck River, in 1683 purchased the better country lying between that river and the Bronx, and called by the natives, Quarroppas,—by the settlers the White Plains,—the deed of which to the people of Rye is as follows:

"To all Christian peopell to hom these presence shall com greting
"Know yee that we Shapham, Cockenseco, Orewapum, Kewetoahan,
"Koawanoh Paatck Shiphatlash, Korehevuvous, panawok, memishott,
"peekanoh, oromahgah, patthunk, hohoreis, sotonge, wonawaking,
"owhorawas nosband have for a valuabell sum of money to us in hand
"paid by the town of Rye that are inhabitance bargained covinanted,
"allnated and soulld unto the Inhabitance of the above said town of
"Ry, A sartain tract of land Lying within the town bounds of Rye
"Bounded as followeth on the north east with Mamarineck River, and
"on the Southwest with a branch of the said River and marked trees
"till it comes to brunckes River and then to Runn by Brunches River
"till it Comes to the head of the whit plaines soe called, and by the
"marked trees from thence till it comes to the uppermost branch of
"marinneck River, which trackt of Land commonly called by the Eng-
"lish the whit plaines and called by the Indians Quaroppas which said
"tract of Land wee the above said shapham, Cockincecko, orewapum,
"kewetoahan, koawanoh, moahalice and the Rest of the above said
"indians have soulled as above said unto the Inhabitance of the said
"town of Rye them theire heires executars administrators or asignes for
"ever and Doe hereby bind ourselves our heires Exectars Administratars
"and assigns unto the Inhabitance of the above said town of Rye them
"theire heires Executars administratars or asignes that they may at
"all times from and after the date hereof peasably and quietly posses
"occupy and enjoy the above said tract of land free from all former
"bargaines salles morgages or other incombrances whatso ever and
"all soe to warrant and make good the above said salle against any par-
"son or parsons whatso ever that shall or will make or lay any claime or
"claimes theare unto and In testimony theareof wee have caused
"this bill of salle to be made and here unto hauc sett our hands and
"sealles this two and twentieth of November one thousand six hundred
"Eighty three.

"Sealed, signed and delivered in the presents of us"

"Corneliase	the marke of
"his marke	Shapham
"Joshua Knapp	Cokenseko
"the marke of	Orowajam
"Motepeatehon	Kewetoham
"John Odell	Koawanoh
"his marke	Moahpeatch
	Patthunk
	Hohornis
	Sotonge
	owhorawas
	oramapoah."

"This bill of salle is acknowledged by the granters to be their ackt
"and deed before me in Rye the day and yere aboue written.

"JOSEPH HORTON
"Comissioneer."

This purchase was immediately followed by the actual occupation of the newly-acquired territory, though not without opposition; for the Rye people were met by the claims of John Richbell, who, in

[1] Greenleaf's Laws, vol. ii. p. 153.

Digitized by Google

1660, had purchased from an Indian three necks of land lying between Stony Brook and Mamaroneck River. Richbell's purchase had been confirmed by the Dutch government of New Amsterdam in 1662, and subsequently, in 1668, together "with the land lying north twenty miles into the woods," by the government of New York, so far as the lands were included in the province of New York. Hence historians generally have regarded the Rye people as mere squatters, without right or title to the soil of the White Plains, and indebted, finally, to the kindness of Colonel Caleb Heathcote, the grantee of the Richbell title, for undisturbed possession of this goodly territory. If we pause here to make a careful examination of the grounds upon which the respective claims to these lands by the rival purchasers, and by New Amsterdam and New England, were based, we shall find that this commonly accepted idea is erroneous.

The Pilgrims, although in exile, counted themselves Englishmen, and were ever ready to maintain at any sacrifice the claims of the mother country, based upon the undisputed discovery of the coast of North America, from the Chesapeake Bay to Nova Scotia, in 1497, by the Cabots, sailing under the British flag; no actual occupation of the land was accomplished, however, notwithstanding many attempts were made, until the bold and enterprising spirit of Sir Walter Raleigh established the Virginia colony in 1607.

In the year 1609, Henry Hudson, an English navigator in the employ of the Dutch East India Company, undertook a voyage in the "Half-Moon," to seek a westward passage to China, and in September entered what is now known as New York Bay. In 1613, a Dutch trading establishment, consisting of five houses, under the superintendence of Hendrick Corstiaensen, was set up, but received a serious check when Captain Argall, of the Virginia colony, touched at the island and forced Corstiaensen and his associates to submit to the King of England, and to agree to pay tribute, in token of their dependence on the English crown.

In 1614 the States-General of the United Netherlands, for the purpose of encouraging exploration and settlement, offered a four years' monopoly of trade with newly-discovered lands. A company of merchants, under the title of "The United New Netherland Company," forming a partnership—not a corporation—availed themselves of the privilege, and erected the first rude fort on Manhattan Island. At the termination of the four years the charter of this company expired and was never renewed.[1]

The next step, in order of time, was the settlement of Plymouth, in 1620, under the original patent of New England, which embraced all that part of North America between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees of north latitude, and extending "from sea to sea;" that is, as far south as Philadelphia and as far north as Quebec, and in breadth from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. This grant was absolute and exclusive. Without the permission of the Plymouth Council, no ship might sail into any harbor from Newfoundland to the latitude of Philadelphia; and not an emigrant might place his foot upon the soil. It was under this grant that four and twenty families landed from the "Mayflower," on Plymouth Rock, in December, 1620, and established a settlement, from which is dated the planting of New England.[2]

In 1621, the Dutch West India Company was incorporated for a period of twenty years, with privilege to traffic and plant colonies on the coast of Africa, from the Tropic of Cancer to the Cape of Good Hope, and on the coast of America from the Straits of Magellan to the remotest north; thus lightly did the little nation of merchants make gifts of continents. However, intelligence being received in England that preparations were making to send vessels to America, King James I. directed his ambassador at the Hague to urge upon the States-General the necessity of preventing their subjects from settling in parts north of Virginia, and distinctly asserting the illegality of making any settlements on this continent.[3] The ambassador was assured that the Dutch had planted no colony there, and intended to plant none. Notwithstanding these assurances, the Dutch West India Company, in 1626, purchased of the Indians, for the sum of twenty-four dollars, the Island of Manhattan, and built thereon Fort Amsterdam.

This attempt at a permanent settlement drew from Governor Bradford, of Plymouth, an earnest assertion of the right of the English to the country now occupied by the Dutch, and an intimation that force might be used to maintain the British claim. The directors in Holland thereupon obtained from Charles I. an order in Council, by which all the ports in the kingdoms and territories of the British King were thrown open to all Dutch vessels trading to or from New Netherland.[4]

Until the year 1629 the Dutch had done nothing to advance a settlement; a few servants of the company, connected with the trading posts, were the only Dutch inhabitants of New Netherland; and not a foot of soil had been reclaimed save the little that supplied the wants of the few persons attached to the three forts. During this year, however, a charter with special privileges was granted to all such members of the company as should settle any colony in New Netherland, and settlements were made on the Hudson River and at Cape Henlopen.[5]

During the years 1628, 1629 and 1630 thousands of English Puritans settled in Massachusetts. On March

[1] 2 Bancroft, U. S., 272.

[2] 1 Bancroft, U. S., 272; 1 Trumbull, 546; 1 Hazard, 103-108.

[3] 1 O'Callaghan's "New Netherland," 95.

[4] 1 O'Callaghan, 109.

[5] 1 O'Callaghan, 110.

Digitized by Google

19, 1631, Robert, Earl of Warwick, president of the Council of the Plymouth Company, granted unto Lord Say and Seal and sixteen others, and to their heirs and assigns and associates forever, "All that part of New England which lies west from Narragansett River a hundred and twenty miles on the sea coast and from thence in latitude and breadth aforesaid to the South Sea." This grant extends from Point Judith to New York, and from thence in a west line to the South Sea (Pacific Ocean); and if we take Narragansett River in its whole length, this tract will extend as far north as Worcester.[1]

The patents to Connecticut, Georgia, South Carolina and Virginia have the same westerly extension, and were so regarded by the English Kings, and acted upon in treaties between Great Britain and France and Spain. It was by this construction of the patents and charters of the American colonies that the Western Territories, as far as the Mississippi, were ceded to the United States by the peace with Great Britain; and it was by virtue of the same construction of the patents that Congress, in 1788, procured a formal surrender of the unappropriated Western lands from the States above named,—Connecticut, however, reserving a tract in Ohio, bounded on the south by the forty-first degree of north latitude and on the north by the Connecticut line, containing three million six hundred and sixty-seven thousand acres.[2]

In March, 1632, a Dutch ship was forced, by stress of weather, into the port of Plymouth, and was seized on a charge of having traded and obtained her cargo in countries subject to His Britannic Majesty. Out of this seizure grew the first sharp controversy between the English King and the States-General regarding their respective rights and claims in America—a controversy meriting special attention. The Dutch, in a carefully prepared deduction of their title, declared that after the North River was discovered in 1609 by subjects of their High Mightinesses, and visited by some of their citizens in 1610 and following years, a grant was made in 1615, to some of their subjects, of the trade to that country, and a small fort and garrison established there, which remained until the charter granted to the West India Company, which included these as well as other countries; that the grant of His Britannic Majesty to his subjects under the name of New England included the land between the forty-first and forty-fifth degrees; and the grant to Virginia included the country between the thirty-seventh and thirty-ninth degrees, leaving one hundred miles from one to the other, so that the Dutch limits should be from the thirty-ninth to the forty-first parallel, between which degrees it was not known the English had any designs, and which the subjects of their High Mightinesses obtained, partly by treaty with the proprietors of the soil, and partly by purchase.

This vindication of the company's rights was presented to Charles I., and a formal reply on the part of His Majesty was soon afterward made, in support of the British claims to the countries in North America of which the West India Company then had possession.

"The Dutch demand restitution" (say the Lords Commissioners of England) "of a certain ship seized at Plymouth on return from a certain plantation by them usurped, north of Virginia, which they allege they acquired from the natives of those countries. It is denied that the savages were possessed of those countries so as to be able to dispose of them, or that they were parties to the said pretended sale. And as regards the allegation that the natives have their abode round about them, the truth is, the English surround them on all sides, as they have very well discovered. But more than this; the rights belonging to his majesty's subjects in that country are justified by first discovery, occupation and possession, and by charters and letters patent obtained from our sovereigns, who, for these purposes, were the true and legitimate proprietors there, where the Lords, the States have not assumed to themselves such pretension, and have not granted any charter to their subjects, conveying in itself any title or power to them. Which was proved in the year 1621, when the late King directed his ambassador to urge upon their Lordships, the States-General, to prevent the departure of certain vessels which were preparing to proceed to the aforesaid country, and to forbid their subjects to settle in that plantation; for their answer was that they knew nothing of said enterprise. That any who will submit themselves to his majesty's government, as his majesty's subjects, may settle there; that if they do not consent, his majesty's interest will not permit him to allow them to usurp and encroach upon one of his colonies, which he has great cause to cherish and maintain in its integrity.

"By these replies to the aforesaid complaints, their Lordships, the States-General, will understand how little ground they have to enter on their neighbor's territory in defiance of any alienation thereof by his majesty."

The vessel was subsequently released; but her detention had accomplished the end the government had in view, which was to assert a title that undisputed possession might possibly impair.

The condition of New Netherland in the year 1638,[3] when Governor Kieft arrived, was but a step removed from its primitive state of wilderness. It was uninhabited save by a few traders and clerks, and, except for half a dozen farms around Fort Amsterdam and an equal number about Fort Orange, was wholly uncultivated. No towns or villages had been planted, and of the few settlers introduced by the company, the greater part had returned, leaving a few isolated traders in the solitary forts which served only as a rendezvous for lazy Indians. Had the Dutch filled the land with an energetic and determined race, seeking to build houses and churches and to found commonwealths, as the English were doing, they might have stemmed the tide of New England encroachment, which, a few years later, washed against the very shores of Manhattan Island. During the next year, 1639, there were considerable accessions to the number of actual settlers in New Amsterdam, but up to that time the history of New Netherland was merely the day journal of a trading company.

In 1640 the advance guard of New England

[1] Trumbull's Conn., 13.

[2] Trumbull, 14.

[3] 1 O'Callaghan, 177.

Digitized by Google

pioneers had pushed westward to Byram River, and soon organized a church and a township, and devoting themselves heartily to their agricultural and domestic duties, created happy homes, and laughed at Dutch claims not backed up by actual possession. The possibility of annoyance, both by land and sea, to the unguarded towns along the Sound, and the dread, on the part of the colonies of Connecticut and New Haven, of greater quarrels than they could singly manage, brought about the formation of the New England Confederacy in 1643, said by John Quincy Adams to have been "the model and prototype of the North American Confederacy of 1774." At the first meeting of the Commissioners of the United Colonists, in September, 1643, one of the most urgent items of business was to answer a letter from Governor Kieft desiring an explicit declaration of the policy to be pursued in relation to the Dutch claims in Connecticut. The opportunity was welcomed, and an answer drawn up asserting the justice of the English claims. By the time this answer reached Kieft, however, his rashness and the greed of the Dutch traders had brought on an Indian war, the violence of which left the Dutch neither time nor strength for other aggressive movements while the reins of government remained in Kieft's hands.

In May, 1647, Kieft was deposed and the government passed into the hands of Peter Stuyvesant, who soon found occasion for showing the spirit in which he proposed to administer his office. He secretly seized a ship from Holland trading in the harbor of New Haven, on the ground that the Dutch jurisdiction, by right of discovery, included New Haven within the limits of New Netherland, and therefore customs duties on the cargo should be paid to the Dutch Governor. This unexpected insult led to a voluminous correspondence, conducted on the part of Governor Eaton with such unanswerable reasoning as to compel Stuyvesant to deny any intentional wrong.

In 1650 an attempt was made by the English colonies and the Dutch to settle the boundary line between them. A conditional agreement[1] was entered into, subject to ratification by England and Holland, whereby the dividing line was to begin on the west side of Greenwich Bay[2] and run twenty miles into the country,—Greenwich to be under the government of the Dutch. This agreement, however, was never confirmed, and a subsequent declaration of war between the mother countries created a more hostile feeling between the Dutch and English on this side of the Atlantic, which continued until the conclusion of peace, in 1654.

Prior to this time, in 1642, a few families from Massachusetts, under the leadership of John Throckmorton, settled on Throgg's Neck, and that remarkable woman, Anne Hutchinson, with her family, settled on Hutchinson's River, in what is now Pelham. In 1643 the Hutchinson family was entirely swept away by the Indians in their retaliatory war with the Dutch, and a part only of Throckmorton's colony survived. These, with the exception of Thomas Cornell and the Mondys, all New England people, were the only persons who attempted settlements east of the Bronx River until 1654, when Thomas Pell, acting under special authority from Connecticut, purchased of the Indians the land which embraces the present town of Westchester, and obtained a grant of the territory[3] bearing date the 14th day of November.

In 1652[4] the West India Company had instructed Stuyvesant to engage the Indians in his cause against the New England colonies, but the friendship of the Narragansetts for the Puritans could not be shaken. "I am poor," said Mixam, one of the sachems, "but no presents of goods or of guns or of powder and shot shall draw me into a conspiracy against my friends, the English." In this year the Dutch ambassadors opened negotiations in London in reference to the American colonies and the settlement of the boundary question, but the English persistently claimed the territory from Virginia to Newfoundland; the consideration of the subject was deferred, and the opportunity to secure a ratification of the Hartford treaty of 1650 was forever lost.[5]

Again, in 1654,[6] the States-General, feeling that the encroaching disposition and superior numbers of the English rendered their North American possessions insecure, instructed their ambassadors at London to negotiate a boundary line. But this effort, like those which had preceded it, proved unsuccessful, and throughout the protectorate[7] England declared the Dutch to be intruders. During the next four years[8] a good understanding was maintained between the Dutch and their New England neighbors,—the Dutch, as the weaker party, being very careful not to give offense.

The situation was substantially unchanged, when, in April 1662, John Winthrop obtained from King Charles II. a charter for the colony of Connecticut,[9] confirming the whole of the country granted by Charles I. to the Earl of Warwick, and conferring many powers not included in former charters.[10] Winthrop, the new Governor of Connecticut, now gave notice to Director Stuyvesant that he must not trouble any of His Majesty's subjects within the limits of the new patent; Westchester (Orsdorp) was advised that it was included within the colony of Connecticut, and Stuyvesant, on the 15th of November, 1663,[11] wrote to Hartford, consenting that West-

[1] 2 O'Callaghan, 153.
[2] 2 O'Callaghan, 153.
[3] 2 Bolton, 263.
[4] 2 Bancroft, 295.
[5] 2 O'Callaghan, 202.
[6] 2 O'Callaghan, 277.
[7] 2 O'Callaghan, 342.
[8] 2 O'Callaghan, 402.
[9] 3 New Haven Hist. Soc. Papers, 441; Trumbull, 250.
[10] 2 O'Callaghan, 455.
[11] 2 O'Callaghan, 505.

Digitized by Google

chester be annexed to Connecticut. Thus, one after another, the Dutch abandoned every point their enemies assailed; the Connecticut River had been given up, and now Westchester and shortly afterward Long Island were relinquished.

On March 22, 1664,[1] Charles II. granted to his brother, the Duke of York, the whole of Long Island and all the country in the possession of the Dutch. To secure the conquest of the district in question, the

Duke of York organized an expedition to take possession of the country, and appointed Richard Nichols his Deputy Governor, with authority to establish and maintain his government and to settle boundaries. In the latter part of August[2] the ships carrying the Governor and his forces anchored near Fort Amsterdam; on the 29th Nichols sent to the fort a summons to surrender, and on Monday morning, September 8th, the Dutch marched out of the fort and the English marched in. Fort Amsterdam was named Fort James, New Netherland became New York, and a few days later Fort Orange, having also surrendered, received the name of Albany; and the Dutch sway in America was at an end.

On the 30th of the following November the boundary between New York and Connecticut was settled as follows: "We also order and declare that the Creek or River called Mamaroneck, which is reputed to be about twelve miles to the east of Westchester, and a line drawn from the East point or side where the fresh water falls into the salt at high-water mark, North-Northwest to the line of Massachusetts, be the Westward bounds of the said Colony of Connecticut, and all plantations lying Eastward of that Creek[3] and line to be under the government of Connecticut." This north-northwest line from the mouth of Mamaroneck River continued to be the eastern boundary of New York; and the White Plains were thereby included in the province of Connecticut.

Resuming the consideration of title, we find that the Indian deed to John Richbell, purported to convey three necks of land, and included most of the present town of Mamaroneck. The deed was as follows:

"I, Wompoquenum, together with my brother Mahatahan, being the right owners of three necks of land, lying and being bounded on the east side with Mamaroneck, and on the west side with stony river, which parts the said lands from Mr. Pell's purchase; now these are to certify to all and Everyone whom it may concern, that I, Wompoquenum, did by myself, and in behalf of my aforesaid brother Mahatahan, firmly bargain and sell to Mr. John Richbell, of Oyster Bay, to him and his heirs forever, the above-mentioned three necks of land, together with all other privileges thereunto belonging, six weeks before I sold it to Mr. Revell (Pell) and did mark out the bounds, and gave Mr. Richbell possession of said land, and did receive part of my pay in hand, as witness my hand.

"The mark O of Wompoquenum.

"Witness, Jacob Yough, Catharine Yough."[4]

From the time of Richbell's purchase down to October 16, 1668, he was engaged in a constant dispute with Thomas Pell in regard to the boundaries of their respective purchases. This difficulty having finally been settled, a patent of the last-mentioned date was issued by Governor Lovelace to Richbell, wherein the land granted is described as follows:

"Whereas there is a certain parcel or tract of land *within this government*, upon the main, contained in three necks, of which the Eastermost is bounded with a small river, called Mamaroneck river, being also the east bounds or limits of this government upon the main, and the westermost, with the gravelly or stoney brook or river, which makes the east limits of the land, known by the name of Mr. Pell's purchase. Having to the South the Sound and running northward from the marked trees upon the said neck, twenty miles into the woods, which said parcel of land, &c., &c."

It will be noticed that the Indians sold to John Richbell only three necks of land, their sale and conveyance not including the "twenty miles into the woods," which seems to have gotten into the Richbell patent without the pre-requisite of purchase from the original proprietors.

[1] 2 O'Callaghan, 516.
[2] 2 Bryant, 262.
[3] Boundaries of the State of New York, 25.
[4] Westchester Records A, page 238.

Google

However, the lands granted by this patent were "within this government" (New York), and the patent did not attempt to, and of course, could not convey lands in the colony of Connecticut, or beyond the boundary line which ran from the mouth of Mamaroneck River north-northwest.

By deed dated April 23, 1669, John Richbell conveyed to John Ryder, as trustee for Ann Richbell, his wife,—

"All that certain parcel or tract of land, where he now lives, called the East Neck, and to begin at the westward part thereof at a certain creek lying, being and adjacent, by and betwixt the neck of land commonly called the Great Neck and the East Neck, and so to run eastward as far as Mamaroneck river, including therein betwixt the two lines all the land as well north into the woods above Westchester path, twenty miles, as the land below the path, south and towards the river, &c." [1]

Next in order of time was the purchase of the White Plains from the Indian proprietors by the inhabitants of the town of Rye. The deed, set forth in full above, bears date November 22, 1684. That the purchase was followed by actual occupation is shown by the fact that Mr. Richbell, in a petition to Governor Dongan, dated March 12, 1683, prays the Governor "to grant an order to clear the same"—*i. e.* the White Plains. The inhabitants of Rye were accordingly summoned to show cause at the next Court of Assize in Westchester County "why the said lands do not of right belong to John Richbell." [2] It does not appear how the suit was determined; certainly not in favor of Richbell's claim, as the possession of the land by the Rye people seems from that time to have been uninterrupted and their right unquestioned.

By a deed dated December 23, 1697, acknowledged March 22, 1698, Ann Richbell, widow of John Richbell, conveys all her estate and rights in and to the East Neck and twenty miles north into the woods, to Caleb Heathcote, of Westchester.[3] This conveyance recites the deed from John Richbell to John Ryner in trust for Ann Richbell, above referred to. It is by virtue of these conveyances that Caleb Heathcote became seized of the lands embraced in his patent granted in 1702.

By the close of the year 1697 White Plains had already, in a measure, become settled; the street now known as Broadway was laid out, and home-lots upon it built upon. The east part of the house which lately stood north of the residence of W. R. Brown, Esq., was then standing, and occupied by Samuel Odell. [4]

On the 2d day of August 1699, the Indians of Mamaroneck presented a petition [5] to Governor Nanfan, setting forth that their nation had sold several parcels of land to John Pell, Esq., and to Mr. Richbell, deceased, for which they had never received the satisfaction promised them, although for these many years they had looked for the same; "but the said persons have and do refuse to satisfy your petitioners, and have more land than ever was sold to them," and praying that "John Pell and the heirs of Richbell may be ordered to satisfy your petitioners, and that they may have no more land than was ever sold unto them." What action, if any, was had upon this petition does not appear, and we hear no more of claims by the Indians.

Soon after this time Colonel Heathcote petitioned the Governor and Council, praying that the title to his lands might be confirmed, and the same erected into a manor, by the name of the Manor of Scarsdale; whereupon the Lieutenant Governor, Nanfan, and Council, directed a writ to issue to the high-sheriff of Westchester County, to inquire what damage such patent could be. The writ was issued, with a proviso, that it

"Shall not give the said Colonel Heathcote any further title than that which he already hath to the land called White Plains, which is in dispute between the said Caleb Heathcote and the inhabitants of the town of Rye. The sheriff returned that the 'jurors found there is no damage to the King or his subjects in erecting the manor aforesaid, except the White Plains, which are in dispute and contest between said Caleb Heathcote and the town of Rye, and excepting James Mott and the rest of the purchasers of Mamaroneck, which have land within the patent of Richbell.'"

After the return of this writ, and on the 21st of March, 1701, letters patent were issued; the lands of Colonel Heathcote were erected into the lordship and Manor of Scarsdale. The letters, however, contained an express provision that nothing therein contained "shall be construed, deemed or taken to give the said Colonel Heathcote any further title or jurisdiction within the said White Plains until the same shall happen to belong to the said Caleb Heathcote." [6]

Soon after this, Colonel Heathcote purchased of certain Indians their rights to the lands embraced in his patent. With this exception, he did nothing further to perfect his title to the White Plains; but he persistently refused the solicitations of the Rye people to relinquish his claims, and thereby remove the cloud upon the title to this coveted inheritance.

After long years of delay, Daniel Brundage and Joseph Hunt, on the 28th day of June 1721, presented a petition [7] to the Governor, praying for a warrant of survey of the White Plains, and a warrant was issued the same day. [8] No report of a survey having been made, the same parties, on the 7th day of December, 1721, petitioned for a new warrant of survey to embrace the whole of the White Plains upon which the following order was issued.:

"New York, Decr. ye 7th, 1721.—Ordered that a Warrant do issue to the Surveyor-General for surveying all lands ungranted by the Crown in and about the White Plains, and that he describe and ascertain the pretensions of Daniel Brundage and Samuel Hunt in and about the same.

[1] Westchester County Records A, page 258.
[2] Council Minutes V, page 47.
[3] Westchester County Records B, page 371.
[4] Westchester County Records F, pages 74 and 170.
[5] Council Minutes, Albany.
[6] Book of Patents, Albany, vol. vii. page 226.
[7] Land Papers, Albany, viii. page 44.
[8] Land Papers, Albany, viii. page 45.

Digitized by Google

The petitioners giving notice of the time of the said survey to all Patentees whose grants they are informed joyne to the said White Plains."

"W. BURNET."[1]

On the 21st day of December 2, 1721, Joseph Budd, John Hunt and sixteen others present their petition to the Governor, setting forth

"That by virtue of a license from the Government of Connecticut, they and those under whom they claim, did purchase from the Indians a tract of land called White Plains, the same at the time of the purchase being deemed and esteemed to lye within the Government of Connecticut, by virtue of which purchase your petitioners were, for a considerable time, in possession of the said land under the Government of Connecticut, and until said time as the same was found to be within the bounds of the Government of New York, since which time they have continued in possession of and made great improvements upon the same, and they being desirous to secure the same lands and their improvements thereon to themselves and their heirs under such interests, provisions and restrictions as to your Excellency and Council shall be thought fit; Therefore, humbly pray his Majesty's Letters Patent to them, their heirs and assigns, for the said tract of land, and that such methods may be ordered as your Excellency and Council shall think fit for ascertaining the limits and bounds of the said tract and of the several possessions of your petitioners. And your petitioners will ever pray, &c."

On this petition is indorsed,—

"The Petition of Joseph Budd, et al., being read ye 21st Decr., 1721 Is referred to the Gentl. of the Council or any five of them."[2]

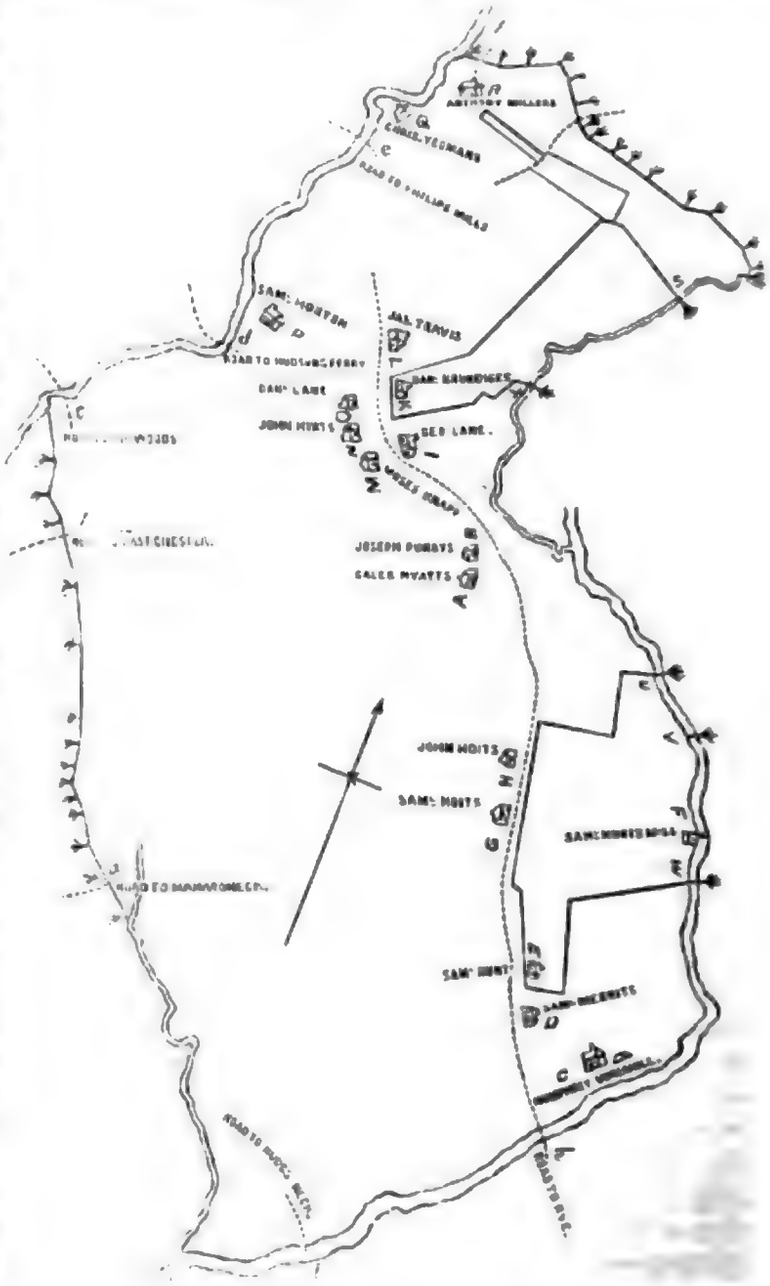
The same day the Council reported that they had considered the matter of the petition and directedthat a warrant should issue to the surveyor-general to survey the tract in question and make return thereof, with a map of the tract, and furthermore that all parties claiming any lands which are patented, adjoining thereto, should have notice of the survey, with the time and place of beginning the same.[3]

Before the issuing of this warrant a report[4] of survey, made by Robert Crooke, deputy surveyor, was filed (December 23, 1721), which is valuable as being more definite and specific in courses, distances and monuments than the Colden survey and report subsequently made under the last-mentioned order and incorporated into the patent.

No action appears to have been taken on this report of the Council, made December 21, 1721, until the 10th of January following, when a warrant was issued, reciting all the material statements in the petition, and directing the surveyor-general "to survey the said White Plains; and in his return thereof to ascertain and describe the particulars of the claims of the petitioners, with a map of the said tract, and that the said petitioners give timely notice of said survey to all patentees whos grants they are informed joyne to the said White Plains."

[1] Land Papers, Albany, viii. 89.
[2] Land Papers, Albany, viii. page 91.
[3] Land Papers, Albany, viii. page 91.
[4] Land Papers, Albany, viii. page 92.

This warrant was indorsed by Cadwallader Colden, surveyor-general to William Foster, deputy surveyor, who proceeded to execute it. He completed the survey and made his report, in which he first describes the land generally, as in the patent; afterward he bounds the tracts by streams, monuments, courses and distances. He also made a map of the White Plains, a copy of which is here shown.



MAP OF WHITE PLAINS IN 1721.[5]

EXPLANATION.

A–Caleb Hyatt's.
B–Joseph Purdy's.
C–Humphrey Underhill's.
D–Samuel Merrit's.
E–Samuel Hunt's.
F–Samuel Hunt's Mill.
G–Samuel Holt's.
H John Holt's.
I–George Lane's.
K–Daniel Brundige's.
L–James Travis's.
M–Moses Knapp's.
N–John Hyat's.
O–Daniel Lane's.
P–Samuel Horton's.
Q–Christopher Yeoman's.
R–Anthony Miller's.
S & T–Daniel Brundige's bound trees.
U–The beginning of Mr. Bridge' patent.
V–The bound tree between Umphrey Underhill and Samuel Hunt.

[5] Copy of a map of White Plains found in the office of the Secretary.

Digitized by Google

a–Road to Mamaroneck.
b–Road to East Chester.
c–Road up to the woods.
d–Road to Hudson's ferry.
e–Road to Phillips' mills.
f–Road to Bedford.
g–Road to California patent.
h–Road to Rye.
i–Road to Budd's Neck.

The report of William Foster,[1] and the interesting map made from his survey, were filed February 21, 1722. On the 24th of the same month the matter of the petitioners was brought before the Council for consideration, when the proceedings took place of which the following is a partial report:[2]

"At a Committee of the Council held at New York, Feb'y 24, 1721–2, Present,—

"Capt. Walters.	Mr. Harrison.
Coll. Beekman.	Mr. Colden.
Mr. Van Dam.	Mr. Lewis Morris, Jr.

"The Committee proceeded upon the Surveyor General's return of the claims of Joseph Budd & al. in the White Plains Purchase, Referred to them.

"The Committee unanimously chose Francis Harrison, Esq., their chairman.

"Resolved that all parties concerned be called in. Then all parties attending were heard as to their several claims. The parties withdrawing, the several papers relating to the affair were read."

The proceedings at this meeting related solely to the claims of Hunt and Brundage. The committee met again on February 26th,[3] when the Hunt and Brundage claims were passed upon and confirmed, as shown on the map. The following resolution was then adopted:

"*Resolved*, yt ye Remaining part of ye White Plains after the lands of Hunt and Brundage be laid out according to ye former Resolution, be granted to Joseph Budd, John Hoit, Caleb Hyat, Humphrey Underhill, Joseph Purdy, George Lane, Daniel Lane, Moses Knapp, John Horton, David Horton, Jonathan Lynch, Peter Hatfield, James Travis, Isaac Covert, Benjamin Brown, John Turner, David Ogden and William Yeomans, saving to all persons any Right wch they may have within the sd Tract of ye White Plains, founded upon ye title set forth in ye Petition of the above-named Persons Praying for a Patent of ye land now intended to be granted.

"*Resolved*, that the Quit Rent be conformable to his Maties Royal Instructions."

On the same day (February 26, 1722), the chairman, Francis Harrison, reported that the committee had considered the claims of all the parties concerned in the White Plains, and after setting forth the rights of Hunt and Brundage, recommended "That the remaining part of the White Plains, after the lands of Hunt and Brundage be laid out as before mentioned, be granted to Joseph Budd, John Hoit" and the others named in the above resolution, subject to the saving clause therein contained. The report is indorsed, "March ye 1st, 1721–2. Reported and approved of by the Council, J. S. Bolin, D. Cl. Coun."[4]

In compliance with this report, Cadwallader Colden, the surveyor-general, "laid out for Joseph Budd, John Hoit" and the others,

"A certain tract or parcel of land, situate, lying and being in the County of Westchester, and is commonly known by the name of White Plains. Beginning at a large White-oak tree, marked with several letters, where two brooks fall into the West branch of Mamaroneck river, and runs thence by marked trees to Brunxes River, near to the place where a small brook falls into the said River by a bunch of Alders, some of which are marked. Thence up the stream of Brunxes River to an oak-tree about seventeen chains, above Anthony Miller's fulling-mill. Thence by marked trees to a White-oak marked, near Long Meadow Brook. Thence down the stream of the said Brook to the land laid out for Daniel Brundage; thence along his line to the said Long Meadow Brook; thence down the stream of the said brook to the place where it falls into Mamaroneck River and down the stream of said River to the land granted to Christopher Bridge; then along his lines and the lines of the land laid out for Samuel Hunt to Mamaroneck River; then down the stream of the said River to the place where the West Branch falls into the said River, and then up the stream of the said West Branch to the place where it began, containing four thousand four hundred and thirty five acres, with all allowance for highways.

"Given under my hand, at New York, the tenth day of March, in the eighth year of his Majesty's Reign, Anno Dom. 1721.

"CADWALLADER COLDEN, *Sur. Genl.*"

On the 13th day of March, 1721–2, a royal patent was granted to Joseph Budd and the other persons named in the preceding resolutions and in the report of the surveyor-general, which letters patent recited the petition of Budd and his associates, and the proceedings subsequent thereto, and granted, ratified and confirmed unto the said petitioners,—(naming them), their heirs and assigns, "All that said tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being in the County of Westchester, which is commonly known by the name of the White Plains," and described as in the report of Cadwallader Colden, surveyor-general.[5]

For forty-five years the marks and monuments indicating the boundaries of the White Plains purchase had been carefully renewed and preserved.[6] For twenty years Colonel Heathcote had persistently refused the solicitations of the Rye people for an adjustment of the differences growing out of his unfounded claims. Now that Heathcote was dead, and his powerful influence with the Governor and Council no longer stood between the people and their rights, it only remained for them to submit to the excessive exactions of the Governor and Council before their territory should be finally confirmed to them. Three times were they compelled to make surveys of their goodly land,—three times required to notify the owners of adjoining lands that such surveys were about to be

of State at Albany, in vol. viii. of Land Papers, p. 124, and entitled "Return of a survey of the White Plains, Feb. 24, 1721–2. Also, survey for Hunt and Brundige and dated March foll. Read and referred to ye Gentl. of ye Council or any five of them."

The return, accompanying the map states that, "Pursuant to a warrant dated January 11th, 1721, endorsed to William Forster, Deputy Surveyor, he surveyed the Bounds of ye White Plains as they were shown to him by Joseph Budd, John Hoit, Umphrey Underhill, George Lane, Moses Knap and Caleb Hyatt, and they were as follows:

"Beginning at a large white oak tree marked with several letters, where two brooks falls into ye west branch of Momaroneck River; thence by marked trees to Brunxes river near to where a small brook falls into said river, by a bush of Alders, some of which are marked; thence up Brunxes river to an Ash tree about 17 chains above Anthony Miller's Fulling Mill, and thence by marked trees to a white oak near Long Meadow Brook; then down said Brook to where it falls into Momaroneck River, and then down said River to the place where ye west Branch falls into the river, and then up the said Branch to ye white oak where we began—Containing 5225 acres, after 5 per cent. deducted for Roads."

[1] Land Papers, Albany, viii. page 124.
[2] N. Y. Col. MSS., lxiv. page 29.
[3] N. Y. Col. MSS., lxiv. page 30.
[4] Land Papers, vol. viii. page 126.
[5] Book of Patents, Albany, vol. viii. page 450.
[6] Baird's Rye, 156.

Digitized by Google

made, and all to furnish pretexts for oppressive charges by the officers of the Governor's Council. But at length the royal patent was obtained and the long controversy was ended; the cloud that had so long hung, like an evil omen, over the title to the White Plains,—forever disappeared, and the sun of prosperity once more shone brightly on the land and its people. Many of the most enterprising citizens of Rye removed to White Plains, and at the present day some branches of nearly all the ancient families are more numerously represented in White Plains than in the parent settlement.

The patent was obtained for the benefit of all the owners of the White Plains lands, although but one-half of them were named as patentees; and in order to establish the rights of the other owners, the patentees executed a conveyance to Joseph Horton, Sr., Joseph Horton, Jr., John Travis, James Travis, Jr., Solomon Yeomans, John Hyat, Thomas Travis, Jonathan Purdy, Monmouth Hart, Abraham Smith, Robert Travis (son of Philip), Daniel Horton, Jonathan Horton (son of Jonathan Horton), Nathaniel Baylie, Caleb Horton, John Rockwell, Samuel Merritt and Still John Purdy, in which their rights were declared, and whereby the patentees quit-claimed "to the said grantees, their several and separate heirs and assigns forever, all such right, title, interest and demand as the said grantors, or any of them, have, by virtue of said patent, in or to the lands heretofore laid out to the said grantees, and the proportionate share of such lands as are yet undivided." This conveyance bears date January 18, 1722, and is recorded in Westchester County register's office, in Liber G of Deeds, page 393. It is from the parties to this instrument that all the titles to the White Plains lands are derived, and through them the chain of title to much of the real property in the town may be traced, link by link, from the aboriginal proprietors to the present owners.

At the time this patent was issued Broadway, with its home-lots, had long been established. The old house but lately torn down, north of Mr. William R. Brown's, was then owned and occupied by Daniel Brundage. It was erected prior to 1697 by Samuel Odell. George Lane—"gentleman"—removed from Rye to White Plains as early as 1714; his house was on what is now the Squire place, and his brother Daniel lived opposite, near the present residence of Elisha Horton, Esq.; Moses Knapp's house was on the road in front of the Mitchell homestead; James Travis occupied a house on what is now Mr. Tilford's place.

The old Jacob Purdy house, standing to-day on Spring Street, between Mott and Water Streets, was built by Samuel Horton, a son of Joseph Horton, and grandson of Barnabas Horton, the first of that name in this country, who settled in Southold, Long Island, about 1640.

On the rising ground east of the residence of Mr. Onderdonk, on North Street, was the house of Joseph Purdy, and a few rods further east was the house of Caleb Hyatt, both prominent in the early history of the town. Caleb Hyatt, with his brother John, removed from Rye to White Plains about 1715. John Hyatt's house stood near the present residence of Mr. Charles Horton.

Humphrey Underhill's house was on the west side of Mamaroneck River, some distance north of the North Street road; his was one of the first houses erected in White Plains, probably before 1694, as in October of that year Mrs. Ann Richbell procured a warrant from the Governor to survey the easternmost bounds of her lands. The surveyor, Augustine Graham, proceeded along the west bank of Mamaroneck River until he came to the "*improved* land claimed by Humphrey Underhill, where the said Underhill, with three others, with guns, stones and staves did obstruct the execution of his Excellency's warrant." Mr. Underhill was a man of high standing in the estimation of his townsmen, and Dr. Baird supposes he was a son of the famous Captain John Underhill.

On the hill west of Humphrey Underhill, and near the road, stood the house of Samuel Merritt; about a quarter of a mile north of Merritt's, and near the present residence of Mr. Seymour, was the house of the patentee Samuel Hunt; he had a tract of three hundred and eighty acres, and a mill on Mamaroneck River, easterly from his house. Northerly, on the same North Street road, were the residences of John and Samuel Hoit, active men in town affairs, who in 1726–27 were leaders in building the Presbyterian Church.

On the north side of the road crossing Bronx River, near Mr. Champanois' residence, was the house of Christopher Yeomans; Anthony Miller lived where the Misses Tompkins' house stands, north of the cemetery, and his fulling-mill was on the brook, south of the house. These were all the houses in White Plains at the date of the patent, and all the occupants were men of sufficient education to read and write.

So rapidly did the population increase, that, in 1725, the inhabitants assumed an independent organization, elected officers and proceeded to manage their own affairs. Some of the good people had held office in Rye before removing to White Plains, and official positions, either civil or military, were regarded, in those days, as posts of honor to which all good citizens should aspire. The first in importance and most lasting in tenure was the position of clerk; and for fifty consecutive years the duties connected with that office were discharged by Caleb Hyatt.

In 1726 the Rev. John Walton, a graduate of Yale College, and a lay preacher, purchased a farm which was bounded on the north by the road to Dobbs Ferry, which ran a few feet north of the present Presbyterian Church, and on the south by land then of Jonathan Lane, now of Elisha Horton, and the

Digitized by Google

"RIDGELAWN."
RESIDENCE OF L. V. SONE,
WHITE PLAINS, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

south side of Railroad Avenue. Mr. Walton was a man of great activity. On the Sabbath he preached; during the rest of the week he devoted himself with energy to the carrying on of divers secular enterprises. He donated the land where the Presbyterian Church now stands; and it was mainly through his efforts that a church was erected there in 1727.

The houses of the first settlers were small, and of but a single story. The furniture was scant and simple; each room, even the kitchen, contained a bed; a cupboard held the household dishes, which were mostly wooden; a few only, of pewter, were kept and handed down as heirlooms from generation to generation. Several wooden chests did double duty as receptacles of the family bedding and clothing, and as chairs, which, if not remarkably comfortable, were at least solid and substantial; these, with a rude bench or stool, constituted the furniture of an ordinary farm-house. Carpets there were none, even on the spare room; but excellent feather-beds and pillows, the pride of every good housewife, were never wanting. A great fire-place, ten or twelve feet wide and three or four feet deep, formed one side of every kitchen, which was also the sitting-room of the family. In the best room the family Bible was carefully kept and daily used. The clothing was no less simple and durable than the furnishing; all linen and woolen clothing was home-made, spun and woven in the house; garments of leather, made chiefly from the skin of the bear or other wild animal, were in common use.

The life of the settlers was one of constant toil the father, with his stalwart sons, cleared the forest and tilled the virgin soil, while the busy wife and daughters, in addition to the daily cares of the household, spun the yarn and made the garments for the family. Little or no money was to be found anywhere; those articles which their own industry and skill did not supply were obtained by barter, chiefly of cattle and wood.

One of the first acts of this little community was to build a school-house. When it was raised and where it stood are interesting questions to which the utmost research does not vouchsafe answers. At any rate, it had grown old or dilapidated in 1737–8; for at a meeting of freeholders held in that year it was resolved that "the public pound should be where the old school-house stood." The new school-house was built on the highway, at the northwest corner of the Squire place, and remained there nearly a century.

It was a fundamental law of the New Haven jurisdiction "that the sonnes of all the inhabitants shall "be learned to write a ledgible hand as soone as they "are capable of it." And when, in 1664, the New Haven colony came under the jurisdiction of Connecticut, the law still read much the same,—

"The Select men of every town and precinct where they dwell, shall have a vigilant eye over their brethren and neighbors, to see, first, that none of them shall suffer so much barbarism in any of their families as not to endeavor to teach, by themselves or others, their children and apprentices to read the English tongue, under penalty of twenty shillings for each neglect therein."

It was under the influence of such wholesome laws that the founders of White Plains erected the first school-house in which their children were to be educated; and it is but justice to this intelligent people to say, that the public records prove that, with very few exceptions, the proprietors of White Plains could both read and write. And yet it is of these people Colonel Heathcote wrote, from Scarsdale, under date of November 9, 1705,—

"I dare aver that there is not a much greater necessity of having the Christian religion preached any where than amongst them; many, if not the greater number of them, being a little better than in a state of heathenism."[1]

At another time (1704) he writes,—

"When I first came among them (1692) I found it (Westchester) the most heathenish county I ever saw in my whole life which called themselves Christian, there being not so much as the least marks or footsteps of religion of any sort, Sundays being the only time set apart by them for all manner of vain sports and lewd diversions."

The Rev. Mr. Pritcher also, who, by the warrant of that imbecile aristocrat, Governor Cornbury, had been put in possession of the dissenting church property in Rye, writes, in 1704,—

"I must not omit to inform you that his Excellency, my Lord Cornbury, is pleased to show an unparalleled zeal for the carrying on of that great and glorious design of propagating the faith and settling the Church as well in this as in others of His Majesty's plantations, thereby rescuing them from the grossest ignorance, stupidity and obstinacy, and therein righting them in those damnable and dangerous tenets which have been imbued and instilled into their poor, unwary, deluded souls by blind, ignorant and illiterate guides."

It may not be significant, but it is certainly worthy of note, that in the large volume of these letters, laboriously collected by Mr. Bolton, we find so much mention of propagating "the faith," and "the Church," and so little of propagating the Gospel,—so frequent requests for prayer-books and catechisms, and so very few for Bibles.

These reproachful accusations should have been allowed to sleep in oblivion, but when we read in an historical discourse in our day, that it was "this moral condition of things which led to the passage, on the 24th of March, 1673, of the act entitled, 'An Act for settling a Ministry and raising a maintenance for them, in the city of New York, counties of Westchester, Richmond and Queens,'" a brief statement of the facts, in relation to the passage of this law and its subsequent enforcement, seems proper.

A few months previous to the passage of this act there arrived in New York Benjamin Fletcher, with a commission as Governor (recalled in 1698 to answer numerous charges of mal-administration), and Caleb Heathcote. The Governor came with special instructions to introduce the Book of Common Prayer among the Presbyterians, Huguenots and Dutchmen,

[1] Bolton's "Church History," 158.

Digitized by Google

where, perhaps, James II. would have been glad to have introduced a Mass-Book.[1] Governor Fletcher proposed to the Assembly "that provision be made by law for the settlement and support of an able ministry," but the majority of the Assembly were Dissenters and not inclined to aid him in his schemes.

At the next following session of the Assembly the Speaker, Mr. James Graham, who had the drawing of all their bills, so managed the title and induction of this one, that, although it did not do very well for the Dissenters, yet it did not appear to make any concessions to the Church, and the honest, simple-minded Dissenters, not suspecting the fraud and trickery of the Governor, passed the bill as above entitled. As Colonel Lewis Morris wrote, in a letter to the Propagation Society, "It was the most that could be got at the time, for had more been attempted, the Assembly had seen through the artifice, and all had been lost."

The bill having become a law, the Governor insisted that there was no ministry but of the Church of England, and declared that under this act, all lands in towns, that had been set aside for ministers' parsonages or for meeting-houses, became vested in the English ministry.[2]

Colonel Morris relates a conversation which he heard between the Governor and a dissenting minister at the time this act of the Assembly was talked of. The minister said "that the intention of the Legislature was to raise a maintenance for a dissenting minister, all the Assembly but one being Dissenters, and knowing nothing of the church, and *that* being the intention of the law-makers, was the meaning of the law, and he hoped the Dissenters might enjoy what was so justly their due, or at least not be deprived of it without due course of law." I told him the Legislature did not consist of the Assembly only, but of the Governor and Council joined with them; and I believed it was most certain the Governor never intended to settle a dissenting clergy.[3]

In the spring of 1695, the Assembly, in explanation of the act, declared that churches have power to call a dissenting Protestant minister, and that he be maintained as the act directs; but the Governor rejected this interpolation of the Assembly, and decided that the act applied solely to the Episcopal ministry.[4]

Governor Fletcher was so occupied with schemes for money-making that he neglected the affairs of the church, and in 1698 he was recalled to answer for his misconduct. Fletcher's successor was the kindlier Earl of Bellamont, an Irish peer, with a sound heart and honorable sympathies for popular freedom; his death, however, interrupted the short period of harmony in the colony.[5]

Bellamont was succeeded in 1702 by Lord Cornbury, a disreputable cousin of Queen Anne, who only escaped jail by quitting the kingdom. Cornbury was as zealous in behalf of the church as he was destitute of any sense of public or private virtue. His zeal was not for religion, but for the established Church of England. To him a Dissenter was intolerable, unworthy of mercy or even of justice. The act of 1693 had not been oppressively enforced against the Rye people until after the arrival of Lord Cornbury; but now, with a willing, nay even anxious, Governor, Colonel Heathcote could revenge himself upon this people for thwarting him in his attempt to include the White Plains within his patent.[6] He had been ten years in this country, and the dissenting clergy of Rye had not been interfered with; it was not until after 1701 that he declares that "these people are heathenish Sabbath-breakers and without religion of any sort."

Rye submitted quietly to these exactions for the support of the English clergy, but the White Plains people refused to pay, and only did so when threatened with being sold out or imprisoned under execution. This forced tax upon the slender means of the dissenters continued until the War of the Revolution; and a history that ignored the religious element in that war, or placed a low estimate upon the moral forces that stood behind and sustained the opposing parties in that great struggle, would be false and worthless.

The year 1729 brought with it an important acquisition to the wealth of the White Plains in the arrival of Moses Owen, who purchased the farm then lately owned by the Rev. Edmund Ward, embracing all the land between Railroad Avenue and Spring Street west of Broadway, excepting the church grounds. The new-comer was soon honored with the office of "Pounder," and for more than thirty years he held various positions in the town. He built the house afterwards occupied by William Barker for more than half a century prior to his death. This house is still standing, in good condition, on Spring Street, near the old Purdy house. The Owen farm passed by will to Moses Owen, Jr., who covered it with mortgages, under which it was divided into two parcels and afterwards sold.

From 1730 to 1740 the leaders in White Plains affairs were Caleb Hyatt, Sr., Caleb Hyatt, Jr., Francis Purdy, Moses Owen, Gabriel Lynch, James Gedney, Daniel Knapp, George Merritt, John Turner, Jacob Griffin, Samuel Hunt, Daniel Cornell, Robert Travis, Jonathan Purdy, Daniel Horton and George Lane.

From 1740 to 1750 some of these names disappear from the records of the annual meetings, and new names take their places and become prominent. Such are Peter Hatfield, William Anderson, John Hosier, Joshua Hatfield, Abraham Hatfield, Benjamin Knapp, Elisha Hyatt, Henry Purdy, Samuel Thorn, Nehemiah Tompkins, John Ray and Bartholomew Gedney.

[1] 3 Bryant, 26.

[2] "Doc. History of New York," vol. iii. page 245; Bolton's "Church History," xvi.

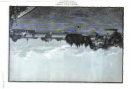
[3] Bolton's "Church History," xvii.

[4] Bolton's "Church History," xvii.

[5] Bryant 31.

[6] Patent, 1701.

Digitized by Google



"ROCKY DELL FARM."
RESIDENCE OF J. REYNAL,
WHITE PLAINS, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

The freeholders were careful to keep a record of the bounds and limits of the lands of each owner, and two of the citizens best qualified for that purpose were appointed to prepare such a record. In 1751 the first record had become worn and torn, and Caleb Hyatt was allowed twelve shillings for copying it in a new book.

In the last year of this decade there came to the town from Woodbury, in Connecticut, Dr. Robert Graham, a young physician of genius and enterprise, son of the Rev. John Graham, a Scotch clergyman, who was himself the son of one of the Marquises of Montrose. Dr. Graham, in 1749, purchased the farm on which Mr. Samuel Faile now lives. He at once became interested in the welfare of the town, and for more than thirty years was the ruling spirit in all matters of public interest. His energy, enterprise and learning, inspiring the people with new vigor, soon raised White Plains to prominence in the county.

In the records of proceedings at the annual meetings for the next ten years we find some newnames, among them that of Isaac Oakley, from Westchester, who, in 1746, purchased the farm now known as the Asylum Farm. Another was Monmouth Hart, a son of Monmouth Hart, of Rye Neck, whose farm was east of the present residence of Bartholomew Gedney. He was a great-grandson of Edward Hart, one of the early settlers of Flushing, Long Island (then called by the Dutch "Vissengen"). Edward Hart, whom Governor Stuyvesant arrested and imprisoned as the author of a spirited remonstrance against an order of Stuyvesant, which required the people of Vissengen to cease giving countenance to the Quakers. It was about the same time that John Fisher, the first of that family, settled in White Plains, on the south side of the road leading east out of Broadway, near the cemetery; he died in 1771. Another name that appears prominently about this time was that of Joseph Lyon, who lived in North Street; his ancestors early came to Rye from Stamford.

It was chiefly through the efforts of Dr. Robert Graham that the court-house was built in White Plains, and the courts removed thither from Westchester. He gave to the county the land upon which the court-house was erected, by deed to John Thomas, of Harrison, then a member of the Colonial Assembly, through whose assistance in that body the change from Westchester was effected. White Plains then soon became a business centre. Two hotels for the accommodation of guests and travelers were opened, and the first country store was built and stocked by Doctor Graham. This store stood opposite the court-house, and here the people, for more than half a century, gathered to discuss politics and to sell their surplus produce.

The old French War, which terminated in 1760, had drawn heavily on the town of Rye, both for men and money. A list of twenty-four names is given by Dr. Baird in his "History of the Town of Rye" (p. 213), many of them members of families then living in White Plains, and most of them young men under thirty years of age: as for example, Ezekiel Brundage, aged twenty-seven; Joseph Merritt, twenty-four; Abraham Lyon, twenty-two; Joseph Merritt, twenty-three; Ezekiel Merritt, twenty-three; Samuel Lane, twenty-two; John Lounsbury, twenty; Val. Lounsbury, twenty-one; John Budd, twenty-seven; Abraham Haight, seventeen; Reuben Lane, sixteen; Nathaniel Haight, seventeen; Caleb Sherwood, nineteen; Joseph Haight, twenty; Elisha Merritt, eighteen; Peter Merritt, nineteen. For many years the stories of that French and Indian War furnished entertainment for many households, as they spent the long winter evenings gathered about the great open fire-places. This war brought with it a heavy debt, the payment of which, while it severely taxed the resources of the people, proved valuable as teaching them how great was their strength in emergencies, a knowledge that was of inestimable benefit to them in the conflict with the mother country that soon followed. The mother country, also seeing, from the payment of this debt, that the colonists were capable of meeting such heavy liabilities, was led to impose the burdens from which her colonies revolted.

We now approach the time of that conflict of principles which preceded and produced the Revolution. In twelve of the thirteen colonies it was a contest for the maintenance of chartered rights and privileges; the other colony, New York, was a conquered province, over which the King might exercise such authority as he thought fit, and the conflict in that colony was for the rights of its people as Englishmen. And it seems to be a well-established fact that New York was the first of the colonies to point to freedom and independence in tones distinct and clear.

The uprising in 1764—call it mob, if you will—against the impressing of four fishermen, and the gathering of the people as one man on the 1st day of November, 1765, in opposition to the stamps, which are often spoken of as the first steps toward revolution, were long antedated by a religious controversy which was certainly not without its influence in preparing the people for the great events soon to follow. Leading Presbyterians had formed an association bearing the name of the "Whig Club," in organized opposition to the Church of England and the English government.

In the year 1719 Thomas Smith, with three other Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, purchased a piece of land on Wall Street, upon which to erect a church edifice. They subsequently applied for a charter of incorporation, to secure to them their estate for religious worship, but were defeated by the violent opposition of the Church of England. After years of unsuccessful solicitation, the land was finally conveyed to the moderator of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, upon which the Church of Scotland de-

gitized by Google

clared that the property was held for the purposes for which it was originally purchased and designed.

The opposition of the Church of England, instead of crushing out the Presbyterians, stimulated them to increased efforts, and developed a force that eventually drove English sway from the country. Much that is entertaining and instructive in regard to these men and their followers may be found in the "The Sons of Liberty in New York," by Henry B. Dawson, Esq., a book that should be in every district school library, instead of being a rare volume found only in our best libraries. These Presbyterian Sons of Liberty were William Smith, Sr., William Smith, Jr., William Livingston, John Morin Scott and others. Of this conflict there was an interested witness in White Plains, for the Rev. John Smith, of that town, was a brother to the one and an uncle to the other of the Smiths. It is of these Presbyterians that a learned historian has said: "The first voice publicly raised in America to dissolve all connection with Great Britain came, not from the Puritans of New England, or the Dutch of New York, or the planters of Virginia, but from the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians."[1]

The central location of White Plains, with its court-house, made it a convenient place for public assemblages of the people; and the Revolutionary events connected with this town will ever retain a prominent place in American history. The conflict seemed rapidly approaching in 1774, and soon entered into and divided the family circle. A marked instance of this is found in the family of Jonathan P. Horton, who was himself a determined Loyalist, while some of his sons were among the most active Whigs who fought in the vicinity of the "Neutral Ground."[2] In striking contrast to this is the following notice, taken from *Rivington's Gazette* of April 20, 1775, of a marriage in a more united family: "March 28. This evening was married, at the White Plains, Westchester County, Mr. Gabriel Purdy, youngest son of Mr. Samuel Purdy, to the agreeable Miss Charity Purdy, daughter of Mr. Joseph Purdy, both of that loyal town. What particularly is remarkable in the affair is this, the guests consisted of forty-seven persons, thirty-seven of whom were Purdys, and not a single Whig among them."

This day (March 28, 1775) was a memorable one in the history not only of White Plains, but of Westchester County. Public notice had been given of a meeting of persons from different districts of the county to consider the most proper method of taking the sense of the freeholders of the county upon the expediency of choosing deputies to meet the deputies from other counties for the purpose of electing delegates to represent this colony in the General Congress to be held in Philadelphia on the 10th day of May then next. At this meeting it was recommended that a convention be held at White Plains on the 11th day of April then next, at ten o'clock in the forenoon, at the court-house. On the day appointed, a numerous body of freeholders of the county assembled at the court-house, chose Lewis Morris for their chairman, and appointed eight persons, or a majority of them, to act as the deputies of this county for the purpose aforesaid.

A few days after this meeting, a protest, bearing date the 13th of April, 1775, signed with over three hundred names, appeared in *Rivington's New York Gazette*, in which it was stated that on the 11th of April the friends of government met at the house of Captain Hatfield, and at about twelve o'clock walked to the court-house, where they found the other company collected in a body; that the friends of the government then declared that they had been called together for an unlawful purpose, and they would not contest the matter with the others by a poll, but that they came only with a design to protest against all such disorderly proceedings, and to show their detestation of all unlawful Committees and Congresses; that then, giving three huzzas, they returned to Captain Hatfield's, singing as they went, "God save great George, our King;" after which, the following protest was drawn up and signed:

"We, the subscribers, freeholders and inhabitants of the County of Westchester, having assembled at White Plains in consequence of certain advertisements, do now declare our honest abhorence of all unlawful Congresses and Committees, and that we are determined, at the hazard of our lives and properties, to support the King and constitution, and that we acknowledge no representatives but the General Assembly, to whose wisdom we submit the guardianship of our rights and privileges."

The following names appended to this declaration show that the Tory faction of White Plains was well represented: "J. P. Horton, Daniel Oakley, William Davis, Wm. Anderson, Captain Abraham Hatfield, Gilbert Horton, Joshua Gedney, John Hyatt, Nehemiah Tompkins, Bartholomew Gedney, Isaac Purdy, Elijah Purdy, Gilbert Hatfield, Gabriel Purdy, Thos. Merritt, John Gedney, Monmouth Hart, Timothy Purdy, Thomas Barker, Elijah Miller, William Barker, Jr., Samuel Purdy, James Kniffin, Joseph Hart," etc.

On the 8th day of May, 1775, a meeting of the freeholders of Westchester County was held in White Plains, and Gouverneur Morris, Lewis Graham, James Van Cortlandt, Stephen Ward, Robert Graham, Daniel Dayton, John Holmes, Jr., and Wm. Paulding were chosen delegates from this county to the Provincial Convention of the Province of New York.

Enlistments for the army immediately commenced, and Ambrose Horton reported fifty-six able-bodied men, July 26, 1775. The commissions for the officers, —Isaac Hatfield, captain; James Varian, first lieutenant; Anthony Miller, second lieutenant; and John Falconer, ensign—were issued September 13, 1775.

[1] 5 Bancroft, 77.

[2] Sabine's "Loyalists," ii. page 532.

On the 14th of February 1776, minute-men to the number of nineteen, among whom were Benjamin Lyon, Stephen Sheley, Micah Townsend, James Varian, Samuel Crawford, Isaac Oakley, James Brundage and Robert Graham, met at White Plains for the purpose of electing officers, and made choice of James Varian for captain, Samuel Crawford for first lieutenant and Isaac Oakley for second lieutenant.

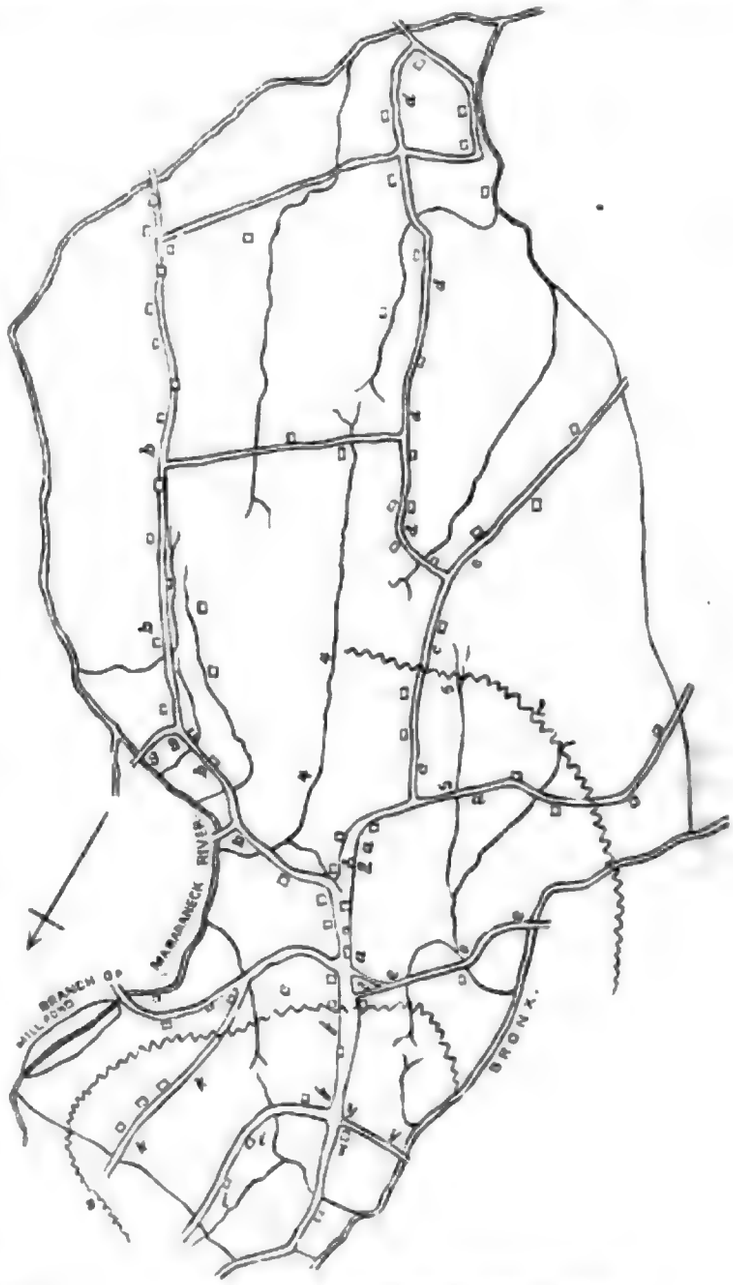
The Provincial Congress of this State, which had been in session in New York, adjourned on the 30th of June, 1776, to the court-house in White Plains; and on the 9th of July, while assembled here, the Declaration of Independence was received and read in front of the court-house by John Thomas, Esq.

The battle of White Plains occurred on the 28th of October following. The details of that battle, and of the subsequent burning of the Court-house and the principal dwellings in the village, form part of a chapter which appears elsewhere in this work, written by a masterly hand, and will not be attempted here.

General Howe's retreat from White Plains was mysterious and unaccountable; commanding a magnificent army of veterans, splendidly equipped and flushed with success, why should he retreat? The question was discussed by Washington and his council of officers without arriving at any satisfactory answer.

When Howe returned to England his conduct here was investigated by a committee of Parliament, but he refused to explain further than to say that he "had political reasons." The question remained unanswered until the publication, in 1879, by that laborious historian, Edward F. de Lancey, of "The History of New York during the Revolutionary War, by Thomas Jones," in which it appears that one William Demont, the adjutant of Colonel Magaw, the commander of Fort Washington, on New York Island, on the 2d day of November, 1776, passed undiscovered out of the fort and into the camp of Lord Percy, at Harlem, carrying with him plans of Fort Washington and full information as to the garrison, and placed them in the hands of the British officer. Percy, of course, sent the information to Lord Howe at White Plains; the latter suddenly changed his plan of attacking Washington, and on the 4th of November prepared to march to Fort Washington, which he captured on the 16th of that month.

Within five months after the formal declaration of our independence the last vestige of the American army had been driven from the island of New York, and that place remained in possession of the British until the close of the war. During the war the British lines extended a few miles into Westchester County. The lines of the American army first stretched across the county at White Plains, and gradually receded to the Croton River. That portion of the county between the two armies was then, and ever since has been, known as the "Neutral Ground." This portion of Westchester County was the battle-ground of the disaffected, the prey of both friend and foe; scenes of cruelty and bloodshed unknown in civilized warfare marked these partisan engagements, and in defense of their homes, some of her valiant sons exhibited instances of personal bravery



MAP OF WHITE PLAINS IN 1776.[1]

EXPLANATION.

aa-Stage road from Bennington to New York.
bb-Road to Rye town.
cc-Road to town of Mamaroneck.
dd-Road to landing called Rye Neck.
ee-Road to Dobbs Ferry across the North river.
ff-Called the White Plains street.
gg-Road to town of Harrison.
hh-Road to town of Greenburgh.

[1] The following indorsement is on the original of this map at Albany.

Digitized by Google

ii kk–Roads for private uses.
1. Meeting-house of Methodist Society.
2. Court-house.
3. Property of Presbyterian Society.
4. Cassaway Brook.
5. Golden Pine Brook.
6. American Encampment in 1776.
7. British Encampment in 1776.

unsurpassed in ancient or modern times. Others, attaching themselves to the British side, were known as "Cowboys," and were engaged in plundering the people between the lines, of their cattle and other property. Others again, were known as "Skinners," and professing allegiance to the American side, lived chiefly within the patriot lines. Both of them, Cowboys and Skinners, were treacherous, rapacious and cruel. No region in the United States was so harassed and trampled down as this *debatable ground*. Hostile armies marched and countermarched over it, and its ruined condition eloquently portrayed the horrid desolation of war. In almost every family of the old residents there linger traditions that vividly illustrate the perils, torture and trials of that gloomy period.

THE MILLER HOUSE.
Washington's Headquarters, White Plains.

The distress and suffering of the people, however, was not all inflicted by the "Cowboys" and "Skinners;" the soldiers of the regular army were also guilty of plundering the inhabitants in the neighborhood of the camp. When Colonel Aaron Burr assumed command of the forces at White Plains, in the autumn of 1778, he established strict discipline within and security without the camp. Soon after his arrival, some soldiers had made their tent more comfortable by beds and bedding taken from the house of Isaac Gedney, a Tory; the circumstance being brought to the notice of Burr, he commanded them to return every article to its owner.

During the summer of 1781 the French army encamped in Greenburgh and White Plains; the left wing, composed of Lauzun's Legion, covered Chatterton's Hill and the White Plains. The headquarters of Lauzun, the commanding officer, were in the Falconer house, which stood on the corner of Broadway and Lake Street, in front of Mr. Slosson's residence; the house is now standing next south of Mr. Hand's beautiful home. Lauzun was celebrated for the elegance of his person and manners; he was a general favorite and one of the bravest of men. Like many other officers in the allied army, he afterwards became engaged in the French Revolution, and perished under the guillotine.

At the close of the war business of all kinds, which had been long abandoned, was resumed; a new court-house was built, and White Plains, by an act of the Legislature, became an independent town. With but few exceptions, new men became leaders in town affairs. In 1788 John Barker purchased the Owen farm, which extended on the west side of Broadway from the Presbyterian Church to Railroad Avenue, and in 1796–97 he represented the county in the Assembly. In 1799 Dr. Archibald McDonald moved into the town, having purchased the property on the corner of Broadway and Spring Street; and for many years thereafter the sons of John Barker and of Archibald McDonald were active in town and county politics.

Richard Hatfield, a native of the town, was for many years the foremost man in every enterprise, whether it was organizing and incorporating a church or presiding at a town-meeting.

About 1795 Edward Thomas, a lawyer, located in town, on the Squire place; he was appointed surrogate, but died in 1806. In that year Minott Mitchell, a young lawyer from Connecticut, settled in White Plains, and for half a century was active in every project to benefit the town and county. For a quarter of a century he was town clerk, and during that time the town was at no expense for his official or legal services.

For more than twenty years after the war the village hotel was opposite the court-house, and was kept by Dr. Graham; he also had a store a rod or two south of the hotel. Both hotel and store passed into the possession of Stephen Barker, who continued them

---

N. Y.: "The northern part composed of rocks, stones, hills and valleys; the southern part the hills are less frequent but more flat and extensive; the surface much broken, with large bodies of solid rock rising a little above the earth and running nearly parallel to it; the side of which is cold, wet and heavy; the whole much worn and exhausted, and overrun with two species of pernicious and prolific weeds, very unfavorable to the interests of the proprietors."

until 1812. In that year he conveyed them to Hyatt Lyon, who retained them but two or three years, when he sold them to Richard Willis. There were then other hotels,—one kept by William Baldwin, in the house now occupied by Mr. Samuel C. Miller; another kept by Isaac Valentine, on the grounds of the present house of Captain Lyon; and the fourth a few rods west from the southeast corner of the Waller place, kept before the Revolution by Abraham Hatfield, and during the war, and for years afterwards, by his son, Joseph Hatfield, and subsequently, down to 1830, by Alexander Fowler. Prior to 1825 most of the traveling was done by private conveyance, and taverns were more necessary then than now. The farmers' light produce was carried to New York weekly by two market-wagons, while the heavy was carried to the rivers and sent by sloops.

WESTCHESTER COUNTY COURT-HOUSE, WHITE PLAINS, 1886.

In 1828 a number of gentlemen in White Plains, desirous that there should be a school in which their sons might be educated and fitted for college, applied to the Legislature and procured the charter for an academy, which was for many years successfully conducted.

Fifty years ago there were no roads running westerly from Broadway, between the old post road running past the residence of Mr. Samuel Faile and the road to Tarrytown, north of the Presbyterian Church. The business part of the town was on the west side of Broadway, north of the old court-house and south of Railroad Avenue. Opposite the court-house was the principal hotel, at which the daily mail stages met at noon, carrying mails and passengers between New York and Danbury. A little north of the court-house was the law-office of Minott Mitchell, and a few rods northwest from his office was his residence, erected in 1829–30. On the lot on which Mr. Elijah S. Tompkins now resides was the shop and the dwelling-house of Elisha Crawford, saddler and harness-maker, while next-door the dwelling now occupied by Samuel C. Miller was then the hotel of Robert Palmer, and about fifty feet north was the store of Palmer & Fisher. Between the hotel and the store was a building, a part of which was occupied by Purdy Tompkins, the village tailor, the other part being the law-office of Robert S. Hart, Esq., a young gentleman then lately admitted to the bar. He soon after removed to Bedford, where his clients chiefly resided. He was appointed first judge of the Court of Common Pleas in 1846, and was also appointed a master in Chancery.

In a long one-story building, adjoining the store of Palmer & Fisher, were the shoe-shop of Israel Purdy, the post-office, the publishing office of the *Westchester Spy* and the drug-store of Samuel G. Arnold. The next building was the law-office of Joseph Warren Tompkins, Esq., one of the leading lawyers of the county and a skillful advocate. Adjoining was the lot and house of William Horton, the same now owned by Mr. Merwin Sniffin; on the next lot north was the store and residence of Elisha Horton, afterwards county treasurer of the county, and the next building on the north was the residence of Schuyler C. Tompkins, the same in appearance now as then. On the corner of the lot, with its front on Broadway, was the hat-store and factory of Schuyler C. Tompkins, the village hatter, and a few feet farther on was the store of Purdy & Fisher (Charles A. Purdy and Nathaniel Fisher). From this store the Red Bird stage started early every morning, excepting Sunday, for New York City. On the adjoining lot the village undertaker, David Miller, with a kind and sympathetic nature, conducted his business.

At this time there were two physicians in the town, Dr. David Palmer and Dr. Livingston Roe. The former resided on the Squire place and the latter on

the place now occupied by the Misses Miller, in the southern part of Broadway.

South of the court-house was the county clerk's office, and in the house now occupied by Mrs. Prime was the hotel of Benjamin Briggs.

Subsequently two streets were opened, one called the New Post Road, the other Railroad Avenue. The extension of the Harlem Railroad to White Plains, in 1846, attracted the business to Railroad Avenue, which is now lined with stores, offices and public buildings, presenting daily a scene of bustle, activity and hurry. Places of business thus ceased to exist on Broadway, which is now bordered on each side with fine dwellings, making it, with its great width, the finest avenue in the State.

TOWN OFFICERS.—The White Plains Precinct, as it was called until 1788, held meetings of the freeholders on the first Tuesday of April in each year, for the election of a clerk, supervisor and other officers for the management of the public affairs, independent of the town of Rye, of which, however, it continued to be a part. The most important officer was the clerk, who was selected on account of his superior education. The next officer in importance was the supervisor. In the early history of White Plains changes in these officers were rarely made; the principle of rotation in office had no advocates there.

The first election was held in April 1727. Caleb Hyatt, Jr., was chosen clerk, and continued to be re-elected annually until 1776, when Miles Oakley was chosen. From 1776 to 1783 there were no elections. The following persons then were successively elected and served as clerks:

Daniel Horton	1783 to 1787
Joseph Prior	1787 to 1788
William Barker, Jr.	1788 to 1800
Stephen Barker	1800 to 1804
David Falconer	1804 to 1806
Stephen Barker	1806 to 1810
Joseph Horton	1810 to 1812
Minott Mitchell	1812 to 1838
Joseph S. Mitchell	1838 to 1842
John W. Mills	1842 to 1844
Schuyler C. Tompkins	1844 to 1849
Enoch Dick and Elias P. Purdy	1849 to 1850

The following served as supervisors:

Caleb Hyatt	1727 to 1735
Moses Owen	1735 to 1736
Jonathan Purdy	1736 to 1750
Elisha Budd	1750 to 1753
Elisha Hyatt	1753 to 1755
Elisha Budd	1755 to 1758
Abraham Hatfield	1758 to 1769
Dr. Robert Graham	1769 to 1775
Samuel Purdy	1775 to 1776

In 1776 Anthony Miller was elected, and thereafter there were no elections until 1783. From that time down to 1850 the supervisors were,—

Daniel Horton	1783 to 1787
Richard Hatfield	1787 to 1796
John Falconer	1796 to 1801
Jacob Purdy	1801 to 1810
Jonathan Purdy	1810 to 1816
Joseph Horton	1816 to 1818
John Falconer	1818 to 1831
Elisha Horton	1831 to 1838
Henry Willets	1838 to 1844
John W. Mills	1844 to 1846
Lewis C. Platt	1846 to 1847
John W. Mills	1847 to 1848
John Dick	1848 to 1849
Henry C. Field	1849 to 1850

From 1850 to the present time the following supervisors and town clerks have been elected:

VIEW OF WHITE PLAINS IN 1855.

	SUPERVISORS.	TOWN CLERKS.
1850.	John Dick.	Elias P. Purdy.
1851.	Gilbert S. Lyon.	Carlton Palmer.
1852.	Gilbert S. Lyon.	Elijah Guion.
1853.	Gilbert S. Lyon.	John Banta.
1854.	Robert Cochran.	Wm. H. Huestis.
1855–56.	John J. Clapp.	Wm. H. Huestis.
1857–59.	Gilbert S. Lyon.	Wm. H. Huestis.
1860–61.	John W. Mills.	Wm. H. Huestis.
1862–66.	E. G. Sutherland.	Wm. H. Huestis.
1867.	John D. Gray.	Caleb Morgan, Jr.
1868.	John D. Gray.	A. J. Hyatt.
1869–70.	Michael Donohue, Jr.	A. J. Hyatt.
1871–72.	E. G. Sutherland.	D. B. Stevens.
1873.	E. G. Sutherland.	Wm. H. Cutter.
1874.	Elisha Horton.	Wm. H. Cutter.
1875.	Robert Cochran.	E. Baxter and A. J. Hyatt.
1876.	Elisha Horton.	J. E. Underhill.
1877.	Stephen S. Marshall.	A. J. Hyatt.
1878.	E. G. Sutherland.	A. J. Hyatt.
1879–81.	Artemus Eggleston.	Henry A. Maynard.
1882.	Elisha Horton.	Henry A. Maynard.
1883–84.	Lewis C. Platt.	W. A. Maynard.
1885.	Lewis C. Platt.	Chas. P. Paulding.
1886.	Lewis C. Platt.	Francis H. Hessels.

VILLAGE OF WHITE PLAINS.—By an act of the Legislature of the State, passed April 3, 1866, and amended by an act passed April 22, 1867, that part of White Plains particularly bounded and described in Section 1 of said act was declared to be the "Village of White Plains," and the inhabitants resident within the boundaries were declared to be a body corporate, to be known by the corporate name of "The Village of White Plains."

Originally there were seven trustees, two of whom were elected each year for a term of three years; they chose the president from amongst their own number. In 1878 the charter was amended, dividing the village into three wards and providing for election of one trus-

tee annually from each ward for a term of two years; and the board of trustees elected a president from outside their own body, who had no vote except in case of a tie.

At the first election of officers, in 1866, the following persons were chosen:

President, John Swinburne; Clerk, John M. Rowell; Trustees, Gilbert S. Lyon and Edward Sleath for one year; H. P. Rowell and J. P. Jenkins, two years; J. W. Mills, John Swinburne and Harvey Groot, three years.

1867.—President, John Swinburne; Clerk, John M. Rowell; Trustees, Hiram P. Rowell, John P. Jenkins, John W. Mills, John Swinburne, Harvey Groot, Gilbert S. Lyon and John D. Gray. (As the records previous to 1871 are lost, a complete list of officers cannot be obtained.)

1868.—President, John Swinburne; Treasurer, Gilbert S. Lyon; Clerk, Henry C. Jenkins; Attorney and Counsel, A. Jackson Hyatt; Collector of Taxes, Charles E. Johnson; Chief Constable, Henry B. Ford; Trustees, John W. Mills, John Swinburne, John D. Gray, Edmund G. Sutherland, Gilbert S. Lyon, John P. Jenkins, Harvey Groot.

1869.—President, Gilbert S. Lyon; Treasurer, Elisha P. Ferris; Clerk, Charles E. Johnson; Attorney and Counsel, Jackson O. Dyckman; Collector of Taxes, Valentine M. Hodgson; Chief Constable, Elisha C. Clark; Trustees, John D. Gray, Elisha P. Ferris, Richard C. Downing, Edmund G. Sutherland, Gilbert S. Lyon, John P. Jenkins, Harvey Groot.

1870.—President, Edmund G. Sutherland; Treasurer, —— ——; Clerk, C. E. Johnson; Trustees, Edmund G. Sutherland, Elisha P. Ferris, R. C. Downing, J. P. Jenkins, Harvey Groot, Elisha Horton, Jr., L. C. Platt.

1871.—President, Richard C. Downing; Treasurer, Theodore Van Tassel; Clerk, Valentine M. Hodgson; Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Chief Constable, David P. Barnes; Collector of Taxes, W. H. Huestis; Trustees, Elisha P. Ferris, Harvey Groot, Elisha Horton, Jr., J. M. Rowell, Lewis C. Platt, Theodore Van Tassel, Richard C. Downing.

1872.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; Treasurer, Elisha Horton, Jr.; Clerk, Valentine M. Hodgson; Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, Alexander W. Russell; Chief Constable, David P. Barnes; Trustees, Artemus W. Eggleston, Elisha Horton, Jr., Lewis C. Platt, J. M. Rowell, Theodore Van Tassel, Chas. Wiegand, Elisha P. Ferris.

1873–74.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; Treasurer, Elisha Horton, Jr.; Clerk, Valentine M. Hodgson;[1] Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, James Rice; Chief Constable, David P. Barnes; Trustees, Artemus W. Eggleston, Elisha Horton, Jr., John M. Rowell, Theodore Van Tassel, D. M. Underhill, Charles Wiegand, E. P. Ferris.

1874–75.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; Treasurer, Elisha Horton, Jr.; Clerk, Charles H. Purdy;[2] Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, Edward Shirmer; Chief Constable, David P. Barnes; Trustees, Artemus W. Eggleston, Elisha Horton, Jr., D. Morgan Underhill, T. Van Tassel, Chas. Wiegand, Michael Riordan, E. P. Ferris.

1875–76.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; Treasurer, Elisha Horton, Jr.; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, John O'Rourke; Chief Constable, David P. Barnes; Trustees, Artemus W. Eggleston, Elisha Horton, Jr., D. Morgan Underhill, Theodore Van Tassel, Charles Wiegand, Michael Riordan, Elisha P. Ferris.

1876–77.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; Treasurer, Elisha Horton, Jr.; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, Timothy Murphy; Chief Constable, David P. Barnes; Trustees, Artemus W. Eggleston, Elisha Horton, Jr., Michael Riordan, D. Morgan Underhill, Theodore Van Tassel, Charles Wiegand, Elisha P. Ferris.

1877–78.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; Treasurer, Elisha Horton; Jr., Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, Andrew O'Rourke; Chief Constable, John Birch; Trustees, Artemus W. Eggleston, Elisha Horton, Jr., Michael Riordan, D. Morgan Underhill, Charles Wiegand, Henry P. Stewart, Elisha P. Ferris.

1878–79.[3]—President, Gilbert S. Lyon[4] and D. Morgan Underhill; President *pro tem.*, none elected; Treasurer, Elisha Horton; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Hiram Paulding; Collector of Taxes, none elected; Chief Constable, John Birch; Trustees, David Verplanck, for two years, and Michael Riordan, for one year, First Ward; Artemus W. Eggleston, for two years, and S. W. Faile, for one year, Second Ward; G. H. Mead, for two years, and Leonard Miller, for one year, Third Ward.

1879–80.—President, D. Morgan Underhill; President, *pro tem.*, Daniel J. Tripp; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, William A. Woodworth; Collector of Taxes, Orlando W. Eggleston; Chief Constable, Henry A. Maynard; Police Justice,[5] James H. Moran; Trustees, David Verplanck and Michael Riordan, First Ward; Artemus W. Eggleston and Samuel Faile, Second Ward; Daniel J. Tripp and Leonard Miller,[6] Third Ward.

1880–81.—President, Elisha P. Ferris; President, *pro tem.*, Edmund G. Sutherland; Treasurer, Henry T. Dykman; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Charles W. Cochran; Collector of Taxes, Daniel F. Leary; Chief Constable, James Brogan; Trustees, Michael Riordan[7] and David Verplanck,[7] First Ward; Samuel Faile and Henry B. Ford,[7] Second Ward; Daniel J. Tripp and Edmund G. Sutherland, Third Ward.

1881–82.—President, Elisha P. Ferris (died February, 1882); President, *pro tem.*, Daniel J. Tripp; Treasurer, Henry T. Dykman; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Charles W. Cochran; Collector of Taxes, Daniel F. Leary; Chief Constable, George W. See; Police Justice, Elisha Horton; Trustees, Michael Riordan, one year, and David Verplanck, two years, First Ward; William J. Sutton, one year, and Samuel Faile, two years, Second Ward; Daniel J. Tripp, two years, and Edmund G. Sutherland, one year, Third Ward.

1882–83.—President, William Reynolds Brown; President, *pro tem.*, Daniel J. Tripp; Treasurer, Henry T. Dykman; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, Charles W. Cochran; Collector of Taxes, John P. Moran; Chief Constable, George W. See; Police Justice, Elisha Horton; Trustees, Michael Riordan and David Verplanck, First Ward; Samuel Faile and William J. Sutton, Second Ward; Daniel J. Tripp and James D. Wright,[8] Third Ward.

1883–84.—President, Wm. Reynolds Brown; President, *pro tem.*, Charles H. Tibbits; Treasurer, Wm. B. Tibbits; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, A. Jackson Hyatt; Collector of Taxes, Chester P. Little; Chief Constable, George W. See; Police Justice, Elisha Horton; Trustees, Michael Riordan and David Verplanck, First Ward; Wm. J. Sutton and Chas. H. Tibbits, Second Ward; Isaac V. Fowler[9] and James D. Wright, Third Ward.

1884–85.—President, Henry T. Dykman; President, *pro tem.*, Charles H. Tibbits; Treasurer, Wm. B. Tibbits; Clerk, John Birch; Attorney and Counsel, not elected; Collector of Taxes, not elected; Chief Constable, not elected; Police Justice, Minott M. Silliman; Trustees, David Verplanck and Richard Dowdall, First Ward; Wm. J. Sutton and Chas. H. Tibbits, Second Ward; Jas. D. Wright and Isaac V. Fowler, Third Ward.

1886.—President, Henry T. Dykman; President, *pro tem.*, Edward B. Long; Clerk, Eugene Archer; Treasurer, J. Henry Carpenter; Police Justice, Minott M. Silliman; Collector of Taxes, John P. Moran; Chief Constable, George W. See; Trustees, Richard Dowdall and John McArdle, First Ward; Mark Lyons and Charles H. Tibbits, Second Ward; Edward B. Long and James D. Wright, Third Ward.

HIGHWAYS.—The first highway was laid out on the 13th of April, 1708, leading from Rye to White Plains, six rods wide, and was called the Queen's Highway; the present North Street road is on the same route.

Broadway was in existence in 1697, but was not formally laid out and recorded until November 22, 1734, when it was described as "Beginning between the home lots formally laid out to Thomas Brown and Caleb Hyatt, where the road is laid out that goeth down to Eastchester; from thence northerly by the fronts of said home lots on each side of the street; said street or highway to be the same as now left until it cometh to the great meadow brook."

The old New York road, or road to East Chester,

[1] Valentine M. Hodgson resigned his position as village clerk January 17, 1874, and was succeeded by Charles H. Purdy.

[2] Charles H. Purdy resigned his position as clerk, and was succeeded, August 14, 1874, by John Birch.

[3] The new charter, dividing the city into wards, went into operation this year, and two trustees were elected from each ward, instead of seven from the whole village, as formerly. The president was chosen from outside the board for a term of two years, and his powers were somewhat curtailed. The election of Gilbert S. Lyon was reached after a long and obstinate contest between Elisha P. Ferris and William H. Albro. Ferris sat as president during this balloting, having been president the year before, and, finally, when he saw his own election impossible, and after there had been a number of ballots with Lyon and Albro as candidates, in which each received three votes, he threw the deciding vote for Lyon. His right to do so was contested in the courts, and during the contest no public business was transacted. The suit was not decided for many months, but was finally settled in favor of Lyon.

[4] Lyon died early in 1879, and was succeeded, April 22, 1879, by D. Morgan Underhill for the unexpired term.

[5] Police justice, an office established in 1878, was not filled till 1879, owing to the litigation over the presidency in the former year. It was for a term of three years. Moran was elected for the unexpired term of two years.

[6] Leonard Miller was elected for one year in place of George H. Mead, resigned.

[7] Michael Riordan, David Verplanck and Henry B. Ford all three resigned in March, 1881. April 4th Charles J. Quinby was appointed trustee in place of Henry B. Ford, and Harvey Groot in place of David Verplanck, until the ensuing election. Michael Riordan's place was not filled.

[8] James D. Wright resigned July 19, 1882, and was succeeded by Samuel Hopper.

[9] Henry P. Stewart was elected to the unexpired term of Samuel Hopper, but failed to qualify, and I. V. Fowler was elected in his place.

Digitized by Google

was formally laid out in 1717. It followed the old Indian Path, which led from the native settlement on the hill on the Fisher farm, south of the Fisher homestead, corner of Lexington Avenue and the post road, by a winding course over the hill, as it now runs, past Mr. Faile's and around the Waller corner to its junction with Broadway, opposite the Mitchell homestead. On the east side of the road, opposite the Waller corner, was the Indian burying-ground.

The road to the Hudson River from White Plains was laid out in 1730, along the north side of the Presbyterian Church. In 1764 the terminus of this road on Broadway was changed to its present location of Spring Street.

The road now called Lake Street was laid out in 1762.

The road to Mamaroneck was laid out the 11th of November, 1725, and commenced at the old post road. At that time James Travis owned the Samuel Faile place, and Moses Knapp owned what is now the beautiful property of Mrs. E. L. Carhart.

The highway leading from Broadway and passing the residence of Mrs. Ellen T. Donahue was laid out the 24th of April, 1735.

The road beginning at Broadway nearly opposite the road last mentioned, and now running south of the cemetery, was laid out May 22, 1740.

These are all the principal roads that were in existence prior to 1830 in what is now the village of White Plains.

White Plains was at the time of its purchase the planting-ground of the natives, and derived its name from the white balsam, a plant then covering its surface, which, although not level, presented the appearance of a plain when seen from the surrounding hills.

CHURCHES.

CHURCH OF ENGLAND AND PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH IN WHITE PLAINS.—The history of the Protestant Episcopal Church in White Plains has been carefully written by Robert Bolton, in his "History of the Church in Westchester County," and much that follows is derived from his very interesting work.

From the time of the conquest of New Netherland by the English (in 1664) down to the arrival of Governor Fletcher (in 1692) the inhabitants of the town of Rye (which then, and until 1784, included the White Plains) were Presbyterians or Dissenters, and there existed "no trace of the Church of England in the Colony."

Through the efforts of Governor Fletcher, the Colonial Assembly, which was composed almost entirely of Dissenters, was induced to pass a bill "For the maintenance of a Ministry." A similar law existed in Connecticut, under whose ecclesiastical jurisdiction Rye was at this time. After the passage of this bill the Governor declared that there was no ministry but of the Church of England; and through his power, with the aid of the "Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts," a minister of the Church of England was inducted into the church at Rye in the year 1704, but Episcopal services were not introduced into White Plains until 1724, when the Rev. Mr. Jenny preached there three or four times a year; and such services were held down to the time of the Revolution, which utterly ruined the mission.

During the war the clergy were placed in an embarrassing position. Not to pray for the King, according to the litany, was to act against the dictates of their consciences, while to have used the prayers would have been to draw upon themselves persecution and destruction. The only course left them was to suspend the exercise of their functions and shut up their churches. After the war the church became an independent branch of the Church of Christ, and having organized an ecclesiastical union, free from alliances with human sovereigns, demonstrated its congeniality with our free institutions.

In 1787 White Plains and Rye united in erecting a church edifice at the latter place, of which the Rev. Richard C. Moore was chosen rector, September 5, 1787. Pursuant to the requirements of the laws of the State of New York relating to the incorporation of religious societies, a meeting of the congregation of Rye Church was held and a certificate of incorporation made, dated the 21st day of February, 1795, in which "the rector and two of the congregation of the Protestant Episcopal Church of the towns of Rye and White Plains, in the County of Westchester, certify that Peter Jay and John Barker were elected church wardens, and Joshua Purdy, Jr.," and seven others were elected vestrymen; and that "the style and title shall be 'Christ's Church in the town of Rye, in the County of Westchester and State of New York.'"

An act of the Legislature having been subsequently passed "for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church of the State of New York," the church determined to re-incorporate under that act, and a meeting for the purpose was duly called and held, and a certificate of incorporation, dated June 7, 1796, was made and filed, by which it appears that the officers of the Rye and White Plains Episcopal Church, chosen under this incorporation, were Peter Jay and Isaac Purdy, church wardens; and Joshua Purdy and seven others, vestrymen—the same corporate name being retained. Under this organization the church of Rye and White Plains continued services in each town—two-thirds in Rye and one-third in White Plains—until 1816, when the wardens and vestrymen resolved to discontinue services at White Plains; and accordingly such services were discontinued, although White Plains had contributed to the erection and support of the church.

From 1816 to 1823 only occasional services were held at White Plains by the neighboring clergy, and when, in 1824, it was proposed to organize a church, there was not one male communicant in the place, and only four or five females were church members.

Digitized by Google

S. Underhill
Underhill Land
S. Palm
Meeting House
Jason Sherard
B. Brown
Widow McChain
Widow Brown
Wrights Grist Mill
33 MS
Widow Loggin
Abm Underhill
32 MS
A. Brown
Wm Fisher
Wm Shields
Jas. Raqua
S. Purdie
W. Weeks
Dutch Church
Danl Lewis
John Hutchins
Reids
Tarrytown
Large Rock
Bedford Road
B. Storm
Vault
Satts
Capt. John Cromwell
School House
Pond
Quaker Meeting House
S. Pine
W. Anderson
M. Storm
Mathes
Thomas's
White Plains
Widow Locke
Dobbs Ferry
Lat 41°
Saw mill River Road
East Chester Road
Bronx R.
Mamaroneck
Parsonage Point
Scotch Caps
Sutton's Pt.
Rye
THE SOUND
Phillips
Widow Babcock
Valentine's Hill
J. Stuart
Shute
Gedney
Leconet
New Rochelle
Meadows
East Chester
Swamp
Williams Bridge
23 MS
22 MS

No 59

ROADS ABOUT WHITE PLAINS

No. 120
Near the White Plains across
from Saw-mill River towards
the Brunks to near Thos Thompson's

By Robert Erskine F.R.S.
Geographer to the Army U.S.
1779

Notwithstanding such discouraging circumstances, it was determined to organize a church, and accordingly, upon the 22d of March, 1824, a church was incorporated under the title of "Grace Protestant Episcopal Church, White Plains," with Richard Jarvis and Alan McDonald as church wardens; William Purdy, John Horton, Gilbert Hatfield, James Dick, Alexander Fowler, Joshua Horton, William Bulkley and James D. Merritt, vestrymen; and the same year the Rev. William C. Mead was elected rector, and proceedings were instituted for the erection of a church edifice.

Mr. Mead was very acceptable to all, both in and out of his church, and his efforts to build a house for worship were generously aided by the people, without regard to creed or sect. How well this kind assistance was appreciated the records of the vestry show by an entry in the minutes, June 25, 1826, after the church was completed, of a vote of thanks to the officers and members of the Presbyterian Society in White Plains, for the use of their church.

Mr. Mead removed in 1826, and was succeeded by the Rev. Alexander H. Crosby, a laborious student and earnest preacher. He remained but two years, and was followed by the Rev. John W. Curtis, who continued here for two years. Mr. Curtis was a Christian gentleman, of fine personal appearance and of a cheerful and social nature, which endeared him to all within his influence. His health failing, in 1831 he applied to the bishop for a change, and became the editor of the *Churchman*, then first established. The change from the country to the city, however, operated for the worse; he declined rapidly in health, and died in 1835.

The Rev. Robert W. Harris took charge of the parish in 1831, and for nearly a quarter of a century faithfully served his Master and his flock. About him there was no sectarian bigotry; deeply taught by the Spirit, he belonged less to any human school of divinity than to the one great body of Christ's true disciples. He was an Episcopalian by birth, education and preference, but in his highest aspirations a member of the general assembly and church of the first born. He was ever bold in opposing error, and ever zealous in defending truth. In preaching he was earnest and impressive rather than eloquent. He loved the church and its order, and did not undervalue its external and formal arrangements. His catholicism was broad enough to cover all who rested their hopes for salvation on the same Jesus whom he served, whether in or out of his church. Few are now living who can remember the time when he first appeared here in the fresh glow of youth; and of the wardens and vestrymen who then directed the affairs of the church not one remains.

In the year 1855, Dr. Harris resigned so far as to have an associate rector appointed. Under this arrangement the Rev. Theodore Rumney was elected associate rector, and commenced preaching on the first Sunday of October, 1855. Soon afterward Dr. Harris resigned the whole charge of the parish, and for nearly fifteen years Mr. Rumney faithfully, laboiously and warm-heartedly devoted himself to his church and people.

In 1870, having received a call from Christ's Church, Germantown, Pa., he resigned, and the present rector, that genial Christian gentleman, the Rev. Frederick B. Van Kleeck, began his labors here, and for sixteen years has gone about doing good; and everywhere, whether in the pulpit, the social circle or beside the sick-bed, his presence is most acceptable.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—Prior to 1727 the people of White Plains were members of, and attended, the Dissenting or Presbyterian Church of Rye. In that year a church edifice was erected in White Plains, chiefly through the efforts of the Rev. John Walton, a native of New London, and a graduate of Yale College, who came to Rye in 1723,[1] and to White Plains in 1726.

Mr. Walton was highly gifted as a preacher, and although self-willed and erratic, did much to strengthen the Presbyterians, and induced many, who had been drawn over to the Church of England, to return. His eloquence and persistent efforts as a preacher provoked the hostile criticism of the Rev. Mr. Wetmore, the English minister at Rye, who, in his letter to the secretary of the Propagation Society,[2] calls him "a bold, noisy fellow, with a voluble tongue, drawing the greatest part of the town after him."

A church was erected in 1727 on land given by Mr. Walton, on the spot where the present church stands. In 1728 Mr. Walton was succeeded by the Rev. Edmund Ward, also a graduate of Yale College, and a native of Killingworth, Connecticut.

Mr. Ward remained but two years, when he removed to Guilford, Connecticut, and the pulpit was vacant for several years after his departure, during which time occasional preaching was had by ministers from Connecticut.

On the 30th of December, 1742, a council of the Eastern Consociation of Fairfield County met at Rye and ordained the Rev. John Smith as minister. We are under great obligations to Dr. Baird for procuring and giving us a particular account of that occasion, and of the life and services of this eminent man.

Mr. Smith, like his predecessors, was a graduate of Yale College. His father, Mr. Thomas Smith, was one of the little band of Christians who organized the first Presbyterian Church in New York City. His brother, William Smith, and his nephew, William Smith, Jr., were leaders among the Sons of Liberty in New York City, and organizers of the "Whig Club," from which came the first utterances in favor of liberty. Previous to his coming to Rye, Mr. Smith had married a daughter of Mr. James Hooker, a grandson of the famous Thomas Hooker, the founder of

[1] Dr. Baird's "Rye," 322. [2] Bolton's "Church History," 246.

the colony of Connecticut. After a few years' residence in Rye, Mr. Smith removed to White Plains. The house in which he lived and died is still standing.

Owing to the feeble health and declining strength of Mr. Smith, the Presbytery, on the 11th of October, 1769, ordained Mr. Ichabod Lewis, also a graduate of Yale, as pastor. It is supposed that Mr. Smith continued to preach until a short time before his death, which took place on the 26th of February, 1771. His remains lie under the pulpit of the present church.

Soon after the battle of White Plains, and on the night of the 5th of November, 1776, the church was burned, and the congregation, owing to the troubles of the times, was scattered; many of them, being stanch Whigs, removed from this disputed territory, in order to escape the depredations of Tories and the British troops. The Rev. Mr. Lewis removed to Bedford.

In 1784 an act of the Legislature enabled religious societies or congregations to become corporate bodies, in pursuance of which this church, on the 12th of December, 1787, became incorporated under the name of "The Trustees of the Presbyterian Church in the White Plains in Westchester County;" from 1784 to 1821 the congregation enjoyed only irregular preaching, the services being held in the court-house, which stood in front of the present residence of Mr. Fiero.

From 1821 to 1823 the Rev. Thomas G. Smith officiated as stated supply. He was succeeded by the Rev. Marcus Harrison, who soon resigned, and the Rev. Mr. Ely supplied the pulpit until October, 1823, when the Rev. Samuel Robinson was installed as pastor. A new church was erected in 1824 on the foundation of the old one.

From 1825 to 1834 the Rev. Chester Long was the acceptable pastor, and on his resignation the Rev. John White was called, but remained only one year, when he resigned. In 1835 the Rev. Edward Wright was installed, and continued for nine years to fill the pulpit acceptably, till failing health compelled him to resign, and in July, 1844, the Rev. Elias S. Schenk was installed and supplied the pulpit for five years.

From January to July, 1850, the Rev. Bronson B. Beardsley officiated as stated supply; and from July, 1850, to July, 1853, the Rev. Joseph Forsyth was pastor. He was succeeded in 1853 by the Rev. David Peese, who served as stated supply for sixteen years.

In June, 1871, the Rev. T. C. Steele was called as pastor, and continued until ill health compelled him to resign, in November, 1873.

On July 19, 1874, the congregation called the Rev. E. L. Heermance, who has since faithfully discharged his duties, never having failed to be at his post either in person or by proper representative.

By an act of the Legislature passed May 5, 1863, the name and title was changed from "The Trustees of the Presbyterian Church in the Town of White Plains, Westchester County," to "The White Plains Presbyterian Church."

THE METHODIST CHURCH.—There is no record evidence of an organized Methodist society or church in White Plains until after the Revolutionary War, but there is unquestionable proof that there was a Methodist society in White Plains as early as 1741. At this time the people, who were Dissenters, had no regular minister of their own persuasion, and no means wherewith to provide a support for one, being compelled by taxation to sustain the Church of England, which they regarded as little better than the Church of Rome, and the pulpit of the White Plains Church was vacant.

In the fall of the year 1740 George Whitefield visited and preached in Rye, and although he only passed through the town without stopping a night, the good seed sown by him on that October day brought forth an hundred-fold.

At this time John Wesley was organizing his followers in England in classes, appointing over each a leader who was to look after their spiritual interests; and a Methodist society, as it existed in England in 1740, was composed of Gospel Christians in a town or village drawn toward each other by their common trust in Jesus the Christ, formed into a class, with a leader, and governed by the rules laid down by Wesley for their guidance.

The people having no acceptable minister, neglected religious worship, and a general decline and deadness in matters of religion followed. While in this sad condition the new Methodism in England, with its simple, social and informal worship, which was exactly suited to the condition of the people, naturally attracted their attention and enlisted their feelings.

At this time the Rev. James Wetmore, a minister of the Church of England, sent by the Propagation Society, placed over this people by the power of the Governor, and supported by oppressive taxation, was the minister of Rye and the White Plains—the White Plains being then, and until 1783, within the town bounds of Rye.

Mr. Wetmore was required to report to the society several times a year the condition of his parish, and it is from his communications, which follow, that the existence of an organized Methodist society in this town as early as 1741–43 is established.

Under date of September 28, 1741, not quite a year after the Whitefield visit, the Rev. Mr. Wetmore, in a letter to the secretary of the Propagation Society, says: "The efforts of the sectaries in this parish have been various the past year, and their endeavors indefatigable to weaken and destroy the Church. However, by God's help, we maintain our ground, and though some of our members are corrupted with the wild enthusiasm of the new sect, I hope the measures I use to strengthen and establish my people in the faith of Christianity according to the doctrines of the Church of England, will by God's blessing prevent this new Methodism, or, rather, down-right distraction in the shape it now appears among the itinerant sectaries, from gaining much ground among us."

Digitized by Google

"WOODSIDE."
RESIDENCE OF JOSEPH H. LEWIS,
WHITE PLAINS, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

In another letter, written eighteen months later, dated March 25, 1743, he complains that the people "are unsettled in their principles, and go after all sorts of teachers that come in their way, and many of them are much confused by the straggling Methodist teachers that are continually among us." From these letters it appears that the "new Methodism" was fast gaining ground.

In Mr. Wetmore's letter in September of the same year he writes: "As to the state of my parish, nothing very remarkable has happened since my last, but I find my cares and labors much increased by having two (probably one at White Plains and the other at Rye) Independent Methodist teachers settled by that party in my parish, besides exhorters and itinerants that frequently call people together and instil wild and enthusiastic notions into them; they have made much confusion in the remote parts of my parish, but chiefly among those who always were Dissenters."

Only two years had elapsed since his first letter complaining of the corrupting influences of the new sect of Methodists, and already this "wild sect" had become organized, and had two "Independent Methodist teachers" settled in his parish. He called them "teachers;" he would not call them "ministers," for he recognized no minister outside of the Church of England, and these were "settled" in his parish.

Although no record has been preserved of that little society, with the name of the teacher or of the members who composed the class or congregation, or in what commodious farm-house they assembled for worship, the fact that such a teacher and such a class or congregation, in an organized shape, existed in White Plains in 1743 cannot be controverted; and this was seventeen years before Philip Embury and Barbara Heck came to America, and twenty-three years before Philip Embury organized his class-meeting or society in his house in Barrack St., New York City, which the learned historian, Dr. Abel Stevens, states was the foundation of Methodism in America.

During the American Revolution no regular meetings for public religious worship by any denomination of Christians were held in White Plains, but very soon after the war, little companies were gathered without any formal organization, one of which met at the house of Mrs. Ann Miller, in North Castle (Washington's headquarters). When the New Rochelle Circuit was organized, in 1787, Mrs. Miller's house was one of the regular appointments on the circuit; the Rev. Samuel Talbot, who organized the first class, consisting of six persons, was preacher. In 1792 and 1793 some six members were added to the little society, three of whom—Abraham Miller, Abraham Davis and John Hatfield—were men of influence in the neighborhood; and through their efforts the embryo church grew vigorous and strong.

As a church it had no corporate existence until July 20, 1795, when Elijah Crawford, John Lynch, Nicholas Fisher, Abraham Miller, Azariah Horton and Abraham Davis were elected trustees. The title of the corporation was "The Trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church, in the town of White Plains, in the County of Westchester." [1]

Owing to failure to hold the annual meeting and elect trustees, it became necessary to, and the church was, re-incorporated on November 24, 1834, under the title of the "Trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal Church of the town of White Plains, in Westchester County." [2]

The church edifice being located on the extreme limit of the village, a new society was organized and incorporated October 20, 1834, under the name or title of "The Trustees of the Second Methodist Episcopal Church in White Plains, Westchester County," [3] and a house of worship was erected on the central part of Broadway.

On the 13th of April, 1871, some of the members of the First Church united with those of the Second Church in forming a new society, which is in a prosperous condition. The name was changed from the "Second" to "The Memorial Methodist Episcopal Church of White Plains," [4] and a commodious house of worship was erected on Railroad Avenue.

White Plains was embraced in the New Rochelle Circuit from the time of its organization, in 1787, until 1832, and the ministers on the circuit were as follows:

Samuel Q. Talbot	1787
Peter Moriarty	1788
Peter Moriarty and Samuel Smith	1789
William Phoebus, M. Swain and J. Brush	1790
Jacob Brush, T. Everard and T. Lovell	1791
James Bell and Benjamin Fisler	1792
Peter Moriarty and David Valleau	1793
Sylvester Hutchinson, Peter Moriarty and D. Dennis	1794
Thomas Woolsey, Albert Van Nostrand and Jacob Perkins	1795
Joseph Totten, David Brown and Ezekiel Caulfield	1796
David Brown, John Wilson and John Baker	1797
Joseph Totten and John Clark	1798
John Clark, Timothy Dewey and Epenetus Kibby	1799
David Brown, John Wilson and Elijah Chichester	1800
John Wilson, James Campbell and William Pickett	1801
William Thacker and George Dougherty	1802
William Thacker and Aaron Hunt	1803
James Coleman	1804
James Coleman and Joseph Sawyer	1805
Joseph Crawford and Henry Redstone	1806
Billy Hibbard, Mitchel B. Bull, H nry Redstone and Ezekiel Caulfield	1807
Billy Hibbard, Zalmon Lyon and Ezekiel Caulfield	1808
Luman Andrus and Phineas Peck	1809
Noble W. Thomas and Henry Ames	1810
Eben Smith, W. Swayze and Henry Ames	1811
Eben Smith and Jonathan Lyon	1812
William Phoebus, William Thacker and O. Sykes	1813
William Thacker and Jonathan Lyon	1814
Smith Arnold and Samuel Bushnell	1815
Nathan Emery and Smith Arnold	1816
Nathan Emery and Charles Carpenter	1817
Daniel Ostrander and Charles Carpenter	1818
Samuel Bushnell and M. Richardson	1819-20
Elijah Woolsey, William Jewett and Robert Seney	1821
Elijah Woolsey, William Jewett and Noble W. Thomas	1822
Heman Bangs, Noble W. Thomas and Richard Seaman	1823
Stephen Martindale, Heman Bangs and L. Andrus	1824
Stephen Martindale and Phineas Rice	1825
P. P. Sandford, Ph. Rice and J. M. Smith	1826

[1] Rel. Incorp., A, page 52, Co clerk's office. [2] Ibid, p. 23.
[3] Ibid, page 25. [4] Ibid, B p. 452.

Digitized by Google

Peter P. Sandford, Josiah Bowen and J. M. Smith	1827
Elijah Woolsey, S. Cochran and Josiah Bowen	1828
Samuel Cochran and Elijah Hibbard	1829
Elijah Hibbard and Daniel De Vinne	1830
Ebenezer Washburn and Daniel De Vinne	1831

In 1832, White Plains and Greenburgh were set off from the New Rochelle Circuit and constituted a separate charge, and the preachers were as follows:

Robert Seney and Harvey Husted	1832
Robert Seney and John B. Merwin	1833
Peter P. Sandford and Zachariah Davenport	1834
P. P. Sandford and S. C. Davis	1835
Horace Bartlett and Ezra Jagger	1836
Stephen Martindale and Daniel I. Wright	1837
Stephen Martindale and John A. Sillick	1838
Valentine Buck and John A. Sillick	1839
Valentine Buck	1840

In 1841 White Plains became a separate charge, and the preachers were,—

Valentine Buck	1814	Peter P. Sandford	1853
Buel Goodsell	1842–43	William S. Stilwell	1854–55
Richard Wymond	1844–45	Benjamin Griffin	1856–57
Julius Field	1846–47	Henry Lounsbury	1858–59
Paul R. Brown	1848–49	William M. Chipp	1860–61
Charles B. Sing	1850–51	William H. Evans	1862
John Luckey	1852		

In 1863 White Plains became two separate charges, —namely, White Plains and White Plains village—and the preachers were,—

White Plains (Old Church).

William H. Evans	1863	Asa P. Lyon	1874–75
Darius D. Lindsley	1864	Ezra Tinker	1876
Albert H. Wyatt	1866–67	Thomas W. Chadwick	1877
Thomas B. Smith	1868–70	O. V. Haviland	1878–79
John E. Gorse	1871–73	Thomas Lodge	1880

In 1881 the Old Church disbanded and united with the Village Church.

Village Church.

Gideon Draper	1863–64	William F. Hatfield	1873–75
William M. Chipp	1865–66	Phineas Hawkshurs	1878
John P. Hermance	1867	James Y. Bates	1877–79
John W. Beach	1868–69	Gilbert H. Gregory	1880–81
E. B. Othaman	1870	F. Mason North	1882–83
Richard Wheatley	1871–72	De Loss Lull	1884–86

St. John's Roman Catholic Church—The first Mass said in Westchester County was said at the house of Dominick Lynch, on Throgg's Point, in the town of Westchester, where the Academy of the Sacred Heart is now located. Dominick Lynch was a prominent man during the Revolution, and after the election of Washington as first President of the United States, was one of the signers of the Catholic address to Washington,[1] which received a generous reply, and was followed by a memorial to Congress representing the necessity of adopting some constitutional provision for the protection and maintenance of civil and religious freedom, which had cost so much blood and treasure of all classes of citizens. It was through the influence of Washington that this memorial was favorably received, and it resulted in the enactment of that article in the constitution which declares that Congress shall make no law respecting the establishment of religion or the free exercise thereof, and which has since been incorporated in the fundamental law.

[1] History of the Irish Settlers in North America, by T. D'Arcy McGee, p. 77.

Dominick Lynch, of New York, in 1795, purchased the farm of Lewis Graham, on Throgg's Point, and it was in his house on this farm that the first Mass in Westchester County was said.

In 1839 Throgg's Point and Sawpits (now Port Chester) were missions attended from Harlem, the former every second Sunday in the month, the latter occasionally, by Rev. M. Curran and Rev. Bernard O. Farrell. In 1842 these missions were attended from St. John's College, Fordham. In 1843 and 1844 Rev. Father Vilanus, D.D., of St. John's College, Fordham, attended New Rochelle once a month; also Sawpits, Westchester, Throgg's Point and Sing Sing. In 1845, Rev. William O'Reilly, of Westchester, had charge of these missions. In 1846 and 1847, Rev. Matthew Higgins, of Westchester, attended New Rochelle and Port Chester. In 1848, Rev. Valenive Burgos resided in Port Chester, and was succeeded towards the end of 1848 by Rev. Edward J. O'Reilly.

Father O'Reilly was the first Catholic priest to conduct services in White Plains. He began to hold meetings there about the year 1848. At this time he had charge of the Roman Catholic mission in Port Chester. In 1849 or the early part of 1850 he removed to New Rochelle, having been appointed pastor of St. Matthew's Church, at that place, in addition to his Port Chester charge.

Father O'Reilly was a zealous worker for the advancement of the Roman Catholic faith, and a man of more than ordinary ability and force of character. For several years after the beginning of his ministrations in White Plains, the Catholics there were without a house of worship of their own. Father O'Reilly, anxious to supply this need, solicited subscriptions from Catholics and Protestants, and was finally able to effect his wish. A plot of ground, located where Hamilton Avenue and Spring Street afterwards crossed each other, was purchased in the latter part of 1852, and shortly afterward the church was erected.

Father O'Reilly was succeeded by the Rev. Thomas McLoughlin, of New Rochelle. From 1848 to 1860 White Plains was visited once a month from New Rochelle. From 1861 to 1868 it was attended by the Rev. Matthew Dowling, of Port Chester, Port Chester having been made a separate mission in 1855.

In 1868 Rev. John McEvoy was appointed to the charge of White Plains, and White Plains as a separate mission, with a resident pastor, dates from that time. Father McEvoy was a native of Kilkenny, Ireland, and had been an assistant in St. Stephen's Roman Catholic Church, in Twenty-eighth Street, New York City, immediately before coming to White Plains. During the first year of his ministry a larger building was erected just across Hamilton Avenue from the old structure, and the congregation moved thither, retaining the old church as a Sunday-school. Father McEvoy became chaplain of St. Vincent's Retreat, in the town of Harrison, in 1878, and died there some time later.

Digitized by Google

His successor at White Plains was the Rev. Bartholomew Galligan, who assumed charge in November, 1878. Father Galligan was born December 19, 1838, in County Cavan, Ireland; he was ordained December 19, 1868, and died July 9, 1884. He was at one time an assistant in St. Bernard's Church, New York City, and afterwards in St. Gabriel's Church, New York City. Previous to coming to White Plains he was pastor of St. Mary's Church, at Cold Spring, Putnam County, N. Y.

In January, 1884, Father Galligan's health failed, and the Rev. Michael J. Murray became his assistant and remained such until the death of the pastor. He then assumed the duties of acting pastor and remained such until about the 1st of September, 1884, when the Rev. Edward A. Dunphy, the next pastor of the church, took charge.

Father Edward A. Dunphy was born at Newburgh, Orange County, N. Y., November 1, 1845. At an early age he entered St. John's College, at Fordham, and was graduated from there with the highest honors of his class in 1865. He then attended the Troy Theological Seminary, where he was ordained in December, 1868. Shortly afterward he was appointed an assistant at St. Mary's Church, New York City, but was soon transferred across town to St. Joseph's, where he remained several years. Subsequently he accepted the chair of sacred eloquence in the Troy Theological Seminary, tendered him by the late Cardinal McCloskey. Upon his resignation from this post he was assigned to Rossville, Staten Island, where he remained four years, until his removal to White Plains, in 1884. A man of scholarly attainments, impressive eloquence and great generosity, he did much to strengthen and advance the interests of the Roman Catholic Church in White Plains. He remained pastor of St. John's Church until his death, December 18, 1885.

Father Edward A. Dunphy was succeeded at White Plains by his brother, Rev. William A. Dunphy, a genial Christian gentleman, who was appointed to this charge December 21, 1885, and is the present faithful and acceptable pastor of St. John's.

St. John's Church will seat six hundred persons, and is comfortably filled at the two Masses said there every Sunday morning, as well as at the vespers and benediction every Sunday afternoon. The Sunday-school, now held in the church, has an average attendance of about three hundred scholars. In connection with the church is a society, composed of men, known as St. John's Temperance Society; an altar society, composed of ladies, who have the care of the altar; and also the St. John's Literary and Social Union, composed of both sexes, and numbering over one hundred members. This union has founded a library for the use of its members.

THE BAPTIST CHURCH OF WHITE PLAINS, N. Y. —This church was organized in the spring of 1871, and was regularly incorporated April 13, 1871, with John M. Rowell, Samuel Taylor, George R. Hopkins, James H. Purdy, Richard S. Geary, Sellick Roberts and Enoch Harris as trustees.[1] During the winter preceding the incorporation there were held meetings of about twenty persons desirous of organizing a Baptist Church, and as a preliminary effort, the Rev. Jerome B. Morse was invited to and did preach on the 26th of March, 1871. At the close of the services it was resolved to organize a church under the name of "The First Baptist Church of White Plains," and twenty-two persons became members. Rev. Jerome B. Morse was chosen pastor; John M. Rowell, treasurer; and Daniel M. Tucker and John M. Rowell, deacons.

On the 1st of June, 1871, at a meeting of sister congregations, the White Plains Church was formally recognized, and services were thereafter held in the Methodist chapel, on Hamilton Avenue, until August, 1871, when Mr. James B. Colgate, of Yonkers, purchased, for twenty-five thousand dollars, and donated to the society, the fine building which had been erected by the Reformed Dutch Church, on Mamaroneck Avenue, and which the society continues to occupy and enjoy.

Ill health compelled the Rev. Mr. Morse to resign, November 10, 1872; he was succeeded, April 1, 1873, by the Rev. George W. Clowe, who continued to be pastor until June 1, 1879, with the exception of one year, beginning March 1, 1877, and ending March 1, 1878, during which time Rev. J. L. Benedict occupied the pulpit.

On July 9, 1879, the Rev. F. P. Sutherland was installed and remained until January 1, 1884, when Rev. W. W. Covel was chosen pastor and still continues faithfully and acceptably to discharge his duties.

ACADEMIES AND SCHOOLS.

THE WHITE PLAINS ACADEMY was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, passed in 1828, under the management of trustees. A building was erected on the east side of Broadway (now a dwelling-house next south of the residence of Mr. Jarvis). The Rev. John M. Smith was employed as the principal of the school, and held that position until 1832, when he resigned. He was succeeded by Prof. John Swinburne, a popular and successful instructor. In 1840, Prof. Swinburne withdrew from the academy, and opened a private boarding-school, which he conducted with signal success until 1851, when he retired on a competence. His school was on the west side of Broadway, in the buildings now occupied by Dr. Kingsley.

A female seminary was founded in 1835 by Andrew L. Halsted, who erected and occupied the dwelling now owned by Mrs. A. C. Tompkins, on Broadway. It was transferred in 1839 to Mr. N. C. Hart, who soon after relinquished it.

The Rev. Robert William Harris opened a boarding-school for boys about 1835, in the rectory (now

[1] Recorded in book of "Religious Incorporations," Westchester county clerk's office, June 16, 1871.

occupied by Mr. Samuel Faile), which was very successful until his removal to Astoria, about 1857.

A school for girls was successfully conducted for a long time by Mrs. R. B. Searles. It was known as the White Plains Female Institute. It closed about 1873.

At present (1886) there are three private schools in White Plains. The ALEXANDER INSTITUTE, the most important, was established in 1845, and conducted for twelve years by Mr. William S. Hall, under the name of the Hamilton Military Institute. For the next six years it was under the supervision of General Munson I. Lockwood, who called it the White Plains Military Academy.

During the year 1863, Mr. Oliver R. Willis, the present principal, assumed charge, and the name was changed to the Alexander Institute. Mr. Willis has a corps of competent teachers to assist him, and pupils are taught in military manœuvres as part of the course. Instruction is given in the ordinary English branches, and in all studies necessary to enable a youth to enter college. The capacity of the school is for thirty boarders. It is pleasantly situated on Broadway, a short distance north of the Presbyterian Church.

MISS FRANCES HARRIS' SCHOOL.—This school was started in 1867, and is now located on Lexington Avenue, near the post road; she receives but a small number of pupils.

MISS MARY ADLER'S SCHOOL.—In 1875, Miss Adler opened a school for boys and girls on Lexington Avenue. She subsequently removed to Lafayette Hall, and in 1885 removed into a neat building which she had erected on Church Street. The number of pupils averages about forty.

PUBLIC OR DISTRICT SCHOOL.—It is not known where the first school-house was located. All that is known is that it was abandoned in 1739; afterwards the second school-house was erected on the highway, opposite the northwest corner of the Squire place. This house was abandoned about 1829, and the school was kept in the academy building until about 1840, when a school-house was erected on the road to Rye, southwest of the residence of Mr. Timothy Dick. This building was burned in 1848, and the place occupied as a school was rented.

In 1856 the present brick structure was erected; in 1875 a large addition was made, and in 1886 still further additions were made. In 1874, Mr. Charles A. Ganung was appointed principal of the school, and is still in charge. The average daily attendance is three hundred.

CEMETERIES.

The oldest cemetery in White Plains surrounds the Presbyterian Church, on Broadway, and contains about four acres. It dates back to 1730. The graves are all directly east and west, and not in line or at right angles with either side of the grounds.

THE WHITE PLAINS RURAL CEMETERY.—This cemetery was incorporated November 20, 1854. A tract of thirty-six acres was purchased, bounded on the east by Broadway and on the south by the highway leading from Broadway to Greenburgh. About 1862, the affairs of the company having fallen into disorder, its creditors were induced, through the efforts of Wm. H. Albro, Esq., to exchange their claims for cemetery lots of corresponding value. Under its present management the cemetery is well kept, and is in a prosperous condition.

The officers are Wm. H. Albro, president; Wm. H. Huestis, secretary; John R. Sherwood, treasurer; and Wm. H. Albro, Eugene T. Preudhomme and John R. Sherwood, working committee.

NEWSPAPERS.

THE WESTCHESTER SPY.—In the spring of the year 1830, Alan McDonald and Minott Mitchell, with one or two others, purchased the necessary material for establishing a newspaper, and employed as editor Mr. Peter C. Smith, a young gentleman from New York, who, in May, 1830, issued the first number of the first newspaper published in White Plains, under the title of *The Westchester Spy*.

Its publication was continued by successive editors until 1847, when it was discontinued.

THE EASTERN STATE JOURNAL.—This paper was founded at White Plains in May, 1845, by Edmund G. Sutherland as its proprietor and publisher, assisted by a half-brother, Thomas Jefferson Sutherland.

This business arrangement continued about eleven months, when Thomas J. Sutherland withdrew and the paper remained in the hands of Edmund G. Sutherland, under whose managment it became the leading Democratic paper of the county, and so continued until his death, in May, 1883.

It is now under the prudent and successful management of Ezra J. Horton, Esq.

THE WESTCHESTER NEWS.—This paper first appeared in October, 1871, as a Democratic organ, under the charge of Ezra J. Horton, Esq., and was continued under changing management until August 1876, when it passed into the hands of its present proprietor, Edward B. Long, Esq., under whose spirited direction it has become one of the leading Republican papers in the county.

THE WHITE PLAINS STANDARD.—In 1885 Mr. J. O. Spencer established the *White Plains Standard* as a weekly paper; but finding its management required more time than he could spare from his other business engagements, sold it in 1886 to Mr. Peter Paulding, who now controls it.

THE FIRE DEPARTMENT.

The first fire company was organized in White Plains about 1854, and was known as the Hope Fire-Engine Company. There was also organized about the same time the Union Hook-and-Ladder Company. These companies did good service in the village until 1874, when they disbanded, and for about ten years there was no regularly organized fire company.

THE HOPE ENGINE COMPANY.—In October, 1883, the Hope Fire-Engine Company was reorganized and

placed under the control of the village authorities. The following were the first officers elected: Chief Engineer, Stephen W. Smith; assistant chief engineer, Frank Gempler; foreman, Elliott H. Sniffin; first assistant foreman, John Ferguson; second assistant foreman, John McCarty; secretary, John T. Rehill; assistant secretary, William Gentleman; treasurer, Theodore Doll.

The number of members is limited to sixty.

The present officers are: Foreman, John Ferguson; first assistant foreman, Lewis C. Platt, Jr.; second assistant foreman, Peter F. Tracy; secretary, Edward Baxter; treasurer, Thomas J. McCarty; steward, James Stines.

THE UNION HOOK-AND-LADDER COMPANY.—This company was also reorganized in 1883. Its first officers, on reorganization, were: Foreman, Feltus Pullen; assistant foreman, John Emberson; secretary, Charles P. Sherwood.

At present the officers are: Foreman, William Sterling; assistant foreman, William Godwin; secretary, Edward Barnes; treasurer, Frank L. Cox.

HOPE HOSE COMPANY.—This company was organized in 1884 with twenty members, and the following officers elected: Foreman, Frank E. Benson; assistant foreman, Henry Armbruster; secretary, George Robinson; treasurer, Charles Nowill.

Present officers: Foreman, Frederick Underhill; assistant foreman, John Shay; secretary, Livingston R. Hartnett; treasurer, Barney Gilligan; steward, James Donelly.

THE INDEPENDENT FIRE COMPANY.—This company was organized in 1884, and supplied themselves by their own contributions with an engine and uniforms. The officers first chosen were: Foreman, David P. Barnes; first assistant foreman, William H. Lawler; second assistant foreman, John R. Barnes; secretary, Edward Bogart; treasurer, Thomas Holden.

The number of members was one hundred and two.

The present officers are: Foreman, John R. Barnes; first assistant foreman, William H. Lawler; second assistant foreman, Adolph Matthies; secretary, John Haley, Jr.; treasurer, Thomas Holden; steward, James Barrett.

The chief officers of the Fire Department, including the Hope Engine Company, Hope Hose Company and Union Hook-and-Ladder Company, are: Chief engineer, Stephen W. Smith; assistant chief engineer, Elliott H. Sniffin.

SOCIETIES.

THE WHITE PLAINS LYCEUM.—On the 21st of November, 1871, about a dozen gentlemen met and determined that an association should be formed, with the object of providing rooms, to be supplied with periodicals and a library, where young men could spend their evenings pleasantly. They secured the second and third floors of the building on the corner of Railroad Avenue and Grove Street, now occupied by the Telephone Company, and the Lyceum was opened January 20, 1872. After a few years the association removed to its present comfortable quarters, over Mr. Samuel Hopper's store.

Under the auspices of the Lyceum, a course of lectures and entertainments are given every winter, the last of which has usually been a dramatic performance by local amateurs. The professional talent employed has been of the very best, and the amateur entertainments have always been welcomed with crowded audiences and have produced an exalted opinion of the dramatic talent of some of the citizens.

THE IONIC LODGE was the first Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons in White Plains. It was organized under a dispensation from the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, and held its first meeting February 1, 1853. It never held but three or four meetings. John P. Jenkins was Master; Elijah Guion, Senior Warden; and Lewis C. Platt, Junior Warden.

WHITE PLAINS LODGE, No. 473, received its charter some time later, and held its first meeting April 8, 1859. Hiram P. Rowell was its first Master; John F. Jenkins, Senior Warden; John P. Jenkins, Junior Warden; John W. Mills, Treasurer; Daniel H. Little, Secretary; Francis Dauchy, Senior Deacon; William S. Cameron, Junior Deacon; and William Hahlen, Tiler.

The first place of meeting was in Moger's Hall, on Railroad Avenue, near Broadway.

The lodge, in 1884, contained fifty members. Meetings are now held in a hall, which has been fitted up at an expense of about three thousand dollars, on the northeast corner of Railroad and Lexington Avenues.

The present officers are George W. Brown, Master; John Birch, Senior Warden; William Nehr, Junior Warden; Francis H. Hessels, Secretary; Richard Manney, Treasurer; Leonard O. Roselle, Senior Deacon; James H. Howes, Junior Deacon; I. F. Loy, Senior Master of Ceremonies; Aaron Radick, Junior Master of Ceremonies; J. S. Pye, Tiler; Trustees, John M. Rowell, E. B. Long and D. Morgan Underhill.

HEBRON LODGE, No. 229, I. O. OF O. F.—This lodge was chartered February 1, 1870, the charter officers being Joseph Lye, N. G.; James Epps, V. G.; Frank Schermer, S.; M. Armbruster, J. G.; Peter Mann, T.; H. W. Lown, R. S. N. G.; H. Bromm, W.

It has about forty-five members, and the lodge-room is on Lexington Avenue.

GOOD TEMPLAR LODGE, No. 324.—This Independent Order of Good Templars was organized December 20, 1880, with sixty members. I. R. Miller was chosen W. C. T.; G. W. Brown, W. S.; and B. F. Hosier, L. D.

The meetings of the lodge are held at the corner of Spring Street and Railroad Avenue, and there are about fifty members.

THE WHITE PLAINS CONCORDIA.—This German Musical Society was organized June 10, 1880, under

gitized by Google

the name of the "White Plains Gesang Verein," with seventeen members. Its first officers were Dr. Ludwig Dresher, president; Adolph Matthies, vice-president; Joseph Lye, treasurer; Charles Burmeister, recording secretary; and Frank Gempler, sergeant. In April, 1881, the name of the society was changed to "The White Plains Concordia." It numbers about fifty-five members, who meet in a large room in the Union Hotel.

JAMES CROMWELL POST, NO. 466, G. A. R.—A Veteran Association was formed in White Plains in 1866, but little interest was taken in it. Subsequently steps were taken by some of the members to establish a Grand Army post, and on the 19th of March, 1884, a charter was granted by J. M. Hedges, Department Commander, and on the 3d of April the post was mustered. The officers were and are Valentine M. Hodgson, Commander; John C. Verplanck, Junior Vice Commander; Edward W. Bogart, Adjutant; Geo. W. Brown, Officer of the Day; David P. Barnes, Sergeant; Burlin H. Palmer, Quartermaster; Henry J. Williams, Officer of the Guard; James S. Snedeker, Chaplain; Richard Roach, Inside Sentinel; Charles B. Whiston, Outside Sentinel.

This post was organized under the name of Weitzel Post, but it soon after appearing that there was another post bearing the same name, it was afterwards changed to its present one of James Cromwell.

THE CENTRAL BANK OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY was incorporated on the 16th of Oct., 1828, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. Its officers are: President, Wm. H. Albro; Cashier, Howard E. Foster.

LAFAYETTE HALL.—In 1865 Eugene T. Preudhomme built Lafayette Hall, on Railroad Avenue, near Broadway. It will seat about four hundred and fifty persons and is used for public gatherings of various descriptions.

MORAN'S HALL was erected by James H. Moran in 1873, on the corner of Railroad Avenue and Spring Street, and will seat about four hundred persons.

WHITE PLAINS GAS COMPANY.—The manufacture of gas was begun in White Plains in 1860 on a small scale, by parties from New York City. In April, 1863, the property and works were purchased by Eugene T. Preudhomme, Esq., and in 1872 passed into the possession of a stock company, the capital being twenty-five thousand dollars.

The officers of the company are Eugene T. Preudhomme, president; Charles Horton, treasurer; and William H. Huestis, secretary. The amount of gas annually consumed is between three and four million feet.

HOTELS.

THE ORAWAUPUM HOTEL.—The first Orawaupum Hotel was built about 1844, near the New York and Harlem Railroad depot, and was kept by Mr. Isaac Smith. The name was suggested by the historian, John Macdonald, it being the name of the principal Indian chief of whom the White Plains lands were purchased.

The original hotel was a frame building and was burned February 17, 1854. It was then owned by the widow of Isaac Smith, who soon thereafter erected the present edifice.

It has passed through several hands and is now conducted by Stanley F. Newell, who has been proprietor since 1882.

The hotel is built of brick and has accommodations for about fifty guests.

THE UNION HOTEL.—This hotel is situated on the north side of Railroad Avenue, along the railroad, and was built about 1869 by J. M. Schirmer. In 1878 it passed into the possession of Theodore Doll, the present proprietor.

THE STANDARD HOUSE.—In 1860 Brundage Sniffin erected this building on Railroad Avenue, directly opposite the court-house. It is now owned by Mrs. Ada Richardson, a daughter of Mr. Sniffin, and is managed by Mr. N. Hubbard Miller. It has thirty sleeping-rooms and from its nearness to the county offices finds its largest custom from persons attending the courts.

WALLACE HOTEL.—This hotel is located on Court Street and is well kept by Benj. F. Wallace; it has accommodations for permanent and transient boarders.

Frank S. Mitchell

BIOGRAPHY.

DAVID CROMWELL.

Several branches of the Cromwell family in America are descended from Colonel John, third son of Richard Cromwell, and brother of the renowned Protector, Oliver Cromwell. John Cromwell, son of Colonel John, emigrated from Holland to New Netherland, and in 1686 was a resident at Long Neck, in Westchester County, afterwards known as Cromwell's Neck. He left two sons—John and James. The latter was born in 1696 and died in 1770, leaving three children—John, James and William. John Cromwell, the oldest son, was a resident of Harrison, born December 5, 1737. He married Anna Hopkins, of Long Island, and they were the parents of eight children—James, Daniel, John, Joseph, William, Naomi (wife of Rev. Mr. Halstead), Esther (wife of John Griffin, Jr., of North Castle), and Hannah (wife of William Field of Cortlandt.

John Cromwell, the father of this family, was an active patriot during the Revolution, endured many hardships in the cause of liberty, and died at an advanced age in 1805.

James Cromwell, the oldest son, was born November 6, 1752, and in early life worked on the farm of General Lewis Morris, at Morrisania. This dwelling

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

David Cromwell

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"MAPLETON."

RESIDENCE OF N. H. HAND,

WHITE PLAINS, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

N. H. Hand

Google

Digitized by Google

was near "Cromwell's Creek," which derived its name from him, and after remaining here several years he removed to New York, where he conducted a grocery business, and at a later date purchased a farm in the town of Monroe, Orange County (then known as Southfield), where he passed the remainder of his days, and died December 23, 1828. He married Charlotte, daughter of Aaron Hunt, of Greenwich, Conn., and left twelve children—Hannah (wife of David Griffin), Rebecca (wife of George Fritts), Daniel, James, Oliver, Ann (wife of John Haviland), David, Aaron, William, Mary (twins who died young), William and John.

John, the last named, was born in Monroe, July 26, 1803, engaged in business in New York, and having earned a modest competence, purchased a farm of one hundred acres in New Windsor, Orange County, where he resided during the remainder of his life. He was a life-long member of the Society of Friends, known and honored as a useful and worthy citizen and faithful in the performance of all the duties of life. He married Letitia, daughter of Abijah and Patience Haviland, of White Plains, N. Y., and they were the parents of four children—Walter, residing in California; James, of Bedford, Westchester County; Oliver, of New Windsor (died June 11, 1885), and David. Mrs. Letitia Cromwell died in 1861, and Mr. Cromwell was subsequently married to Elizabeth, daughter of Charles and Ann (Conklin) Cox, of Newburgh.

David Cromwell was born in New York May 25, 1838, and at the age of eight years removed with his parents to New Windsor, N. Y. His early education was obtained at the Cornwall Collegiate School, from which he graduated as a civil-engineer and surveyor, and after practicing his profession for about one year he went to New York and embarked in the grain trade. In 1862 he came to East Chester and established a store, where he conducted business until 1879. In 1877 he was elected supervisor of East Chester, and re-elected in 1878. In the fall of 1878 he was unanimously nominated by the Republican party as their candidate for the responsible office of county treasurer, and was elected over George W. Davids (Democrat), who had held the office for three years and was running for re-election. The faithfulness and ability exhibited by Mr. Cromwell in the performance of his official duties led to his re-election in 1881 by an increased majority, and in 1884 he was elected for a third term by a majority of about seven hundred, notwithstanding that the county gave a Democratic majority of over thirteen hundred on the electoral ticket. His ability and integrity commanded the votes of thinking men of all parties. He married Fannie, daughter of Thomas W. and Julia Deuel, of New York City, December 8, 1873. Their children are Fannie May, born May 23, 1876, and John Chester, born July 29, 1878.

NATHAN H. HAND.

Mr. Hand was born in Peacham, Vt., March 11, 1819. From the district school and the academy in his native town he received his education. In early youth he went to Montpelier, and served as clerk in a store for a year or two, when he removed to Cincinnati, Ohio, where he engaged in mercantile business, until failing health induced him to take a sea voyage, returning from which he went to Winchendon, Mass. There he purchased a store and stock of goods, and engaged in a general mercantile business, and also in the manufacture of palm leaf hats, becoming the largest producer of these articles in the State. A few years later he went to Middlebury, Vt., and engaged in the lumber and wood-ware manufacture. While he was thus employed, the marble business in that section of Vermont was attracting much attention. He became interested and bought a very extensive quarry in Pittsford, Vt., and began with great energy and industry to develop and utilize it, so that he soon competed with older and larger companies, furnishing stone for New York and Boston markets. Two of Boston's large hotels were built of marble sold by him. He made a number of improvements in cutting and quarrying the marble, which are in use to this day.

In 1867 he became connected with the gold mining interests of the State of Georgia, locating his operations in and around Dahlonega, which is regarded as the very centre of the auriferous region of that State. At the time he began his operations there was hardly a successful mining enterprise in that section. The methods for obtaining gold were almost entirely primitive, the mills and machinery being crude and imperfect. Under his thorough business knowledge and energy, and by backing his judgment with his means, he has, more than all others, brought the mining industry of northern Georgia to its present prosperous condition. A large tract of comparatively worthless territory has become one of the most valuable mining properties in the State. Under a charter granted by the Legislature of Georgia, he organized the "Hall's Gold Mining Company," becoming its president by the unanimous vote of its stockholders, which office he still holds. Hydraulic mining has been largely and successfully carried on. Water has been brought a distance of more than thirty miles to supply stamp-mills and for washing down the ore. The canals and ditches exceed fifty miles in length. There are ten thousand six hundred feet of twenty-four and thirty-six inch iron pipe, and six thousand seven hundred feet of wooden pipe, of like dimensions, used in the work.

All this has been the result of Mr. Hand's skill, pluck and perseverance. So fully is this realized in the Georgia gold belt, that he is generally called the father of the gold mining interests of the State, and no history of that enterprise can be written in which

Digitized by Google

his name will not be prominently mentioned with due credit and honor.

These results and achievements of seventeen years, have not been accomplished without the expenditure of much thought, as well as labor and money. Obstacles in mountains, hills and streams were not only met and overcome, which required great mechanical skill and engineering ability, but Mr. Hand had to contend with legal difficulties, and the prejudices of a people aroused against the introduction of new methods of mining. The code of mining laws adopted by the Legislature in 1868, principally to encourage the hydraulic process, had not been tested in the courts of the State. To construct canals and ditches over the lands of others for mining purposes, without their consent, though just compensation was offered, was an infringement on the people's rights, as it was said, which they were bound to resist. The courts were appealed to, the farther construction of the canal was enjoined by the lower tribunal and work was stopped for several months, pending the appeal to the Supreme Court of the State. For a time the entire mining industry of Georgia hung upon the question. If the miner could not get water for his stamp mills, then all operations of any magnitude must cease. The future prospects of the State as regards her mining interests, were about to be forever blighted. Some of the ablest lawyers in Georgia were employed, and after a lengthy discussion, the Supreme Judges decided in favor of Mr. Hand and his right to proceed with his canal. His charter was pronounced constitutional. Inch by inch he has fought his way; and to-day through his unwearied exertions, the mining interests of the great State of Georgia have been placed upon a safe and lasting basis.

Chief Justice Hiram Warner, in delivering the opinion of the court in the case alluded to (the Hand Gold Mining Company vs. John A. Parker, et al., 59th Georgia Reports) says: "In view of the evidence contained in the record as to the necessity for the General Assembly to exercise the right of Eminent Domain in granting the right of way for the defendant's ditch or canal to convey the water from Yahoola River and Cane Creek into the gold belt in the County of Lumpkin, for the successful workings of the valuable mines to be found there, so as to increase the production of gold for the use of the public through the medium of the defendant's corporation, the General Assembly did not exceed its Constitutional power in making the grant to the defendant of the right of way, as expressed in its charter. Let the defendant's ditch or canal be constructed in pursuance of the grant in the defendant's charter, and let the water from Yahoola River and Cane Creek flow therein into the gold belt of Lumpkin County, where, in the judgment of the General Assembly of the State, the public good requires it should flow, so as to enable the defendant to increase the production of gold on its own land, not only for its own use and benefit, but through its agency and organization, for the use and benefit of the public, which at the present moment is greatly in need of an increase of that constitutional currency recognized by the Fathers of the Republic, in 1787, as being of vital importance to the welfare and permanent prosperity of the people."

In the spring of 1885 Mr. Hand, with his family, removed from Cleveland, Ohio, where he had resided for a number of years, and settled at what is now known as Maple Grove, on Broadway, in the village of White Plains, Westchester County.

JOHN M. TILFORD.

Mr. Tilford is one of the members of the well-known firm of Park & Tilford, New York City. He was born in Washington County, N. Y., March 16, 1815, and for twenty years remained upon his father's place engaged in the usual pursuit and activities of a farmer's life.

In 1835 he left his native county and came to New York City, where he entered the grocery store of Benjamin Albro. It was while here that he first met his future partner, Mr. Park, with whom, after a clerkship of five years, in Mr. Albro's store, he embarked upon his first business venture at No. 35 Carmine Street, New York City. How successful this proved to be is well known to all who are familiar with the wholesale and retail grocery business in New York City and throughout the country. Park & Tilford, by their close attention to the details of their business, and the strict integrity which they have preserved throughout an unbroken partnership of nearly forty-six years, have won for themselves a world-wide reputation and a credit which is unsurpassed by that of any house of a like description in the country.

Some twenty-five years since Mr. Tilford began the purchase of ground in Westchester County, and is now the possessor of many acres of farming land in and about the towns of Harrison and White Plains. He has a handsome residence in White Plains, and is well known in its social circles.

In 1840 he married Miss Jennie White. He has two sons, Charles E. and Frank, both of whom are engaged in business with their father.

His business foresight, together with his genial manner, have caused his advice to be widely sought in financial circles and have endeared him both to those in his employ and to the many whose business brings them into daily contact with him.

JOHN W. YOUNG.

Mr. Young, who is a well-known business man in the village of White Plains, was born in New Castle, March 28, 1824. His father, John, and his grandfather, James Young, were also natives of New Castle. The children of John Young (who married Sarah, daughter of Peter Carpenter) were Mary, wife

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

J M Tilford

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF J. M. TILFORD,
WHITE PLAINS N Y.

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF J. M. TILFORD,
WHITE PLAINS N. Y.

Digitized by Google

John W. Young

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"GEDNEY HALL."
RESIDENCE OF BARTHOLOMEW GEDNEY,
RIDGEWAY ST., WHITE PLAINS, N. Y

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"[illegible]PPY HALL."
[illegible]
[illegible]

Digitized by Google

of Robert Purdy; Deborah, wife of Edward Haight; Eliza, who married Conkling Kip; Emeline, wife of J. Reynolds; Lydia, De Witt C., Jackson, Asa, Jesse, John W. and Harrison.

When he had reached the age of fourteen, John W. Young left home and went to Somers, where he worked on a farm, and subsequently removed to Sing Sing, where he engaged in business with his brother. He then went to New York and remained in business there for five years, and afterwards went to Mount Kisco, whence he came to White Plains, which has since been his residence. Here he engaged in the lumber and coal business, which proved extensive and prosperous and is now conducted by his sons and nephews.

He married Hester, daughter of Daniel Trip. They have three children,—Albert, Irving W. and Laura E.

The elegant residence of Mr. Young was built by him in 1874, and is one of the finest private dwellings in White Plains.

Bartholomew Gedney

BARTHOLOMEW GEDNEY.

The family of this name are said to have come from the north of England long before the Revolution. John Gedney, who resided in Yorktown, near Crompond, died about 1763, leaving a family of five children,—John; Polly, wife of Monmouth Hart; Betsy, wife of William Haviland; Martha, wife of —— Covert; and Sarah, wife of Edward Bugbee. Of these children, John, the only son, was born April 16, 1761. His father, who was a farmer, died when the son was two years old, and he went to live with his uncle Bartholomew at White Plains. Upon the decease of his uncle he inherited the homestead and fifty acres of land. His early circumstances were unfavorable and he enjoyed few educational and religious advantages. During the whole of his life he was a farmer, a business which he conducted with such success that at the time of his death he was the owner of a farm of three hundred acres in a high state of cultivation, and was generally considered one of the best agriculturists in the county. He was a devoted and liberal member of the Methodist Church, and highly esteemed as a citizen. He married Mary, daughter of Benjamin Lyon, and they were the parents of ten children,—Margaret, born May 27, 1786, married Peter Cornell; Esther, born January 24, 1788, married Anthony Martine; Abigail, born November 16, 1789, married Nathaniel Tompkins; Elizabeth A., born January 29, 1792, died unmarried in 1831; Phebe, born June 6, 1794, married George Wildey; Dorothy was born August 27, 1796; Charlotte, born June 20, 1800, married Edward Billington; Bartholomew was born April 22, 1802; Elijah L. was born May 5, 1804; Mary L., born September 6, 1806, married Charles Whiting, of New York; and John B. was born June 4, 1808. After a long life of active usefulness Mr. Gedney died December 28, 1841, and rests in the old burying-ground by the Methodist Church in White Plains.

Bartholomew Gedney, the oldest son of this family, has passed his entire life on the ancestral farm inherited from his father. Of an exceedingly industrious nature, he has devoted his time and labor to the improvement of his estate, and is widely known as one of the most accomplished agriculturists in the county. Upon this farm one hundred and twelve bushels of shelled corn have been raised upon an acre of land, while wheat at the rate of forty-seven bushels, and hay to the extent of five tons per acre have been produced. His stock of Short Horn cattle is not excelled by any herd in this section of the country. He is an active member of the Methodist Church, which he joined in 1844. With an active interest in politics, he feels an honest pride in the fact that his first vote was cast for John Quincy Adams, and he has never failed to vote at every Presidential election since that time. He is now a stanch supporter of the Republican party. He has been a member of the Farmers' Club of Bedford for many years, and very

frequently took premiums at the Westchester County Fairs while the society had an existence.

Mr. Gedney married, in 1824, Ann Eliza, daughter of William Hunt, of Tarrytown. They have six children,—Ann A., John, William H., Mary L., wife of William Horton; Jane H., wife of William Banks, of New Castle; and Bartholomew, Jr. The residence of Mr. Gedney is pleasantly situated on the north side of the Ridgeway road, and is surrounded by highly cultivated farms that smile with abundant harvests.

HON. WILLIAM M. OLLIFFE.

Commissioner Olliffe, as he was commonly called, was in so far a Westchester man as that he spent each spring and summer for many years at "Edgewood," his country residence, in the town of Greenburgh. A fondness for fine cattle, for rural life and for out-door sports, besides genial ways and pleasant manners, made him welcome at every fair and agricultural muster. He was perhaps more widely known throughout the county than most of its citizens, through the smartness of his turnouts, the speed of his roadsters and the scrupulousness of his own appearance, which bespoke a city man rather than a country gentleman.

Mr. Olliffe was born in 1843, in Broome Street, then a fashionable quarter of New York. His grandfather, John Olliffe, one of the Irish patriots of 1798, came hither with Thomas Addis Emmett and others, to escape British persecution, before the beginning of the century. About the same time a nephew of the same ancestor went to India and became, in turn, Catholic Bishop and Archbishop of Calcutta. His father, Dr. William J. Olliffe, was a physician of distinction in a family of physicians, one of whom was long body physician to Louis XVI. and another, Sir Joseph, was physician to the British embassy at Paris and to Emperor Louis Napoleon. He came, too, of a notable family on the side of his mother, the daughter of Cornelius T. Williams, whose lands on Manhattan Island included what is now Union Square and extended northward along Broadway to the present Madison Square.

Mr. Olliffe received his general and classical schooling from the celebrated Dr. Anthon. Later he attended and graduated from the College of Pharmacy, of which he was long a trustee and patron.

As became a gentleman of cultivation and of means, he traveled through most of the States of the Union, visited the Mexican republic and made an extended tour in Europe. On his return from the Continent he married the only daughter of Jordan L. Mott, the ironmaster of Mott Haven. In his early manhood and on the death of his father he succeeded to Dr. Olliffe's business as a pharmacist, which he continued as proprietor in such a way as to leave him large leisure for social and other engagements. Although he never ran for office, he took a lively concern in public affairs and in the political fortunes of his party friends, particularly of Samuel J. Tilden and Edward Cooper. The latter made him commissioner under the Rapid Transit Act and also commissioner of public parks in New York City. He was likewise appointed by Mayor Grace to the same municipal department of which he was respectively president and treasurer.

Early in 1883 neglect of a cold allowed a bronchial trouble to become so fastened that he foresaw it never could be shaken off by nursing or medical aid. Then he gave up his customary season at Saratoga and sold his place at Long Branch, preparing to adjust his affairs. In the autumn of the following year he was missed from the races and gatherings which he had graced and enjoyed. The winter found him too feeble to journey southward, as he had done before, and confined him, reluctant but uncomplaining, within doors to suffer a painful illness and to pass away at the very commencement of the spring from the town house of his father-in-law, a little before midnight, the 9th of March, 1885.

Even those who knew him best knew not how widely and how well he had endeared himself, until a few day later, at his funeral, the Church of the Puritans was crowded within and thronged without, not only by dignitaries of the city, judges from the bench and members of his societies and clubs, but also by people of humbler rank than himself, who came to offer a last expression of affection for a friend and benefactor.

CHAPTER XIX.

KING'S BRIDGE.

BY THOMAS H. EDSALL,
of the New York bar.

DESCRIPTION.—The area under consideration—about four thousand acres—lies just south of the city of Yonkers.[1] Its boundaries are the Yonkers city line on the north, the Bronx on the east, the late West Farms line,[2] Harlem River and Spuyten Duyvil Creek on the south, and the Hudson on the west. Its northernmost point, Mount St. Vincent, is about twelve miles from White Plains and fifteen miles from the city hall, New York. Its outlines extend along the Yonkers city line three miles, the Bronx one and five-tenths miles, the West Farms line one and five-tenths miles, the Harlem River and Spuyten

[1] This name, derived from Dr. Adraien Van der Donck's title of *Jonker*, was not applied to any part of the present Yonkers until the erection of the township of that name, in 1788. Before that date for more than a century "the Yonkers" or "the Yonkers Plantation," was the name of a precinct which comprised the greater part of the township of King's Bridge, while the present Yonkers was called Phillipsburgh, being part of the manor of that name, erected in 1693.

[2] Coincident with the north line of the Manor of Fordham, erected November, 1671.

Digitized by Google

-ocial and other engagements. Although he | November, 1671.

Digitized by Google

W. M. Olliffe

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Duyvil Creek one and five-tenths miles, and the Hudson two and five-tenths miles.

Topographically, it consists of two main ridges and an intermediate one, having their axes parallel with the Palisades of New Jersey, and a direction north-northeast. 1. Spuyten Duyvil Ridge, from Yonkers city line to Spuyten Duyvil Creek, and between the Hudson on the west and Tippett's Brook[1] on the east. Greatest elevation, two hundred and eighty-two feet,[2] on land of Frederick Goodridge, Riverdale. 2. Valentine's Ridge, from Yonkers line to West Farms line, and between the Bronx[3] on the east and Tippett's Brook on the west. Greatest elevation, two hundred and forty feet, near Woodlawn Heights. 3. Van Cortlandt Ridge, intermediate, from Yonkers line to Vault Hill, between Tippett's Brook on the east and its main branch on the west. Greatest elevation, two hundred feet, near Yonkers city line.

Tippett's Brook, the main stream, rises in Yonkers, flows southwesterly until it forms Van Cortlandt Lake,[4] below which it is a tidal stream to its outlet into Spuyten Duyvil Creek. About twenty lesser brooks, varying in length from five hundred to ten thousand feet, flow into the Hudson, the Bronx and Tippett's Brook.

The geological formations are very ancient, consisting mainly of micaceous gneiss or granite,[5] the former largely preponderating, the exposed surfaces indicating subjection to intense heat and pressure, with so great displacement that the strata are nearly vertical, outcropping in numerous parallel ledges, not continuous, but *en echelon*, and giving steep inclination to hillsides. A coarse, crystallized limestone[6] of varying hardness, ranging about north-northeast, crops out at King's Bridge and on the Whiting and Delafield estates, Spuyten Duyvil Ridge. On the latter ridge the surface of the primary rocks is strewn with trap boulders.

Discovery.—The earliest known visitor to this locality was Henry Hudson. Going up the river which bears his name, he skirted its westerly shore September 13, 1609, and, on his return, was attacked, October 2d, from *Shorack-Kappock*, the Indian name of Spuyten Duyvil Point,[7] and the kill or creek at its base.

Indians.—The Indian name of this section was *Weckquaeskeek*,—"the birch-bark country,"—and its residents were known to the first settlers as *Wickers-creek* Indians. In person they were tolerably stout. Their hair was worn shorn to a coxcomb on top, with a long lock depending on one side. They wore beaver and other skins, with the fur inside in winter and outside in summer, and also coats of turkey feathers. They were valiant warriors. "Yea," says De Vries, "they say they are *Manetto*—the devil himself!" Their leading sachems, at the advent of white settlers, were *Tequemet*, *Rechgawac* and *Packamiens*, from whom the Dutch director, Kieft, purchased, in August, 1639, the tract *Keskeskick*. This tribe gradually dwindled, until its remnant finally disappeared before the end of the eighteenth century.

First Settlement.—The earliest white resident and proprietor was Dr. Adraien Van der Donck, *juris utriusque doctor*, of Leyden. He had been sheriff of the Colonie of Rensselaerswyck since 1641. Having aided Director Kieft in negotiating an important Indian treaty at Fort Orange, Albany, the latter granted him, in 1645, a large tract on the Nepperhaem River, Yonkers, where he built a saw-mill,[8] laid out farms and plantations and "had actually resolved to continue." But that indispensable requisite of a Dutch farm, salt meadow, was lacking. In search of this, Van der Donck found, about a mile above the *wading-place* (King's Bridge) "a flat, with some convenient meadows about it," which he promptly secured by purchase from the Indians and a further grant from Kieft. His new acquisition included the area under consideration, extending from the Hudson to the Bronx, and from the Spuyten Duyvil Creek to the Nepperhaem tract. Here he located his *bowerie*, or home-farm, with its "planting-field," and near the latter he had already begun the erection of his house, before going to Holland, in 1649, as the representative of the commonalty of New Amsterdam. Van der Donck's "planting-field" was on the plain or flat of the Van Cortlandt estate, lying between Broadway and the present lake, and extending up to the southerly end of Vault Hill.[9] It is probable that his house was on the flat, and located, perhaps, where the old house of Jacobus Van Cortlandt afterwards stood until the early part of this century.[10]

While absent in Holland, Van der Donck's lands were erected into the fief or Colonie of Nepperhaem (or, as he called it after his own name, *Colen-*

[1] So called after George Tippett, an early settler and proprietor, and of late corrupted into *Tibbitt's* Brook. Its Indian name was *Moshola*. It has also been known as *Mill Creek* and *Yonkers River*.

[2] The highest ground within the limits of New York City. The elevation of Fort Washington, the greatest on Manhattan Island, is two hundred and sixty-four feet.

[3] So called after Jonas Bronck, the earliest white settler and proprietor of "Bronck's Land," now Morrisania, Twenty-third Ward, New York.

[4] An artificial pond, formed by Jacobus Van Cortlandt, *circa* 1700, by damming Tippett's Brook.

[5] Affording building-stone of fine quality. Before 1750 quarries of "broken stone" were worked on Spuyten Duyvil Ridge, the whole extent of which is scarred by them. The large quarries at Spuyten Duyvil Point were worked until about 1850.

[6] Known as *King's Bridge Marble*. It was extensively quarried early in the century on the northerly end of Manhattan Island. Perkins Nicholls had a marble-sawing mill at "Dyckman's Cut" (which was excavated to supply power to this mill by the ebb and flow of the tide), and another at the King's Bridge. On the banks of the Hudson, along the base of Spuyten Duyvil Ridge, were several kilns for making lime from this stone, all of which have been disused for many years.

[7] According to tradition, the natives had a castle or stronghold on the point.

[8] Hence the name of "Saw Kill," by which this stream became known.

[9] It may have also stretched eastward across the brook and beyond the site of the present lake.

[10] Its site was just behind the present grove of locusts, north of the Van Cortlandt Mills.

Digitized by Google

Historical

KINGS

1645 –

Compile

Thom

Scale 2,000 feet to an

Digitized by Google

three hundred feet south of Thorn's dock, and the Bronx about five hundred feet south of the Yonkers city line, and the purchase included all south of it, excepting Paparinamin, for which Tippett received a separate "deed of gift" from Doughty. It included "that piece where formerly the old Van der Donck's house stood," and what are now Spuyten Duyvil, Hudson Park, Mosholu, Van Cortlandt's, Olaff Park, Woodlawn Heights and Woodlawn Cemetery. Betts and Tippett obtained from Governor Lovelace, February 20, 1671, a patent which contained a proviso that it should no way prejudice "the New towne of ffordham," nor what had been done by his order towards its settlement.

Mr. Betts was an Englishman, and by trade a turner. He was at Scituate, Mass., in 1635, four years after which he married Alice, a "maiden of the Bay," who bore him several children. With his minister, Lothrop, he removed to Barnstable, and thence came to Connecticut. In 1662 he lived at Oost Dorp, where he was a magistrate by appointment of Stuyvesant. He was named as a patentee in the English patent for the town of Westchester, granted in 1668. The same year he removed to his new plantation in the Yonkers, and the next year became overseer of the court at Fordham. He died in 1675, survived by his wife, Alice, sons, Samuel, Hopestill and John, a daughter, Mehitable, wife of George Tippett, and a grandson, John Barrett, son of a deceased daughter, Hannah, who had married Samuel Barrett, of Westchester. Descendants of the name of Betts continued to own portions of the ancestral acres until the early part of this century.

Mr. Tippett was at Flushing in August, 1667, when he gave in his name to the Governor "to be ready to serve his Majesty" on all occasions. While he lived in the Yonkers the swine of the New Harlem people used to run at large at the upper end of Manhattan Island, and sometimes straying across the *wading-place* at low tide, failed to return. Tippett would be charged with their detention and the whole community hauled into court as witnesses. Tippett's "ear-mark" for his own swine was said to be "the cutting of their ears so close that any other marks might be cut off by it." Mr. Tippett died intestate in 1675, survived by his wife, Mehitable (afterward married to Lewis Vitrey and Samuel Hitchcock), a son George, perhaps a son Henry, and a daughter Mehitable (who was married first to Joseph Hadley and second to John Concklin). Descendants of his name held portions of the estate until the Revolutionary War.

"Tippett's Hill" was the name of Spuyten Duyvil Neck during the same period,[1] and the principal stream of the Yonkers has always been called after him, although corrupted into "Tibbits" in recent times.

[1] Known after the Revolution and until recently as "Berrien's Neck," after an owner who married Dorcas Tippett, a great-great-granddaughter of the first George.

John Hadden[2] made the next purchase from Doughty. His deed of June 7, 1668, antedates that of Betts and Tippett, but bounds on land already sold to them. It conveys three parcels aggregating three hundred and twenty acres, lying directly north of Van der Donck's planting-field and extending across from the Albany post road to the road to Mile Square. The Van Cortlandt estate now includes the whole of it. For two hundred acres Hadden gave a *horse* and for the remainder five pounds! In December, 1668, Betts sold to Hadden twenty-four acres adjoining his "house in the old field."

Mr. Hadden was a carpenter by trade. He settled in the Yonkers with his sons-in-law, George Clevinger and William Smith, and in 1672 he was made overseer of the village of Fordham. His sons-in-law dying a few years later, Mr. Hadden sold out and returned to Westchester, where he and his descendants were respected citizens.

Doughty next sold the remainder of the O'Neale patent (excepting "Mile Square," already disposed of) to Thomas Delavall, Fredryk Flypsen and Thomas Lewis.[3] It was conveyed to them November 9, 1672, by purchase from Delavall, and the heirs of Lewis, Flypsen subsequently acquired their interests. The tract contained about eight thousand acres. Riverdale, Mount St. Vincent and a part of Woodlawn Heights are located on the southerly part of this purchase.

Mr. Flypsen was a carpenter by trade. He came to Nieuw Amsterdam in Stuyvesant's time, under an engagement with the West India Company for five years, during which time he worked on the forts at Nieuw Amsterdam and Esopus. He married, in 1662, Margaret Hardenbrook, widow of Peter Rudolphus de Vries, a successful trader. Margaret was also engaged in trade, which she continued after this marriage, going to and from Holland as supercargo of her own vessels, in one of which, the "Charles," she brought over the Labadists, in 1679. By her "fortune, thrift and enterprise" and his exertions, Mr. Flypsen became the richest man in the colony. After the death of Margaret he married, in 1692, Catherine Van Cortlandt, widow of John Dervall and daughter of Olaf Stevenszen Van Cortlandt, by whom he received further additions to his wealth. Mr. Flypsen purchased other large tracts of land in Westchester County. In 1693 he procured the erection of the whole into the Manor of Phillipsburgh, in which the "island Paparinamin" was included. The old *manor-house* is now the city hall in Yonkers. For twenty years Mr. Flypsen was a member of the

[2] In early records and MSS. this name is sometimes written "Heddy," "Hedger," etc.

[3] This was probably the sale for which Mrs. O'Neale "received a good part of her payment in horses and mares," with which she was about to "return home into Maryland, y° place of her abode;" but hearing report of a prohibition against importing horses to that colony, she procured a letter to its Governor from Governor Lovelace, of New York, asking a dispensation from the rigor of the late order in her case so as to permit her to dispose of her horses in Maryland to her best advantage.

Digitized by Google

Council. He died in 1702, aged seventy-six, survived by a son Adolphus, a daughter Annetje, wife of Philip French, an adopted daughter Eva, wife of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, and a grandson Frederick (son of his deceased son Frederick,) to whom he devised the Yonkers plantation.

THE FERRY.—Soon after the village of Fordham was settled the people of New Harlem tried to divert eastern travel from the *wading-place* to the new ferry they had set up between New Harlem and Bronx-land. They obstructed the banks at Spuyten Duyvil[1] with fences, but travelers threw them down and still crossed at the ancient ford without paying toll. In the summer of 1669 the ferry was removed to Spuyten Duyvil, "a nearer and more convenient passage to and from the island and the Maine," and Johannes Verveelen was made ferryman. There was allotted to his use the "island or neck of land Paparinamin," where he was required to provide a dwelling-house furnished with three or four good beds for the entertainment of strangers; also provisions at all seasons for them, their horses and cattle, with stabling and stalling; also a sufficient and able boat to transport passengers, horses and cattle on all occasions.[2] A causeway was also required to be built across the meadow from Paparinamin to Fordham, of which Verveelen was to bear one-third of the expense and Fordham the remainder. Archer called on Betts, Tippett and Hadden to help him build his share of the "*causey*." They demurred, being more interested in having a bridge made over the Bronx to East Chester. The dispute came before the Governor, who decided that Betts, Tippett and Hadden should first aid with the causeway,[3] and then the Fordham people should help them build the bridge. For so doing the ferry was made free to Betts, Tippett and Hadden. Verveelen kept the ferry many years and was succeeded by his son Daniel, who was ferryman until the erection of the King's Bridge.

During the last quarter of the seventeenth century the Betts, Tippett and Hadden families, and those who had intermarried with them, and their retainers and servants composed all the population of the Yonkers outside of Fordham and Paparinamin. Their homes were grouped about a mile north of Fordham, where they had a "good and strong block-house."[4] During King Philip's War, in 1775, there were fears of an Indian outbreak in this colony. Archer summoned Betts, Tippett and Hadden to aid him in the fortification and defense of Fordham. They remonstrated before Governor Andros that they should not "bee bound to leave their houses and goods and to please the humours of the said Mr. Archer, thereby perhaps to lose all what they have." The Governor excused them from work on the defenses of Fordham, but he warned them to "be vigilant at their own place and keep watch upon all occasions."

THE KING'S BRIDGE.—The increasing travel between New York and "the Maine" demanded a bridge in place of the ferry. As early as 1680 the Council of Governor Andros had ordered "Spiting Devil" to be viewed with reference to a bridge there. A bill to erect one was introduced in the Assembly in 1691. The next year Governor Fletcher recommended its construction by the city of New York, but the municipal authorities were deterred from the undertaking by the "great expense." In January, 1693, Fredryck Flypsen offered to build one at his own expense, if he could have certain "easy and reasonable toles."[5] In June the franchise was granted to Mr. Flypsen for ninety-nine years. The bridge was to be twenty-four feet wide, and to be free for all the King's forces, and was to be named the "King's Bridge." It was built during the year, a few rods east of the present one.[6] It had a draw for the passage of such craft as navigated the Harlem and a gate, set up at the end, where the keeper received the tolls.[7] A public-house was kept open at the north side for the "entertainment of strangers." The bridge was owned by Mr. Flypsen's grandson and great-grandson, in succession, until it was forfeited by the latter, Colonel Frederick Phillipse, because of his adhesion to the crown in the war of independence.

During the first half of the eighteenth century the Yonkers was sparsely peopled. Jacobus Van Cortlandt bought a plot of fifty acres, known as "George's Point,"[8] from Mr. Flypsen, in 1699, and

[1] This curious appellation, whose origin has never been satisfactorily explained, seems to have been applied to a strip of shore on the Manhattan Island side of the wading-place, then to the crossing itself and the creek leading therefrom to the Hudson, and finally to the neck which still retains it. It means "spouting devil," and may have arisen from some peculiar *upburst* of water as the tide rushed over the reef which obstructs the channel at that point. Mr. Riker has ingeniously suggested the outpour from the guns of the "Half-Moon;" also the gushing spring under Cock Hill; but the explanation in Irving's quaint and humorous legend of the 'Trumpeter' will ever meet with popular acceptance.

[2] "YE FERRYMAN—HIS RATES.

"For lodging any person, 8 pence per night, in case they have a bed with sheets; and without sheets, 2 pence in silver.

"For transportation of any person, 1 penny silver.

"For transportation of a man and horse, 7 pence in silver.

"For a single horse, 6 pence.

"For a turn with his boat, for 2 horses, 10 pence; and for any more 4 pence apiece; and if they be driven over, half as much.

"For single cattle, as much as a horse.

"For a boat loading of cattle, as he hath for horses.

"For droves of cattle to be driven over, and opening ye gates, 2 pence p. piece.

"For feeding of cattle, 3 pence in silver.

"For feeding a horse one day or night with hay or grasse, 6 pence."

[3] This causeway was on the line of the present McComb Street.

[4] They probably stood in the neighborhood of the present Van Cortlandt mansion.

[5] To wit: "1 penny for each head of neat cattell; 2 pens for each "mann and horse, and 12 pens for each score of hoggs and sheep that "shall pass the said brige; and 9 pens for every boat, vessell or canoo "that shall pass the said brige, and cause the same to be drawne up."

[6] The removal to its present site was made pursuant to an act of Assembly passed in 1713 at the petition of Flypsen's grandson, Frederick Phillipse, then a minor.

[7] Madame Knight, crossing December, 1704, *en route* to Boston, was charged three pence "for passing over with a horse."

[8] So called after George Tippett (2d), who conveyed it in 1691, to his brother-in-law, Joseph Hadley. He sold to Matthias Buckout, who conveyed to Mr. Flypsen.

added to it several hundred acres while he lived, forming the bulk of the present Van Cortlandt estate. He made a mill-pond by damming up the Tippett's Brook, and set up a grist and saw-mill. In 1704 there were about twenty families in the Yonkers. The Betts and Tippett families partitioned their tract in 1717, and gradually sold it off to new settlers. Agriculture was the chief industry, and the farms were noted for choice fruits and fine breeds of cattle. Produce was carried to market in periaugers. Stone quarrying was engaged in before the middle of the century.

The main highways were the Albany and Boston post roads—the former opened to the Saw-kill about 1669, and the latter opened on the line of the Old Westchester Path to East Chester about 1671. The travel by land was almost wholly on horseback. The common roads were very poor. The mail to Albany was carried by foot-post. That to Boston was taken by post-riders once in three weeks, which time was shortened in 1731 to once a fortnight. The stage-coach to Boston began running in 1772.

THE FREE BRIDGE.—The King's Bridge was unpopular because of its tolls; also its barrier gate, which made the belated traveler furious as he shouted to awaken the drowsy gate-keeper several rods away. A popular subscription was started in 1756 for building a free bridge. Benjamin Palmer[1] headed the movement, and when enough was subscribed, he attempted to build it where the first bridge had stood. Colonel Phillipse, who owned the shore on Paparinamin, naturally objected. Palmer had to go farther down the Harlem. He interested with him Jacob Dyckman, on the island, and Thomas Vermilye, on the Westchester side, and they began the work from land of the former to that of the latter. Colonel Phillipse, "because he knew it would stop his bridge from taking tolls," tried to prevent its construction. Twice in one year he caused Palmer's impressment "as a soldier to go to Canada," which compelled him to employ and pay for substitutes. But in spite of opposition the structure was completed at the close of 1758. It was opened with a grand barbecue on New Year's Day, 1759, and hundreds of people attended from New York City and Westchester County, and "rejoiced greatly."[2] A new road was built to connect the bridge with the Albany and Boston roads, and for a time all travel ceased across the King's Bridge. Colonel Phillipse's bridge-keeper finding his occupation gone, threw up his lease, and the proprietor had to advertise for a new tenant. It is probable that attempts to collect tolls were abandoned soon afterwards.

In 1763 the Rev. John Peter Tetard purchased from Petrus Vermilye a farm of sixty acres, near King's Bridge, lying on the old Boston road, to which he removed about three years later. In 1772 he opened there a French boarding-school, probably the first in New York, where, besides French, he taught "the most useful sciences, such as geography, the doctrine of the spheres, ancient and modern history, etc." The house was destroyed during the Revolution. The old stone archway yet standing near its site is variously called "Dominie Tetard's Wine Cellar," the old "powder magazine," the "old bakery," etc., but its real purpose is unknown.[3]

Across the Boston road from Tetard's farm was one of about seventy-five acres, which Richard Montgomery purchased and occupied in 1772, pursuant to his long-cherished wish to leave the service and engage in husbandry.[4] His house stood on the brow of the hill, near the Boston road,[5] and there he lived until his marriage to Janet Livingston and removal to another farm he had puchased near Rhinebeck.[6] The King's Bridge farm was devised to his sister Sarah, Viscountess Ranelagh, by the will found by Arnold among his papers at Quebec, a few days after his untimely death. Fort Independence was erected on this farm, a few hundred yards north of the house which, with the out-buildings, orchards, fences, etc., was completely destroyed during the Revolution.

THE REVOLUTION.—The inhabitants of the Yonkers were generally opposed to all efforts of the British ministry to establish arbitrary government in the colonies. Colonel Phillipse sided with the crown and tried to control his tenants. At their head, he was present at the meeting held at the White Plains, April 11, 1775, to appoint deputies to a convention; but he declined "to have anything to do with deputies or congresses." After protesting against "such illegal and unconstitutional proceedings," he led off his followers. Colonel James Van Cortlandt

[1] Who attempted to found a city as a rival to New York, on an island in the Sound, since called "City Island."

[2] Dyckman, who built a tavern at the approach to the free bridge (where the King's Bridge Hotel now stands), failed soon afterward, and sought legislative relief for his outlays in its construction. Palmer, towards the end of the century, unsuccessfully applied to the Assembly for aid on the same account. The press took up his cause and declared that his work had been "the first step towards freedom in this State, * * * "for it was almost as difficult for Mr. Palmer to get a free bridge in "those days as it was for America to get her freedom." Aaron Burr and others made up a purse of £30 for the needy old man in 1800.

[3] Dominie Tetard was born in Switzerland about 1721; graduated from University of Lausanne and received ordination about 1752; soon after was pastor of French Church, Charleston, S. C.; came to New York 1756; married Frances, daughter of Robert Ellison; became assistant pastor of Church du St. Esprit, taking charge 1764–66, until a new minister could be engaged in Europe. After his removal to King's Bridge he used to preach in Fordham Dutch Church. He was commissioned July 6, 1775, "French interpreter to General Schuyler and chaplain to the troops in the Colonie," with pay of major, and went with General Montgomery to Canada. He served as chaplain during the war, and on the reorganization of Columbia College, in 1784, was made professor of French, and so continued until his death, December 6, 1787, in his sixty-sixth year.

[4] So declared in a letter shortly prior to his resignation. He meant to come to America, "where his pride and poverty would be much more at their ease."

[5] A little way inside of the gateway of Mr. William Ogden Giles.

[6] *New York Gazetteer*, October 7, 1773, contains his advertisement of the King's Bridge farm "at private sale."

Digitized by Google

and his brother Frederick, of the Yonkers, heartily favored resistance.

The news from Lexington was shouted at every threshold along the old Boston road in the night of April 22d, as the herald spurred on towards New York. A few days later the inhabitants were aiding to unload, at King's Bridge and the hills beyond, upward of one hundred cannon,[1] which had been carted out from the city for security. On the 8th of May the new committee for Westchester County, on which Frederick Van Cortlandt represented the Yonkers, chose Colonel James Van Cortlandt as deputy to the new Provincial Congress, and he attended its first meeting at the exchange in Broad Street.

The importance of maintaining communication by land between New York and the country so impressed the Continental Congress that it resolved, on May 25th, that a post should be immediately taken and fortified at King's Bridge. On the 30th the Provincial Congress appointed a committee of five, including Captain Richard Montgomery and Colonel James Van Cortlandt to view the ground near the bridge and report whether it would admit of a tenable fortification. Their report of June 3d favored a post for three hundred men on the hill adjoining Hyatt's tavern, but recommended no form or dimensions and thought it imprudent to fortify until the embodiment of troops, who could do most of the labor. Commanding points on Tippett's and Tetard's Hills were suggested for additional works. On the spots thus indicated forts were afterwards erected by the Americans, and when captured by the British, were strengthened and garrisoned by them for many years.[2]

Colonel Van Cortlandt was a member of the committee of the Provincial Congress to arrange the troops and form the militia. Frederick Van Cortlandt, Thomas Emmons, Williams Betts and William Hadley were of the local committee for the Yonkers. Under their supervision a militia company was formed in the precinct, as part of the "South Battalion" of the county. The roster included sixty-four names,—Anthony Allaire, Abraham Asten, George Berrien, Wm. Betts, Frederick, Gilbert and Robert Brown, Hendrick Browne, Jr., Henry Bursen, Jno. Cock, Jno. and Edw'd Cortright, Geo. and Jas. Crawford, Jno. Cregier, Daniel Deen, John Devoe, Abraham Emmons, Benj., Thos. and Robert Farrington, Usial Fountain, Wm. and Isaac Green, Geo., Isaac, Jos. and Wm. Hadley, Thos. Merrill, Jas. Munro, Jos. Jr., and Thos. Oakley, Abraham and John Odell, Jas. Parker, Abm. Dennis, Isaac, Israel, Jacob, Lewis, Martin and Wm. Post, Henry Presher, Tobias Rickman, Wm. Rose, Edward and John Ryer, Francis Smith, Chas. Elnathan, Jr., Elijah, Henry and Jacob Taylor, Izarell Underhill. Frederick Van Cortlandt, Abm, Frederick and Josh. Vermilye, John and Wm. Warner, Geo. Wertz, John and Samuel Williams. On August 24, 1775, they chose John Cock, captain; Wm. Betts, first lieutenant; John Warner, second lieutenant; and Jacob Post, ensign. The names were sent to the Provincial Congress for commissions. The county committee protested against the captain elect, and on the 11th of September presented the affidavit of William Hadley, of the district committee, that when he presented the "general association" to Cock, he said, "I sign this with my hand, but not with my heart; for I would not have signed it, had it not been for my wife and family's sake." The friends of Cock rallied to his support. A majority of the company and a score more inhabitants of Yonkers[3] sent down a petition in his favor, stating that he had been chosen "for his well-known skill and ability in the military discipline," and that the complaints were made out of "spite and malice." But further affidavits by Isaac Green and George Hadley, that Cock "had damned the Continental Congress," satisfied the Committee of Safety that it was improper to give Cock a commission. The local committee was ordered to hold a new election, "taking care to give public notice that John Cock cannot be admitted to any office whatsoever."[4]

The twenty-one nine-pounders carried off from the Battery by the Sons of Liberty, August 23d, were hauled up to King's Bridge and left with the rest in care of the minute men. In the night of January 17, 1776, more than fifty guns near Williams', and as many in the fields near Isaac Valentine's, were spiked or "loaded and stopped with stones and other rubbish." Search was made for the perpetrators. John Fowler was brought before the Committee of Safety on the 23d, charged with a recent purchase of rat-tail files in New York. He implicated William Lounsbery, of Mamaroneck, as the real purchaser. They were imprisoned. Jacamiah Allen was employed to unspike the guns at twenty shillings each. He raised them on fires of several cords of wood, tended day and night to soften the spikes, and by March 16th he had unspiked eighty-two and expected to soon complete the work. These guns were afterwards mounted

[1] Compensation to the heirs of Sebring and Beekman, for certain of these guns, was provided for by an act of the Legislature, passed in 1800.

[2] The British called the redoubt on the hill near Hyatt's tavern "*Ft. Prince Charles*;" the one on Tippett's Hill "*Number Three*, and the one on Tetard's Hill, the American Ft. Independence, "*Number Four*."

[3] They were Matthias, Anthony and Benjamin Archer, Benjamin Arsdan, Stephen Bastine, Ezekial and Henry Brown, George Crawford, Benjamin Farrington, Jonathan Fowler, John Guereneau, Samuel Lawrence, Henry and Jordan Norris, David, Jr., and Moses Oakley, Abm., James and Thomas Rich, Elnathan Taylor and Thomas Tippett.

[4] Cock kept the old tavern on the north side of King's Bridge. The head of the overthrown statue of George III., in the Bowling Green, was carried to Fort Washington, to be fixed to a spike on the flag-staff. While it was left temporarily at Jacob Moore's tavern, near by, an emissary from Colonel Montresor went out through the "rebel camp" with a message to Cock to steal and bury the head. This was done (probably at Cock's tavern), and when the British arrived, in November, 1776, it was dug up and sent in care of Lady Gage to Lord Townsend, "to convince them at home of the infamous disposition of the ungrateful people of this distracted country."

Digitized by Google

in the works erected by the American troops on the hills about King's Bridge.

In February, 1776, Augustus Van Cortlandt, clerk of New York City, reported to the Committee of Safety that for their security he had removed the public records to Yonkers. They were deposited in Colonel Van Cortlandt's family burial vault[1] and were still there in December; but it is probable the British were soon afterwards apprised of their place of concealment and had them returned to the city.

On the 18th of March the Yonkers militia held a new election and chose John Warner, captain; Jacob Post, first lieutenant; Samuel Lawrence, second lieutenant; and Isaac Post, ensign. In May the Provincial Congress had in service the armed schooner "General Putnam," commanded by Captain Thomas Cregier, of King's Bridge. After months of inactivity at the heads of inlets when he should have been at sea, Cregier was discharged for inefficiency and the vessel was sold.

Early in June Washington visited and inspected the grounds above King's Bridge. He found them to admit of seven places well calculated for defense. "Esteeming it a pass of the utmost importance in order to keep open communication with the country," he set two Pennsylvania regiments at work on their fortification, and put bodies of militia to the same labor as fast as they arrived. In General Orders of July 2d, Mifflin was directed to repair to King's Bridge and to use his utmost endeavors to forward the works. "*The time is now at hand which must probably determine whether Americans are to be freemen or slaves*" is a memorable sentence in this order. The enemy was ready to disembark in the lower bay. It was unknown from what quarter their attack would come. Mifflin thought they would divert attention to the heights above King's Bridge, and it was reported they meant to erect strong works there to cut off communication between city and country. On the 12th of July the ships of war "Rose" and "Phœnix" sailed up the Hudson, and unaware of the new batteries which had been planted on Tippett's and Cock Hills, anchored near the mouth of Spuyten Duyvil Creek. A dozen guns opened fire on them and "did great execution." On the 15th additional troops were hurried out to King's Bridge, the destruction of which was apprehended. Three hundred men were sent up the Harlem River in boats on the 19th and were put to work on the forts. Engineers were assigned, tools supplied and the work carried on night and day during the ensuing fortnight. On the 8th of August General Clinton was directed to send expresses to Ulster, Dutchess, Orange and Westchester Counties, to hasten levies and march them down to the fort erected on the north side of the bridge. On the 13th General Heath was put in command of the division stationed there and large quantities of provisions and ammunition were sent up. The "Rose" and "Phœnix" with their tenders were anchored off Mt. St. Vincent. On the nights of the 14th, 15th and 16th numbers of officers and men, (including on two occasions Generals Heath and Clinton) gathered on Tippett's Hill to witness an attempt to destroy these vessels with fire-ships. It was made at midnight on the 17th. A flaming galley set fire to one of the tenders and consumed her with "horrid flames." At sunrise on the 18th the frigates and remaining tenders fled down stream, and ran through the *chevaux-de-frise* under a heavy cannonade from the "Blue Bell Fort"[2] and Fort Lee. On the 21st Washington assigned the new engineer Monsieur Martin to the post at King's Bridge and under his direction work was pressed on the fortifications. On the 23d Clinton's brigade was ordered into camp. Colonel Thomas's regiment pitched on the south side of Fort Independence, Colonel Graham's about half a mile farther southward, Colonel Paulding's and Colonel Nicholas' on the flat below, near Corsa's orchard, and Colonel Swartwout on the southerly end of Tippett's Hill. On the 25th a detachment went down from King's Bridge to Paulus Hook in "the flat-bottomed boat" and brought back a number of gun-carriages, on which cannon were mounted in the new works. Colonel Swartwout's regiment threw up a battery "on the north side of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, at its very mouth," to prevent the enemy from approaching the bridge in boats, and also constructed two additional redoubts on the top of Tippett's Hill, one of which was called "Fort Swartwout."[3] No "fatigue rum" was allowed to any one engaged on these works, except on certificate that he had been "faithful, obedient and industrious." On the 27th the Provincial Congress, then sitting at Harlem, alarmed by the defeat on Long Island, ordered its records and papers, and the receiver-general's chest to be taken at once to the camp at King's Bridge. On the 29th Heath impressed every boat and craft at the post and hurried them down to Washington for use in the retreat from Long Island. On the 31st the inhabitants began driving their cattle into the interior. The Committee of Safety now urged on Washington the defensibility of the country above the bridge and the dreadful consequences of its occupation by the enemy. He replied that the defensible state of that ground had not escaped him, and that as the posts at King's Bridge were of such great importance, he hoped the convention would afford aid for their defense. When it became evident in September that the city was untenable by the Americans in the face of the superior British force, Washington determined to take post at King's Bridge and along the Westchester shore, where

[1] This ancient depository of the city records is still used as a burial-place by the family, and gives the name to the hill on which it is located.

[2] Fort Washington, near which the old Blue Bell tavern stood.

[3] The night guard in this work, October 17, 1776, was one captain, two lieutenants and fifty men.

Digitized by Google

barracks could be procured for the part of the army without tents. He concluded to leave five thousand men on the island for defense of the city, and to post nine thousand at King's Bridge and its dependencies. On the 8th Heath was instructed to fell trees across the roads towards the bridge, to dig holes in them, break them up and destroy them so as to be impassable. The next day one hundred and sixty thousand boards were ordered for the barracks at the bridge, also brick and stones for ovens, which all soldiers who were masons were ordered to assist in making.

Meanwhile the inhabitants suffered from the occupation of their farms. Fences were pulled down and burned and corn-fields, gardens and orchards pillaged. The orders of the day pronounced it "cruel as well as unjust and scandalous thus to destroy the inhabitants by destroying the little property for which they have been sweating and toiling through the summer and were expecting very soon to reap the fruits of."

Howe's movement to Throg's Neck caused Washington to call a meeting of general officers at King's Bridge. It was held on the 16th of October, when it was determined to abandon Manhattan Island. On the 19th strong pickets were established and frequent night patrols made through all the region about King's Bridge. On the 20th Washington moved his headquarters to the bridge, where the main army was now in barracks, and continued there until the 22d. During the next few days the army moved off to the heights of the Bronx, leaving garrisons in the forts about King's Bridge under orders to destroy them on the enemy's approach in force. Col. Lasher, in Fort Independence, was "to burn the barracks, quit the post and join the army, by way of the North River, at White Plains." At three in the morning of the 28th the long lines of barracks were fired and the forts abandoned. Their garrisons either withdrew to Fort Washington, or, crossing to New Jersey, rejoined their regiments at White Plains by way of King's Ferry. Gen. Greene, coming out from Fort Washington, found several hundred stand of small arms, great numbers of spears, shot, shells, etc. To carry these off he impressed all the wagons in the neighborhood. He then dismantled King's Bridge and the Free Bridge. On the evening of the 29th General Knyphausen, with a force of Hessians and Waldeckers which had landed at New Rochelle, approached Fort Independence by the old Boston road, and, finding it deserted, occupied it the following day. He took possession of the other works on Tetard's Hill and occupied them until November 2d. Then, with part of his forces, he descended and took a position on Paparinamin, north of King's Bridge. Having repaired the bridge, he crossed over and occupied the deserted American post on the opposite hill, but retired on the 4th. He crossed again on the 7th with fifteen hundred men and took positions on the hills commanding the old King's Bridge road. On the 16th the remainder of General Knyphausen's force crossed over the Free Bridge and united in the capture of Fort Washington, which thereafter took his name.

Being now possessed of the whole of Manhattan Island, the British adopted and strengthened the American works at and about King's Bridge for the defense of New York City. Beginning with the westerly redoubt on Spuyten Duyvil Neck, and going eastward, and from Fort Independence southward, they were distinguished by the numbers 1 to 8, inclusive.

Number One was located where the house of the late Peter O. Strang stands, in grading for which all traces of the fort were obliterated. It was square, and overlooked the Hudson and Spuyten Duyvil Creek at their confluence.

Number Two was a circular redoubt on the crown of the hill in the field west of Warren B. Sage's residence. Its walls are yet discernible.[1] This was the American Fort Swartwout. In the adjoining field to the westward a flanking redan may yet be seen overlooking the Riverdale road.

Number Three stood where Warren B. Sage's house now stands, on the easterly brow of Spuyten Duyvil Hill and directly overlooking the post on the northerly end of Manhattan Island at King's Bridge, called Fort Prince Charles[2] by the British. Numbers one, two and three were first garrisoned in 1777. In November, 1778, the three works had a garrison of one hundred and ten officers and men. They were abandoned by the British in the fall of 1779.

The creek near Johnson's foundry was crossed by a pontoon bridge, and a military road ran from it up the easterly side of the hill to and along Spring Street, where it branched off to the Redoubts One, Two and Three.

Number Four was the American Fort Independence, on Tetard's Hill, across the valley. The house of William Ogden Giles now stands on its site. It was built on the farm of General Richard Montgomery, and may have been laid out by him. It occupied a most commanding position overlooking the Albany road on one side and the Boston road on the other. It had two bastions at the westerly angles.

The British garrisoned it continuously from its capture until they removed its guns, August 16th, its wood-work, August 17th, and demolished its magazine, September 12, 1779. It was not garrisoned again during the war. A number of iron six-pounders were dug up inside its walls, by Mr. Giles, when excavating his cellar, about thirty years ago. Two of them are now mounted in a miniature fort on his grounds.

[1] Miscalled "Ft. Independence," on Sauthier's and other British maps, an error which has misled some modern writers. The same misnomer has been perpetuated otherwise. The Coast Survey so calls it in a diagram of the triangulation point on its wall. These errors probably arose from confounding the name "Tetard's Hill," on which Fort Independence stood, with "Tippett's Hill," whereon the fort in question was located.

[2] This work is yet standing.

Digitized

Number Five was a square redoubt, whose walls are yet standing on the old Tetard farm, a little way north from H. B. Claflin's stables. It is about seventy feet square. It was occupied in 1777, and dismantled September 18, 1779.

Number Six stood just west of the present road to High Bridge, and its site is now occupied by a house formerly owned by John B. Haskin.

Number Seven was on the Cammann place. No trace remains.

Number Eight was on land now owned by H. W. T. Mali and Gustav Schwab. The latter's house occupies part of its site.

King's Battery is on the grounds of Nathaniel P. Bailey, and is still preserved.

Another redoubt, semicircular in form, is yet standing on the old Bussing farm, just north of the town line, and distant about one thousand feet northeasterly from the William's Bridge Station on the Harlem Railroad. It commanded the road and bridge across the Bronx, and was one of the series of works thrown up by Washington along the heights of the Bronx and extending northerly to White Plains, at the approach of Howe. General Heath located it and Colonels Ely and Douglas were engaged upon it October 6, 1776.[1]

An outpost of light troops was established near Mosholu and maintained throughout each year. The force was usually composed of German mounted and foot yagers and a company of chasseurs formed of detachments from the different Hessian regiments in New York.[2] Their camp was on Frederick Van Cortlandt's farm, near his house.[3] They made frequent patrols out Mile Square road, over Valentine's Hill and Boar Hill to Phillipse's Mills and back by the Albany post road. Two three-pound *Amusettes* were sometimes taken on these rounds.

Another camp of light troops and cavalry was established at the foot of Tetard's Hill, between King's Bridge and the Free Bridge. It was long occupied by Emmerick's chasseurs, formed in 1777, Simcoe's rangers and other Royalist troops. The King's Bridge was made the *Barrier*, and the old tavern on the north side became the *watch-house*.

During the protracted struggle the Yonkers was the scene of constant military activity. Numerous unsuccessful attempts were made by the Americans to recapture the posts on Tippett's and Tetard's Hills, and plans of winter attacks across the frozen Harlem and Spuyten Duyvil were often laid and foiled. The rangers of Simcoe and De Lancey, the yagers of Von Wurmb and the chasseurs of Emmerick were often met and engaged by troops of American Light Horse, under the fiery Colonel Armand and other dashing leaders, on the high-roads and by-ways of the Yonkers plantation. It was also the scene of ceaseless ravages by those irregular bands, known as "Cowboys" and "Skinners." Most of the inhabitants went into exile, and were refugees within either the American or British lines. Their homes were desolated, their buildings, fences and orchards destroyed. The Tippetts were mainly Tories. In 1776, General George Clinton arrested Gilbert Tippett for "practices and declarations inimical to American liberty." Colonel James De Lancey had married a cousin, Martha Tippett. The Warners, Hadleys, Valentines, Bettses, Corsas, Posts and other old residents were nearly all stanch Whigs, and supplied some of the ablest guides and minute-men of the Revolution.

THE SIEGE OF FORT INDEPENDENCE.—In January, 1777, General Heath made a movement against the British outposts at King's Bridge.[4] His forces were chiefly Connecticut volunteers and Dutchess County militia. They moved down on the night of the 17th, in three divisions—the right, under General Lincoln, from Tarrytown by the old Albany road, to the heights above Colonel Van Cortlandt's; the centre, under General Scott, from below White Plains to the rear of Valentine's house,[5] on the Boston road; and the left, under Generals Wooster and Parsons, from New Rochelle and East Chester to Williams' on the east side of the Bronx above the bridge. The three divisions arrived simultaneously at the enemy's outposts just before sunrise on the 18th. General Lincoln surprised the guard above Van Cortlandt's, capturing arms, equipage, etc. Heath moving with the centre, as it approached Valentine's house, ordered its cannonade by Captain Bryant in case of resistance from the guard quartered there, and sent two hundred and fifty men at double-quick to the right into the hollow between the house and Fort Independence to cut off the guard. Just then two British light horsemen, reconnoitering out the Boston road, came unexpectedly on the head of Wooster's column where the road descends to Williams' bridge. Before they could turn, a field-piece dismounted one, who was taken prisoner, while the other galloped back crying "The rebels! the rebels!" which set all

[1] Between this fort and Fort Independence, on the southerly side of the Boston road, and on the Corsa farm, stood "Negro Fort," so called, it is said, because garrisoned by a company of negroes from Virginia. The British kept an outguard there in the winter of 1776–77. No trace of it remains, a house now occupying its site.

[2] In 1778 five companies of foot and one of mounted yagers, under Lieutenant-Colonel Von Wurmb. In 1779 the yagers and Lord Rawdon's corps.

Captain von Hanger's company of chasseurs, in 1778, consisted of four officers, twelve sub-officers, three drummers and one hundred privates selected from the Leib, Erb Prinz, Prinz Carl, Donop, Mirbach, Trimbach, Losberg, Knyphausen, Woelwarth, Wiessenbach and Sietz Regiments.

[3] Known as the "Upper Cortlandts," in distinction from Colonel Jacobus Van Cortlandt's house on the plain, called "Lower Cortlandts." The former was also called "Cortlandt's white-house" sometimes. It was burned about 1826, and the present residence of Waldo Hutchins was erected on its site.

[4] The following account of the movement is condensed from Heath's and contemporary British reports.

[5] Now and for nearly a century past the Varian homestead, an ancient stone house on the northerly side of the road.

Digitized by Google

outguards and pickets running to the fort, leaving arms, blankets, provisions, tools, etc., behind. Those fleeing from Valentine's and the Negro Fort were fired on and one captured. The American left and centre were then moved into the hollow between Valentine's and Fort Independence, and the surrender of the latter was demanded and refused. The garrison consisted of a body of Hessians and Colonel Rogers' rangers. Heath sent a detachment with two field-pieces southward to the brow of the hill overlooking the Free Bridge,[1] and opened fire on a battalion of Hessians drawn up across the Harlem, back of Hyatt's tavern. The enemy settled down as the shot passed them, and one piece being moved lower down, they retired rapidly behind their redoubt,[2] receiving a shot as they were turning the point. The enemy now opened on Heath's artillerymen from guns he had not suspected to be in the redoubt, and the men hastily drew their pieces back, receiving several shots before they reached the top of the hill.

The success of this movement on the British outposts flew through the country and was magnified into the reduction and capture of Fort Independence and its garrison. Washington communicated this report to Congress before receiving official accounts, causing a double disappointment when the facts were known. The Tory press in New York City reported it as an attack on Fort Independence by a large body of rebels, who were "bravely repulsed."

On the 19th the enemy opened fire from the fort, and killed one American. Heath determined to cut off the British battalion at Hyatt's by passing one thousand men over Spuyten Duyvil Creek on the ice. It was very cold. The men were detached and gathered at Spuyten Duyvil Ridge for the attack, but before morning the weather had so moderated that it was deemed too hazardous to make the attempt. There was cannonading on both sides on the 20th, and the enemy on the island were thrown into much confusion. Heath observing that the enemy, when fired at across the Harlem, found shelter behind the hill at Hyatt's, had a field-piece hauled up to the brow of Tippett's Hill, and opened fire on both their front and rear on the afternoon of the 21st. Some of the enemy found shelter in their redoubt, others under the banks; some lay flat on the ground and some betook themselves to the cellars, so that presently there was no object for the gunners. A smart skirmish occurred at Fort Independence on the 22d. To keep up the appearance of serious designs upon the fort, Heath ordered fascines, etc., to be made, and sent for a brass twenty-four pounder and a howitzer from New Castle. Another skirmish took place near the south side of the fort on the 23d, just before dusk, in which the Americans had an ensign and private killed, and five men wounded. On the 24th a severe storm began; Lincoln's division had to quit their huts in the woods back of Colonel Van Cortlandt's, and move back, some even to Dobbs Ferry, to find shelter. A freshet in the Bronx caused the water to run over Williams' bridge. Early on the 25th, the enemy sallied from Fort Independence towards De Lancey's Mills, surprised and routed the guard, wounding several and causing a regiment to quit its quarters. By British accounts they also took one piece of cannon. About ten o'clock they made a sally out the Boston road in force, drove the guards from Negro Fort and Valentine's house, and pushed on so impetuously, keeping up a brisk fire, that the retreating guards threw themselves into the old American redoubt[3] overlooking Williams' bridge. The enemy thereupon lined a strong stone wall a few rods distant to the southwest. Two regiments of militia were at once formed in the road near Williams' house, across the Bronx, and were sent by General Heath, in support of Captain Bryant with his piece, across the submerged bridge. When nearly up the hill on the Boston road, Bryant unlimbered to prevent his horses being shot, and the men took the drag-ropes; but the steepness of the ascent required the dragging of the piece almost within pistol-shot before it could be depressed enough to bear on the enemy. Its first shot opened a breach in the wall four or five feet wide, the next made another opening, whereupon the enemy fled back to Fort Independence with the greatest precipitation. The Americans had two killed and a number wounded. On the 27th the brass twenty-four pounder and the howitzer arrived and opened on the fort. The former sprung her carriage after the third discharge. There were no live shells for the howitzer. No regular cannonade of the fort was, in fact, ever contemplated. Attempts were made to draw the enemy out of the fort. A detachment was sent to Morrisania to light numerous fires at night; and, to induce the enemy to suppose the Americans were collecting there with designs of crossing to New York at or near Harlem, large boats were brought forward on carriages. The British garrison on Montressor's (Randall's) Island, alarmed at this, set fire to the buildings and fled to New York.[4] A brigade of the enemy moved up to Fort Washington and a detachment was sent for from Rhode Island.

On the 29th a severe snow-storm came on. Gens. Lincoln, Wooster, Scott and Tenbroeck were unanimous that the troops ought to move back where they could be protected from the inclement weather, especially as they had no artillery with which to take the

[1] Probably to a point on the old Tetard farm, now Claflin's land.

[2] The fort on the hill at northerly end of Manhattan Island, overlooking the King's and Free Bridges,—originally built by Americans and called by the British "Fort Prince Charles."

[3] This old Revolutionary work may still be traced on the hill northwest from the bridge. It is semicircular in form and was laid out by Heath in the fall of 1776.

[4] By Tory accounts the "rebels" went over to Montressor's Island and "burnt Colonel Montressor's house to the ground, and ravaged whatever they could meet with" on this occasion.

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF N. P. BAILEY,

FORDHAM-ON-HARLEM, N. Y.

Google

BOOK
LIBRARY
AND
STATIONS
L

fort, and were opposed to any idea of assault or storm with militia. Accordingly, after dusk, the American forces retired northward and eastward in good order to their former stations, and the siege of Fort Independence was abandoned. The boldness of these operations, by raw militia, and for so long a period, in face of the strong force of British and German veterans in New York, speak volumes for the spirit of our grandsires in their determined contest for independence.

THE MASSACRE OF THE STOCKBRIDGE INDIANS.—During the summer of 1778 the British light troops, which were encamped about King's Bridge, had frequent skirmishes with the American light troops on the highways and by-roads of the old Yonkers.

On the 20th of August, when patrolling out the old "Mile Square Road," Lieutenant-Colonel Emmerick was attacked and compelled to return to his camp at King's Bridge. A few days later a small body of American light troops and Indians, under Colonel Gist, which had taken part in this encounter, was posted in several detachments on the heights commanding the old road, one body on each side of the road, just north of its crossing over a small stream beyond the present Woodlawn Heights, and a third about three hundred yards west of the road, on Devoe's farm, opposite to Woodlawn Heights. Between the last party and the road were scattered about sixty Stockbridge Indians, under their chief, Nimham, who had been in England. Lieutenant-colonel Simcoe, of the Queen's Rangers, learned, through his spies, that the Indians were highly elated at Emmerick's retreat and supposed that they had driven the whole force of light troops at King's Bridge. He took measures to increase this belief and meantime planned to ambuscade and capture their whole force. His idea was, as the enemy came down the "Mile Square Road," to advance past his flanks. This movement would be perfectly concealed by the fall of the ground to the right (*i.e.*, down the slope in Woodlawn Heights, towards the stream at Second Street) and by the woods on the left (*i.e.*, Van Cortlandt's woods, bordering the road and "Lover's Lane," extending north from the road opposite Fourth Street).

On the morning of August 31st the Queen's Rangers, under Simcoe, the chasseurs, under Emmerick, and De Lancey's Second Battalion and the Legion Dragoons, under Lieutenant-colonel Tarleton, marched out the "Mile Square Road," reaching the present Woodlawn Heights about ten o'clock. The rangers and dragoons were posted on the right (east of Second Street and about opposite to First Avenue). Emmerick's instructions were to take a position on the left, in Van Cortlandt's woods, near *Frederick* Devoe's house, half a mile up the lane. By mistake he took post in the woods near *Daniel* Devoe's house, which stood on the "Mile Square Road," near the entrance to the lane, and sent a patrol forward on the road. Before Simcoe, who was half-way up a tree reconnoitering, could stop this movement, he saw a flanking party of Americans approach and heard a smart firing by the Indians who had lined the fences alongside the road on Emmerick's left.

The rangers under Simcoe moved rapidly up the stream to gain the heights (Husted's), which were occupied by the Americans under Gist and Stewart, and the cavalry under Tarleton advanced directly up the hill to where Emmerick was engaged (between Third and Fourth Avenues). Being unable to pass the fences bordering the road, Tarleton made a circuit to return on the right (coming to the road again about Fifth Avenue). Simcoe, hearing of Tarleton's difficulty, left the remainder of his corps under Major Ross, and breaking from the rangers with the grenadier company, arrived unperceived (about opposite the end of Sixth Avenue) close upon the left flank of the Indians, who were intent upon the attack of Emmerick and Tarleton. With a yell the Indians fired on the grenadier company, wounding Simcoe and four of his men; but being outnumbered and flanked, the Indians were driven from the fences into the open fields of Daniel Devoe, north of the road. Tarleton and Emmerick then got among them with the cavalry. The Indians fought most gallantly, pulling several of the cavalry from their horses; but overpowered by the superior force of the enemy, they had to flee. They were swiftly pursued up over the fields, across the lane, down through Van Cortlandt's woods, over Tippett's Brook into the woods on the ridge beyond, where a few survivors found concealment among the rocks and bushes, and thus escaped. Nearly forty were killed or desperately wounded, including the old chief Nimham and his son. The former called out to his people to fly, "that he was old and would die there." He wounded Simcoe and was killed by Wright, his orderly hussar. Tarleton had a narrow escape in the pursuit down the ridge. In striking at an Indian he lost his balance and fell from his horse, but luckily for him the Indian had no bayonet and had discharged his musket. During the pursuit Simcoe joined the battalion of rangers, seized the heights (Husted's) and captured a captain and several men of the American light troops, but the main body escaped. The bodies of many of the Indians were buried in a small clearing in Van Cortlandt's woods, since known as the "Indian Field."

In July, 1781, Washington came in force to attempt a surprise of the British posts at King's Bridge, expressly to cut off De Lancey's and other light corps; but without success. Later in the month, accompanied by De Rochambeau, he moved a force of five thousand men down to the heights beyond King's Bridge and reconnoitered the northerly part of Manhattan island from Tippett's and Tetard's Hills and Fordham Heights. In September a British force of five thousand men moved out across the bridge to Valentine's Hill, as an escort to the young Prince William Henry. After the bitterly cold winter of

Digitized by Google

1782–83 the British troops were withdrawn from the Yonkers and King's Bridge. The inhabitants began to return to their desolate homes, while the Loyalists crowded into the city. In November, Washington came once more down the old post road, spent the night of the 12th at the Van Cortlandt house, and the next day, amid the acclamations of the people, rode victorious across King's Bridge, over which he had retreated seven years before.

POLITICAL HISTORY.—The area under consideration was part of the fief of Colen-donck from 1652 to 1664. After the English conquest in the latter year it belonged to the North Riding of Yorkshire until the erection of Westchester County under the act of October 1, 1691. It was afterwards known as the Yonkers Precinct (except the parts included in the Manor of Phillipsburgh after the erection of the latter, in 1693). By the act of June 19, 1703, the towns, manors, etc., were authorized to choose supervisors, and each inhabitant of any *precinct*, being a freeholder, was allowed "to join his vote with the next adjacent town." The freeholders of the Yonkers probably voted for a supervisor with the freeholders of East Chester. They chose their own local officers for the precinct, of whom the following "Collectors for the Yonkers" are known: William Jones, 1708–10; John Barrett, 1713–14; John Heading [Hadden], 1715–16; Mr. George Tippett, 1717; Mr. Joseph Taylor, 1718; Matthias Valentine, 1719; Joseph Hadley, 1720; Moses Taylor, 1721–23; William Jones, 1724; Moses Taylor, 1725; Thomas Sherwood, 1726; Moses Taylor, 1727; Thomas Rich, 1728; Edward Smith, 1729–30; Charles Vincent, 1731–32; Jacob Ryder, 1733–34; Joseph Taylor, 1736.

By the act of November 1, 1722, "to increase the number of supervisors for Westchester County," the inhabitants of each *precinct* having not less than twenty inhabitants were allowed to choose their own supervisor. The Yonkers was no doubt represented in the board by its own member thereafter; but by reason of the loss of the records of the precinct and of the board before 1772 their names are not known. On the first Tuesday in April, 1756, the freeholders and inhabitants of the Yonkers *and Mile Square*[1] held a public town-meeting at the house of Edward Stevenson, in the Yonkers, and chose James Corton (Coerten ?) supervisor and pounder: Benjamin Fowler, town clerk; Thomas Sherwood, constable and collector; David Oakley and William Warner, assessors; Edward Weeks, Wm. Crawford, Daniel Devoe, John Ryder, Isaac Odell and Hendrick Post, highway masters; Andrew Nodine, Charles Warner, Moses Tailer and Isaac Odell, fence and damage viewers.[2]

Commissioners of highways in 1770: James Van Cortlandt and Benjamin Fowler.

Supervisors for the Yonkers: Colonel James Van Cortlandt, 1772–76; (none during the British occupation); Israel Honeywell, 1784; William Hadley, 1786–87; David Hunt, 1787.

Constables: Jeremiah Sherwood, 1773; Henry Odell, 1775; Thomas Sherwood, 1784.

By act of March 7, 1788, a new town was erected, containing part of Phillipsburgh, Mile Square and the old precinct of Yonkers, under the name of Yonkers. In November, 1872, the supervisors of Westchester County erected a township consisting of all of the town of Yonkers lying south of the southerly line of the city of Yonkers, to be called King's Bridge. Its first and only annual meeting was held at Temperance Hall, Mosholu, March 25, 1873. On the 1st of January, 1874, King's Bridge was annexed to the city of New York and now forms part of the Twenty-fourth Ward.

CHURCH HISTORY.—Before 1700 the inhabitants had no place of public worship nearer than East Chester. In 1707 they assembled "sometimes in the house of Joseph Betts, deceased, and sometimes in a barn when empty." About 1724 they had preaching three times a year by the rector from East Chester, and they "began to be in a disposition to build a church." None was erected, however, for more than a century. Those of the Reformed Dutch creed attended services at the church of Fordham Manor, erected in 1706. It stood on the northerly side of the road to Fordham Landing, where Moses Devoe's gateway now is. Upon the organization of the English Church at the Lower Mills those of that faith in the Yonkers attended there. After the Revolution Augustus Van Cortlandt and John Warner were of the first trustees of the new "Yonkers Episcopal Society," formed in 1787, and members of the first vestry of "St. John's Church in the town of Yonkers," on its incorporation, in 1795. Isaac Vermilye, William Hadley, William Warner and "Cobus" Dyckman were trustees of "the Reformed Dutch Church at the Lower Mills in the Manor of Phillipsburgh," incorporated in 1784.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH BETHEL (Mosholu).—This was the first religious society to erect a house of worship in the limits of King's Bridge. So early as 1826 a charge existed, having thirty-six white members and one colored, under Samuel W. Fisher, preacher. Meetings were held in an old school-house which stood near Warner's store, Mosholu. In 1828 E. Hebard had the charge. He remained during 1828 and organized a class. The succeeding preachers were R. Seaman, 1829–30; E. Hebard, 1831–32; E. Smith, 1833–34; Thomas Evans, 1835. On the 10th of February, 1835, Caleb Van Tassell, James Cole, Jacob Varian, Abraham Wood

[1] It is probable that the Yonkers and Mile Square constituted one precinct under the name of the former. The Manor of Phillipsburgh surrounded Mile Square on three sides, and also separated it from the Yonkers. The inhabitants of the manor dwelling upon the old Mile Square road, between Yonkers and Mile Square, were sometimes described as "of the Yonkers in Phillipsburgh."

[2] Bolton's "Westchester County." The author must have seen the town-book (now, unfortunately, lost), and extracted therefrom the account of the meeting of 1756.

and John C. Lawrence were chosen trustees to build a church and February 14th Caleb Van Tassell and Jacob H. Varian made and filed a certificate of incorporation as "Trustees of Methodist Church Bethel" in the town of Yonkers. A frame building was erected on the westerly side of the Albany post road and is yet standing, though disused for several years. Its pastors have been E. Oldrin, I. D. Bangs and Thomas Barch (superannuated), 1836–37; John Davies, Salmon C. Perry and Barch, 1838; Henry Hatfield, Perry and Barch, 1839; Barch and Daniel I. Wright, 1840; Daniel I. Wright and Humphrey Humphreys, 1841; John A. Silleck and Humphreys 1842; Silleck and Fred'k W. Seger, 1843; John C. Green and Mr. Barch, 1844–45; Charles C. Keyes, 1846–47; S. C. Perry, 1848–49; Paul R. Brown, 1850–51; Philip L. Hoyt, 1852; Richard Wheatly, 1853–54; Noble Lovett and Thos. Bainbridge, 1855; O. E. Brown and Bainbridge, 1856; A. B. Davis, 1857–58; R. H. Kelly, 1859–60; Wm. F. Browning and A. B. Brown, 1861; J. G. Shrive, 1862–63; W. H. Smith, 1864; W. H. Smith, 1865; A. Ostrander, 1866–67; A. C. Gallahue, 1868; W. M. Henry, 1869; A. Ostrander, 1870; Wm. Plested, 1871; W. Tarleton, 1872; H. Croft, 1873; and Cyrus Nixon, 1874–75. Since that date the congregation has worshipped at King's Bridge.

Church of the Mediator (King's Bridge).—Formed at meeting held August 15, 1855, pursuant to notice given by the rector of St. John's Church, Yonkers, who presided. Certificate recorded November 17, 1856. Name adopted "The Church of the Mediator, Yonkers." Abraham Valentine and James R. Whiting were elected wardens, and Thomas J. De Lancey, William O. Giles, John C. Sidney, Russell Smith, Joseph H. Godwin, T. Bailey Myers, Daniel Valentine and David B. Cox, vestrymen. Certificate executed by Rev. A. B. Carter, A. Van Cortlandt and William O. Giles. The church, a frame structure, was erected on land presented by James R. Whiting at a cost of five thousand dollars, and the rectory on adjoining land soon afterwards. The church was consecrated by Bishop Horatio Potter November 6, 1864. The officiating clergyman in 1857 was Rev. T. James Brown, of the island of Jamaica. The rectors have been Rev. Cornelius W. Bolton, June, 1858, to May, 1859; Rev. Leigh Richmond Dickinson, June, 1859, to June, 1866; and Rev. William T. Wilson, since October, 1866.

Riverdale Presbyterian Church.—Formed at a meeting held Wednesday, 24th June, 1863, Isaac G. Johnson and Edwin P. Gibson presiding. The first trustees chosen were Samuel N. Dodge, Robert Colgate, J. Joseph Eagleton, John Mott, James Scrymser, Isaac G. Johnson, William E. Dodge, Jr., Warren B. Sage and David B. Kellogg. Certificate of incorporation recorded July 14, 1863. The church building, of stone, was completed and dedicated October 11, 1863. Cost, about five thousand dollars. The stone parsonage adjoining was built soon after. The original membership was fifteen and the first elders were John Mott and Warren B. Sage. The pastors have been: George M. Boynton, October 28, 1863, to June, 1867; Henry H. Stebbins, August 25, 1867, to December 28, 1873, Charles H. Burr, March 5, 1874 to July 28, 1878; William R. Lord, April 30, 1879, to November 20, 1881; Ira S. Dodd, April 15, 1883, the present pastor. Entire membership, one hundred and twenty-five.

Christ Church (Riverdale).—Formed at a meeting held September 10, 1866; Rev. E. M. Peck, chairman. Henry L. Stone and Newton Carpenter were elected wardens, and Samuel D. Babcock, George W. Knowlton, Thompson N. Hollister, Frederick Goodridge, Martin Bates, William W. Thompson, William H. Appleton and Henry F. Spaulding, vestrymen. Certificate by E. M. Peck, Percy R. Pyne and Charles H. P. Babcock, recorded September 15, 1866. Corporate name, "The Rector, Church Wardens and Vestrymen of Christ Church, Riverdale." The cornerstone of the church was laid in 1865. It is built of granitic gneiss and is cruciform. Rev. E. M. Peck acted as rector until the Rev. George D. Wildes, D.D., present rector, assumed charge, in 1868. The rectory adjoining the church is a frame building. There are some beautiful memorial windows in the church, notably one recently inserted by Percy R. Pyne at a cost of twenty-five thousand francs. It is a masterpiece of the French school by E. S. Oudinot and L. O. Merson, of Paris, representing the supper at Emmaus.

Edge Hill Chapel (Spuyten Duyvil).—Erected in 1869, on land leased by Isaac G. Johnson at a nominal rent. Services are conducted every Sunday evening by the pastor of Riverdale Presbyterian Church.

Woodlawn Methodist Episcopal Church (Woodlawn Heights).—Organized in 1875. Building erected on lots donated by E. K. Willard; completed and dedicated April, 1876, by Bishop Janes. Pastors: D. W. C. Van Gaasbeek, 1875–76; Aaron Coons, 1876–79; Gustave Laws, 1880–81; J. O. Kern, 1881, present incumbent. Membership, thirty-nine.

St. Stephen's Methodist Episcopal Church (King's Bridge).—Organized by trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church Bethel (Mosholu) in 1875. Church completed and dedicated May 14, 1876. Pastors: D. W. C. Van Gaasbeek, 1875–76; Aaron Coons, 1876–79; David Tasker, 1879–80; S. Lowther, 1880–82; R. H. Kelly, 1882–83; Isaac H. Lent, present incumbent. Membership, forty-seven.

St. John's Church (King's Bridge).—Built under the direction of the Rev. Henry A. Brann, D.D., and dedicated December 3, 1880, by Cardinal McCloskey. Since its erection Dr. Brann has been aided in attending to the congregation by the Revs. Fr. Micena, Dr. Shrader, D. McCormick and William Fry, and the present assistant is Rev. Father O'Neill. Attached

Digitized by Google

to the church are the St. John's Benevolent Society and St. Patrick's Temperance Society. The congregation numbers about five hundred souls and is connected with St. Elizabeth's Church, Fort Washington, where Dr. Brann resides.

VILLAGES.

KING'S BRIDGE.—The village of this name sprang up about thirty-five years ago, upon the ancient "island or hummock" of Paparinamin, from which it has since overspread the site of the old village of Fordham and the hillside beyond. Paparinamin was given, in 1668, by Elias Doughty to George Tippett. After his death, in 1675, Archer laid claim to it; but, exacting as a recognition of his manorial rights the annual payment of a "ffat capon" every New Year's day, he released the tract to Secretary Matthias Nicoll. Two years later Tippett's widow, then wife of Lewis Vitrey, reconveyed the island to Doughty, who, in turn, transferred it to the secretary. Thus the title to this tract vested in the colonial government, which had already assigned its use to Ferryman Verveelen. In 1693 it was included in the grant of the Manor of Phillipsburgh, of which it remained a part until forfeited by the attainder of Colonel Phillipse, in 1779. It was sold by the Commissioners of Forfeiture (deed July 30, 1785) to Joseph Crook, inn-keeper, Daniel Barkins and Abraham Lent, Jr., of Dutchess County, in joint tenancy. Medcef Eden, brewer, John Ramsey and Alexander von Pfister, merchants, subsequently owned it in whole or part; also, Daniel Halsey, inn-keeper, who kept the old tavern upon it between 1789 and 1793. It was purchased, 1797–99, from Von Pfister and Joseph Eden by Alexander Macomb, a wealthy merchant of New York.[1]

MACOMB'S DAM, HARLEM RIVER, 1850.

During the next five years Macomb purchased from Isaac Vermilye, John De Lancey, Isaac, John and Matthias Valentine, Andrew Corsa and Augustus Van Cortlandt adjoining parcels, mostly salt meadow, making up nearly one hundred acres, bounded north by Van Cortlandt, east by the Albany road, south by the Harlem and Spuyten Duyvil, and west by Tippett's Brook. Having obtained from the mayor, etc., of New York, in December, 1800, a water grant extending across the creek, just east of the King's Bridge (which reserved, however, a passage-way fifteen feet wide for small boats and craft), Macomb erected a four-story frame grist-mill extending out over the creek. Its power was supplied by the alternate ebb and flow of the tide against its under-shot wheel. Macomb's extensive real estate ventures proving disastrous, Paparinamin and the mill were sold under foreclosure in 1810, and purchased by his son Robert. By an act of 1813 the latter was authorized to construct a dam across the Harlem from Bussing's to Devoe's Point, and to use the water for milling purposes, and erected at much expense the causeway and bridge known as "Macomb's Dam." Its gates admitted the flood tide from the East River, but obstructed its ebb, thus converting the Upper Harlem into a mill-pond, having its outlets underneath the old mill and through a raceway made on the Westchester side into Spuyten Duyvil Creek at low tide. The race supplied power to a marble-sawing mill which stood on a quay between it and the creek, and of which Perkins Nicolls was proprietor. Robert Macomb becoming involved, the property was sold by the sheriff in 1818. Ten years later it was possessed by the "New York Hydraulic Manufacturing and Bridge Company," by which an elaborate plan was put forth for mill-seats and a manufacturing village, based on a report of Professor James Renwick, of Columbia College, approved by Colonel Totten and General Macomb, chief engineers United States army. The enterprise proved abortive.[2] The old grist-mill[3] stood idle during many years, and at length was made useless by the removal of Macomb's Dam. In 1830 Mary C. P. Macomb, the wife of Robert, acquired the Paparinamin tract, and during many years made the old stone tavern her home, exercising therein a generous hospitality, of which Edgar Allen Poe was a frequent recipient. In 1847 Mrs. Macomb laid out the estate into streets and plots, which she afterwards disposed of. Several houses were erected, stores and shops were opened, a church

---

[1] Who purchased from the State in 1791 more than three million five hundred thousand acres in Northern New York, at 8d. per acre. The Adirondack Mountains were long known as "Macomb's Mountains."

[2] It was proposed, in an elaborate prospectus, to dam the Yonkers River (Tippett's Brook) near its mouth, and have gates opening down-stream only. The bed of the stream and the salt meadows through which it flowed were to form a reservoir for tail-water, which would empty itself into Spuyten Duyvil Creek at low tide. Fourteen mill-seats, each fifty by one hundred feet, bordered the race-ways, and an aggregate of at least two hundred and thirty-four horse-power was assured for them.

[3] It fell down about 1856.

Digitized by Google

Google

to the church are the St. John's Benevolent
and St. Patrick's Temperance Society.
gation numbers about five hundred
nected with St. Elizabeth's Chu
where Dr. Brann resides.

KING'S BRIDG
up about th
"island
it b

"CEDAR RIDGE."
RESIDENCE OF ALBERT E. PUTNAM,
SPUYTEN DUYVIL, N. Y.

Google

"SPRINGHURST."

RESIDENCE OF FREDERIC GOODRIDGE.

Digitized by Google

built and a centre of population established, which has grown to several hundreds. There are now three churches, a grammar school, police station, numerous stores, shops, saloons and dwellings. Among the well-known residents are Joseph H. Godwin,[1] William G. Ackerman, William O. Giles, George Moller, William A. Varian, M.D., Benjamin T. Sealey, William H. Geer, John Parsons, M.D., Rev. William T. Wilson and others.

SPUYTEN DUYVIL.—A village (and until recently a post office) located on the southerly end of Spuyten Duyvil Neck. The land was owned by George Tippett, who died in 1761. He devised it in several parcels to his children and grandchildren. Soon after the Revolution it belonged to Samuel Berrien, who had married Dorcas Tippett, daughter of George.[2] He sold to Abraham Berrien, a nephew, in whose family it continued until about 1850. In 1852 the tract was in three farms, which were purchased that year and next by Elias Johnson, David B. Cox and Joseph W. Fuller, of Troy, N. Y. They had surveys and plans made for a village to be called Fort Independence,[3] but which was changed to Spuyten Duyvil. Streets were opened and several houses erected on the hill, and a foundry was established at its base. The latter was afterwards bought and extended into a rolling-mill by Jervis Langdon, who was succeeded by the Langdon Rolling-Mill Company. The Spuyten Duyvil Rolling-Mill Company, organized in 1867, next owned this property. A malleable iron foundry was established on adjoining premises by Isaac G. Johnson and now employs several hundred hands. There are about thirty private dwellings on the elevated ground, including the residences of Mrs. D. B. Cox, Thomas H. Edsall, George C. Holt, Isaac G. Johnson,[4] Elias Johnson, Gilbert Johnson, Henry R. Lounsbery, David M. Morrison, George H. Petrie, Albert E. Putnam, Joseph R. Sergeant, Mrs. Peter O. Strang, Warren B. Sage, Henry M. Smith and others.

Immediately northward is a tract of three hundred and fifty-six acres, also known as Spuyten Duyvil. Frederick Van Cortlandt purchased it in several parcels between 1768 and 1788, and built his house on a commanding spot on the easterly side, approached by a private road leading up from the post road at Mosholu. He devised this property to his brother Augustus, by whose will it passed to a grandson, Augustus F. Morris, who assumed the name of Van Cortlandt. From him James R. Whiting bought the tract in 1836 and about 1840 erected a large stone mansion on the western side, overlooking the Hudson. Samuel Thomson, William C. Wetmore and Daniel Ewing became interested in Whiting's purchase in 1841, and they subsequently divided it into parcels stretching from the Hudson across the neck to Tippett's Brook. Thomson took the northerly parcel, on which stood a large stone house erected about 1822 on the site of the "Upper Cortlandts'," destroyed in that year by fire. Surrounded by well laid out and highly-improved grounds, it is now the residence of Waldo Hutchins. Near by is Hiram Barney's beautiful country-seat, "Cedar Knolls." The Whiting mansion is occupied by James R. Whiting, Jr. Adjoining is the house of James A. Hayden. The late General John Ewen's country-seat on this tract is now occupied by his widow.

HUDSON PARK was laid out in 1853, on the westerly part of Samuel Thomson's tract. A single house on the river-side was the only one erected for many years. There is now a cluster of small dwellings known as "Cooperstown," on this tract.

North of Hudson Park, and extending across from the Hudson to the Albany road, was the old Hadley farm of two hundred and fifty-seven acres, of which William Hadley died seized in 1802. He purchased the southerly part, about one hundred and fifty acres extending up to the line of the Manor of Phillipsburgh, from James Van Cortlandt, in 1761, and the remainder from the Commissioners of Forfeiture, May 18, 1786. He lived in the old stone house yet standing on this tract, just west of the post road. Joseph Delafield purchased the farm from Hadley's executors in 1829, and it is now owned by Delafield's children and grandchildren. The residence of Maturin L. Delafield is on the west side of Riverdale Avenue. The house of the late Lewis L. Delafield stands on the brow of the hill overlooking the Hudson. Mr. William E. Dodge's country-seat is on this tract. On the west side of Riverdale Avenue is a new fire-engine house, the first erected in the old Yonkers. Its tower contains a melodious old Spanish bell, cast in 1762 by Llonart.

RIVERDALE.—A village (and until recently a post-office) situated on part of Phillipsburgh Manor, which was sold by the Commissioners of Forfeiture to George Hadley, December 6, 1785. In 1843 William G. Ackerman acquired about one hundred acres of this tract, part of which was purchased in 1853 by W. W. Woodworth, H. L. Atherton, Samuel D. Babcock and C. W. Foster, and laid out as the village of Riverdale. In 1856 Henry F. Spaulding and others laid out the land adjoining on the south as "The Park, Riverdale." On these lands have since been erected a number of beautiful country-houses, including those of William H. Appleton, Samuel D. Babcock, Martin Bates, George H. Bend, Robert Colgate, William S. Duke, R. L. Franklin, George H. Forster, Frederick Goodridge,

[1] Mr. Godwin's residence is the old Macomb mansion, now altered and enlarged.

[2] A grandson of the first proprietor of the name. His wife was Dorcas ——. He had sons: George, William, James and Thomas (all of whom married and had issue), and daughters: Jane, wife of Charles Warner; Phebe, wife of George Hadley; and Dorcas, wife of Samuel Berrien. The Rev. William Berrien, rector of Trinity Parish, New York, and its historian, was a grandson of the latter.

[3] After the Revolutionary fort, erroneously supposed to have occupied this hill.

[4] Mr. Johnson resides in the old Berrien house, which he has enlarged and improved.

Digitized by Google

Laura Harriman, D. Willis James, Percy R. Pyne, Moses Taylor Pyne, Henry F. Spaulding, H. L. Stone and others. There are two churches and a school-house, but no places of business in Riverdale.[1]

MT. ST. VINCENT AND THE SISTERS OF CHARITY.—In the northwest corner of what was formerly the town of King's Bridge, lying along the Hudson River, and partly jutting over the northern boundary of the city of New York into the adjoining city of Yonkers, is Mount St. Vincent—the property of the Sisters of Charity—a picturesque tract of more than fifty acres of land, together with the convent and other buildings which make the mother house of the Sisters in the Archdiocese of New York. The institution was founded here in 1856, when this site was still in Westchester County, Nearly a thousand Sisters, in more than a hundred subordinate houses, including asylums, hospitals, the Girls' Protectory in Westchester, the retreat for the insane at Harrison, industrial schools, academies and parish schools, are governed from Mt. St. Vincent. The many parish and other schools, under the Sisters of Charity from this house, and situated in Westchester County and in and near New York, include about thirty-five thousand pupils, besides the hundreds of sick and infirm in their different asylums and hospitals.

The Sisters of Charity are a benevolent corporation of women only, formed under the general laws of the State of New York, and governed by their own trustees elected from among themselves, and are largely independent. The Mother Superior is the president of the corporation. Mother Angela Hughes, the youngest sister of Archbishop Hughes, was superior of the order when the Sisters, in December, 1856, bought this property of Edwin Forrest, with the farm buildings and the castle upon it, as he had built them for his own residence.[2] The following year Mother Angela commenced the new building, which now forms the central part of the present convent, overlooking the Hudson, between two and three hundred yards distant. This first building, with a front of two hundred and seventy feet, has by later additions been enlarged to more than five hundred feet of frontage, making a handsome brick structure, three stories in height, with high basement and attic and a lofty spire.

Mother Angela's term of office expired in 1862, since which date Mother Jerome and Mother Regina have successively ruled the order. Mother Angela died in 1866, Mother Regina in 1879 and Mother Jerome in 1885, since which date Sister M. Ambrosia, who, twenty-five years before, had been in charge of the girls' parish school in Yonkers, then treasurer at Mt. St. Vincent, and subseqently the head of the Girls' Protectory at Westchester, and later assistant-mother at Mt. St. Vincent, has been the Mother Superior there.

The south half of the convent building contains the Academy of Mt. St. Vincent, a girls' school of the highest class, numbering between two and three hundred pupils, with the philosophical apparatus and the appointments of a college. The pupils are divided into many classes, each class under the immediate charge of a Sister specially selected for her natural endowments and careful training. Sister Maria (Mary C. Dodge)[3] has long been the directress of the academy, subordinate to the Mother Superior. The academic course runs through four years, preceded by a preparatory school for those who need it, and followed by a post-graduate course.

The north half of the convent is the mother house of the Sisters, the residence of the Mother Superior and her assistants, with the Sisters of the academy, as well as those at home from the outside missions for needed rest or in broken health, so that there are usually a hundred Sisters or more in the house. At the extreme north end is now the spacious novitiate, built in 1885. The institution has a hundred novices in a two years' course of training and probation under the Mother of Novices, and there are usually a dozen or twenty candidates for the novitiate awaiting admission through three months or more of probation.

The convent chapel, as large as a parish church, is in an extension to the east, nearly in the middle of the convent, between the Sisters' department and that of the pupils. The convent has a large number of fine paintings and works of art, and everything about the building is admirable for its neatness and good order, and the extensive grounds are always well kept. The carriage drive from the convent to the eastern entrance at Riverdale Avenue is about half a mile in length, and towards the west, on the Hudson, a quarter of a mile from the convent door, is the Mt. St. Vincent Station of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad, on the Sisters' own grounds. The institution is supplied with gas and with water from the Yonkers works, and is under the protection of the New York City police. The picturesque stone castle of Edwin Forrest still stands between the convent and the railroad station, and a part is made the dwelling of the chaplain of the institution. The larger rooms on the first floor are occupied by the museum of natural history, the collection of minerals being unusually large and good,[4] and there is also a fine cabinet of coins and medals.[5]

[1] Between Riverdale and Mount St. Vincent is a part of the old John Warner farm, formerly owned by A. Schermerhorn, and another part owned by J. E. Bettner, E. F. Brown and others. Some fine stone country-houses have recently been erected on these tracts.

[2] The Forrest property was part of the large farm that Captain John Warner, of the Revolutionary army, bought at the sale of the confiscated estate of Colonel Frederick Phillipse.—*Deed of Commissioners of Forfeiture, Dec. 6, 1785.*

[3] Authoress of an interesting history of the institution.

[4] Presented by Dr. E. S. F. Arnold, of New York.

[5] Forrest purchased this estate in 1847, and called it "Font Hill."

ACADEMY MOUNT ST. VINCENT,

ON-THE-HUDSON,

NEW YORK CITY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

On their own ground, on a side-street near Riverdale Avenue, the Sisters, in 1875, built, at a cost of over twenty thousand dollars, "St Vincent's Free School," a brick building sixty by ninety feet, where they continue to teach, at their own cost, a free primary school now numbering about one hundred and fifty boys and girls of the vicinity.

The residences of Edmund D. Randolph and Mr. B. Cuthbert adjoin this property on the south.

MOSHOLU[1] is an old hamlet and post-office skirting the Albany post road, known early in the century as "Warner's," where many years ago there were a church (Methodist), school-house, store, blacksmith and wagon-shop and a cluster of dwellings.

WOODLAWN HEIGHTS.—A village (and until recently a post-office) on the Harlem Railroad, laid out in 1873 by George Opdyke and others on a part of the old Gilbert Valentine farm, in the Yonkers. E. K. Willard extended the village northward the same year to the Mile Square road, on land formerly part of Phillipse Manor. A church and a number of small dwelling-houses have been erected on these plots.

VAN CORTLANDT'S is a station on the New York City and Northern Railroad, located near the old Van Cortlandt pond and mills. Near by are the ice-houses and residence of George R. Tremper. The historic old mansion (1748), now the residence of Augustus Van Cortlandt, stands a few hundred yards northward, upon Van der Donck's ancient planting-field. Opposite to the car-houses, beyond the station, is an ancient burial-place, probably that of the Betts and Tippett families in the seventeenth century.

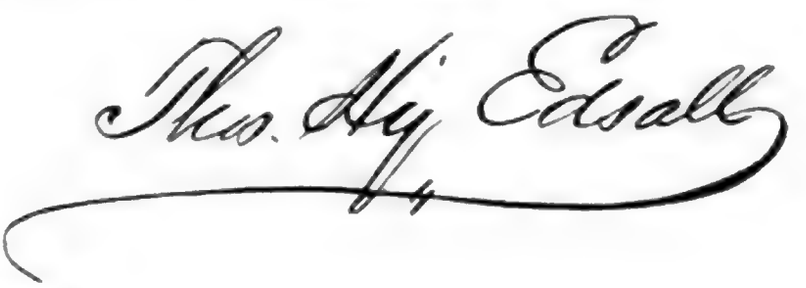
OLAFF PARK is a name given to about one hundred acres of the Van Cortland's estate, purchased and laid out in 1869 by W. N. Woodworth, and so called after the name of the ancestor of the Van Cortlandts in America. No improvements have been made on this tract except to open streets and avenues.

WOODLAWN CEMETERY.—This beautiful "city of the dead" consists of about four hundred acres on the heights of the Bronx, extending westward to an ancient road, whose line is now followed by Central Avenue The house of Abraham Vermilye stood on its easterly side in 1781. Early in this century John Bussing, Daniel Tier, William and Abraham Valentine owned the farms of which the cemetery is now composed. The cemetery was organized in December, 1863, and the improvement of the grounds commenced in April, 1864. The first interment was made January 14, 1865, since which time there have been upwards of twenty-six thousand burials therein.

RAILROADS.—The earliest was the New York and Harlem, along the easterly bounds, chartered May 12, 1831; opened to Harlem, 1837, and to White Plains, 1844. For nearly thirty years the nearest station was at Williams' Bridge. There is one now at Woodlawn. The Hudson River Railroad, chartered April 25, 1831, was opened along the westerly bounds of the district about 1850. Stations: Spuyten Duyvil, Riverdale and Mount St. Vincent. The Spuyten Duyvil and Port Morris Railroad, chartered April 24, 1867, was opened in 1871. Stations: Spuyten Duyvil and King's Bridge. The New York City and Northern Railroad was reorganized and opened in 1878. Stations: King's Bridge and Van Cortlandt's.

AQUEDUCTS.—1. The Croton aqueduct, begun 1837 and completed 1842, passes along the brow of Valentine's, Gun and Tetard's Hills. 2. The Bronx River water supply, determined upon in 1879 and opened September 9, 1884, is carried in a forty-eight-inch cast-iron conduit pipe along the west side of the Bronx to Woodlawn and thence to the top of the hill, half a mile west of Williams' Bridge Station, where a distributing reservoir is located and whence thirty-six inch pipes distribute the water to the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards. 3. The new Croton supply, determined upon in 1884 and work in progress, will go near the old one, mostly through rock tunnel. 4. Mount St. Vincent, Riverdale and Spuyten Duyvil have been supplied from Yonkers water-works since 1882.

SCHOOLS.—The most ancient was the French boarding-school of Dominie Tetard, opened in 1772. Early in the century there was a school-house near Warner's store and another on the Mile Square road, near Devoe's. The school-house at Mosholu (now Grammar No. 67) was erected about 1840. The one at King's Bridge (now Grammar School No. 66) was erected in 1872. The one at Spuyten Duyvil (now Primary No. 44) was erected about 1859. Primary No. 48, at Woodlawn, was established in 1880. The Riverdale Institute, a seminary for young ladies, and the boarding-school for boys at Hudson Park have been closed for several years. The academy at Mount St. Vincent is mentioned under that head.



BIOGRAPHY.

THE VAN CORTLANDTS OF YONKERS.

Right Hon. Stephen Van Cortlandt, the ancestor of the race, whose name must ever remain illustrious in our history, was the father of Right Hon. Oloff Stevens Van Cortlandt, who married Annetje,

[1] So called after the Indian name of Tippett's Brook.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A Van Cortlandt

Google

daughter of Gouvert Lockermans, in 1642, and died in 1669. The children of this marriage were Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt (the lord of the Manor of Van Cortlandt), Jacobus and Johannes, who died in 1667, leaving no descendants.

Jacobus Van Cortlandt, the second son, was born July 7, 1658, and on the 7th of May, 1691, was married to Eva Phillipse, the adopted daughter of Frederick Phillipse, lord of the Manor of Phillipsburgh, her parents being Peter Randolph De Vries and his wife Margaret Hardenbrock; the date of her birth was October 30, 1660.

The children of this marriage were Frederick; Margaret, wife of Abraham De Peyster; Ann, wife of Hon. John Chambers; and Mary, wife of Peter Jay, father of Hon. John Jay, the illustrious Chief Justice of the United States.

Frederick Van Cortlandt, the oldest son, was born in 1698, and married Francina, daughter of Augustus Jay (the ancestor of the family bearing that famous name) and Anna Maria Bayard, his wife. The old family Bible, printed in Amsterdam in 1714, and now in possession of Augustus Van Cortlandt, of Yonkers, contains the following record of this family, written in Dutch by Francina Van Cortlandt, which is of much interest as a relic of the times when that language was in general use throughout the county:

"Niew York, den 19 January 172¾, ben Ick francina Jay met frederick Van Cortlandt soon van Jacobus Van Cortlandt, in den howelicke staet beve stight, door Dominie Antonidus."

"Niew York de 3 Mart. 172⁹ is geboren myn soon Jacobus Van Cortlandt, zyn compear myn schon vader Jacobus Van Cortlandt, peet myn mouder Anna Marica Jay."

"Niew York de 3 Augustus 1728 is geboren myn twede soon Augustus Van Cortlandt, zyn compear myn vader Augustus Jay, peet Marggrite De Peyster."

"Niew York de 28 Mart. 1730 is geboren myn derden soon Frederick Van Cortlandt, zyn compear Peter Jay, peet Judith Jay."

"Niew York de 28 Mart. 1732 is geboren myn dochter Eva Van Cortlandt, har compear Jacobus Van Cortlandt har grote vader, peet Anna Van Cortlandt. En is gestorven den 10 June 1733, en begraven in de helder by Gerardus Stuyvesants."

"Niew York de 22 May 1736 is geboren myn twede dochter Anna Marica Van Cortlandt, har compear Peter Valette, peet Marica Valette."

"Niew York de 5 November 1737 is geboren myn twede dochter Eva Van Cortlandt, her compear Abraham De Peyster, peet Marica Jay."

"Is gestorven den 12 February 1749–50, myn lieve man frederick Van Cortlandt in zyn 51 jaer, en begraven in de helder op de klyne Yonkers."

(Translation) New York, 19th of January 172¾ am I, Francina Jay confirmed in the marriage state with Frederick Van Cortlandt son of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, by Dominie Antonidus.

New York, the 3rd of March, 172⁹ is born my son Jacobus Van Cortlandt; his godfather my father-in-law, Jacobus Van Cortlandt, godmother my mother Anna Marica Jay.

New York the 3rd August, 1728, is born my second son Augustus Van Cortlandt; his godfather my father, Augustus Jay, godmother Margaret De Peyster.

New York, 28th March, 1730, is born my third son, Frederick Van Cortlandt; his godfather Peter Jay, godmother Judith Jay.

New York, 28th March 1732, is born my daughter, Eva Van Cortlandt; her godfather Jacobus Van Cortlandt, her grandfather, godmother Anna Van Cortlandt, and died the 10th of June, 1733, and buried in the vault by Gerardus Stuyvesants.

New York, 22nd of May, 1736, is born my second daughter, Anna Marica Van Cortlandt; her godfather Peter Valette, godmother Marica Valette.

New York the 5th November, 1737, is born my second daughter, Eva Van Cortlandt; her godfather Abraham De Peyster, godmother Marica Jay.

Died the 12th of February 1749–50, my loved husband Frederick Van Cortland, in his 51st year, and buried in the vault at the Little Yonkers.

The record is continued in English by other hands, and states that Francina Van Cortlandt died August 2, 1780.

Of this family, Jacobus, the eldest son, better known as Colonel James Van Cortlandt, died without children, April 1, 1781; Frederick died in 1800, without issue; Anna Marica was married to Nathaniel Marston, and after his decease to Augustus Van Horn; Eva married Henry White.

Augustus Van Cortlandt, the second son, married for his first wife Miss Cuyler, and after her decease, Miss Catharine Barclay, of Santa Cruz, W. I. His children were James Van Cortlandt, born March 3, 1736, and died April 1, 1781; Helen, born January 4, 1768, and married James Morris, of Morrisania (whose son, Augustus Frederick Morris, assumed the name of Van Cortlandt, and inherited from his grandfather a part of his estate in Lower Yonkers); and Anna, born January 18, 1766, who married Henry White, son of Henry White and Eva Van Cortlandt.

DESCENDANTS OF HENRY WHITE.

The ancestors of Henry White were said to be of Welsh origin, but the earliest records locate them at Denham, near Uxbridge, Buckinghamshire, England. The father of Henry White was a colonel in the British army, and settled in Maryland in 1712, where his son was born. The latter received his education in England, but returned to this country, became a merchant in New York, and inherited a large property from his relations in Maryland. He seems to have been actively engaged in business, and his name appears in a petition, dated May 8, 1756, for leave to ship bread to South Carolina for the use of the navy.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A Van Cortlandt

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

He was afterwards engaged in the importation of English goods from London and Bristol, his store being in King Street, New York. On the 13th of May, 1761, he married Eva, daughter of Frederick Van Cortlandt and Francina Jay, an alliance which added greatly to his wealth and position. In 1769 he was appointed one of His Majesty's Council for the province of New York, and retained that honorable position till the Revolution closed the English rule. During his life he was one of the foremost merchants in New York, and his residence was a large house on Queen (now Pearl) Street, between the Fly Market, which was at the foot of the present Maiden Lane, and the Coffee-House, which stood on the corner of Wall and Water Streets. This house had been the residence of Abraham De Peyster, the treasurer of the colony, and was one of the most important buildings in the city. In 1772 Mr. White became president of the Chamber of Commerce, and a fine portrait of him is in the possession of that corporation. In 1776 he went to England, but returned in the fall of the same year, and was an adherent of the royal cause. On the 9th of October, 1780, he was one of the witnesses who appeared before the surrogate to prove the will of Major Andre, but returned to England before the evacuation of New York, in 1783. He died in Golden Square, London, December 23, 1786, and was buried in the church-yard at St. James, Westminster, in Piccadilly. He was esteemed by his contemporaries as a gentleman of respectability and integrity. His estate was confiscated by the act of 1779, and his house in New York was sold in May, 1786. The children of Henry White and Eva Van Cortlandt were Henry, Admiral Sir John Chambers, General Frederick Van Cortlandt, Wm. Tryon, Ann (wife of Sir John Macnamara Hayes), Margaret (wife of Peter Jay Munro) and Frances (wife of Archibald Bruce, M.D.)

Henry White was the oldest and the only son who remained in America. He married Ann Van Cortlandt, daughter of Augustus Van Cortlandt and Catharine Barclay. Their children were Augustus; Henry; Catharine, wife of Richard Bayley; Helen, wife of Abraham Schermerhorn; Augusta, wife of E. N. Bibby, M.D.; Harriet, and Francina, wife of Dr. Groshon.

The will of Augustus Van Cortlandt, dated December, 1823, contains the following clause: "Whereas, the greatest part of the lands and real estate which I occupy and hold in the town of Yonkers was derived to me by inheritance from my ancestors; and Whereas, I have purchased some tracts of land, also lying in the town of Yonkers, which I at present possess, it is my desire that the same remain entire and pass to one of my surname and family; Wherefore, I do hereby give and devise all my lands, and real estate, dwelling-house, mills and other buildings, unto my affectionate relatives, John Jay and Peter Augustus Jay, and to their heirs forever; except a certain dwelling-house and farm in the said town of Yonkers, and a lot of ground near my mill pond, which belonged to my late brother, Frederick Van Cortlandt, in trust for the following uses,—First, To hold the same for my son-in-law, Henry White, late the husband of my deceased daughter, Anna White, during the term of his natural life; Second, After the decease of my son-in-law, Henry White, and in case Augustus, the son of said Henry White, shall survive him, then to hold the same for the use of the said Augustus, and his heirs and assigns, on condition that from and after my decease he do take and constantly and exclusively use the name of Van Cortlandt."

In accordance with this, Augustus White assumed the name of Augustus Van Cortlandt, and at the time of his death, which occurred April 1, 1839, he left the estate to his brother Henry for life, and to his brother's eldest son in fee, provided they take and constantly use the name of Van Cortlandt; and upon the failure of male heirs, it was provided that the property should pass to his nephew, Augustus Van Cortlandt Bibby, the son of his sister Augusta.

Henry White, the above devisee, assumed the name of Van Cortlandt, and took possession of the estate upon the death of his brother. He survived him but a few months, and died in October, 1839, without children, and the estate then descended to his nephew, Augustus Van Cortlandt Bibby, who, by an act of the Legislature, assumed the name of Augustus Van Cortlandt.

Mr. Van Cortlandt, whose portrait is presented, was born in New York July 31, 1826. His father, Dr. Edmund N. Bibby, a physician of eminence, was the son of Captain Bibby, an aid to General Fraser, who was killed at the battle of Saratoga. Dr. Bibby married Augusta, daughter of Henry White (second) and Anna Van Cortlandt, and their children were Augustus Van Cortlandt (the subject of this sketch), Henry W. Bibby (now living in New York), Frances (wife of John W. Munro, of Pelham) and Ann W. (wife of Robert Ogden Glover, of Mt. Vernon).

The early education of Mr. Van Cortlandt was obtained at the collegiate school of Rev. R. T. Huddart, in New York; later at a school in Bloomingdale; and subsequently at the celebrated school of the Brothers Pugnet, on Bank Street. He left school in 1842, and a year later entered the counting-room of Garner & Co., at 33 Pine Street, where he remained till 1847. He then established himself as a banker in Wall Street, where he continued till 1853, when he came to reside upon his estate at Lower Yonkers, to which he had succeeded after the death of his uncle, Henry Van Cortlandt.

He married Charlotte Amelia, daughter of the late Robert Bunch, of Nassau, New Providence, and sister of the British minister to Venezuela, and on the maternal side granddaughter of Dr. Richard Bayley, who was the first health officer of New York, an intimate friend of Sir Guy Carleton, and who died of yellow fever contracted while he was discharging his duties as officer of quarantine. Their children are

Digitized by Google

Augustus, Henry W., Robert B., Edward N., Oloff Delancey and Mary B., all of whom are now living on the family estate.

The Van Cortlandt mansion at Lower Yonkers, a relic of colonial times, stands in solitary state on an eminence about one mile north of King's Bridge, and on the east side of the old Albany post road. It is a large edifice of stone and was built by Frederick Van Cortlandt in 1748. A more ancient structure stood on the banks of the mill pond, a little north of the mill. This was the residence of the earliest generations of Van Cortlandt, and was taken down in 1825. The date of the building of the present mansion is seen in figures upon the massive southern wall, and the interior is ornamented with carvings in wood of the greatest elegance, while portraits of Augustus Van Cortlandt, Henry White, the first, and his son, and others of a long past time, grace the walls of this historic place. The eye of the visitor to the grounds cannot fail to be attracted by two eagles which surmount the posts of the old gateway. These are said to have been taken from a Spanish privateer and presented to Augustus Van Cortlandt by Rear Admiral Robert Digby, of the British navy. It is a source of no small satisfaction to the lovers of the picturesque and the beautiful that the grounds surrounding the place are to be preserved in their native beauty as a portion of the new Van Cortlandt Park, which will be one of the finest features of the northern portion of New York City.

THE VAN CORTLANDT MANOR HOUSE, KING'S BRIDGE.

When Mr. Van Cortlandt came to reside on this estate he became interested in local politics, and was elected to the offices of assessor and justice of the peace. In 1858 he was the supervisor of Yonkers, and was re-elected in 1859. He was elected member of Assembly in 1859. Prominent in business and social life, he is one of the trustees of the Metropolitan Savings Bank, president of St. Nicholas Club, member of the New York Historical Society and a member of the Rising Star Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons. He has ever been prompt and influential in advancing all public improvements, taking a lively and active interest in passing events, while leading the quiet life of a country gentleman.

DYCKMAN FAMILY.

The ancestor of this family was William Dyckman, who came from Holland in the early days of New Amsterdam. Jacobus Dyckman, who was his grandson, married Maria Kesur, and left two sons, Jacob and William.

Jacob, the elder, married Tryntje Benson, and left nine children, as follows,—Jacob, Samson, Benjamin, John, Garret, William N.; Maria, wife of John Clark; Jane, wife of John Van Vredenburgh; and Catharine, wife of Daniel Hale.

Of these children, Garret, the fifth son, married Joanna, daughter of Jonathan Odell, of Greenburgh. Their children were William N. and Jacob G. The family of the latter are now living at Morristown, N. J.

William N. Dyckman was born at Verplanck's Point, May 17, 1787. His parents removed to Greenburgh during his infancy, and at the age of ten years he went with them to New York, and lived with his parents in Duane Street till his father's death. When a young man he entered the law-office of Peter J. Monroe as a student, and was admitted to the bar at the same time with General Sandford, who was his life-long friend. During the War of 1812 he served as captain of a militia company. His entire life was passed in the city of New York, in the practice of his profession, in which he held an honorable position. In politics he was in early life a Whig, but at the formation of the Republican party he became one of its supporters, but his distaste for political life led him to take little part in public affairs.

Mr. Dyckman married Eliza A., daughter of John and Jane Honeywell, of Greenburgh. Their only child, Miss Susan Dyckman, is now residing in New York. His country residence was on the east side of

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Wm. Ryckman

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

John H. Dyckman

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

[illegible]

Isaac M. Dyckman

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF ISAAC M. DYCKMAN,
NEW YORK.

Digitized by Google

the old Albany post road, below Hastings, and is now in possession of his daughter. He died September 12, 1871, soon after the decease of his wife, which occurred in April of the same year, and both rest in the cemetery at Yonkers.

William Dyckman, the second son of Jacobus, was born August 23, 1725, and died August 10, 1787. He married Mary Turner, who was born February 4, 1728, and died February 14, 1802. They were the parents of nine children,—Jacobus, Abraham, Michael, William, John; Maritje, wife of Jacob Vermilyea; Jane, Joanna, wife of Evert Brown; and Charity, wife of Benjamin Lent.

The oldest son, Jacobus, was born September 13, 1748. His children were William, Frederick, who married Eva Myers, John, Abraham, Jacob, James, Isaac, Michael, Hannah, who married Caleb Smith, and Maria.[1]

Of these children, Abraham married Margaret, daughter of John and Jane Honeywell, and sister of Jane, wife of William N. Dyckman. His son, John H. Dyckman, was born May 5, 1813, on the family estate, below King's Bridge, and lived for the greater part of his life in the old "Century House," which is still standing, a relic of the ancient time. Here he passed a quiet and uneventful life, as a gentleman of leisure and a worthy representative of an historic race. He died unmarried, April 6, 1879. His only sister, Jane, also died unmarried, February 1, 1840.

Isaac M. Dyckman was born in Yonkers, January 1, 1813. His father was Caleb Smith, who married Hannah, daughter of Jacobus Dyckman, who was a representative of the Dutch family of that name, and owned a large landed estate south of Harlem River. While a boy he went to live with his maternal grandfather, and was adopted by him, and assuming the family name, has ever since borne the name of Isaac M. Dyckman. Two of his grandfather's brothers, Abraham and Michael, were soldiers in the Revolution and one of them was killed in the war. Their perfect knowledge of the localities on both sides of Harlem River rendered them especially valuable as guides, and their services were in frequent demand.

Jacobus Dyckman died in August, 1832, and his estate descended to his two sons, Michael and Isaac, both of whom died unmarried, and a large portion of the property came into the possession of their nephew. The ancient Dyckman homestead, which existed before the Revolution, stood near Harlem River, close by the foot of Two Hundred and Ninth Street. This was burned during the Revolution, and another (now called the Century House) was built on the west side of the King's Bridge road, or Broadway, near the twelfth mile stone. It was here that Jacobus Dyckman lived and died. The house is still standing, and is now owned by Benjamin P. Fairchild. It is at the northwest corner of King's Bridge road and Hawthorn Street. On a portion of this estate Mr. Dyckman has ever made his home, and built his present elegant residence in 1874. During the early part of his life, before the growth of New York City had reached the vicinity of Harlem River, he cultivated this tract as a farm, but the advancement of the city has made it far too valuable for that purpose, and he finds his time fully occupied in looking after his extensive real estate. In politics he has always been identified with the Democratic party, as were his ancestors; and in religion he is connected with the Presbyterian Church. He married Fannie B., the daughter of Benjamin Browne, of Yonkers, and has two daughters, Mary A. and Fannie F.

Jacobus Dyckman, mentioned above, was the son of William Dyckman, and besides the brothers Abraham and Michael, he had three sisters,—Charity, wife of Benjamin Lent; Joanna, wife of Evart Browne; and Maritje, wife of Jacob Vermilyea.

Jacobus Dyckman left children,—William Frederick, Abraham (who married Margaret Honiwell), and left two children, Jane and John H., both of whom died unmarried. Jacob who was a prominent physician in New York, James who died young, Maria, Hannah who married Caleb Smith, as mentioned above, Michael and Isaac (who survived the rest.) All of these except Hannah died unmarried.

[1] See sketch of Isaac M. Dyckman.

ROBERT COLGATE.

The family of which Mr. Colgate is a representative has been traced back to a very remote ancestry in England. They appear to have been settled in the county of Kent at an early date. The immediate ancestor of the branch of the family that settled in America was Robert Colgate, a native of the village of Seven Oaks, in Kent, a man of note and influence and a prominent agriculturist of his native county. In political affairs he was a most determined Radical, and so plainly outspoken of his opinions as to render him obnoxious to the government. His known sympathy with the Radicals and the assistance he rendered to some who were confined in the Tower of London caused an order for his arrest and imprisonment to be issued. In his younger days he had been a schoolmate of William Pitt, and that statesman, moved by remembrance of early friendship, sent him a timely warning, with the intimation that if he should leave for America within a limited time, an opportunity would be given. Acting upon this suggestion, he hired a vessel and, with his family, sailed for the New World, and landed at Baltimore in 1795. Under the protection of a free government, the fiery Radical soon became the peaceful citizen, and, purchasing a farm near Baltimore, he made agriculture the business of his life. Upon this farm he remained for several years, then removed to the State of New York and took charge of the farm of Peter J. Monroe, Esq., of Westchester County. Some years later his son William, having been successful in business,

Digitized by Google

where he attended an academy under the care of

Digitized by Google

Robert Colgate

Digitized by Google

purchased a farm in Andes, Delaware County, N. Y., and placed his father upon it. Here he lived a life of quiet usefulness till 1826, when, walking to church one Sabbath morning, he suddenly dropped dead, having reached the age of sixty-four.

Mr. Colgate was married in England to Miss Sarah Bowles. Their children were William, Bowles, John, George, Charles, Charlotte (wife of Dr. William B. Selden, of Norfolk, Va.), Esther (wife of Jacob Klein, of New Orleans), Lydia and Maria (both of whom died unmarried).

William Colgate, the oldest son, was born in Kent, England, in 1783, and came to this country with his father. At the age of twelve he was apprenticed to John Slidell, who, at that time, was doing business at Bowling Green, in the city of New York. In after-years Mr. Slidell failed in business, and, through the influence of Mr. Colgate, he obtained the position of president of the Mechanics' Bank, and was subsequently president of the Traders' Insurance Company. He died very suddenly of cholera in 1832. His son, John Slidell, lived in Virginia, and gained, at a later day, a very undesirable notoriety as the ambassador of the Confederate States to France. After remaining a while in the employ of Mr. Slidell, Mr. Colgate commenced business for himself in 1806 as a manufacturer of soap and candles, in partnership with Francis Smith. Their place of business was No. 6 Dutch Street, New York. During the War of 1812 the firm carried on an extensive and prosperous trade, and he found himself on the road to fortune. Mr. Smith having retired from the firm, Mr. Colgate conducted the business, which is still continued at the old place under the well-known firm name of Colgate & Co. After a life of successful business enterprise, Mr. Colgate died in 1857, and was laid to his last repose in Greenwood Cemetery. He left to his descendants not only the wealth which was the result of his commercial ability and energy, but the still richer legacy of an unblemished reputation; and all who knew him were willing to unite in the testimony that he was a man of upright life and free from guile. Like his father before him, he was a devoted member of the Baptist Church, and deeply interested in all that could increase its welfare and advance its usefulness. He married Mary, daughter of Edward Gilbert. Their children were Robert, Gilbert, Sarah (who died unmarried), James B. (of the well-known banking company of James B. Colgate & Co.), Joseph (who died in Berlin, Prussia, in 1864), Samuel (of Orange, N. J.), William (who died unmarried in 1838) and Mary (wife of Robert Colby).

Robert Colgate, the oldest of his family, and the subject of this sketch, was born in the city of New York, January 29, 1812. In his early youth he attended school at Rhinebeck during two years, and then went to Hamilton, Madison County, N. Y., where he attended an academy under the care of Zenas Morse, who held a high reputation as an instructor. Upon his return to New York, he attended the high school under the care of Daniel H. Barnes, a well-known teacher. His introduction to business was as clerk in the employ of Samuel Hicks & Sons. One of the most important episodes of this period of his life was his experience during the cholera of 1832, when he was the only one of the employees who remained at his post during that fatal time. Upon one occasion he, in company with a carman in the employ of the firm, left the building at the same time. Within four hours his companion was dead and buried; Mr. Colgate himself was seized with the disease, but fortunately survived the attack.

In 1833 he went into business on his own account, in company with his Uncle Charles and George P. Pollen, under the firm-name of Colgate, Pollen & Colgate, manufacturers and dealers in dye-stuffs and paints, their place of business being at 177 Water Street. In 1845 he built the Atlantic White Lead Works in Brooklyn, having previously purchased the store property at 287 Pearl Street, New York, which, at that time, was surrounded by the private residences of many wealthy and prominent citizens. To the works in Brooklyn he added the manufacture of linseed oil, and the firm, which is now known by the name of Robert Colgate & Co., are among the most extensive dealers in paint and oil in the country, and bear a high reputation in the commercial world. They have stood unshaken through all the financial reverses which have visited the city, and never failed to meet all obligations with promptness. It has always been the policy of the firm to secure the services of trusty and faithful employees and to retain them as long as they are willing to remain. As an illustration, it may be mentioned that the bookkeeper, James B. Carr, has been in the employ of the firm for fifty years, and the cashier for thirty years. By a failure of health Mr. Colgate was compelled to retire from active labor many years since, but still remains at the head of the firm which has so long and so honorable a record.

About twenty-five years since, he purchased an estate in Westchester County, at Riverdale, which he has greatly improved, and under his care Stonehurst has been made one of the finest residences on the Hudson. Its elevated position commands one of the most extended views on the river, while the resources of wealth and refined taste have been joined to make it a thing of beauty.

Mr. Colgate married Cornelia F., daughter of Abner Weyman. They were the parents of two children,—Abner W. and Georgiana. Mrs. Colgate died in 1842, and Mr. Colgate subsequently married Mary E., daughter of Romulus Riggs, of Philadelphia. She died in 1865, leaving four children,—Samuel J., Alice R. (wife of John D. Wood), Robert, Jr., and Romulus R.

Digitized by Google

here he attended an academy under the care of

Digitized by Google

Robert Colgate

Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"STONEHURST," RESIDENCE OF ROBERT COLGATE.

RIVERDALE-ON-THE-HUDSON, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

John Ewen

Digitized by Google

ate. About this time the
attention was drawn to the subject of malleable iron,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

GENERAL JOHN EWEN.

General Ewen was a native of New York. He was educated for the profession of civil engineer, and began practice in that city before attaining his majority. At this period he surveyed and laid out, under the direction of his brother, Daniel Ewen, what was then the village of Williamsburgh, now a part of the city of Brooklyn.

Afterward he was appointed resident engineer of the New Castle and Frenchtown (Delaware) Railroad and held that position until the completion of the work, when he returned to New York and succeeded Judge Wright as chief engineer of the New York and Harlem Railroad. During his occupation of this office, which he held for several years and until the completion of the road to Harlem, Mr. Ewen was appointed by the Common Council to fill the office of street commissioner. The arduous duties of this position were so well discharged by him that he retained it for eight years—from 1836 to 1844—under successive Democratic and Whig administrations. Removed in 1844, with many other officers, by the incoming Native American Common Council, he was appointed comptroller on a change of administration in the spring of 1845, by a unanimous vote, and held that office under Democratic and Whig rule more than three years, when he resigned to accept the vice-presidency of the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company. After one year he withdrew to accept a similar position in the Pennsylvania Coal Company, of which he soon after became president. To the interests of this corporation he devoted the best qualities of his head and heart, and in its service he sacrificed his health and possibly his life.

In conducting the successful defense of his company against adverse litigation, begun in 1853, continued during a period of about seventeen years and involving claims amounting to millions of dollars, Mr. Ewen displayed great ability and wonderful capacity for work. At the beginning of the litigation, perceiving that his efficiency in directing the defense would be greatly increased by his admission to the bar, he unhesitatingly undertook the study of law, which he prosecuted in season and out of season, so that in a few months he was regularly admitted to practice in the courts of this State. Availing himself of this privilege, he took testimony covering thousands of pages and made at the close an able argument, filling a large volume in itself, covering all that part of the case involving, especially, questions of civil engineering, with which he had been familiar from boyhood.

In the course of this litigation he called to his aid many distinguished lawyers, among whom may be named Messrs. Francis B. Cutting, Samuel J. Tilden, Charles F. Southmayd, John K. Porter and Lyman Tremain.

Mr. Ewen was a Democrat, and, with the exception of his vote for Mr. Lincoln, his political course was with the Democratic party. He was associated with the late Mr. Havemeyer in the city government during the first term of the latter as mayor. In addition to the civic appointments and offices of trust held by him at varied times, he also held high rank among the citizen soldiery of New York. Elected in 1836 lieutenant-colonel of the Eighth Regiment of Light Infantry, he was soon afterward chosen colonel, and in 1847 was elected brigadier-general of the Fourth Brigade. This command included, at the outbreak of the Civil War, the famous Sixty-ninth and Seventy-ninth Regiments. The former, composed almost exclusively of men of Irish birth, upon the first call for volunteers, recruited within a week a number sufficient to fill nearly seven regiments. The Seventy-ninth was made up mainly of Scottish citizens, about three hundred of whom were reported to have been stone-masons. Both regiments were engaged at the first battle of Bull Run, the Seventy-ninth carrying through the fight a silken banner presented by Mrs. Ewen.

Upon the invasion of Pennsylvania General Ewen hastened to the front in response to the call for aid, and with his command acted under the orders of General Baldy Smith until the withdrawal of the invaders. Having retired of late years from public affairs, in consequence of failing health, the result of overwork, he is less widely known to the active men of the present day than to their fathers and to those immediately interested in the corporation at whose head he had been for so many years, but these will cherish his memory as that of a good citizen, a constant and benevolent friend, a fond husband and father, an honest man.

ISAAC G. JOHNSON.

Isaac Gale Johnson was born at Troy, N. Y., February 22, 1832. His father, Elias Johnson (who married Laura, daughter of Solomon Gale, of Vermont), was a resident of Westfield, Mass., from which place he removed to Troy, and was for many years extensively engaged in the manufacture of stoves as a member of the well-known firm of Johnson, Cox & Fuller. He was the first manufacturer who used a cupola-furnace, for melting iron, north of Philadelphia, and the business of the firm assumed large proportions, the products of their works being shipped to all parts of the country, while, during the Mexican War, they furnished to the government large quantities of shot and shells.

Mr. Johnson was educated for a civil engineer and B.N.S., and graduated at the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute of Troy, N. Y., in 1848. He practiced the profession of an engineer for a short time, and then found employment from the firm of which his father was a partner. Soon after he went to Philadelphia studied chemical analysis, and took lessons in drawing at the Franklin Institute. About this time his attention was drawn to the subject of malleable iron,

Digitized by Google

and to this he devoted his time and labor, conducting a series of experiments which led to very important discoveries. The malleable iron which was produced at that time was an inferior article, no means having been discovered for making it of a uniform quality and sufficiently good to answer the many purposes for which it was required. The great object of his labors and experiments was to find some means by which articles now made by the slow process of forging could be made from cast iron. These efforts have been crowned with complete success, and bid fair to work a complete revolution in the manufacture of iron implements. In 1853 Johnson, Cox & Fuller came to Spuyten Duyvil and purchased a tract of one hundred and eighty acres of land, on the north side of Spuyten Duyvil Creek and adjoining Hudson River. Here they established a foundry and stove factory and carried on the business. Mr. Johnson, having once fairly started on his new process, pursued it with his wonted vigor. In 1861 General Delafield, of the United States army, designed the gun which bears his name. The first cannon, which were made at the famous Parrott Foundry, at Cold Spring, failed to stand the test, and burst after a few discharges. Without any knowledge of this fact, Mr. Johnson made a proposition to furnish four guns of his pattern and warrant them to stand firing one thousand rounds each without bursting. The offer being accepted, the guns were furnished, and not one failed. This not only established the fame of the inventor, but of the manufacturer as well, and sixty-four additional guns were made, which did good service in the field. Soon after Mr. Johnson entered into an agreement with the Parrott Company, and made shot and shell for them during the war. To explain the process by which the various articles are produced at the Johnson Foundry, and to enumerate them, would very far exceed our limits. It is sufficient to say that they are the results of a thorough knowledge of chemical analysis, a careful selection of materials and a skillful mode of preparation. These products are of endless variety—from the tinned handles of a milk-can (which were the first articles manufactured) to the ponderous rolls for iron-rolling mills, weighing several tons. The enterprise, which at first was carried on with the help of six men, now gives constant employment to three hundred, and the business must continue to increase as the articles manufactured are introduced to public notice.

Mr. Johnson is a Republican in politics, but his time is so fully occupied in his business affairs that he has declined all offers of public office. He is, however, the vice-president of the King's Bridge Association. In religion he is connected with the Baptist Church, and is one of the deacons of the society.

He married Jane E., daughter of Gilbert Bradley, of Sunderland, Vt. Their children are Elias M., Isaac B., Gilbert H., Arthur G. and James W. Two of these are now in partnership with their father, and their skill and talent bid fair to lead to new discoveries. It deserves especial mention that Mr. Johnson has always evinced a deep interest in the welfare of his employés, and a well-furnished reading-room affords them means for mental culture, while a well-conducted Sunday-school has a tendency to elevate their moral nature.

The manufacture of gas and steam-fittings in this establishment has been brought to such a degree of perfection that their productions can be sent to foreign countries and sold at such prices as to defy competition—a result which has been accomplished by improved methods of manufacture and without reduction of wages. Mr. Johnson is a member of the American Institute of Mining Engineers, and is deeply interested in all that pertains to scientific research.

CHAPTER XX.

WESTCHESTER TOWN.

BY FORDHAM MORRIS.

FROM THE DISCOVERY TO THE REVOLUTION.—The most celebrated of American historians says, "To the enterprise of proprietaries New Netherlands was to owe its tenants," and he lays great stress upon the fact that the Dutch West India Company insisted that the Indian title should first be extinguished before any of the Dutch settlers could obtain permanent rights in the soil.[1] Though Henry Hudson was the first discoverer of Hudson's River and Spuyten Duyvil Creek in 1609; though Adrian Block, in his yacht, the "Onrest," in 1613–14, made the first white man's cruise to the east of the ancient township that has given its name to a county; and though Christiansen had established his trading post on the site of the future Fort Orange or Albany about the same time, we have no record by government, republic or company of what was formerly known as, and still forms a part of, the town of Westchester for many years after the discovery of New Netherlands by the Dutch. The natives belonging to the tribe of Weekquaesgeeks were the sole patroons or lords of the soil, and from their movements we obtain our earliest knowledge concerning Westchester township. In 1616 all the southermost part of Westchester County and as far north as the Saw-Mill or Nepperhan River, at what is now known as Yonkers, was in possession of that tribe; and in 1626[2] one of the tribe with his nephew, crossed Harlem River and got as far south as the "Kolck" Pond, or Canal Street, on New York Island, for the purpose of trading his beaver skins. Governor Minuit's servants met them both and stole the skins and murdered the uncle. The

[1] Bancroft's "United States," vol. ii. page 42. Little & Brown's Ed.
[2] Broadhead, page 74; Schoolcraft, page 101.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

[illegible] ildren are Elias M., [illegible] A., Arthur G. and James W. Two [illegible] are now in partnership with their father, and their skill and talent bid fair to lead to new discover- and stoc[illegible]

[1] Bancroft's "United States," [illegible]
[2] Broadhead, page 74; Schoolcraft, page 101.

Digitized by Google

Owen T. Johnson

Digitized by Google

ISAAC G. JOHNSON & CO.'S WORKS,

NEW YORK.

Digitized by Google

young savage escaped, but swore he would revenge himself on the Dutch.[1 2 3]

In 1640 the progress of enterprising settlers of New England along the shores of Long Island Sound awakened the fears of the governing powers in New Netherland and Director Kieft dispatched his faithful secretary, Van Tienhoven, to purchase the Archipelego at Norwalk, or islands at the mouth of the present Norwalk River, *together with all the adjoining land*, "and to prevent any other nation from encroaching on our limits." These instructions were accomplished and the West India Company obtained the Indian title to all the lands between the Norwalk River and the North River.[4] In the previous year Van Tienhoven witnessed another Indian transfer to the West India Company of Keskeskeck which also covers by its description the town of Westchester.[5]

Within this grant was included the town now described as Westchester. The present limits (1885) are, on the north Pelham or East Chester Bay, and a line extending in a westerly direction to Bronx River; the East River and the beginning of Long Island Sound form the south and east boundaries, and Bronx River is its western boundary; but, originally, Westchester township consisted of all that portion of the southern part of Westchester County which was bounded on the north by Pelham Bay, East Chester, and Yonkers; its west, south and east boundaries were Harlem River, Harlem or Bronck's Kills, the East River and Long Island Sound.

About 1639–40 one Jonas Bronck or Bronx arrived from Hoorn, in Holland, in the ship "Fine of Tray." Bronck was of Swedish extraction. His last European residence was in Amsterdam, and there he married Antonia, daughter of Juriaen Slagboom. Enterprise and discovery was then the fashion in Europe, and from interviews with persons familiar with the New Netherland discoveries, he became informed of its fertility, and with his family, farmers, female servants and cattle arrived in July, 1639, at New Amsterdam. He purchased from Ranachqua, or Ranaque, and Taekamuck, Indian chiefs, a tract of five hundred acres, "lying between the great kill" (Harlem River) and the "Ahquahung," (Bronx) part of which is now included in Morrisania. Here he erected a stone house covered with tiles, a barn, tobacco house and two barracks.[6] From the old map of Bronxland on file in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany, it appears that Bronx's house was situated not far from the present depot of the Port Chester Branch Railroad, and from the inventory of Bronx's estate it is quite certain he was a gentleman of learning and refinement, for he had in his library books written in several languages, used silver on his table and had napkins and table-cloths, and as many as six linen shirts.[7] The books were, many of them, religious. He undoubtedly believed that cleanliness and godliness were twin sisters.

Bronx was hardly settled in his new quarters at Emmaus, as he piously termed it, before an Indian war broke out. The young Weckquaesgeek who had witnessed the killing of his uncle by Minuit's servants had attained manhood. Claes Smits, a harmless Dutchman, had built a small house on the East River near Harlem, on the Manhattan side, now One Hundred and Twenty-third Street, near the river. He was a wheelwright by trade. The young savage came one day and offered to barter some beaver skins for duffels, and while Smits was stooping over the chest in which he kept the goods the Indian killed him with an axe, plundered the house and escaped with his booty into Westchester.

Governor Kieft demanded satisfaction from the tribe; the sachem refused to give him up and soldiers were sent to arrest him, but they failed to do so.[8] The prudent burghers of New Amsterdam were opposed to a war, and the director very wisely saw that if one was begun he would have to bear the blame. He therefore sought counsel of the community, and the twelve men, from whom, by the charter of the company, he was directed to ask advice agreed that Smits' murder should be avenged, but they thought that "*God and the opportunity*" should be taken into consideration and that the director should make the necessary preparations. They advised that trade and intercourse with the savages should in the meantime be maintained and no hostile measures should be adopted against any one but the murderer until the hunting season was ended, and then it would be proper to send out two parties, one from the Sound or East River side and the other from the Hudson

[1] 1 Broadhead, 167.
[2] De Vries' "Voyages," 164, Journal Van New Netherland.
[3] Hall Docs., iii. 105, v. 314.
[4] 1 Broadhead, 296.
[5] N. Y. Col. Docs., xiii. 5.
[6] Riker and N. Y. Col. Docs., vol. xi. 102.
[7] N. Y. Col. Docs., xi. 102.
[8] 1 Broadhead, 316, "Doc. History N. Y.," iv. 8, 9.

Digitized by Google

River side to surprise them. It was also suggested by the *twelve men* that the director should "*lead the van*," but that in the meantime a shallop should be three times sent to demand the murderer.[1] Kieft would not listen to this wise counsel; by private colloquy with each of the *twelve* he tried to advise them to sanction a war, but they voted to await the arrival of the next ship from Fatherland.[2] A treaty of peace was finally made with the Indians at the house of Jonas Bronx's[3] in 1642, and in 1643 Jonas Bronx, probably the first white settler in Westchester town, died at his home, and his estate was administered upon by friends at Harlem[4].

Everardus Bogardus, the Dutch minister in New Amsterdam (husband of the far-famed Anneke Jans) and Jochim Petersen Keyser, or Kuyter, of Harlem, made up the inventory of his estate. His widow was present, as was also his son, Peter Bronx, and from him are descended a numerous family settled at Albany since that time.[5]

About the time of Bronx's death some persons from New England settled on what is now known as Throgg's Neck or Throgg's Point, the extreme eastern part of the township. This locality was called by the Dutch Vreedelant, or the "free land," owing to the fact that New Englanders, to escape intolerance in their own settlements, persecution for witchcraft, Quakerism and other offenses came to this region to enjoy civil and religious liberty, guaranteed to all persons who chose to come under the dominion of the Dutch West India Company. In the permission to settle there given by Director Kieft to John Throckmorton and his associates the territory is described as along the East River of New Netherland, "being a piece of land surrounded on one side by a little river and on the other side by a great kill, which river and kill on high water running to meet each other." This description covers the present Throgg's Neck or everything east of Westchester Creek and west of East Chester Bay. Throckmorton and his associates, however, had but a short enjoyment of their new homes. The treaty of peace signed at Bronx's house was of no avail. The Indians were committing depredations, and Director Kieft, with the assistance of a council of only eight men, this time determined on an Indian war. As large a force as the good burghers of New Amsterdam could afford to pay for was promptly enlisted, good and fitting ordinances against taverning and all other irregularities were "ordained," and, possibly to prevent such worldly practices, a week's preaching was ordered. Captain John Underhill, a hero of the Pequod War, was placed in command of the expedition.

Either by reason of the delay in recruiting or the week's preaching, or some other misfortune not mentioned in the documents of that date, the troops took the field too late, and were unable to repel an attack made by the Weckquaesgeeks, who, at Pelham Neck, or, as it was then known, Annie's Hoeck, murdered the celebrated refugee Ann Hutchinson, and destroyed houses and cattle. Thence they went to "Vreedelandt," where such of the Throckmorton or Cornell families as were at home were murdered and the barns and houses burned. A boat landing there about that time, some of the women and children fled on board, but eighteen persons were massacred.

This raid seems to have extended a considerable distance. Westchester was laid waste and Long Island was almost cleaned out of inhabitants and stock. The *eight men* of New Amsterdam wrote a pitiful tale to the Most Worshipful Directors of the West India Company, saying: "Famine stares us in the face. Not a plough can be put in the ground. This is but the beginning of our troubles."[7]

The southwest part of Throgg's Neck, or Pilot's Point, and the old Ferris place, as now known, in the possession of the Ferrises, Mr. Zenega, Jacob Lorillard and others, was granted to Thomas Hunt about 1686.[8] Farther west were Willett's and Cornell's Necks, called Black Rock. This latter extended westerly to the Bronx, but did not include that part of the township which formed the borough. In 1663 that portion of the original town west of the Bronx, including the present village of West Farms, Hunt's Point and as far west as Leggetts Creek, vested by purchase from the Indians in Edward Jessup and John Richardson. Bronx's land evidently lay between Bungay and Cromwell's Creeks. Devoe's Point, or Daniel Turneur's land, now forming the point between Cromwell's Creek and Harlem River south of High Bridge, purchased originally in 1671 by Turneur from the Indians, and Archer's patent, also an Indian purchase, formed the northwest corner of the territory.

The method pursued by the West India Company

[1] 1 Broadhead, 318, "Doc. History," v. 326, 329.

[2] 1 Broadhead, 319.

[3] 1 Broadhead, 330.

[4] Riker's "History of Harlem," 158–59; vol. xi., N. Y. Col. Docs., 44.

[5] Tuentje or Turnje Jurianson was Bronx's widow. Her name would hardly be recognized to-day as the synonym of Antonia Slagboom; but Turnje is the Dutch nickname for Antonia, and as her father (Slagboom) was baptized Jurian, she was Turnje, the daughter of Jurian, and so called, though to-day she would be Mrs. Bronx. After Bronx's death she married Arendt Van Corlaer, the sheriff of Rensselaerwick, and on July 10, 1651, Van Corlaer sold Bronx's land to Jacob Jans Stoll. In 1662, Matthias de Vos, as attorney for Geertruit Andries, the widow of Van Stoll, conveyed it to Geertrien Hendrick, the widow of one Andries Hoppen, and she, on the same day, with the consent of her husband, Dirck Gerritts Van Tright, sold to Harmann Smeenan, who, on the 22d of October, sold the same to Samuel Edsall, a beaver-maker, of New York City, who held it until 1668–70. Edsall was a useful man. In the exercise of his business he had considerable intercourse with the Indians, and learned their language. We find him on several occasions, at Fort Amsterdam and elsewhere, acting as an interpreter. He removed from Bronx land and finally settled in New Jersey.

[6] 1 Broadhead, 366 and 367, and Docs. quoted. O'Callaghan's "History New Netherlands," 258. Bolton's "History Westchester," vol. ii. page 264. Alb. Records, G. G., 98. N. Y. Col. Docs., xi. 44. N. Y. Col. Docs., xi. 102.

[7] Bolton's "Westchester," vol. ii. page 269. Mr. Bolton gives in his history a copy of the original deed. Albany Records, vol. ii. page 79.

Digitized by Google

in the first planting of settlements was as follows: The company, at their own cost and in their own ships, conveyed the farmers (*boors, bauers*) to the new country. The tenant was granted a bouerie, or farm, for a term of years, and was to clear the land. The company furnished a house, barn, farming implements and tools, horses cows, sheep and pigs, in proportion to the acreage. The farmer had the use of these animals for the term, and on its expiration he was to return to the company the number of domestic animals he had received, he to keep part of the increase. The company, for several years from its outset, distributed its live-stock among those farmers who had not the means to buy. All risks of the cattle dying were shared between the company and the farmer. By this process the boors, in a few years, managed to amass sufficient money and cattle to enable them to purchase lands from the company or some patroon. Under the private proprietors the method was somewhat similar. The proprietor gave permission to his tenants to clear the land and plant crops on it, but they were obliged to break up new land after the land already cleared had been in use by the tenant for the number of years specified in the lease.

The landlord had the option to determine what land should be cleared and planted. He rarely received a money rent, but got his land back in his possession, cleared and prepared for agricultural purposes. Sometimes the landlord would furnish horses and cattle to the tenants. Many of the tenants were persons whom the landlords had assisted to emigrate by advancing their passage money, and they would pay that back whenever they had the ready means, either in cash or in crops. Tobacco and wheat were the principal crops.[1]

In 1654–55 some New Englanders settled at or near Westchester without Stuyvesant's permission. On the 19th of April, Van Tienhoven, the Fiscal, issued a writ commanding Thomas Pel, or whomsoever else it might concern, to cease from trespassing and to leave the premises, and intrusted the writ to Claes Van Elslaut, the court messenger, and promptly on the 22d Claes arrived at the new village which was building at Vreedelandt. Four armed men came to meet him at the creek and demanded what he was after. Elslaut asked, "Where can I land near the houses?" The reply was, "You shall not land." The messenger said, "I am cold, let me land," and he sprang ashore. Albert, the trumpeter, was with him, and both were placed under guard by the settlers and told not to advance a foot. The commander of the party advanced with a pistol in his hand and with eight or ten men following. The faithful messenger did his duty; he read the protest or warrant and handed it to the leader, who said, "I cannot understand Dutch; why did not the Fiscal send it in English? If you send it in English, then shall I answer in writing." He added, "But that's no matter; we expect the ships from Holland and England which are to bring the settlement of the boundary. Whether we are to dwell here under the States or the Parliament time will tell; furthermore, we abide here under the States of England. If we had a sup of wine we should offer you some, but we have not any."

They then discharged their guns all round. Elslaut tried to see their houses and fixtures, and also the Parliament's arms, which the English said were hung on a tree and carved on a plank, but the people left the messenger standing in a hut on the shore well guarded by men. The messengers were finally permitted to return and Van Elslaut made his report.[2]

Such treatment roused the indignation of Stuyvesant. On the 6th of March, 1656, he and his Council instructed Captain Frederick de Conninck with Captain Lieutenant Brian Nuton and the Fiscal, Van Tienhoven, to proceed to Westchester or Ostdorp by night with a detachment of soldiers and take possession of the houses of the Englishmen, and direct them to remove with all their movable property and cattle; they were to proceed against them by force, if necessary, and the houses were to be demolished. A lieutenant—Wheller or Wheeler—seems to have been the principal man at the settlement, which, according to Van Tienhoven's account of the population, consisted principally of fugitives, vagabonds and thieves, who, on account of their bad behavior in New England, had fled to Westchester. The expedition ordered on the 6th reached Westchester on the 14th of March, and were met there by the people, who had drawn up in line under arms, and showed themselves unwilling to remove, saying that the land belonged to them. Captain-General Conninck deprived them of their arms and took twenty-three of them prisoners, and brought them to New Amsterdam on the ship "de Waagh." Only a few, with the women and children, were left behind to take care of the goods. The wives of the captives, however, plead for their husbands' release, and the soft-hearted Governor and Council finally resolved to release the prisoners after they promised, under oath and over their signatures, to remove from Vredelandt and out of the province within six weeks, and not to come back without the consent of the Dutch government. The prisoners were also required to pay the expenses of their apprehension.[3] The petition of the captives, though quaint in language, is almost pathetic. They beg that the Governor and Council will be pleased to take into consideration the humble request of the poor and humble petitioners, and that "whereas, it doth appeare" that the government does make claim to the place where they were settled, they state that they are willing to submit themselves unto the government of the Netherlands, so long as they continue within that jurisdic-

[1] N. Y. Col. Docs., xiii. 5.

[2] N. Y. Col. Docs., xiii. 36.

[3] Idem, 65.

Digitized by Google

tion, provided they be allowed to choose their own officers for the enforcement of laws which may be made for the good of the township. Their petition was granted and on March 16, 1656, they were allowed to depart for Vredelandt and also to nominate a double number of officers, subject to the approval of the Director-General and Council. They at once organized and elected Lieutenant Thomas Wheeler as their magistrate, and his selection received the sanction of the director on the same day. Some of the party, however, were ordered to leave the province unless they gave bail for good behavior.[1]

In 1655 another Indian war broke out. The savages came down the Sound in their canoes as far as Hell Gate, and Peter, the chimney-sweep of New Amsterdam, was taken prisoner. Captain Nuton was directed to caution the people in the country to keep together and not wander far from the plantations.[2] The New Englanders settled at Westchester were suspected of having entered into a conspiracy with the Indians so as to throw off the Dutch yoke, and they were also in constant correspondence with the English authorities in Connecticut. This settlement was called by the Dutch "O'ostdorp," and the insubordination of its inhabitants was a constant annoyance to Stuyvesant.[3][4] The Dutch West India Company also expressed its disapproval of the course the New Englanders were pursuing with reference to Ostdorp, or Westchester village, and their wicked attempts to "purloin it."[5]

Van Couwenhoven made a report to the Governor and Council that, on the 15th of March, 1664, an Indian named Hiekemick came to his house and told him that the Esopus and Wappinger Indians were ready for an insurrection, and that the English at Westchester had promised that they would first conquer Long Island and then the Manhattans, but that the Indians must help them. The Indians said that they were willing, but the thrifty New Englanders asked, "When you have done it, how much land shall we have then?" The land at Esopus was promised if the English would help them kill the Dutch. The Indians made another visit to Westchester and tried to consummate the bargain, but were answered, "It cannot be done at present, as our Sachem (evidently meaning Lieutenant Wheeler) has made an agreement with Stuyvesant for a year." After some unsuccessful palaver the Indians left, saying, "It is better to make peace with the Dutch; the English are only fooling us."

But the inhabitants of Westchester did not feel satisfied under the Dutch rule, and in the following August of 1664 informed the commissioners of Her Majesty's affairs in New England of their arrest by the Dutch and the hardships they had to endure in the hold of a vessel and in a dungeon at the Manhattoes; that the sole cause of their arrest was that they opposed the Dutch title to the lands; that after their release some of their companions were driven away and the residue were enslaved. This was undoubtedly an allusion to the compulsory visit Wheeler and his friends made some years before to New Amsterdam.[6]

But Stuyvesant's contests with and suspicions of the unruly New England settlers at Westchester were soon ended. Charles II., of England, in March, 1664, liberally presented to James, Duke of York, the whole colony of New Netherlands, with other possessions which he never owned. In August Colonel Richard Nicolls, with his English squadron and New England soldiers, captured the city of New Amsterdam, and in September, 1664, we can imagine that Wheeler and his fellow-citizens in Westchester village rejoiced in godly New England style over the downfall of the valiant Dutch Governor, Petrus Stuyvesant, and the accession of James, Duke of York, and his Governor, Nicolls, as lord proprietor of New York and Westchester township.[7]

FORDHAM AND THE FERRIES.—West of Bronx River are the regions formerly known as the Manors of Fordham and Morrisania and the West Farms Patent, and lately as the townships of West Farms and Morrisania. The early history of Fordham and Morrisania is closely allied with that of Harlem, and many of their first settlers came from the latter village. In 1658 the director-general and Council passed an ordinance at Fort Amsterdam for the promotion of neighborly correspondence with the English in the north, and as a practical measure for the closer communication of the two peoples, they authorized the establishment of a ferry with a suitable scow near Harlem, besides promising, that a good wagon-road should be built from Fort Amsterdam to Harlem by the company's negroes as soon as the population of the latter had increased to twenty or twenty-five families.[8]

The promised ferry and road remained only a project in the minds of the Dutch authorities, but nevertheless many of the Harlem people were attracted to the main land and some cultivated boueries or farms in the neighborhood of Bronxland and Spuyten Duyvil. Nicolls, the new English Governor, a man of enterprise and tact, who paid much attention to developing the settlements and obtaining the good will of the Dutch, in 1666 granted a charter to the inhabitants of Harlem, which, among other things, provided for "a ferry to and from the main which may redound to their particular benefit," and authorized them "at their charge to build one or more boats for that purpose fit for the transportation of men, horses and cattle, for which there will be such

[1] N. Y. Col. Docs., 67.
[2] N. Y. Col. Docs., xiii. 43; Laws of New Netherland, page 198.
[3] N. Y. Col. Docs., xi. 550.
[4] Idem, 527, 529.
[5] Holland Docs., ii. page 219.
[6] N. Y. Col. Docs., xiii. 363, 392.
[7] 2 Bancroft, 69 (Little & Brown's ed.).
[8] Riker's "History of Harlem" is the source from which most of the information in the following pages is derived.

Digitized by Google

a certain allowance given as shall be adjudged reasonable." About this time it was found by the Harlem people that as there was a convenient fording-place at Spuyten Duyvil, a good road should be made to Harlem and a good ferry established over the river; so, on January 3, 1667, at a meeting of the mayor and magistrates, it was determined that the Harlem people should make one-half the road from Harlem to the Manhattans and that Spuyten Duyvil "be stopped up"; that like care be taken for a suitable ordinary (tavern) for persons coming and going; and the mayor, Captain Delaval, promised the nails and the making of a scow, on condition that the ferryman should repay him when required to do so.

Johannes Verveelen agreed to take the ferry and the ordinary for six years. He was duly sworn to provide lodgings, victuals and drink for travelers, but to tap no liquor for the Indians; he was also allowed to have six extra feet to his lot of land in Harlem, as he was cramped for room, and must make convenience "for his ordinary." Travel toward Westchester and the eastward gave a new spur and energy to Harlem. Verveelen fitted up his ordinary and provided the boats, and his lusty negro, Matthys, was placed in charge. People enjoyed the hospitality of the inn on their way to and from Bronxside, and their cattle were safely ferried across at the following rates: "For one person, four stivers, silver money; for two, three or four, each three stivers, silver money; for one beast, one shilling; and for more than one, each ten stivers silver." Riker locates the inn and ferry at the north side of One Hundred and Twenty-third Street, three hundred feet west of First Avenue. It would seem that the worthy inn-keeper and ferry-master was not always observant of the excise laws. He thought that as he was put to some expense *pro bono publico* in keeping up the ferry, he should not pay the excise fees, and the mayor and alderman thought there was sufficient equity in his claim, for, on the 3d of July, 1667, an agreement was made between them that he should have the ferry for five years, provided he keep a convenient house and lodging for passengers. He was also given about an acre on Bronxside, and a place to build a house on. At what point this was located the present historian can not decide. At the end of five years the ferry was to be farmed out, but during that time he was to pay nothing for it, and in case the ferry should be let to another, the house was to be valued as it stood, and Verveelen was to be paid for it. Then the rates of ferriage were fixed thus: For every passenger, two pence silver or six pence wampum; for every ox or cow that shall be brought into the ferry-boat, eight pence, or twenty-four stivers; cattle under a year old, six pence or eighteen stivers wampum; "*all cattle that are swum over*" paid but half-price. He was to take from every man "for his meal, eight pence; every man for his lodging, two pence a man; every man for his horse shall pay four pence for his night's hay or grass, or twelve stivers wampum, provided the grass be in fence." Government messages between New York and Connecticut were free. In consideration of his having to build a house on both sides of the ferry, the Governor freed him from paying any excise "for what wine or beer he may retail in the house" for one year from the date of the agreement.[1]

In October, 1667, Governor Nicolls granted a patent to the inhabitants of Harlem. Thomas Delaval, Daniel Turneur, John Verveelen and others were the first patentees. He also granted to them four lots of land on the mainland numbered one, two, three and four, near Spuyten Duyvil. He also granted to the people of Harlem, Stony Island, or that part of Morrisania now known as Port Morris.[2] The people at Harlem, though they had passed resolutions to stop the passage at Spuyten Duyvil, found that it was no easy matter to do so. The fence was thrown down and the cattle from the island forded over to the main. The location of this fording-place is at the island in front of the residence of Joseph H. Godwin, at King's Bridge. John Barker from Westchester, in spite of the ferry regulations at Harlem, had swum a large number of horses and cattle across at Spuyten Duyvil. Verveelen, the ferry master, made complaint to the Mayor's Court of the city of New York, and judgment was rendered that Barker pay the ferry master for all horses and cattle which had been "conveyed by him over the Spuyten Duyvil whilst the ferry has been at Harlem," which money the ferry-master was ordered to apply to the repair of the fences at Spuyten Duyvil.

In the meantime John Archer, of Fordham, and the people at Harlem were disputing over the lands and meadows at Spuyten Duyvil.[3] Like the other large proprietors, he leased his lands in parcels of from twenty to twenty-four acres to such persons as would clear and cultivate them. The tenants also had a house and lot each in the village, so that in 1668--69 a goodly number of Harlem people went to reside on Archer's property. The village was located very near the present settlement of King's Bridge near to the "fording-place" in Spuyten Duyvil Creek, and hence is derived the name of Fordham—ford, a fording place; ham, a mansion.[4] But Nicolls had granted the Harlem people four lots on the main-

[1] Riker's "Harlem," page 269.

[2] N. Y. Col. Docs., vol. xiii. 421.

[3] Archer had years before bought from the Indians a large tract, now known as King's Bridge, Fordham, High Bridge and Belmont, and extending as far north as Williams' Bridge. His nationality is disputed. Bolton says the family was of English origin. Riker says his name was Jan Arcer, *alias* Neuwys, and that he came from Amsterdam. At this time (1668) he had lived in Westchester a dozen years, having married a woman from Cambridge in 1659, and hence the Dutch Arcer or Aarsen may have become anglicized into Archer. Riker, who had access to the original records of Harlem, saw his signature, and says it was invariably Jan Arcer. The author of this chapter has also seen it written the same way. He was also called "Koop al," the Dutch for "Buy all," and Riker suggests that he was a shrewd fellow and had an eye to business.

[4] Bolton's "Westchester."

Digitized by Google

land and Archer's cattle trespassed on the Harlem lands. The cattle were seized and a complaint made against Archer to the new Governor Lovelace. This was in 1668–69. Archer said he did not claim the lots but that he had purchased the lands adjoining from the Yonker Vander Donck, and he was ordered to bring in his patent to show by what right he had the land where he had built.

In the meantime viewers were appointed to see the meadow and make report how it could be preserved from trespass, and were also directed to examine the passage at Spuyten Duyvil, with a view to its being made more convenient for passengers and the "drift of cattle," as the ferry at Harlem was found incommodious and did not answer the ends as formerly intended.

About this time Daniel Turneur, one of the original patentees of Harlem, who claimed title by an Indian deed of several years earlier date, was permitted by Governor Nicolls to settle on some eighty-one acres of land on Harlem River, which lay between Archer's land and Bronck's land, bounded on the east by the Maeneppis Kill, or Cromwell's Creek. The construction of Sedgwick and Central Avenues has almost effaced the northern boundary corners of this tract, but it comprises within its limits the high lands between the Harlem River and Cromwell's Creek, now called Devoe's Point, the Devoes being descendants of a daughter of Turneur. The small stream, which formerly emptied into Harlem River just south of High Bridge, was the north bounds, and then it ran west across to Cromwell's Creek to a point not very far north of the present road-house tavern on Central Avenue, known as Judge Smith's. Turneur was a man of parts, and not only a very important person at Harlem, but also frequently acting as arbitrator for the people of Fordham and others in the vicinity.

On February 27, 1669, Governor Lovelace sent a communication to the mayor and aldermen of Harlem to the effect that, as the Harlem Ferry was to be abandoned, and Verveelen had represented that such abandonment worked a hardship to him, as it closed out his unexpired five years' contract, he referred the question to them. On March 2d the Harlem officials concurred in the change of the ferry "to the wading-place," and recommended that Verveelen be appointed ferry-master for three years, he to give an account of the annual income of the ferry. On the same day Lovelace ordered Verveelen to proceed to Spuyten Duyvil and build a fence so as to keep all manner of cattle from going or coming to and from the passage without leave or paying therefor, and to lay out a place at Paparinamin on the main land near the passage, for his habitation and the accommodation of travelers. A lease was made between Governor Lovelace and Verveelen, dated July 15, 1669, settling the ferry "at the place commonly called Spuyten Duyvil, between Manhattan Island and the new village called Fordham." Verveelen was to erect "a good dwelling-house on the island, or neck of land called Paparinamin, where he was to be furnished with three or four good beds for the entertainment of strangers, and also with provisions at all seasons for them, their horses and cattle, together with stabling." He was to have "a sufficient and able boat" for the transportation of the same, and the pass upon the island near to the Spuyten Duyvil was to be sufficiently fenced in with a gate, which was to be kept locked so that no person should pass in or out without his permission. He was to bear one-third of the expense of making the bridge over the meadow land to the town of Fordham, and the town was to bear the remainder. Verveelen, or his deputy, was to be in attendance at all seasonable hours, and in cases of emergency where public affairs were concerned, he was to be ready at all hours when called upon. Penalties and the mode of inflicting them were provided for, and in consideration "of the well execution of his office," he was to receive an allotment of the entire neck or island of Papparinamin, whether encompassed with water or meadow land, and also a piece of meadow ground adjoining to it as laid out by Jacques Cortilyou, the surveyor.

The island or neck and the ferry franchise was to vest in Verveleen, his heirs and assigns, for their use and benefit for eleven years, beginning on November 1, 1669. Verveleen was also appointed constable of Fordham, which village was to have its dependence on the Mayor's Court of New York, as the village of New Harlem also had, but they could try all small causes under five pounds among themselves, as was allowed in other Town Courts. After the expiration of the eleven years Verveelen had the first proffer to continue as ferryman, or, in case he was dead, his nearest relation or assign should have the preference. A clause was inserted as to repairs and good condition of the property and boats at the expiration of the term, and he was obliged to receive all passengers, whether afoot or on horseback, horses and cattle for lodging, diet, feeding, passage or ferrying, according to the ferry rates.[1] Persons on government business were to pass free, and also such persons as, upon any "emergent or extraordinary occasion," should be summoned to appear in arms. On days for holding fairs, all droves of cattle and horses were free during the time of keeping the fair, and also a day

[1] The rates of ferriage, board and lodging were prescribed as follows:

"For lodging any person, eight pence per night, in case they had a bed with sheets; and without sheets, two pence in silver.

"For transportation of any person, one pence in silver.

"For transportation of a man and a horse, seven pence in silver.

"For a single horse, six pence.

"For a turn with his boat, for two horses, ten pence, and for any more, four pence apiece; and if they be driven over, half as much.

"For single cattle, as much as a horse.

"For a boat-loading of cattle, as much as he hath for horses.

"For droves of cattle to be driven over and opening ye gates, two pence per piece.

"For feeding of cattle, three pence in silver.

"For feeding a horse one day or night with hay or grasse, six pence."

Digitized by Google

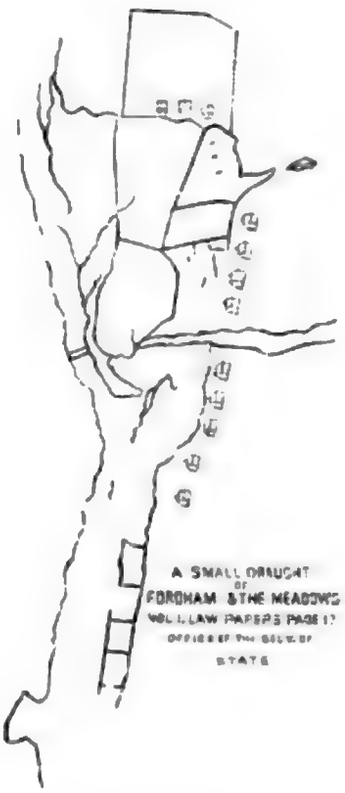
before and a day after its expiration. The quit-rent which Johannes had to pay for this franchise to the Duke of York was ten shillings. This ferry was just north of what is now known as Godwin's Island, but the location of the inn is uncertain.

Verveelen was soon settled at Spuyten Duyvil, where, in addition to his duties as ferry-master, he was appointed constable. William Betts, Sr., and Kier Walters, a tenant of Archer's, were appointed overseers and assistants by the Governor. The next year (1670), Verveelen began "the making of a bridge over the marsh, between Paparinamin and Fordham.

It seems that William Betts, George Tippett and John Hedger (Heddy), who lived some distance from the town of Fordham, proposed to the Governor that if they were excused from their proportion of work in making the causeway, they would make a bridge at their own charge over Bronx River, on the road leading to East Chester, which they said was also very necessary. Debate was had on this proposition in the Governor's presence at Fort James, Tippett, Betts and Hedger being present and also divers of the inhabitants of Fordham. The people of the town other than the three offered to help build the bridge over the Bronx "after ye causey shall first be finisht" as the causeway would be a difficult job the governor, finding that the proposition of the three townsmen tended to greater expedition in both works, ordered that the three persons would first join the rest of the town of Fordham in making the causeway, and that afterwards they all should join in making a convenient bridge over the Bronx. The latter was to be provided with a gate on the East Chester side, so as to keep the "Hogga" from coming over, and the people of Fordham, in consideration of their assistance, were to have the right of passing over the ferry free of charge, so long as Johannes Verveelen or his assigns enjoyed the ferry under the foregoing agreement. We may safely conclude that this order in Council was the first legislation ever made as to Williams' Bridge. The *causey* or causeway must have been somewhere near the present route of the depot road to King's Bridge. The Farmers' Bridge is of later date, and the destruction of everything in the neighborhood by the retreating Americans and the British during the Revolution changed the whole aspect at Fordham or King's Bridge.

On May 3, 1669, Governor Lovelace gave leave to John Archer to settle sixteen families on the mainland, "near the wading-place," and ordained that whatever agreements Archer should make with the inhabitants as to their proportions of improvable lands and hamlets, he would confirm, but postponed prescribing the limits of the settlement until he had made a visit to the place, and then he promised a patent for their further assurance.

From February 12, 1669, to October 11, 1671, the records at Harlem show that Archer, the owner of the soil about Fordham, had leased most of the farms to several parties, but in 1671 his leases provided that the rent should be payable to Cornelis Steenwyck, of New York. Archer had, on September 11, 1669, given a mortgage on his lands to Steenwyck for eleven hundred guilders in wampum. He gave another mortgage to Steenwyck in 1676, but in the mean time, in order to get rid of continual interferference by the Harlem magistrates, he obtained from Governor Lovelace a patent for his lands, which were purchased by him from Doughty and the Indians. It is difficult to trace, from the description, the exact bounds, but, after a careful study of the territory and the description, the tract seems to have been bounded as follows: It lay on the eastward of Harlem River, near unto the passage commonly called "Spiting Devil," upon which "ye new Dorp or village is erect-



ed, known by the name of Fordham." (The accompanying map of the village of Fordham is referred to, and it seems, from the best authorities which can be obtained, that the ancient village was located somewhere near the present King's Bridge depots of the New York Central and New York City and Northern Railroads, as now situated.)

The language of the documents is "ye utmost limits of the whole tract of land, beginning at the high wood land." This was probably the hill up which the Boston road now runs, for Lovelace had already granted the meadow about Paparinamin to Verveleen, the ferryman, and he would not, of course, make another grant to Archer. Thence the north line ran, substantially, as the south line

Digitized by Google

of the former town of Yonkers ran east to the Bronx; while, from the ancient map and the location of the houses upon it, the village street ran north and south, substantially as the present highway runs, and part of the village was in Yonkers and part in West Farms. The Doughty purchase, by Archer, only applies to lands in Yonkers. All that he owned in West Farms he purchased from the Indians, but he very wisely had both included in Lovelace's patent. His nickname of Koopal (buy all) was very appropriate.

The patent recites that as John Archer had, at his own charge and with good success, begun a township in a convenient place for the relief of strangers, it being the road for passengers to go to and fro from the main, as well as for mutual intercourse with the neighboring colony, and in order to encourage Archer in the prosecution of his design, he (Lovelace) grants to Archer all the said land, and that the same should be an enfranchised township, manor and place of itself, and enjoy all the privileges and immunities which any other town in the province had, free from any dependence on any other riding, township, place or jurisdiction. It was to be ruled by the Governor and his Council and the General Court of Assizes only, but the town was to send forward to the next town or plantation all public packets and letters and hues and crys coming or going from or to any of His Majesty's colonies. The Governor further granted that when there should be a sufficient number of inhabitants in the town of Fordham and in the manor capable of maintaining a minister and to carry on public affairs, the neighboring inhabitants between the Harlem and the Bronx should be obliged to contribute towards the maintenance of the minister and other public charges. Archer's holding was to be for himself, his heirs and assigns forever, in as large and ample a manner as if he held immediately from the King, "as of the Manor of East Greenwich, in the County of Kent, &c., &c., by fealty only yielding, rendering and paying yearly and every year unto His Royal Highness, the Duke of York, and his successors or his governors duly constituted, as quit-rent, twenty bushels of good peas upon the first day of March when demanded." The patent was dated at Fort James, November 13, 1671, and also marked "Done at Fort William Hendricke on the 18th October, 1673."[1]

Though full-fledged lord of the Manor of Fordham, Archer still agitated the question of lots one, two, three and four at Spuyten Duyvil, and to quiet all trouble, Governor Lovelace, on November 9, 1672, made the following order: "Whereas the meadow ground or valley by the creek beneath, the town of Fordham, at Spuyten Duyvil, is claimed by some of the inhabitants of New Harlem, but is at so great distance from them and lying unfenced and so near the town of Fordham that those of Harlem can receive little or no benefit thereby, as the inhabitants of Fordham cannot avoid being daily trespassers there if the property should still continue to Harlem, to prevent all further cavils and contests and also to encourage the new plantation at Fordham, as well as in compensation to those of Harlem for their interest which they shall quit at Spuyten Duyvil," he promised that some convenient spot being found at or near Bronxland, he would grant and confirm the same unto the persons concerned, provided it did not greatly prejudice the rest of Bronxland when it should be settled. He referred the matter to Daniel Turneur, David des Marest (Demarest) and John Archer for examination and report.[2]

Archer did not live long in harmony with the population of his manor, and in 1669–70 they forwarded to the Mayor's Court in New York a complaint that he had undertaken to govern them by "rigour and force;" that "he had been at several times the occasion of great troubles betwixt the inhabitants of said town;" and they "humbly desired relief and the protection of said court." Both parties were heard by the court, which ordered Archer "to behave himself for the future, civilly and quietly, as he will answer the same at his peril." But as the Fordham community was evidently difficult to govern, it was further ordered that minor causes between them should be decided at Harlem, by the Fordham magistrates, with the assistance of two of the magistrates of Harlem, unless the Fordham people would pay the Harlem magistrates for coming to their town, and holding court there. On September 8, 1671, no less than four cases were brought against Archer. David Demarest sued him for mowing grass on his meadow at Fordham; Martin Hadewin, of Fordham, sued him for breaking down his fences; Marcus de Souchay (now Dissoway), for throwing his furniture out of doors; and Verveelen had a suit against him on general principles, as it would appear.

The cattle were allowed to run at large, each man having his own brand and all herding together. John Tippets, residing near Spuyten Duyvil, had killed some hogs which were not branded, and the constables and overseers of the joint courts of Harlem and Fordham met to determine who owned the hogs. John Archer, as usual, was interested; he claimed the hogs on behalf of the Duke of York. The Governor, it seems, had once reproved Tippets for having an unlawful mark for his cattle, which was, to cut their ears so short that "any other marks may be cut off by it." Elizabeth Heddy, Benjamin Palmer and Jan Hendricks proved that Tippets owned a litter of pigs, "the which were gray, red, spotted and white." The result of this important trial is not known, but thereafter the Fordham people were compelled to keep their cattle on the main, and the in-

[1] This latter date was undoubtedly a confirmation of the patent under Colve's short interregnum.—Bolton's "Westchester," vol. ii. page 505; Land Papers, Albany, vol. iii. page 127 *et supra*.

[2] Riker's "History of Harlem," page 387.

Digitized by Google

stitution of town branders for cattle was established. The same practice prevailed in Westchester, on the east side of the township, as much space in the early records is given to the recording of the various brands for cattle, sheep and hogs which each farmer recorded.

The manor being established, shortly afterwards (April 25, 1673) Governor Lovelace authorized the establishment of a court, to be held there quarterly, and, on the nomination of Archer, appointed John Ryder, steward of the manor, as president of the court, with the constable of the place and one or two of the "discreetest" of the inhabitants as assistants. The court had jurisdiction in all matters of debt and trespass between the landlord and his tenants, and between one tenant and another. It was held at Archer's house. About this time Verveleen, Archer's enemy, must have been displaced as constable, as we find Richard Cage to have succeeded him.

In the mean time, under the English rule, the territory east of the Bronx was in the jurisdiction of the West Riding of Yorkshire, or Long Island, and the people attended the courts there, while the Fordham people had their court at Fordham and Harlem. On December 28, 1665, Governor Nicolls informed the inhabitants of Westchester that he would defer the laying out of the town in metes and bounds until they informed him as to every man's estate there, so that the whole could be equally divided into lots in proportion to each man's assessed valuation. Thomas Pell endeavored to prevent the granting of a patent to the people of Westchester, but the lawsuit that he had had a few years before with Cornell, relative to his grant, was treated by Nicolls as a good precedent. About the same time a delegation went from Westchester to an interview with the Governor's secretary about the division of the land, and the Governor directed that they should divide the meadows as they pleased, but observing the order made by Mr. Delaval and Mr. Hubbard. They were to have as much of Mrs. Bridge's meadows as Delaval and Hubbard ordered, but they were not to meddle with the forty-two acres, by Rattlesnake Brook, claimed by the Ten Farms (East Chester) which were to remain to the use of the families settled there, and to be concluded thereby and bounded by the brook. Every one hundredth estate was to have six acres, and every two hundredth estate eight acres of good meadow land lying most convenient for each lot, but no further division was to be made, the remainder of the land being left in common for the encouragement of future settlers. The meadow ground of the Ten Farms was between Hutchinson's River and Rattlesnake Brook, and the reservations made as to territory included what is north of the East Chester line. On March 1, 1664–65, a meeting of deputies was held at Hempstead, Long Island, at which Westchester County was represented by Edward Jessop and John Quimby, and the former served on the Committee of Differences between the towns.[1]

THE WESTCHESTER PATENT.—On February 13, 1667, Governor Nicolls, evidently perceiving the folly of having Westchester a portion of the Long Island jurisdiction, granted to the people the first patent of Westchester. The boundaries were, on the west the Bronx River, on the south the Sound or East River, on the east Ann's Hook or Pelham Neck, and on the north "into the woods without limitation for range of cattle." The grantees were John Quimby, John Ferris, Nicholas Bailey, William Betts and Edward Walters, for and in behalf of themselves and their associates and the freeholders and inhabitants within the town of Westchester. He also gave them all the rights and privileges of a township, and provided that the place should be called Westchester.[2]

On November 3, 1667, Westchester was in arrears for her share of the taxes levied for building a sessions-house for the riding. William Hallett, the contractor for building the court-house, was appointed collector, and the town was ordered to pay its proportion in coin or in default to be fined five pounds.

During the brief restoration of the Dutch, beginning with July 30, 1673, they made new laws and granted new ground briefs or patents to those who swore allegiance to their government. Westchester township, both east and west of the Bronx, was compelled to bow to Governor Colve. On August 13, 1673, he and his Council summoned Oostdorp, or Westchester, to send their deputies to Fort William Hendrick, together with their constables, staves and English flags, and they would, if circumstances permitted, be furnished with the Prince's colors in place of the British ensigns. On August 21st the deputies delivered their credentials[3] and offered to submit to the Dutch, and to report to the Council the names of the persons whom they had nominated as magistrates.

The next day they delivered up the flag and the constables' staves, and having joined in a respectful petition of submission, they were granted the same rights and privileges as the Dutch inhabitants, and pardoned for their past errors in coquetting with the English, with the warning however, that in future they should demean themselves as loyal subjects. On August 30th the Council appointed as schepens or

[1] It must be remembered that east of the Bronx, Westchester belonged to the Long Island jurisdiction, while the section west of that river owed allegiance to the Harlem and New York City authorities.

[2] The records of this ancient borough are now on file, in excellent condition, in the office of the register of the county. They are too extended for quotation in this history, but the writer suggests that some patriotic citizen of the old township will add to our documentary history by contributing to the New York or Westchester Historical Society funds sufficient to have them properly edited, as the old records have been in other parts of this country by other societies.

[3] Bancroft, vol. ii.; also N. Y. Hist. Doc., 573, ii. 580–581, 621–622.

Digitized by Google

magistrates Joseph Palmer and Edward Waters, who were sworn in on the following 2d of September, and on the 1st of October provisional instructions were issued for the government of the magistrates. They were to take care that the Reformed Christian religion should be maintained in uniformity with the Synod of Dort. Jurisdiction in cases not involving over sixty florins beaver was given to the magistrates, from whose decision no appeal could be taken. Between that sum and two hundred and forty florins beaver an appeal would lay to the sheriff and Councilors, and above two hundred and forty florins the appeal was to the Governor General and his Councilors, who also had jurisdiction of criminal cases; but it would seem that criminals in the first instance could be proceeded against by information, and that the schout and schepens—or sheriff and justices, as we would denominate such officials—had the right to issue warrants or citations. Smaller offenses, such as quarrels, abusive words, threats, fisticuffs and such matters, were left to the jurisdiction of the village magistrates. The sheriff and schepens had power to make ordinances for the peace and welfare of the inhabitants of their districts, regulate highways, set off lands and gardens from the government grants, regulate the branding of cattle and erection of fences, enforce the observance of the Sabbath and superintend the building of churches, school-houses and other similar works. They were particularly instructed to ordain against fighting and wrestling, and the sheriffs were cautioned that the places under their charge were to be "cleansed of all mobs, gamblers . . . and such like impurities." The sheriff and schepens nominated a double number of persons for magistrates, to be presented to the Governor, who made his election therefrom. The latter, however, reserved the power to continue some of the old ones in office in case he deemed it necessary. The magistrates he recommended should be "the best qualified, the honestest, most intelligent and wealthiest inhabitants." He also required them to be of the Reformed Christian religion or at *least well affectioned thereunto.*

On September 8, 1673, one Jonathan Silck (or Sellick), of Oyster Bay, came into the Council and asked that he might have an old ketch which was laying sunk in Westchester Creek,[1] for which he agreed to pay something, and, after considerable higgling, it was agreed that the ketch could be had for sixty beavers, thirty in cash and the residue in cattle, for which Captain Sellick gave security. The Council confiscated the ketch, called the "Rebecca and Sarah," of twelve lasts burthen, and of which William Merritt was the late skipper; and, as she was the property of the enemies of the Dutch—Captain Delaval, the English mayor of Harlem—she was declared to be a lawful prize.

Archer (of Fordham), of course, was in trouble with the new government. At a council held at Harlem on October 4, 1673, the Governor-General and Cornelis Steenwyck (his secretary) being present, the inhabitants of Fordham appeared and complained of the ill government of their landlord, John Archer, and asked that they might be allowed to nominate their own magistrates. Archer was present and voluntarily declared that he would desist from the government and patroonship of the town, but reserved to himself the property and ownership of the lands and houses there. The Council accordingly gave authority to the people of Fordham to nominate, by plurality of votes, six of the best qualified persons in the town (exclusively of the Reformed Christian religion) as magistrates. From those nominated the Governor was to make selection, and he recommended that half, at least, of those nominated should be of Dutch nationality. Archer's troubles did not end here. At the suit of Thomas Gibbs and John Curtis execution was allowed to issue against his personal property. On the 15th of June, in the same year, Archer and his ancient enemy, John Verveelen, the constable and ferryman at Spuyten Duyvil, had some trouble about the town-books of Fordham, and Verveelen (who had, in the meantime, been promoted from the more lowly position of constable to that of schout—sheriff) was directed by the Governor to hand over to Archer the books and *protocols* properly belonging to him.[2]

We now leave Fordham and go back to the eastern or Sound side. On December 24, 1673, Roger Tounsen (Townsend) complained to the Governor-General and Council that the people of Westchester were doing great damage to his lands and cattle. The matter was referred to Schout William Lawrence and Mr. Richard Cornwel (Cornell), who, at Townsend's expense, were ordered to inspect the premises, to hear the arguments of parties and, if possible, "to reconcile parties." Should they fail, a report was ordered to be made to the Governor. The sheriff and Mr. Cornell never reported till the following 8th of March. It seems that the arbitrators went to the town, but no one appeared in its behalf. The Governor and Council made an order that Townsend and the magistrates, on the sight of the order, appear, either in person or by attorney, at a place to be fixed by the arbitrators, who were requested *de novo* to examine and, if possible, decide the case and reconcile the parties—otherwise, to report. A reconciliation was effected.

MORRISANIA.—Meantime one of the most prominent personages in Bronxland was Richard Morris, a captain in Cromwell's army and later a merchant in Barbadoes, who had moved to New York and, for his own and his brother Lewis' account, purchased a plantation at Bronxland from Edsall.[3] He and his wife, a Miss Pole, from the West

[1] Holland Docs., ii. 606.

[2] Idem. ii. 625. Idem. ii. 709, 721.

[3] See preceding note on Bronxland for earlier titles.

Digitized by Google

Indies, settled upon it, and to them was born a son Lewis. Richard and his wife died in 1672, and the infant was left alone on the plantation with no one to care for him but the negro slaves and a nephew of his father's, a Mr. Walter Webley. The Dutch had repossessed the colony, and the estate of a wealthy retired English merchant offered spoils that Governor Colve did not overlook. His government called upon the orphan masters to summon the nephew Webley and the curators of the estate of Richard to appear before them and require the administration of the estate and as soon as possible to make a report on it.[1] Webley, an English subject, kept out of the way and removed the removable part of the estate as well as he could out of the conqueror's clutches. He feared the new government, but was soon given a free pass and the assurance that his possession of the estate of his cousin as administrator would not be disturbed, and that all the government wanted was to confiscate the share of the estate which belonged to his uncle, Lewis Morris, of Barbadoes. This latter gentleman, a Quaker in religion, though one of Cromwell's old soldiers, had also arrived in the province, but wisely kept himself out of government reach until he could arrange about the estate. The government found that Col. Morris, being a citizen of Barbadoes, was not, under the terms of capitulation, entitled to the same liberal terms as British subjects of Virginia or Connecticut, and they also found that the infant only owned one-third of the estate and the uncle Lewis owned two-thirds. Hence his two-thirds was liable to confiscation.[2] Balthazar Bayard was therefore appointed to take charge of the two-thirds of the estate which belonged to the government and John Lawrence, Stephanus Van Cortlandt and Walter Webley, the nephew, were appointed administrators of Richard's one-third for the benefit of the infant Lewis.[3] The uncle Lewis, however, with all the shrewdness of a Quaker and the tact of an old soldier, for a time kept in hiding,[4] but after arranging in some way with the government, was finally made administrator of his brother's estate and afterwards guardian of the person and estate of his infant nephew.[5] He must have finally made a good impression upon Governor Colve, for he was granted the entire estate, buildings and materials thereon, on a valuation to be made by impartial appraisers for the benefit of the minor child;[6] but Colve, like a true soldier, who respected the rights of the commissariat first and the vanquished afterwards, "*appropriated*" (*due regard being had of course to the infant's interests*) all *the fat cattle, such as oxen, cows and hogs*. Lewis, the elder, thus became possessed of Bronxland.

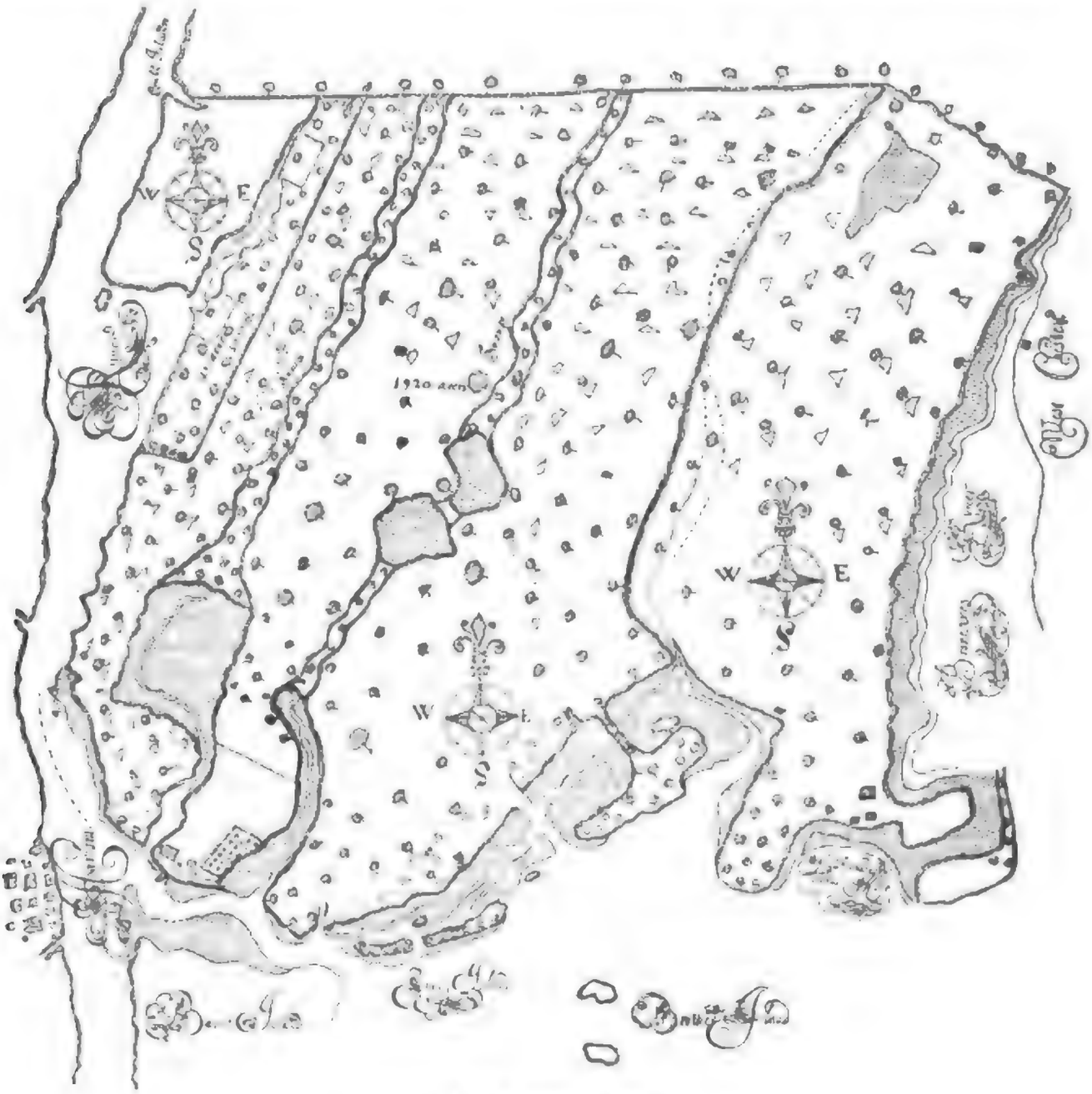
It seems that, this matter being settled, he returned to Barbadoes for the purpose of closing up his business on that island, but left his nephew, Webley, in charge of the estate in New York.[7] The young ward's movable property had been scattered far and wide,[8 9] but Webley attended to getting things together. Colonel Morris returned to New York in 1675, and in 1676, the English having in the mean time recaptured the province, Governor Andros granted to Lewis, the elder, a confirmatory patent of Bronxland and some "addicional lands" adjacent thereto, not included in any patent.[10 11] Under this grant Colonel Morris became seized of a tract of land containing some nineteen hundred acres. It was bounded on the north by a line which, if extended east from Judge Smith's tavern, on Central Avenue, to the road south of the Home for Incurables, would be the north line; on the south and southeast, the Harlem River; on the west, Cromwell Creek; and on the east, the Hunt and Richardson patent, mentioned elsewhere. By reference to the map it will be seen that this patent covered more than the original grant to Jonas Bronck. Colonel Lewis Morris, the elder, settled and resided on this estate until the time of his death.[12] He seems to have been a friend of Governor Andros, having entertained him at his house and also accompanied him on the special expedition when Andros visited Carteret to arrange about the settlement of the government in New Jersey after the accession of James, Duke of York, to the throne of England.[13] He was a sympathizer with the government, and against Leisler during the Leisler Rebellion, and his house at Morrisania was used as the exchange for the governmental secret correspondence rendered necessary at that time. On one occasion the government post-man, who had stopped at Morris' house, was captured about a quarter of a mile from it by some of Leisler's men, and the mail taken from him and examined by the insurrectionists.[14] Before coming to America, Colonel Morris commanded a troop of horse in Cromwell's army, and on the Restoration went to Barbadoes. While there he participated in some of the English campaigns against other islands, and received the commission of colonel. He was also a member of Governor Dongan's Council from 1683 to 1686, and died in 1691. His will is of record in New York County.

Lewis, the nephew, had in the mean time grown to man's estate and succeeded his uncle as heir-at-law, and next of kin, as well as under his uncle's will. On the 6th day of May, 1697, Governor Benjamin Fletcher confirmed to him the grant made by his predecessor, Andros, to his uncle and also erected the lands into a lordship or manor by the name and title of the Lordship or Manor of Morrisania, in the county of Westchester. The patent grants the same

[1] N. Y. Col. Docs., vol. ii. 599.
[2] Idem, 617.
[3] Idem, 651.
[4] Idem, 684.
[5] Idem, 632.
[6] Idem, 637.
[7] Idem, 637.
[8] Idem, 638.
[9] Idem, 634.
[10] Book of Patents, vol. iv. page 99.
[11] For boundaries of this patent, see map attached to this article.
[12] N. Y. Col. Docs., vol. ii. page 682.
[13] N. Y. Col. Docs., vol. xiii. page 542.
[14] N. Y. Col. Docs., iii. 682.

lands as those mentioned in the earlier patent, to the uncle Lewis. The grantee had full authority to hold and keep a Court-Leet and Court-Baron, and to issue writs thereout. The lord of the manor had jurisdiction over all waifs, estrays, wrecks, deodands, goods of felons happening and being forfeited within said manor; he also had the patronage and advowson of all churches erected or to be erected in the manor. The tenements (tenants) were to meet together and choose their own assessors; the land was to be held in free and common soccage, according to the custom of East Greenwich, and the rental was payable on the fast day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, and amounted to six shillings per annum.

Lewis Morris was a remarkable man, and the first native-born chief justice who filled the Supreme Court bench in New York. In his early youth he was wild, and gave his stern and rather straight-laced uncle and guardian much trouble. A zealous and pious Quaker who was his preceptor, one day, while engaged in silent meditation in the woods, heard, as he supposed, a voice from heaven, telling him to go and preach the gospel to the Indians. The voice was that of young Lewis, who had climbed a tree in the vicinity. The good man really thought of obeying the divine command, but he was told the truth just before his departure on his holy mission. Lewis at one time left his uncle's roof and wandered off, depending entirely on his own resources. He first went to Virginia and then to Jamaica, supporting himself



MAP OF BRONX NECK.
Boundaries of the Patent to Lewis Morris in 1675.

Digitized by Google

by working as a copyist. He returned in time to his uncle's roof, and in November, 1691, married Isabella Graham, daughter of James Graham, the attorney-general. His uncle, in addition to his property of Morrisania, had acquired a large tract of land in Monmouth County, New Jersey, and young Morris interested himself much in public affairs in that province. In 1692 he was a judge of the Court of Common Right in East Jersey, and also had a seat in the Council of Governor Hamilton. He had taken up his residence at Tintern, in the county of Monmouth, where, it is stated was established the first iron-mill in this country.[1] In 1698 Jeremiah Basse, having been appointed Governor of New Jersey, and a dispute having risen as to Basse's authority, Morris ranged himself with those who would not acknowledge it.

Morris was turned out of the Council and was also fined fifty pounds for contempt of the Governor's authority. On the return of Hamilton to the Governorship, in 1700, Morris was made president of the Council. While in the Council he came to the conclusion that the proprietary government of New Jersey was impracticable, and advocated a surrender of the governmental functions of the proprietors to the crown. He succeeded in securing the co-operation of the proprietors to this end, and he then embarked for England to complete the measure. In 1702 the instrument of surrender was delivered to Queen Anne. Almost immediately afterwards Mr. Morris returned to America and was nominated as Governor of New Jersey, but the English government having changed its plan, and determined that New York and New Jersey should both be governed by one executive, though having two Legislatures, Colonel Morris' name was withdrawn. Lord Cornbury was made Governor of both provinces and arrived here in 1703. Morris had been recommended to him as a proper person to take into his Council. He was duly appointed and not only became a prominent member of the Council, but also the special opponent of the Governor. Cornbury removed him from the Council in 1704, but though reinstated by order of the Queen, he was again suspended in the following year. In 1707 he was a member of the General Assembly, and he, with Gordon and Jennings and the other members of the opposition, passed a resolution preferring to the Queen complaints against Cornbury's administration.

This representation had a good effect in England, for in 1708 Morris was again appointed to the Council, Cornbury having been superseded by Lovelace; but on Lovelace's death and Ingoldsby coming into power, Morris, who did not agree with the latter, was again suspended. In 1710, Robert Hunter being made Governor, Morris was again at the head of the Council.

He at that time took a very active part in the business of New York. He was a warm supporter of Hunter's administration, and on one occasion, while a member of Assembly, was expelled from the House for his violent language in support of the Governor. He was then a member-elect from the borough of Westchester, but was re-elected by his constituents. He was appointed chief justice of New York in 1720 by Burnet, Hunter's successor, and continued as such through Burnet's and Montgomerie's administrations. Montgomerie died in 1731, and after his death and until the arrival of Cosby, in 1732, Morris acted as Governor of New Jersey, still retaining his position of chief justice in New York. On the accession of Cosby Morris' relations to the government changed and he was suspended from his office as chief justice by Cosby after having served as such for twenty years. The immediate cause of his suspension was his opposition to the views of his associate judges in relation to the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court in equity cases. Cosby and Rip Van Dam had a controversy before the Supreme Court involving their respective rights to the remuneration received by the latter as acting Governor during the period which elapsed between the death of Montgomerie and the arrival of Cosby. Morris decided in favor of Van Dam. Cosby was much displeased with the opinion, and on the Governor demanding a copy of it, Morris had it printed and sent to him with a letter which was decidedly discourteous to the Governor. Cosby removed him in 1733 and appointed James De Lancey as his successor. This De Lancey was the father of De Lancey of De Lancey's Mills, at West Farms. For note as to De Lancey family see supra.

His removal, however, made him more popular with the people. The county elected him at once to the Assembly, and the borough of Westchester elected his son Lewis. On his visiting New York salutes were fired in his honor, and deputations of citizens met and conducted him with loud acclamations to a public and splendid entertainment. Cosby's administration was so distasteful to his opponents that, in 1734, they determined to lay their grievances before the crown, and Morris was selected as the messenger to go to England for that purpose. He laid the case before the Privy Council, and obtained a decision pronouncing the Governor's reasons for his removal as chief justice insufficient, but his mission was otherwise unsuccessful. Cosby died in 1736, and Morris returned to America. He received an ovation on reaching New York. In 1738 he was appointed colonial governor of New Jersey, and continued as such until 1746, when he died. His remains were buried at Morrisania. By will he gave all that part of the Manor of Morrisania that lay to the eastward of Mill Brook, to his eldest son, Lewis Morris, and that to the west of Mill Brook, which he called Old Morrisania, to his wife during her life, and on her death to his son, Lewis, during his life, with power to dispose of the same by will. His son, Robert

[1] Papers of Governor Morris—New Jersey Historical Society (William A. Whitehead, editor).

Digitized by Google

Hunter Morris, then chief justice of New Jersey, received his father's New Jersey property.

Governor Morris's widow died in 1752, and we thus find her son Lewis possessed of all the manor.

Lewis Morris, the third proprietor, was born in 1698. He resided at Morrisania, and was twice married, his first wife being a Miss Staats, and his second a Miss Gouverneur. He was several times a member of the Colonial Assembly, was also judge of the Court of Admiralty, and at one time was judge of the Court of Oyer and Terminer. He died in 1762. His issue were numerous; by Miss Staats he had Lewis, afterwards the signer of the Declaration of Independence, who commanded the Westchester militia during the Revolution, and married Miss Mary Walton. He died in 1798. His second son, Staats Long Morris, was born in 1728. He held a commission in the British army as lieutenant-general, and remained in England during the American Revolution. He married the widow of Lord George Gordon. Richard, the third son, was born in 1730. He was a graduate of Yale College, and a lawyer by profession. He was admitted to the bar in 1752, and in 1762 was appointed judge of the Court of Vice-Admiralty. In 1775, having sided with the colony, he resigned his commission. Tryon, the royal governor, requested him to continue in office, but his answer was that he could not sacrifice his principles to his interest. Special orders were given by Tryon to take possession and then to burn his country seat at Fordham. The estate was devastated and Mr. Morris took refuge within the American lines. On July 31, 1776, the New York provincial Assembly unanimously appointed him Judge of the High Court of Admiralty, but he courteously declined the office. In 1778 he was made a senator and in 1779 Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the State, succeeding John Jay, who had been made Chief Justice of the United States. He was a member of the State Convention which ratified the Federal Constitution and in 1790 resigned his office as Chief Justice and retired on his farm at Scarsdale, in Westchester County, where, on April 11, 1810, he died. He married Miss Sarah Ludlow and by her had two sons and one daughter. They were, Lewis R. Morris, who afterward resided in Vermont and during the Revolution was an aide-de-camp to General Sullivan and after the war a member of the House of Representatives; Robert Morris, who finally settled on the family estate at Fordham; and Mary, who married Major William Popham, of Scarsdale, who served as brigade-major during the Revolution and was for many years clerk of the Court of Exchequer of this State. The fourth son of Lewis Morris the third was Gouverneur, son of Mr. Morris' second wife, Miss Gouverneur.

Gouverneur Morris was born in 1752, graduated at Columbia College, in May, 1768, and commenced the study of the law, under the direction of William Smith, one of the most eminent lawyers and afterwards chief justice of the colony of New York. He was admitted to the bar in 1771, and joined with the liberal or anti-governmental party almost on the occasion of his becoming a member of the profession. We find from Sparks' life and letters of Gouverneur Morris, that, though only a lad of twenty-three years of age, he was elected from Westchester County a member of the Provincial Congress of the colony of New York in 1775. At that early age he possessed the ability to advocate the issuing of a Continental currency, and the eloquence and knowledge of his subject to convince his hearers to such a point that it was recommended to the Continental Congress for adoption. He did not at that time give up the hope of harmonizing the differences between the mother country and the colonies, for he had a mother who deeply sympathized with the royalists and relatives who were in the employ of the government, but he never forgot the rights of the people of the colony. He was one of the committee who, on behalf of the colony, received General Washington when he passed on his way through New York to assume the command of the Continental troops at Boston, already standing in an hostile attitude before Gage and Howe at that city, but at the same time he counselled that all due respect should be paid to Tryon, the Colonial Governor, at New York until the reconciliatory overtures of the New York Congress had been acted on by the home government. But, in the same year, and only a few months later, the course of events drove him forever to the American side. The Declaration of Independence had been adopted by the Continental Congress and Morris's half-brother Lewis was a Representative of New York in that body. All the other States had signed; New York held back for the reason that her delegates had not, under their appointment by the Provincial Legislature, any authority to sign. Gouverneur Morris, on the floor of the State Legislature, then showed by a masterly argument why for their security the States must declare their independence of foreign rule and our Colonial Legislature after the passage of the Declaration ordered Lewis Morris and the other representatives of that colony to append their signatures to it.

But he had still valuable duties to perform for his native colony, not yet a State. His aged mother had two daughters married to Royalists, and a third had just died. Gouverneur, while serving in the State Congress at Fishkill, received news of his sister's death. His letter to his mother, given at length by Mr. Sparks, is one of the most touching expositions of a struggle between patriotism and filial and fraternal love. He could not leave his post of duty, though he acknowledges it to be his mother's wish that he should. His affection for his mother and sister were unbounded, but his duty was paramount because he found himself in a position where it was the obligation of every good citizen to remain, where, by a superior order he was placed. He adds: "What may be the event of the present war is not in man to

Digitized by Google

determine. Great revolutions of Empire are seldom achieved without much human calamity; but the worst which can happen is to fall on the last bleak mountain of America; and he who dies there in defence of the injured rights of mankind is happier than his conqueror, more beloved of mankind."

To him, as chairman of a committee of finance was referred the question as to how the sinews of war should be provided by the colony for the support of the troops in their Continental struggle. Later on we find him as one of the Committee of Safety in the north woods, advising with Schuyler as to the means of checking the advance of Burgoyne from Canada. In 1777, with Jay and the others of our State's forefathers, he joined in formulating the first Constitution of the State at Kingston.

To him belongs the honor of having at that early day suggested a constitutional provision for the abolishment of "domestic slavery," but he was voted down. To him and Mr. Jay, both Westchester County men, also is due the honor of that clause in the State Constitution which guarantees to all denominations the full exercise of their religion. Though Mr. Jay added the clause: "provided the liberty of conscience hereby granted shall not be construed to encourage licentiousness," Gouverneur Morris added the clause which was adopted: "or justify practices inconsistent with the peace and safety of the State." He was elected to the Continental Congress in 1777, but did not take his seat till January, 1778.

Though then but twenty-seven years of age his reputation had preceded him, and he was immediately appointed on a committee to confer with Washington as to the practical method of putting the army on a better footing. Three tedious months were spent by Morris in the camp at Valley Forge, drafting, with Washington and other members of the committee, plans for the proper regulation of the army, its quartermaster, commissary and medical departments. To him is largely due the formulation of the organization of those important branches. No sooner was that work completed than the British Commissioners, sent out by Lord North, began their negotiations with Congress with a view to harmonizing the differences. Morris was on the committee which conferred with them. About this time he was again embarrassed by the ties of home influence. He had not seen his paternal home nor any of his relatives since the British had taken possession of New York. His mother resided within the British lines. His enemies used these facts against him. His letters to his mother passed through the enemy's hands, and that fact was also urged against his loyalty to the American cause. But, while he wrote dutiful letters to his mother, he received none in reply. In one letter to his mother he is very outspoken, both in his affection for her and the cause which he championed, but which his mother did not approve of. He says: "I know that for such sentiments I am called a rebel," and that "they are not fashionable among the folks you see." He expresses love for some of his relatives, who are sympathizers with the British.

In this connection it may be well to note that before the close of the war, his mother was dangerously ill. He obtained permission to visit her through the British commander at New York; but the newspapers took the matter up. They censured the project unless he went inside the enemy's lines clothed with some governmental mission. He was forced by the advice of his friends to forego the visit. About this time he printed his "Observations on the American Revolution," which were published in London.

Dominie Tetard, of New Rochelle, having instructed the boy Morris in the French language, the latter was selected by Congress as the proper person to confer with M. Geraud, the French minister, with a view to drafting the instructions for Benjamin Franklin, the first American minister to France. In 1779 he took a prominent part in the debates in Congress with reference to the terms of peace with Great Britain, which were then under discussion, and was also chairman of the committee which had that matter in charge. But his labors in national affairs were so extensive that he was charged with neglecting his duties to his State, and in 1779–80 he was not returned as a member from New York. During the time of his service as a Congressman, though serving as chairman of three committees and performing the duties above referred to, he was forced to practice his profession, as his pay as a Congressman was not sufficient for his living expenses. Not being returned to Congress, he practiced law in Pennsylvania, but still manifested a great interest in public affairs. In February and March, 1780, he wrote a series of essays on finance. In May of the latter year, he was thrown from his carriage and sustained a fracture of his left leg and a dislocation of his ankle joint. Amputation was ordered by the surgeons and Mr. Morris is said to have borne the pain manfully. The amputation is now cited by medical authorities as being a mistake in surgery and as having been unnecessarily made.

As an illustration of his good nature and the philosophy with which he bore the infliction, it is related that a pious friend who called upon him to offer his condolence, also informed him that the accident was a blessing in disguise, as it would diminish the inducements for seeking the pleasures and dissipations of life, and give him ample time for pious meditation. Morris replied: "My good sir, you argue the matter so handsomely, and point out so clearly the advantages of being without legs, that I am almost tempted to part with the other." In the house at Morrisania, built by Mr. Morris in later years, are still to be seen the imprints of his wooden stump made by him in going up and down stairs. To another friend he said: "Oh, sir, the loss is much less than you imagine; I shall doubtless be a *steadier* man with one leg than with two." In 1781 Robert

Digitized by Google

Morris, superintendent of the finances, appointed Gouverneur assistant superintendent, at the enormous salary of eighteen hundred and fifty dollars per annum. He served in that capacity for nearly three years. He also acted as one of the commissioners for the exchange of prisoners of war in 1782. In 1783–84 he returned to New York, the treaty of peace having been signed, and visited his mother at Morrisania after an absence of nearly seven years. The estate had suffered much by the depredations of the troops on both sides. Timber had been cut off of four hundred and seventy-four acres of woodland and used for ship building, artillery and fire-wood. De Lancey's corps had been quartered on the property, and had erected seventy huts and cultivated the land, burning the wood for fuel. By the terms of the treaty of peace the English were bound to pay these claims, and they were duly presented to the government in England by General Staats Long Morris. Gouverneur, in the meantime, resumed the practice of the law, having resigned his position in the United States Treasury. Having made many connections in Philadelphia, he was practically a resident of that city for the next five years. In connection with Robert Morris he was engaged in many business operations, such as East India voyages on a large scale, shipments of tobacco from Virginia to France, and the smelting of iron on the Delaware River. He suggested a plan for the coinage of money, but Mr. Jefferson's plan was adopted by Congress.

In 1786 his mother died at Morrisania. The property east of Mill Brook fell to the share of General Staats Long Morris, who resided in England. Gouverneur, as the younger son, was to receive two thousand pounds from Staats, who had to pay seven thousand pounds in all to the younger children. Lewis had already received his share of the property by possessing that portion of Morrisania which lies west of the Mill Brook. As Staats had no intention of residing in America Gouverneur purchased his share and became seized, in fee of Morrisania east of the Mill Brook, but still continued to reside in Philadelphia. In 1787 he was elected a delegate from Pennsylvania to the convention which formed the constitution of the United States and on the dissolution of the convention he repaired to Morrisania and busied himself in putting the estate in order. To arrange some matters relating to his extensive business transactions he sailed for France in December, 1787, and from that time down to 1792 was for several years a resident of Paris, attending, most of the time, to private affairs, traveling occasionally in England and on the continent, and in the interim acting for a short time as agent for the American government in conducting a *pour parler* with England with a view to an interchange of ambassadors, but without success. His journal contains much interesting information as to the politics and society of France at the time of the outbreak of the French Revolution.

In January, 1792, he was appointed minister plenipotentiary from the United States to the Court of France. On August 10, 1792, the King and Queen were taken prisoners by the mob, and on the 31st of August, Morris was advised by Talleyrand to ask for his passport and leave France, as the minister of foreign affairs had written him an insulting letter; but an apology having been sent, he stayed in France awaiting instructions from America as to what course he should pursue with reference to the acknowledgement of the new revolutionary government. He was known to be personally opposed to the principles of the revolutionists and the King intrusted to his care a large sum of money, for which he afterwards scrupulously accounted. When the Marquis of Lafayette was made a prisoner by the Austrian and Prussian governments, Morris furnished him and also his wife with funds, which were afterwards allowed as governmental disbursements by the United States. He also drafted a petition which was signed by Madame de Lafayette, asking the King of Prussia for her husband's release. He continued to reside in France during the Reign of Terror, although the diplomats from other governments had left. At one time it was reported that he had been killed by revolutionists. His friend, Robert Morris, wrote him from America, advising him to resign and go home, but he replied, that "it is not permitted to abandon a post in the hour of difficulty." He took up his residence however, at Sainport, about thirty miles from Paris, on about twenty acres of land which he purchased, only coming to Paris on matters of business. Many applications were made to him to grant the privilege of American registers to French vessels. He had also to file with the French government protests against the decrees of the convention, imposing restrictions on American commerce in violation of treaties already existing, and remonstrated against outrages by French privateers on American vessels. Americans were frequently imprisoned and he obtained their release.

In 1793–94 the American government demanded the recall of Minister Genet. This demand was of course presented by Mr. Morris to the French government and was at once acceded to. In return, France solicited Mr. Morris' recall and in reciprocity the demand could not be refused. In recalling him our Secretary of State assured him that he had given perfect satisfaction, and the President gave him like assurances. Mr. Monroe arrived in Paris in 1794 as Mr. Morris' successor. The latter then traveled extensively through the principal countries of Europe. In his journal appears the celebrated saying so often quoted, which he wrote concerning the character of the Swiss: "The first lesson of trade is, My son get money. The second is My son get money honestly if you can, but get money; the third is, My son get money, but honestly, if you would get much money." He also visited many parts of Ger-

Digitized by Google

many, spending the winter and spring of 1795 at Altona, a suburb of Hamburgh. Later on he visited the cities of the Baltic, and in June went to London. He travelled through Great Britain, and in the following year visited Berlin, Dresden and Vienna. There he plead for the release of Lafayette, but was unsuccessful. He then re-visited Berlin, and afterwards made quite a long stay at Brunswick. In the meantime he was instrumental in furnishing funds for the Duke of Orleans, afterwards Louis Philippe, to visit America. In 1798 he returned to America, and at once set about improving his estate, and built the house now standing at Morrisania, and occupied by his granddaughter, Mrs. Alfred Davenport. The legislature of New York elected him to the United States Senate. May, 1800, he took his seat. He labored on the side of the Federalis's and served but three years. As senator he advocated an internal revenue tax as preferable to a revenue raised by duties on imported articles. His party was opposed to the acquisition of Louisiana, but Mr. Morris voted for it and his argument on the value of the navigation of the Mississippi river is considered one of the finest of his efforts. His term expired on March 4, 1803. A change in parties prevented his re-election, and with the expiration of his term his political life ended. He passed the remainder of his life at Morrisania. "An ample for-"tune, numerous friends, a charming retreat, and a "tranquil home were the elements of his happiness "and filled up the measure of his hopes."

But his mind was still amply employed. In 1803 he travelled through the New England States and the Canadas, and two or three months of each succeeding year of his life he devoted to travelling for pleasure or visiting lands in new countries in which he had largely invested. The cultivation of his farm, receiving the visits of friends and acquaintances, study and an extensive correspondence on politics and business occupied his time.

He wrote much on divers subjects. The larger part of his effusions may be found in the New York *Evening Post*, the *Examiner* and the *United States Gazette*. He became, according to Mr. Sparks, an ultra Federalist. His nom de plume was "An American." Soon after his return to America he pronounced an oration on the death of Washington, at the request of the corporation of New York. His eulogy on Hamilton is famous. He also delivered an oration in honor of the memory of George Clinton, and another on the Restoration of the Bourbons. This last was translated into French and published in Paris. He was president of the New York Historical Society. Among his guests was General Moreau, and Madame de Staël was an intimate friend and life-long correspondent. He married Miss Ann Carey Randolph on Christmas Day, 1809. Many give Mr. Morris the credit of originating the project of the Erie Canal.

It will be remembered that he was sent as one of the Committee of Safety to Schuyler's army, then at Fort Edward. Though but a youth, he was filled with the project, and while arranging with Schuyler and the other persons about the details of the campaign in their leisure moments he descanted on the facilities afforded for the development of the country by the numerous water ways which intersected it. He predicted that among the "rising glories of the western world at no distant day the waters of the great inland seas would, by the aid of man, break through their barriers and mingle with those of the Hudson." While travelling in Scotland in 1795 he notes in his diary his impressions of the Caledonian Canal and says: "When I see this, my mind opens to a view of wealth for the interior of America which hitherto I had rather conjectured than seen." In 1801, after his visit to Canada and Niagara Falls, he described to a friend in London a visit to Lake Erie: "At this point commences a navigation of more than one thousand miles. Shall I lead your astonishment to the verge of incredulity? I will: know then that one-tenth of the expense borne by Britain in the last campaign would enable ships to sail from London through Hudson River *into Lake Erie*." At a dinner party, in Washington, not many years after this letter Robert Morris asked Gouverneur what he would think if they were then in convention and it should be proposed to establish the seat of government at Newburgh, on the Hudson. He replied: "Yes, that would have been the place "for the seat of Government. And the members of "Congress could have come from all parts by water." The company were astonished and asked how. Morris answered: "Why, by tapping Lake Erie and "bringing its waters to the Hudson, by an inclined plane or a water table which can be found." Simeon De Witt, Surveyor General of New York, gives Mr. Morris the credit of starting the idea of direct communication between Lake Erie and the Hudson, and Stephen Van Rensselaer, one of the first canal commissioners, considered Mr. Morris "the father of our "great canal." Mr. Morris was chairman of the canal commiss ioners from March, 1810, until within a few months of his death. He and De Witt Clinton went on a special mission to Congress for the purpose of obtaining Federal aid for the construction of the canal, but though they drafted a bill for the purpose, it never came up, as there were too many divided interests in that body. In the midst of his labors, Mr. Morris died at Morrisania, November 6, 1816, in the sixty-fifth year of his age. His remains were buried where now St. Anne's Church stands, the east aisle covering their original resting-place. They were afterwards transferred to the family vault, which is the first one east of the church. His wife caused a marble slab to be placed over the temporary tomb, and that still remains.[1]

His will was dated October 26, 1816. In it he con-

[1] The author is indebted to Jared Sparks' "Life and Writings of Gouverneur Morris" for the materials of the foregoing sketch.

Digitized by Google

firms an ante-nuptial contract, by which he had settled on his wife two thousand six hundred dollars per annum, and in addition he gave to her, during her life, his estate at Morrisania. The improvements were to be made at the expense of the estate. In his will was also the peculiar provision, that if his wife should see fit to marry, she should have six hundred dollars per annum in addition "to defray the increased expenditure which may attend that connection."

His son Gouverneur, was then given the whole of the residue and remainder of the estate, except such other bequests as he made under the will. If he should die before he attained the age of twenty-one years, or afterwards, "not having made a will," he then gave the estate to such one or more of the male descendants of his brothers and sisters, and in such proportions as his wife should designate; but if she made no such designation, he then gave the estate to Lewis Morris Wilkins, the son of his sister Isabella, on condition that he assume the name of Morris. He then gave to his nephew, Gouverneur Wilkins, twenty-five thousand dollars, to be paid to him when he should attain the age of thirty years, provided his conduct should be such as in the opinion of his executor and executrix "becomes a good citizen." His friend Moss Kent, and his widow were charged with the execution of the will. The son Gouverneur, is still living, and has made a will and the legacy was duly paid Gouverneur Wilkins. Title searchers often raise this question, and as it affects all that part of Morrisania east of Mill Brook and as far north as the Home for Incurables, near Fordham, the facts are worthy of record.

We thus find Bronx Land and the "additional" lands mentioned in the patents of Morrisania east of Mill Brook, vested in the present Gouverneur Morris. His mother enjoyed her life estate in the property until 1837, when she died and was buried under the site of the present St. Anne's Church, which, in 1841, was erected by her son Gouverneur, in remembrance of her, and with respectful regard to two other valued relations of the name was called St. Ann's Church.

Thus far we have carried the records of the township through the successive stages, from its discovery to the Dutch occupancy, the first seizure by the British, the second and brief Dutch regime and the final establishment of the British rule. This long period is fraught with little of interest that has not been mentioned. One incident was the mortgaging of his interests in the manor of Fordham by the contentious John Archer, to Steenwyk, one of the short-lived councillors of Governor Colve. Afterwards Steenwyk, by deed from Archer, obtained possession of the entire manor, and he and his pious wife willed it to the ministers, elders and deacons of the Reformed Congregation of the Nether Dutch Church, on the express condition that it should not be sold, but presumably that the congregation should receive the benefits of its rents, issues and profits in perpetuity. The intentions of the Steenwyks were, however, found impracticable, and the General Assembly of the Colony of New York authorized the congregation to sell the lands. This was done, and the purchasers were hardy and thrifty people, who figured conspicuously in the annals of the Revolution.

Fordham, Bronx Land (the present Morrisania) and Jessup's, Richardson's, Cornell's and the Westchester patents have been so subdivided that the history of their development would be only a tedious chronicle of the laying out of highways, the marks which each farmer placed upon his horses and cattle, and of law-suits, which prove that the former occupants were as tenacious of their individual rights as their successors to-day. The simple annals of the people between the final establishment of English dominion and the Revolution are not of general interest.

THE REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD.

When, in 1775, the contention with the mother country had come to a critical stage, the citizens of Westchester township prepared to organize their military power. The following papers, which are contained among the returns on file at Albany, tell the story of their action:

"Borough and Town of Westchester, 24th Aug^t, 1775.

"*To the Honble Provincial Congress for the Colony of New York:*

"We, the Subscribers, appointed a sub-Committee to inspect the Election of Militia Officers for the said Town, do most humbly Certify, that the following persons were Chosen this 24th day of Aug^t, 1775, by a Majority of Voices duly qualified for that purpose, agreeable to the resolution of the Honble Congress above said (Viz.) John Oakley, Captain; 1 Lieut. Nich^s Berrien, 2 Lieut. Isaac Leggett, Ensign Frederick Phillipse Stevenson.

"*Committee,* Thomas Hunt. James Ferris. Lewis Graham.

"*Electors.*

"Anthony Allaire.	Abraham Odle.
Izaroll Underhill.	Robert Farrington.
Hendrick Brown, Ju^r.	Francis Smith.
Thomas Merrill.	William Green.
Abraham Post.	Abraham Emmans.
Dennis Post.	Isaac Green.
Usial Fountain.	Edward Ryer.
Henry Tayler.	Gilbert Brown.
Wm. Rose.	Jacob Post.
James Munro.	Lewis Post.
John Warner.	John Williams.
Thomas Oakly.	George Hadley.
Charles Tayler.	Isaac Hadley.
Benjamin Farrington.	Joseph Hadley.
Robert Brown.	Joshua Vermylies.
Jacob Tayler.	John Cartright.
Henry Presher.	John Ryer.
Elijah Tayler.	George Berian.
Joseph Oakley, Jun.	Izrael Post.
Daniel Deen.	John Cock.
Thomas Farrington.	Henry Bursen.
James Parker.	Abraham Asten.
Wm. Post.	George Werts.
Samuel Williams.	Abraham Vermylies.
James Crawford.	Frederick Vermylies.
George Crawford.	Edward Cartright.
John Odle.	Frederick Brown
John Devo.	Elethan Tayler, Junr." [1]
Tobias Rickeman.	

[1] Vol. i. Rev. Papers, page 122. The original document is somewhat mutilated, and consequently the list of electors is not complete.

Digitized by Google

It was more convenient for the people of West Farms and Fordham to have a separate company, and therefore they sent in the subjoined petition:

"*To the Honorable Provincial Congress for the province of New York:*

"The petition of the subscribers, Inhabitants of the Manor of Fordham and West Farms, in the County of Westchester, Humbly Sheweth.

"That we are summoned to appear at Westchester in Order to Choose Officers, according to the Resolution of the Congress, it having been Represented (as we understand) that there was not a competent number of men in our District to form a Company. We therefore beg leave to inform that the Manor of Fordham and the West Farms have in the Militia always been considered as a district by themselves, and that within their limits there is upwards of Seventy men fitt to bear arms. And that an attendance at Westchester upon the meeting of the Company will be attended with great Inconveniency to many of the Inhabitants and therefore Injurious to the service intended to be advanced, from which Considerations your petitioners Humbly pray the Honorable Congress will be pleased to order that the Manor of Fordham and the West Farms have a Company within themselves and that they Elect their own Officers under such Inspection as the Honorable Congress in their wisdom shall think best. And your petitioners shall ever pray.

"Nicholas Berrien.	James McKay.
Isaac Valintine.	Robert Campbell.
Peter Valintine.	Eden Hunt.
John Stevens.	Isaac Hunt.
Benjamin Curser.	James Archer.
Abraham Dyckman.	Samuel Embree, Junr.
John Turner.	Edward Harris.
Benjamin Valentine.	John Collard.
his	Cornelius Jacobs.
George x Pilpot.	hezekiah Ward.
mark	Tunis Garrison.
Isaac Valintine, Junior.	Isack Cant.
Peter Bussing, Junr.	Gilbert Taylor.
Peter Bussing.	Robert Gilmer.
Abraham Wila.	Benjamin Archer, Junr.
Benjamin Curser, Jr.	Daniel Devoe, Jur.
Hendrick Ryer.	John Embree, Senr.
John Lint.	Jacob Lent.
John Ryer.	his
Isaac Corser.	Abram x Lent.
Isaac Corser, Jur.	mark
tunus Leforge.	Dennis Ryer.
Phillip Hunt.	Jacob Valentine.
Stephen Embree.	Abraham garison.
Nathaniel Lawrence.	James Grobe.
Peter Devoe.	John Embree, Junr.
James Swaim.	Thomas Cromwell.
Nazareth Brewer.	Gerrardus Cromwell.
Thomas Hunt.	Obadiah Hide.
Abraham Leggett.	John Curser.
William Leggett.	Sirion Williams.
John Leggett, Junr.	John Ryer, Junr.
Robert Hunt, Junr.	Jacob Chappel.
Cornelius Leggett.	John Garrison.
Mr. Woods.	John Jacobs.
John Hedger.	Thomas Dogherty.
Thomas Hedger.	John Clark.
Stephen Edwards.	John Devoe.
James Rock.	John Blizard.
George Higby.	John Walbrin.
Jacob Hunt.	John Warnick.
Levi Hunt.	Thomas Gemble.[1]
Jeremiah Regen.	

"September 5, 1775."

Their prayer was granted, for in October the following minute is made in the Revolutionary Military Records:

"*Officers of the West Farms and Fordham Company.*

"West Farms and Manor of Fordham,
In the Borough of Westchester. 21st of October, 1775.

"It being determined by a Committee of the County of West Chester, that the above-said places should be one distinct Beat or district; We the Subscribers being appointed a Committee of Inspection to preside at the Election for Officers of the Militia for said beat do most humbly represent to the Honor the Provincial Congress for the Province of New York, that they have proceeded to the choice of Officers in Conformity to the Orders of the sd Hon'ble Provincial Congress, when the underwritten Persons were unanimously Chose. Capt. Nicholas Berrian, 1st Lieut. Gilbert Taylor, 2d Do. Daniel Devoe, Junr, Ensign Benjamin Valentine.

"Thomas Hunt.
"Abraham Leggett.

"[Commissions issued this 31st Octr, 1775.]"

In the spring of 1776 the war between Great Britain and the colonies had broken out; the battle of Bunker Hill and the evacuation of Boston by the British had taken place, and Washington, with his enthusiastic but illy equipped army, was on Manhattan and Long Islands, in front of the British invaders. On July 5, 1776, General Mifflin, then stationed at the north end of Manhattan Island, wrote Washington that he feared the British might take possession of the heights north of King's Bridge (now known as Spuyten Duyvil), and asked if he should detach a party to oppose them.[3] At the same time the British ships "Roebuck" and "Vulture" sailed up the North River as far as King's Bridge and dropped anchor near the shore. A violent cannonade ensued, as the Americans had opened a battery against them. The British raised anchor and went farther up the North River.[3] This battery damaged the British fleet both in hull and rigging. This action must have occurred near Fort Washington, and a few of the shells only fell on the Westchester shore, but the raid of the British fleet impressed General Mifflin as to the necessity of fortifying King's Bridge, Spuyten Duyvil and Fordham Heights, for on August 6, 1776, he dispatched Col. Holden from Fort Washington to King's Bridge with orders to make it more tenable,[4] and cannon were sent for that purpose. It is plain, from the annals of that time, that Washington appreciated the strategic value of the pass at Spuyten Duyvil and Fordham Heights, as he feared an ascent by way of the North River with the British fleet, and the destruction of King's Bridge, by a boat expedition.[5] Putnam and Wiebert, the engineer, were ordered to throw up works for the protection of the pass.

The New York Provincial Congress had the same appreciation of the strategic importance of that point. Robert Livingston, on August 10, 1776, wrote Washington about it in behalf of Congress. He cautioned him as to the importance of the Westchester shore and urged sending regular troops there with artillery. Congress felt the danger of the destruction of King's Bridge before any force could be sent to prevent it. The New York Congress had a lack of good faith in its militia because of its raw condition, bad pay and equipment; and in some cases their loyalty to the

[1] Revolutionary Papers, vol. i. page 135.

[2] Force's "Annals," vol. i. pages 1328–1330.

[3] 1 Force, 230, 347. Also the story of the author's grandfather, who picked up one of the solid shots sent on the Westchester shore and witnessed the engagement.

[4] 1 Force, 790.

[5] 1 Force, 886.

Digitized by Google

new cause was doubted. They therefore suggested that the country north of Spuyten Duyvil Creek should be well guarded. "They knew of no country capable of being so well defended." They also suggested that all the cattle in the country be removed and purchased by the army authorities.[1] But Washington had already appreciated this necessity and was throwing up strong breastworks at that point. The New York Congress, at the same time, ordered out the whole of the Westchester militia, under its brigadier-general, Lewis Morris, to take possession of such points on Long Island Sound and Hudson River as he thought most exposed to the enemy.[2]

Meantime reconnoisances developed the necessity of securing from the enemy the upper end of Manhattan Island and Fordham Heights. Fort Washington was built on Manhattan Island and Fort Independence[3] on what is now known as the Giles property, just north of the West Farms or Fordham Manor line, on the Westchester shore so as to command Spuyten Duyvil Creek.[4] General Heath was placed in command of the troops in that neighborhood.[5]

The defeat of the Americans on Long Island and Washington's masterly retreat to Manhattan Island showed that his precautions as to the importance of a line of retreat *via* King's Bridge and Westchester County were well timed. The New York Congress had fled from the city to Harlem and after the battle of Long Island it adjourned not to meet again until it assembled at White Plains. A Committee of Safety was appointed and it met on August 20, 1776, at King's Bridge. The State treasure-chest was also brought there, but almost immediately removed up into the Saw-Mill Valley to Mr. Odell's house. It was feared that the British would go direct from Brooklyn to some point on the Sound, march across country, cut off the communication with the main at King's Bridge and hem in Washington's army on Manhattan Island.[6]

Howe was making his reconnoisances. On August 27th two ships and a brig anchored a little north of Throgg's Neck. General Heath sent Colonel Graham with a regiment to prevent any landing, but before he arrived several barges had landed on City Island and killed a number of cattle.[7] When the regiment arrived, the British retreated with one prisoner and fourteen head of cattle. Heath at once asked Mifflin for additional artillery and made an arrangement for a floating bridge over Harlem River.[8] In the mean time the militia at Throgg's Neck and City Island wanted to go home. The crops had to be gathered and Colonel Drake stated to the New York Congress that it "would be a very great ease to the county at this season."[9] On the 31st, Hand's, Shee's, Magaw's, Broadhead's and Miles' battalions joined Heath's command at King's Bridge[10] and on September 4th, Washington and Heath had a consultation and dined together at that place. The result of this conference was that Heath formed a chain of sentinels and videttes, extending on the Westchester shore from Morrisania, *via* Hunt's Point, all the way to Throgg's Neck, and broke up the roads leading from Morrisania and de Lancey's Mills (West Farms) so as to render them impassable for the enemy's artillery.[11] In many instances he caused trees to be felled across the roads, and in other places dug deep pits. On the 10th of September the British began landing troops on Montressor's Island, (now known as Randall's Island). As the fight on Manhattan Island had taken place at Kips Bay and Harlem Plains, a consultation of general officers was held on September 16th. The generals were divided in opinion as to what course the British would pursue. Some supposed Fort Washington would be the point of attack; others that they would land either at Morrisania, Hunt's or Throgg's Point. It was therefore determined in Council to guard against both contingencies. Ten thousand men were to be kept on Manhattan Island, and Heath's division was increased to ten thousand men; a floating bridge was to be thrown across Harlem Creek, so that the two bodies could support each other as circumstances might require.

On September 18th the British army was between the city of New York and the American lines, which latter extended across the island on the north

[1] 1 Force, 886. Idem, 1494.

[2] As a specimen of the equipment of General Morris' brigade, the following extract from the orders of the Provincial or New York Congress is given: If any of the men were without arms, they were ordered to bring "a shovel, a spade, pick-axe or scythe, straightened and fixed on a pole." The brigadier of this motley army was ordered to "apprehend and arrest . . . disaffected persons." All the militia was placed under "marching orders," and only sufficient guards were to be left behind to prevent insurrection of the slaves and the prisoners in the jails. "Disarmed and disaffected male inhabitants, between sixteen and fifty-five years of age," were to be "brought along" by this militia as "fatigue men," and the brigadier was given power to institute courts-martial against those who did not obey his orders.—Force, vol. i., 1494.

[3] Fort Independence is located by Mr. Bancroft, in his "History of the United States," just north of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, on the crown of the ridge which lies between Tippett's Brook and Hudson River. Mr. Edsall, the author of the "History of King's Bridge Township," the author of this sketch, old maps, local traditions and other authorities, including General Washington's field map, on file in the Historical Society Library, in New York City, show that eminent historian to be mistaken in location. Mr. Bancroft has used British, not American data. There was an earthwork near Spuyten Duyvil erected by the Americans, probably the one ordered to be built by Washington, under Putnam's and Wiebert's direction, alluded to in the text; but Fort Independence stood on the Montgomery farm, not far from the present route of Sedgwick Avenue, as just opened by the city authorities, and somewhat to the west of it.

[4] Heath's "Memoirs," 52.

[5] Idem., 54.

[6] A graphic description of the troubles which a family in Lower Westchester endured is given in the correspondence of a young military officer on the staff of General Sullivan. He had a leave of absence to go to his home and remove his aged mother and sisters, with the flocks and herds, to a place of safety in the interior of the county.—N. Y. Hist. Soc. MSS.

[7] Heath's "Memoirs," 55; Force, ii. 108.

[8] 1 Force, 1184.

[9] 1 Force, 1552; Heath, 57.

[10] Idem, 59.

[11] Force, ii. 239–240.

Digitized by Google

side of Harlem Plains, Heath had a strong picket of four hundred men at Morrisania, with a chain of sentinels, within half gun-shot of each other, posted along the shore and near the passage between Morrisania and Randall's Island. The American sentries were ordered not to fire at the British unless the latter began; but the British did begin, and there was frequent firing between the pickets. One day a British officer walking on the shore of Randall's Island was wounded by a shot from an American sentinel. An officer with a flag soon after came down to the creek, and calling for the American officer of the guard, informed him that if the American sentinels fired any more the commander on the island would cannonade Colonel Morris' house, in which the American picket officers were quartered. The American officer sent word to General Heath asking for instructions as to what reply he should make. He was told to answer that the Americans were instructed not to fire unless they were fired upon and then to return the fire; that such would be their conduct, and that as to cannonading Colonel Morris' house, they might act their pleasure. The firing ceased for some time, but one day a Scotch sentinel on the British side fired at an American and the shot was returned. A British officer came down and said that he thought there was to be no firing between the sentinels. The Americans retorted that the British fired first. The British officer replied, "He shall then pay for it." The sentinel was relieved and there was no further firing between the pickets at that place, and they were afterwards so civil to each other that they used to exchange tobacco by throwing the roll across the creek.

September 22d two seamen deserted from the British frigate "La Brune," which was lying near Randall's Island, and stated that they had but a few men on the island, that the cannon which had been on the island had been put on board the "La Brune," but that there were a number of officers at the house. Acting on this information, an expedition consisting of two hundred and forty men, was sent on board of three flat-boats with a fourth astern with a light three-pound cannon on board in case it might be found necessary. They were to drop down Harlem River with the ebb tide, and they calculated that at daybreak the tide would be sufficient on the flood to float the boats off the flats at the island. Major Henly of the general's staff, volunteered to be one of the party, and much against the general's wish he was permitted to go. Notice had been given to the pickets on the York Island side not to fire on the boats or hail them as they went down the river, but the sentinel nearest the island had not been instructed. General Heath was standing nearly opposite, on the Westchester side, to witness the attack. The sentinel challenged the boats and ordered them to come to the shore; the people on board the boats said that they were friends, but the sentry kept on challenging. The answer was, "We tell you we are friends —hold your tongue." Major Henly sprang overboard and swam to the shore, and wading up to General Heath, asked him, "Sir, will it do?" General Heath, holding him by the hand, said, "I see nothing to the contrary." Henly replied: "Then it shall do" and he waded back to the boat and got in. The sentinel on the New York side shouted "If you don't come to the shore, I tell you I'll fire." Some one in the boats cried out "Pull away." The boats went on and the sentinel fired. The boats reached the island almost at the moment intended, just as daylight was breaking. Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson and Major Logan and another field officer of a New York regiment were in the first boat. They jumped ashore, the colonel remaining in charge of his detachment. The other two were to go to the right and left, and lead the men from the other boats, which were to land on either side of the first boat. The men from the first boat landed; the enemy's guard charged, but were instantly driven back, but the men in the other two boats, instead of landing, lay on their oars. The British seeing this, returned to the charge, and the single boat load seeing themselves abandoned, returned to the boat. Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson received a musket-ball in his leg and Major Henly was shot through the heart and instantly killed. The boat joined the others and all three returned, having lost in all about fourteen killed, wounded and missing. Major Henly was deeply regretted. If only one other of the boats had landed her men, success was probable, if both the others had landed, in the opinion of all concerned, success would have been certain. The delinquents in the other boats were arrested and one of the captains tried by court-martial and cashiered.[1]

September 29th a large number of boats crossed over from Long to Randall's Island, which movement was continued on the 30th. The same day a frigate came through Hell Gate and lay alongside the "La Brune." About noon she hoisted sail and went to the eastward, and in the evening another ship came up. October 1st she was at anchor in the channel between Harlem and Baman's or Eldridge's Island.[2]

On October 3d General Heath, with Colonel Hand, made a reconnoisance as far as Throgg's Neck. The causeway between the village of Westchester and the Neck seemed to them to be a strong strategic point. The old mill then, and for many years afterwards, stood at the west end of the causeway, and there was a bridge of planks there then, as there is now. A long range of cord-wood was piled up on the village or west side of the bridge and was so advantageously situated that it seemed as though it had been placed there for the purpose of forming a breastwork. A detachment of twenty-five picked men from Hand's regiment of riflemen was sent to defend this position, with

[1] Heath's Mems., 63-64.

[2] Ward's Island.

Digitized by Google

instructions that in case the enemy should advance from Throgg's Neck, they should take up the planking from the bridge and have everything ready to set the mill on fire, but not to do so unless the advance of the enemy could not be checked. Another party was stationed at the head of Westchester Creek. This point must have been somewhere near the present station on the Port Chester Branch Railroad known as Timpson's.[1] On the 12th eighty or ninety boats full of British troops went up the Sound from Randall's Island. They landed at Throgg's Neck and at once pushed on for the village of Westchester. Hand's men opened fire and took up the planking from the bridge. The British then tried to turn the American flank by marching around the head of the creek, but Colonel Prescott's regiment and Bryant with a three-pounder, reinforced the riflemen at the village—Colonel Graham, with a regiment of Westchester militia, and Jackson, with a six-pounder, assisted Hand's other men to hold the head of the creek. The British were checked and went into camp on the Neck. Our riflemen and the British *yagers* kept up a continual skirmish, and both sides threw up earthworks on each side of the old bridge. Washington visited Westchester the same day, though his headquarters were still at Harlem Heights. In his correspondence with Congress on the subject of this skirmish, he describes Throgg's Neck as a "*kind of island*," but the water which surrounded it as "*fordable at low tide*." He reported throwing up the earthworks, but from the number of vessels he had seen go up the East River, and also from reports brought in by deserters, he felt convinced that the greatest part of Howe's army had gone eastward, and that his object was to get into the rear of the Americans and cut off commnication between Manhattan Island and the mainland. He considered the country back of Throgg's Point defensible, especially by reason of its stone walls, both along the roads and across the fields, so that the enemy would have great difficulty in advancing artillery or even any large body of infantry with any degree of order, except by the main road.

By the 13th it was evident to all that Westchester County would be the next point of attack by the British. No less than forty-two sail had passed the mouth of Harlem River going eastward, and it was apparent that this movement was no feint, but that Howe meant to "*make his coup*" in the direction of Westchester.[2] The troops at Harlem and at King's Bridge were ordered to their alarm posts, reinforcements were sent to King's Bridge and rations for three days' march were ordered to be cooked immediately. The next day General Heath visited the troops at Westchester. Skirmishing was kept up for a couple of days, and then our position being found too strong to carry with light troops, Howe advanced his heavy guns up the Throgg's Neck road and commenced the erection of a heavy earthwork immediately opposite the Westchester Bridge, not far from the site of the present Presbyterian Church.[3] While this handful of men were checking the advance of the entire British army, Washington heard of the arrival, as they landed at New Rochelle, of the Hessian reinforcements, and was at once convinced that he could no longer hold the upper part of Manhattan Island, but must, with his illy equipped army, retreat beyond the Highlands of the Hudson. A council of war was held at King's Bridge; the Albany post road was ordered to be put in good order by Colonel Drake's regiment of Westchester militia,[4] and everything put in train for the retreat of the main army from the island of New York to the main. On the 18th the Westchester Militia Regiment at the causeway was being relieved, when the enemy opened fire from the embrasures of the heavy earthwork opposite the village. Heath ordered a brigade to advance to the support of the party at the bridge, the general himself leading, but before he arrived at the bridge he found that the entire British army were moving toward the head of the creek. Washington just then arrived on the field and ordered him to fall back and form his division for action farther west, and in such position as to also protect the main army at King's Bridge should the enemy land another force at Morrisania. For some unaccountable reason Howe did not press on towards King's Bridge, but followed a route which corresponds to the present road leading from Throgg's Neck to Pelham Bridge, and being well provided with boats, he crossed Pelham Bay and that evening the head of his column was at New Rochelle, where he was joined by the Hessian reinforcements.[5] Had he pushed directly for the Harlem River and Spuyten Duyvil Creek he would have been able to cut off part, if not the whole, of the American army. Soldiers of our last war and military men generally may regard this small fight at the old Westchester Bridge as a mere skirmish and hardly worth recording, but it was the Lexington of Westchester and a son of the soil should always regard the prosaic old causeway and the ruined foundations of the old mill still to be seen on that historic spot, with sentiments of reverence and patriotism. The Westchester Militia and Hand's riflemen at Westchester Creek and bridge covered Washington's retreat with his army to the entrenchments at White Plains and enabled him to inaugurate his masterly defensive policy which resulted in the establishment of the best and freest govern-

[1] Heath's "Memoirs," page 68, and Edward de Lancey's paper on the Battle of Fort Washington, vol. i., *Magazine of American History*.

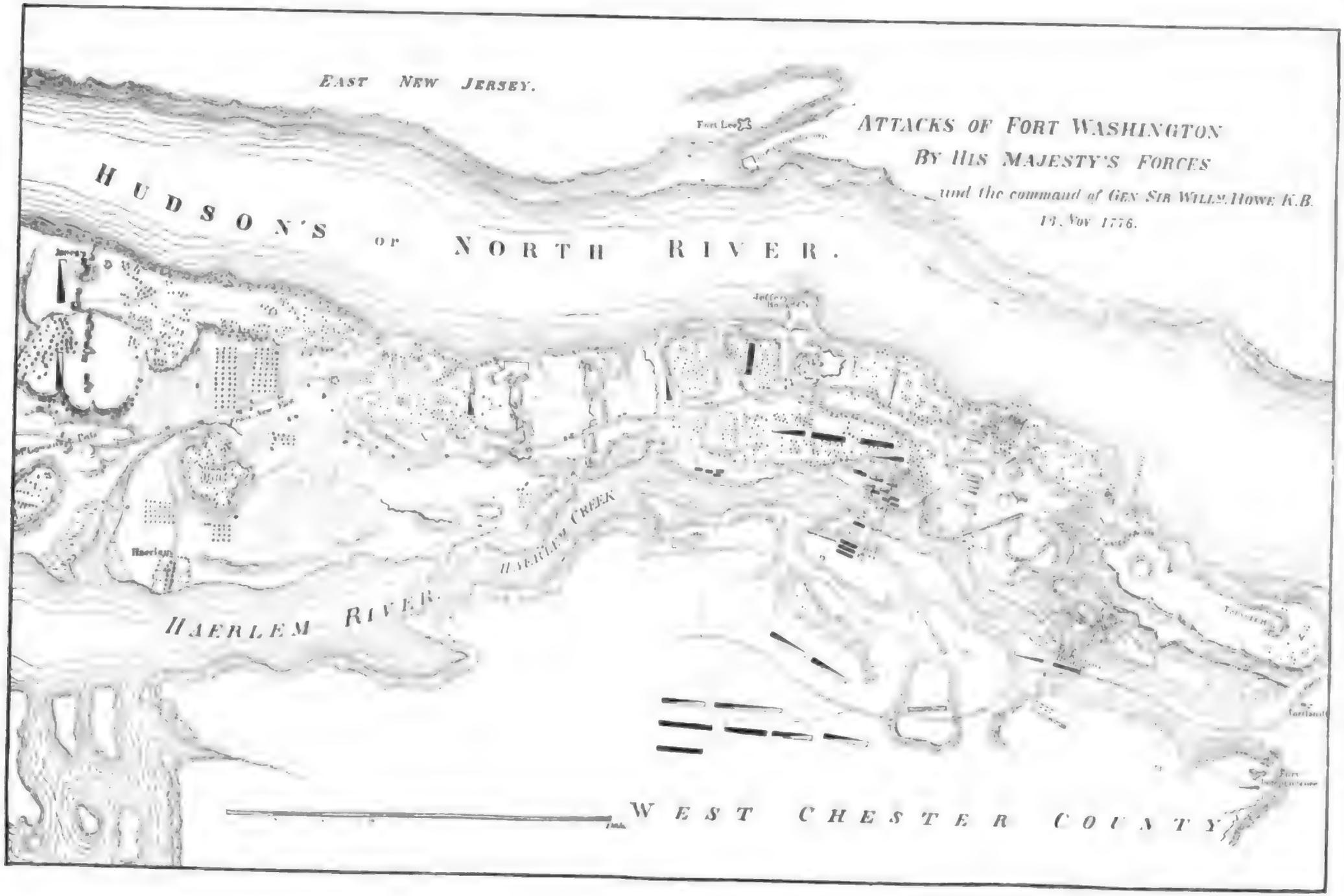
[2] Force, ii. 991; Force, ii. 1025.

[3] For a good map of these operations, see Lamb's "History of New York," vol. ii. page 140.

[4] Force, ii. page 1078.

[5] Heath's "Memoirs;" Dwight's "Travels;" Edward de Lancey's paper in "Magazine of American History," on battle of Fort Washington; Force's "Annals."

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ment ever known to history. It is hoped that the wealth and patriotism of the town of Westchester will some day cause an appropriate monument to be erected near the bridge in commemoration of the battle of Westchester Creek.

On the 28th of October the battle of White Plains was fought, and on the 31st, Lasher's troops, which were the last to leave King's Bridge, had joined the rest of the army at White Plains, and Westchester township was denuded of American troops, and practically within the enemy's lines, Fort Washington being the only American post south of Harlem River. Fort Independence and the other American works about Harlem River and Spuyten Duyvil Creek had been dismantled by the Americans before their retreat.[1]

But Westchester was soon revisited by the British, who continued to occupy it, or most of it, for the residue of the war. On November 5th, Van Knyphausen marched from New Rochelle and encamped at King's Bridge. Two days before, the British General Grant was at de Lancey's Mills (West Farms), on the Bronx; another brigade was at Mile Square, and the Waldeck Regiment was at Williams' Bridge. On the 12th Rahl with his Hessians had advanced on Manhattan Island as far as Tubby Hook (Inwood), and Fort Washington being already threatened on the south by the British who were left on the island, and the opposite Westchester shore being covered with British troops, Washington advised its surrender,[2] but left its evacuation to General Greene's discretion, who was in command of a force on the Jersey shore, at Fort Lee. Congress advised Greene to hold the fort. On the night of the 15th thirty British flat-boats passed up the Hudson, and by both forts, and lay concealed in Spuyten Duyvil Creek. In the mean time the British had erected heavy batteries on Fordham Heights or Ridge extending from the Boston road as far south as the present High Bridge, and on the evening of the 15th Howe summoned Colonel Magaw, who was in immediate command at Fort Washington, to surrender. The post of Fort Washington, or rather the grounds which he had to defend, extended from the Hudson to the Harlem River, and were bounded on the north by a line which will about correspond to Inwood Street on the New York City map, and on the south by One Hundred and Forty-fifth Street. Its extreme length north and south was about two and a half miles, its circuit say six miles. The northernmost point, near what is now known as Inwood Station, was under command of Colonel Rawlings, with a Maryland regiment. Magaw kept a small reserve in the citadel or main fort, which was situated on the site of the residence of James Gordon Bennett. Cadwallader commanded the American lines near One Hundred and Forty-fifth or One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Streets, and on the Harlem River side Baxter commanded a redoubt on the high hill or bluff now known as the terminus of Tenth Avenue, and almost opposite the present station of the railways at Morris Dock, on the Westchester shore. This redoubt was known as Laurel Hill.[3] The interval between Laurel Hill and One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street was left to the casual supply of troops.

On November 16th the British opened fire with heavy artillery from Fordham Heights, and made four separate attacks. Rahl led his troops through the hills and to the west of King's Bridge road; Von Knyphausen marched nearer the road, towards the Inwood gorge, with officers and men dismounted. The Americans had cannon planted along the north end of the high hill facing the approach from King's Bridge, and had also constructed an abattis of felled trees. But the British outnumbered the Americans, scaled the steep heights and a hand-to-hand conflict ensued. In the mean time Lord Cornwallis embarked with a large number of troops in the flat-boats which had been concealed at Spuyten Duyvil. They landed at Sherman's Creek, stormed Laurel Hill, captured the battery there, and killed Baxter, its brave commander. Lord Percy simultaneously advanced against Cadwallader, who was on the south line. Howe also sent men down the river in boats, so as to fall on Cadwallader's rear. Magaw and Cadwallader saw them coming down the river; their advance was covered by the heavy guns firing from Fordham Heights. Colonel Stirling, of the Highlanders, was the first to land, and scaled the heights somewhere near the present location of the High Bridge. So soon as the heights were gained, he pushed his men across the island towards the citadel, and the Hessians and Percy combining, Fort Washington fell, and from that time to the end of the Revolution Manhattan Island and the adjoining shore remained under British rule and occupation.

Thenceforth the Westchester shore, and, in fact, the whole of the ancient township was the scene for many years of raids and foraging parties. The American lines extended across Westchester from Dobbs Ferry to the Sound. On one occasion an American scouting party near Williams' Bridge would have been ambuscaded by a British scouting squad had it not been for the timely warning a young girl gave them of the British approach, she having seen them from her garret window. In the following autumn the right advanced line of the British extended from Hunt's Bridge to East Chester Creek. They kept continually shifting their position, but towards winter the troops were drawn in quite close to King's Bridge and the British built a number of huts and cantonments. De Lancey's corps of loyal refugees were quartered at and near the Morris place, at Mor-

[1] Force, 1294; Heath's "Memoirs."

[2] Bancroft, v. 446 (Brown & Little's edition).

[3] Traces of this earthwork are still to be seen.

Digitized by Google

risania. Col. Emmerick's corps, also composed principally of Tories, were posted near King's Bridge These troops, when they wanted building material for their winter-quarters, tore down the farmers' houses in the vicinity. The Americans, of course, retaliated, and skirmishes and hairbreadth escapes by the partisans of both sides were the order of the day. On one occasion Colonel James de Lancey, while visiting his aged mother at her home at the Mills, had tied his horse, a valuable imported thoroughbred, to the fence. Some American scouts seeing the horse, and knowing his value, immediately took him and carried him within the American lines at White Plains. There some enterprising Yankee bought him. The horse was known as "True Briton," and is said to be the progenitor of the celebrated stock, now known to horse fanciers as "Morgans."[1]

On another occasion Colonel Thomas, an American officer, desirous of visiting his family, and learning that the British had gone into winter-quarters at King's Bridge and Morrisania, ventured home. Word of his arrival reached the Queen's Rangers, the house was surrounded and several of Thomas' men were captured. The colonel jumped from the window and had nearly escaped when one of the Rangers caught him. Thomas was sent as a prisoner to New Lots, on Long Island. There he escaped and remained concealed in the woods for several days. He finally got into the city of New York disguised as a wood-chopper. He had let his beard grow. The British employed a negro who knew him very well to act as a detective for his capture. Thomas saw them coming and went to bed, and when his face was uncovered the negro said that was not the man. Through the influence of a friend, he obtained quarters in the house of a widow. One evening, when a search party arrived, she took him down into the cellar, turned a hogshead over him and then threw half a bushel of salt on the head of the hogshead. The cellar was searched, but this simple stratagem saved him from capture. He eventually escaped by a canoe, landed at Fort Lee and joined the Americans by crossing the river farther up.[2]

In 1778–79 the season was very inclement on the heights about King's Bridge and Fordham and but a small guard was kept. The condition of the people and the country must have been very bad. President Dwight, in his record of his travels, comments on the trepidation of the inhabitants who lived between the lines of the two armies: "They feared everybody they saw, and loved nobody." In conversation "answers were given to please the inquirer," or if they could not please, they tried by the answer "not to provoke." Fear was the only passion which animated them; the power of volition seemed to have deserted them; they were not civil, but obsequious, not obliging but subservient; their houses were scenes of desolation, furniture plundered or broken, the walls, floors and windows injured by violence and decay, cattle were gone and fences burnt; the fields were covered with a rank growth of weeds and wild grass; the world was motionless and silent, unless one of these unhappy creatures went on a rare visit to the house of a neighbor no less unhappy, or a scouting party alarmed them with expectations of new injuries and sufferings. The wheel-tracks were grown over and obliterated, and the venerable chaplain of a New England regiment, afterwards president of Yale College, said that their condition reminded him of the Song of Deborah: "In the days of Shamgar and Jael the highways were unoccupied and the travelers walked in the by-paths. The inhabitants of the villages ceased, they ceased in Israel."[3]

Though this territory was in the hands of the enemy, its people and residents still had their representation in what was then the County Legislature, or County Committee, as shown by the following interesting document:

"KING STREET, February ye 12, 1777.

"A Number of the Freeholders and Inhabitants of Westchester County having appeared at the Court House on the 16th April, 1776, in consequence of Notice given for that Purpose by the Committee of the said County, chose the Persons hereafter named to serve as a Committee for the said County from the 2nd Monday in May, 1776, to the 2nd Monday in May, 1777—any twenty whereof to be a Quorum, vizt:

"*For Morrisania.*

"Lewis Morris, Junr—1.

"*For Westchester.*

"Thomas Hunt.	Gilbert Oakley.
Abraham Leggett.	Daniel White.
Israel Honeywell.	John Smith—7.
John Oakley.	

* * * * * * * * * * * *

"I do hereby certify that the above is a true Copy taken from the Records of the Committee of the County of Westchester.

"EDWARD THOMAS, *Clerk*."[4]

In the summer of 1777 Colonel Lord Cathcart was in command of the British out-posts stationed at King's Bridge and along the Fordham Ridge.

Simcoe's Queen's Rangers,[5] Emmerick's corps and Hovenden's, James' and Sandford's partisan corps were also stationed there. A chain of redoubts was constructed by the British on Fordham Ridge, at distances just far enough apart to secure the flanks of a

[1] "History of the Morgan Horses." This fact was brought to my attention by kindness of Edward F. de Lancey, Esq.

[2] Simcoe's "History of the Queen's Rangers."

[3] Dwight's "Travels," iii. 491.

[4] Calendar of Revolutionary Papers, vol. i. page 632.

[5] The Queen's Rangers were originally raised in Connecticut and the vicinity of New York by Colonel Rogers. They at one time mustered about four hundred men, all Americans and Tories. Hardship and neglect had reduced their numbers, and, after several changes in commanders, they were finally placed under the command of Captain J. G. Simcoe, of the Fortieth British Regulars, about October, 1777, he being given the provincial rank of major. Sir Henry Clinton, in commenting on the gallantry of the corps, said, "The Queen's Rangers have killed or taken twice their own number." After the American War, Colonel Simcoe was appointed Lieutenant-Governor of Upper Canada, and in October, 1794, he was promoted major-general, and became civil Governor and commander-in-chief of the Island of San Domingo. October 3, 1798, he was promoted to be lieutenant-general, and died in 1806, at the age of fifty-four years. Though our enemy, his gallant deeds are worthy of record.

Digitized by Google

battalion. These redoubts can, many of them, be traced to-day. One was on the country place of Mr. Claflin, another on that of Mr. Bailey, and still another in Mr. Malis' woods, just west of Sedgwick Avenue. The light troops lay encamped about half a mile in advance of the line of the redoubts, so as to secure them from surprise. The American advance line extended from the Saw-Mill River to New Rochelle, and sometimes the American scouting parties would come as far south as Williams' Bridge. The Queen's Rangers and Emmerick's corps had in their ranks many Tory natives of Westchester, who had a knowledge of the country equal to our own men. Clinton and Morgan, from the American side, were continually foraging the adjoining country, between the two lines, which was so irregular and broken with stone walls as to render it most practicable for such excursions; besides, the British could not trust the people of the country. In the day-time the British guards were advanced as far as the high ridge overlooking the Bronx, just above Williams' Bridge. At night only a picket line was left there. On one occasion a picket sergeant, belonging to the Queen's Rangers, in advancing the picket guard, was captured by the Americans, who had crawled up behind the stone fence. As the sergeant had deserted from the American army, he was thrown into prison and threatened with death; a threat that the British would kill the first six Americans they captured, in case the sergeant was put to death, alone saved his life and resulted in his exchange.

But the British occupancy was soon disputed by the Americans in greater force. In January, 1778, a large force of Americans were sent to attempt the capture of King's Bridge and Fordham Heights. General Lincoln advanced down the Albany post road from Tarrytown, Wooster and Parsons from New Rochelle and East Chester, and Scott took the centre road from White Plains, which debouches in the old road near the new reservoir just being constructed near Williams' Bridge. General Heath was in command of the whole expedition. The calculation was that the three columns would reach King's Bridge about the same time. Lincoln was to halt at Van Cortlandt's, Scott at Valentine's Hill, near the present South Yonkers Station, and Wooster at the top of the Williams' Bridge Hill. Wooster struck the enemy's pickets first at the top of the Williams' Bridge Hill, and pushing on, drove the enemy from the redoubt on the Claflin, or Perot farm, and the British commander of the fort at King's Bridge was ordered to surrender. The redoubt on the Bailey place, which commanded the fort at King's Bridge from the south and rear, was also taken possession of by the Americans, and fire was opened on the fort at King's Bridge. It was determined to carry this fort by assault.

The enemy cannonaded from the fort and killed one American as the guards were being relieved at the Negro Fort.[1] A plan to cut off the battalion in the fort at King's Bridge, by putting a strong force over Spuyten Duyvil Creek on the ice, was matured. A thousand men were detailed for the purpose, but the weather growing warm, it was deemed too hazardous to risk the men on the ice the next morning. There was a heavy cannonading kept up all day, and the enemy on the island were thrown into great confusion. Heath observing that the British, during the cannonade, took refuge behind the hill at the bridge on the Hudson River side, rode around in the afternoon to Tippit's Hill, which was in the rear of the British position, though on the Westchester shore, and concluded that a field-piece placed there would leave the enemy no hiding-place. This was near the present residence of Mr. Edsall, at Spuyten Duyvil.

On January 21st the artillery battle was continued on both sides, and Heath succeeded in getting a field-piece to the summit of Tippit's Hill. Thus the enemy were cannonaded from the front and rear, and their position made untenable. Some took refuge in the redoubt, while others lay flat under the bank, or betook themselves to the cellars. In a short time the American artillerymen had swept the field clean and there was no object left for them to train their guns upon. The weather had grown very moderate. On the 22d a smart skirmish occurred near the fort, and Heath sent for a twenty-four-pounder and some howitzers. On the 23d a lively fight took place just before dusk in the broken ground near the south side of the fort, probably on the Dykman farm. An ensign and one man of the New York Militia were killed and five wounded; the loss of the enemy was unknown, as they were close to the fort.

On the morning of the 25th the enemy made a sally in the direction of de Lancey's Mills, where they surprised and routed the guard, wounding several, but neither killing or capturing any of them. A regiment near that place quitted their quarters. Emboldened by their success, about ten o'clock in the morning the British made a powerful sally in the direction of Valentine's (Bailey place) and the Negro Fort (Claflin's place), instantly driving the guards and pickets away. The guards threw themselves into the old redoubt near Williams' Bridge, (the present site of the new reservoir on Michael Varian's farm), and the enemy took a position behind a stone wall to the southwest. Two regiments of the militia were formed in the road near Williams' house, which, according to the De Witt map, (vol. 4, Hist. Soc., No. 122.) was situated east of the Bronx, and the horses being hitched to the limbers of the field-pieces, Captain Bryant was ordered to cross the river by fording with his piece, and the militia was ordered to follow. Captain Bryant unlimbered his field-piece when he had reached the top of the Williams' Bridge hill, and to prevent his horses being killed, the men pulled the gun up the rest of

[1] This was on the place of the late H. B. Claflin.

Digitized by Google

the way with drag-ropes, but the steepness of the hill was such that the men were obliged to drag the gun almost within pistol-shot before they could depress it sufficiently to play upon the enemy. The moment this was done a round shot made a breach in the stone wall four or five feet wide. A second shot opened another and the enemy fled back to the fort. The American loss was two killed and a number wounded. On the 27th the brass twenty-four-pounder and the howitzer were brought up and ordered to open fire on the fort, but on the third discharge of the twenty-four-pounder it was dismounted by its own recoil. No shells had been sent with the howitzer.

Heath attempted in every way to draw the enemy out of the fort by feint or otherwise. A detachment was sent down to Morrisania to light up a great number of fires in the night, so as to make the British believe that the Americans were in large force at that place with the design of crossing to New York Island at or near Harlem. To heighten this impression, several large boats were sent for and brought forward on carriages. The British guard on Montressor's (Randall's) Island were so much alarmed that they set the buildings on fire and fled to New York. On the 29th a severe snow-storm threatened; so Generals Heath, Lincoln, Wooster, Scott and Ten Broeck came to the unanimous conclusion that the troops should move back before the storm came on to places where they could be sheltered from the inclemency of the weather. As they possessed no artillery sufficient to batter the fort, and they were opposed to storming it with militia, and the principal object being to destroy or bring off forage, which could be accomplished without opposing the men in the open field or scattering them about in houses, where they would be in danger of capture in detail—for these reasons the troops were ordered to retire as soon as it grew dusk. Lincoln's division marched to Dobbs Ferry and Tarrytown, Wooster's to New Rochelle and Scott's to White Plains. They were not safe in their quarters before the snow fell heavily.

In 1779 Heath was again in command of the American outposts, which continually raided Westchester township. In August of that year Sheldon's and Morgan's horse and the militia, with forty men of Glover's Continental brigade, made a raid in the neighborhood of Morrisania, captured some prisoners and cattle and were finally driven off by the British. A few days afterwards the British, seeing the necessity of having strong defenses at the north end of Manhattan Island, built a fort on Laurel Hill, at the high point now the terminus of Tenth Avenue, and about this time also constructed Redoubt Number Eight, on the Westchester side, on the site of the present residence of Mr. Gustav Schwab, near Morris' Dock. Shortly after the building of Fort Number Eight, Lieut. Oakley, of the American army, took five prisoners and came very near capturing Colonel de Lancey, the leader of the Tory Westchester light horse, who was quartered at that time at the Archer house, which lay just under the guns of the fort. The old house is standing today and traces of Fort Number Eight are to be found on Mr. Schwab's lawn. The gallant Armand in the same year made a raid and captured Captain Cruger of Bearmore's corps.[1] During 1780 the township was the scene of constant military manœuvres. In February of that year a body of British cavalry crossed the East River on the ice from Long Island to Westchester.[2] Arnold also began to fit out a boat expedition in Spuyten Duyvil Creek, which, however, was never carried out. De Lancey was making continual raids from Fordham and Morrisania on the adjoining country, and the Americans were constantly retaliating, at one time having gone so far into the territory as to destroy a pontoon bridge which the enemy had thrown across the Harlem at Morrisania and carried off large numbers of cattle.[3]

The last important military movement in Westchester township was Washington's grand reconnoisance, in 1781, in company with Count Rochambeau and other French officers. It was part of his plan of wresting New York City from the British, or else forcing them to draw upon their troops in the South for the protection of the city. The French forces, which had landed at Newport, were marched across the country and joined Washington on the Hudson, and it was intended that both armies should move down the river to the vicinity of New York, and there, in conjunction with the fleet of De Grasse, undertake the capture of the city. The project miscarried because the British were more strongly re-enforced than had been anticipated; but Lincoln, who had come down from Tarrytown, succeeded in getting his men into Fort Independence, just over the lower line. The enemy discovered him and an irregular skirmish ensued. De Lauzun, the French general, who was co-operating, was at that time at East Chester and heard the firing of the guns. His part of the programme was to surprise de Lancey at Morrisania, but finding that the enemy were on the alert he hastened to Lincoln's support, at Fort Independence. Washington, who, in the mean time, had the main body of the army under his command at Valentine's Hill (near the present depot of the New York City and Northern Railroad Company, at South Yonkers), also advanced. The British retreated by their boats across Harlem River.

Washington determined that he would reconnoitre their works, at all events. On July 21st Lincoln and Chastellereux made a reconnoisance of the works to the north of New York Island. Some advanced by the old Albany road, some down the Saw-Mill Valley, and the third column by the East Chester road. Scammel's light infantry was in advance, to prevent intelligence of the general movement spreading. Shel-

[1] Heath's "Memoirs," 215, 224, 228.
[2] Heath, 232.
[3] Heath's "Memoirs."

Digitized by Google

don's cavalry and the Connecticut troops were to go to the eastward of Westchester township and scour Throgg's Neck; his infantry and the Count De Lauzun's lancers were to scour Morrisania. The main body arrived at Fort Independence at daybreak. The British on New York Island did not seem to know what was going on. While the troops kept the enemy in check, Washington and Rochambeau, accompanied by the engineers of their staffs and with an escort of dragoons, reconnoitred the British position. A map prepared by Washington's engineer, now at the Historical Society Library in Second Avenue, with its pencil-marks and memoranda, brings the whole movement down almost to an eye-witness standpoint. They rode across country from the Hudson to the Sound. The British shelled them from several points, but the *cortege* proceeded leisurely on their business.[1]

Nothing more of much moment seems to have occurred in Revolutionary times within the bounds of Westchester township. Soon the surrender at Yorktown and the treaty of peace with Great Britain enabled the sturdy yeomen of Westchester to behold the last scene in this drama of war, when Washington, with his escort, crossed Harlem River to witness the evacuation of New York by the British.

HARLEM RIVER.

The conveniences afforded by the Harlem River for navigation had much to do with the early settlement of the west side of Westchester County. It is an estuary of East River, which is itself an arm of the sea, and its southerly or main outlet and its communication eastwardly with Bronx Kills afforded the Dutch and English pioneers easy routes of water communication with New York and between the plantations and inchoate towns on the water front. As very many of the subjects both of the King and the Prince of Orange came from the coast towns of England and Holland, there were among them plenty of men who knew how to build, equip and sail a boat, and so they were scarcely warm in their new homes before their sloops and periaugers stemmed the Harlem, and their white wings amazed the Indian aborigines. The sole obstacle to this land-locked navigation was the third outlet of the Harlem,—the dangerous Little Hell Gate, where the menacing black rocks and angry whirlpools obstructed the passage between Randall's and Ward's Islands.

Prior to 1814 the river was navigated by small craft, but in that year Robert McComb obtained from the Legislature permission to throw dams across the stream at Eighth Avenue and King's Bridge, and in 1838 the New York water commissioners attempted to impose another obstacle to free navigation by carrying the Croton water over to the city reservoirs on a solid embankment.[2] The importance of the river led, in 1827, to the formation of the Harlem River Canal Company, which, on April 16th of that year, was incorporated to construct a canal from Spuyten Duyvil Creek to Harlem River, and to improve the navigation of the river so as to form a navigable channel from it to the East River. The enterprise was abandoned because the company thought there was no money in it. At various sessions in 1836, 1837 and 1838 the Common Council of the city of New York discussed the advisability of taking up in some shape the work that the company had dropped, and received from Engineer George C. Schaeffer a report recommending improvements, substantially the same system as that proposed in recent years by the United States engineers. Although Mr. Schaeffer estimated the cost of the work at only eighty-six thousand dollars, the Council was timid about entering into it, and for eighteen years nothing was done, and the river remained closed to thorough navigation by McComb's Dam until the obstructions were removed by the force of public opinion and the action of the citizens in the neighborhood. In 1855, at the request of the city authorities, the Legislature authorized the Governor to appoint a special commission to establish pier and bulkhead lines on Harlem River, and in 1858 this task was completed under the supervision of General Totten, United States army, Professor Bache of the Coast Survey, and Captain Davis, United States navy. In their report they laid emphatic stress upon the importance of the preservation of the navigation of the Harlem to accommodate the wants of the city and Westchester County. "The distance from Hudson River to Hell Gate by this passage," they wrote, "is eight and a half miles. Its easy access from the Sound and moderately easy access from New York Harbor and its quiet interior, would seem to make it a desirable thoroughfare for vessels passing from Long Island Sound to the Hudson, and in certain cases even for those passing between New York Harbor on the East River and the Hudson."

This report was not fruitful of any results. On March 30, 1857, the State Legislature passed resolutions urging Congress to take measures to clear out the obstructions at the expense of the United States, to which no attention was paid. In 1860 Engineer J. McLeod Murphy surveyed the river, at the instance of the commissioners of New York County, and recommended a canal from Fordham Landing to Spuyten Duyvil Creek, as was outlined by Schaeffer nearly a quarter of a century previously, but he put the whole cost of the improvement up to one hundred and ninety-nine thousand eight hundred and thirty-seven dollars. In 1863 the Hudson and Harlem River Canal Company was incorporated, and its engineer, Isaac D. Coleman, reported in favor of one canal, on Schaeffer's plan, and another, through the northern end of Randall's Island, following the course of Bronx Kills, so as to open a passage eastward for vessels coming through the Harlem by which they might

[1] Irving's "Life of Washington," vol. iv., chap. xxii. Putnam's Ed., 1857.

[2] The history of the proceedings which led to the removal of McComb's dam and the thwarting of this plan of the water commissioners will be found in subsequent pages of this chapter.

Digitized by Google

avoid the dangers of Hell Gate. The company twice procured an extension of its charter, but, as it never took any further steps, its grant became forfeited in 1870.

In 1866 the commissioners of Central Park, who were then charged with the duty of improving the river and supervising the erection of bridges, made an elaborate report to the Common Council on the subject. Andrew H. Green, then controller of the Park Department and afterwards of New York City, commenting upon it, said, "It needs but a short look into the future to see this river busy with the craft that are to supply the thriving population on both its banks. As a water-way for commerce this estuary has the advantages of the Thames and the Seine." He pointed out that the improvements must be undertaken by public instead of private enterprise, and forecasted the course of legislation which has placed under governmental control the improvement of the river.

As a consequence of this continual agitation and suggestion, Congress, in 1874, passed an act directing an examination and survey to be made, and in February, 1876, General Newton made a report favoring the establishment of an open water-route between the Hudson and the Sound by way of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, a cut through Dykman's meadows, and thence to the Harlem River. He estimated the cost at three million three hundred and twenty-one thousand dollars. Proceedings for the acquisition of the right of way are nearly complete, and before long, in a few months, perhaps, the work of construction will be begun.[1]

BRIDGES OVER HARLEM RIVER.

King's Bridge.—In another part of this volume is noted the ferries at Harlem and Spuyten Duyvil kept by Johannes Verveelen. In 1712, Frederick Philipse, of Yonkers, was authorized to construct the present bridge at King's Bridge, and it was ever afterwards the principal passage to the mainland.

Farmers' Bridge.—The origin of the Hadley or Farmers' or Dyckman's bridge is, to a certain extent, unknown. Perhaps it is the "causey" or "causeway" mentioned in the early history of Fordham. It is said to have been in existence before the Revolution. It is shown on many of the old military maps of the vicinity, published during 1776, and is supposed to have been built by the proprietors or people of the Manor of Fordham, to enable the inhabitants of that place to obtain more ready access to the city and save them a detour to get upon the State road, leading to Yonkers and Albany, *via* King's Bridge.

It was for a century kept in order by the city authorities of New York, as the authorities in Westchester County contended that as the whole of it was within the limits of New York County, it was the duty of the city corporation to keep it in repair.[2]

It is in contemplation by the city authorities to discontinue this bridge and King's Bridge, and erect either a tunnel or one large bridge at the upper end of Manhattan Island, but as yet the plans for this change are not perfected.

Between the Farmers' Bridge and the High Bridge commissioners are about erecting a new bridge, spanning the stream and extending from Aqueduct Avenue on the Westchester shore to the Tenth Avenue on the Manhattan Island side. This bridge is to be built in pursuance of the Laws of 1885, and is to be a masonry structure with an arch spanning the entire channel of the river, over one hundred feet above high water-mark. The contract is about to be let.

The Croton Aqueduct or High Bridge.—The high bridge which crosses the Harlem River at the northwest corner of Morrisania was built as an aqueduct to convey the water of the Croton River to the reservoirs of New York City. It spans the Harlem where that stream has a width of six hundred and twenty feet and its banks an elevation of one hundred feet. The original design of the engineers was to convey the conduit across the river by means of a stone embankment, broken by a high arch, through which the water would flow in a syphon, but the objections of the property-holders in the vicinity caused the bridge plan to be adopted. The aqueduct has fifteen arches, eight of which are on the river bottom. They are each eighty feet in width and one hundred feet high above flood tide. The seven shore arches have each fifty feet span. To reach the foundation of each pier a coffer-dam was built and pumped out until the sand bottom was excavated and the solid rock laid bare or a firm pile foundation prepared on which the masonry was laid. Above the roof of the arches the huge iron pipes which carry the water are fixed on wooden sills, and above them is the foot-way of the bridge. As the elevation of the arches is less than that of the Croton Aqueduct, a system of syphons and gate houses receives the water at the east side and discharges it at the west. The aqueduct was in working order on July 4, 1842, but the bridge was not completed until six years and six months afterward. Its extreme height above the river surface is one hundred and fourteen feet, two inches. It is constructed of sound gneiss, equal in durability to granite. The cost of the aqueduct was $8,575,000, including purchases of land and extinguishment of riparian rights. This figure was within five per cent. of the estimates of Chief Engineer Jervis. To it, however, must be added $1,800,000, the cost of distributing pipes, the interest, the expense of placing the loans, etc., which bring the total up to $12,500,000.[3]

[1] The authorities for above: The various Reports alluded to in the author's possession, Proceedings by Common Council, Board of Aldermen, Acts of New York Legislature, Proceedings Commissioners of Central Park, and private memoranda. Thanks are due to Captain Tuomey, clerk of the Board of Aldermen of New York City, for valuable assistance, as many of the documents referred to are rare and difficult to find.

[2] Proceedings of Board of Supervisors N. Y. Co., April, 1855.

[3] Schrampke's account of the Croton Aqueduct.

Digitized by Google

The following inscription appears on the mason work of the structure:

"AQUEDUCT BRIDGE.

Finished December 31st, 1848.

Philip Hone, Nathaniel Weed, M. O. Roberts, J. H. Hobart Haws, A. C. Kingsland,	Water Commissioners.
John B. Jervis, Chief, P. Hastie, Resident, E. H. Tracy, Assistant,	Engineers.

J. Vervalen, Inspector of Masonry.

George Law, Samuel Roberts, Arnold Mason,	Contractors."

On the gate-houses at either end is the inscription—"1848."

The bridge as originally constructed carried two iron pipes three feet in diameter, but in 1860 it was improved by adding a large pipe seven feet in diameter, which lies between the two smaller pipes.

The side walls of the bridge were raised at the same time and the pipes were covered with a brick arch, on the top of which is a promenade, from which a view up and down the Harlem is obtained, which is one of the most attractive in the vicinity of New York. This improvement is commemorated by a bronze tablet let into the walls of the gate-houses on both the New York and Westchester sides of the river, reading as follows:

"The Improvement of this bridge by adding the large pipe, raising of the side walls and covering the whole work with an arch was commenced October, 1860. The new pipe was put in operation December, 1861. The masonry completed in 1863.

"*Croton Aqueduct Board.*

"Thomas Stephens, President Commissioner; Thomas B. Tappen, Assistant Commissioner to Dec. 4, 1862; Alfred W. Craven, Commissioner and Engineer-in-chief; Engineers: George S. Greene, Engineer in-charge to Feby. 31st, 1862; Wm. F. Dearborn, Engineer-in-charge from Feby. 1st, 1862; Contractors, Thomas F. Rowland, for the pipe; J. P. Cummings, for the masonry."

THE CENTRAL BRIDGE OR MACOMB'S DAM.—In 1800 the mayor, aldermen and commonalty ceded to Alexander McComb and his heirs and assigns, "All that certain piece or parcell of land covered with water situated in the 7th Ward (now 12th Ward) of the city beginning at the West side of Kingsbridge at low water mark on the north side of the river, creek or run of water called Spuyten Duyvil; thence running along the creek westerly at low water mark one hundred feet; thence crossing the creek to a place at low water mark one hundred feet from Kingsbridge; thence along the creek easterly at low water mark to Kingsbridge and thence along the West side of the bridge to the place of beginning." A passage-way fifteen feet along the course of the creek was reserved to be kept clear, open and unincumbered, so that all small boats and craft might freely and without obstruction pass and repass the same, with a right on the part of the corporation to re-enter and dispossess Macomb or his successors in case he failed to comply with the condition. It seems, however, that Macomb did not keep the passage-way open. He erected a tidal grist-mill west of the bridge, and in 1855 it was still standing. Macomb was to pay twelve dollars and fifty cents per annum rent. In 1834 Macomb ceased to pay rent, but in 1854 his heirs came forward and paid up all arrears. In 1855 a committee of the Board of Supervisors recommended that the old mill be declared a nuisance and the grant forfeited, as it was evidently an improvident and void grant from its inception. During 1855 the proprietors were about fitting it up as a hotel, as it had then ceased to be used as a mill, but about that time a heavy gale of wind blew it over.[1]

But the supply of water at the tide-mill at King's Bridge was inadequate, for as early as 1813, Macomb obtained a grant to build a dam across the Harlem River from Bussing's Point, on the Harlem side, to Devoe's Point, on the Westchester side, so as to hold the waters of the river for the benefit of the mill at King's Bridge, thus practically making a tidal mill-pond between the present side of the Central Bridge at Seventh Avenue and old King's Bridge. This erection was known for years as "Macomb's Dam."

The act required that it should be so constructed as to allow the passage of boats and vessels accustomed to navigate the river, either by means of a gate-lock, apron or other contrivance, and that Macomb should always have a person in attendance, so that no unnecessary delay should happen to persons wishing to pass with their boats. The Common Council ratified the grant and upon it a lease was issued to Macomb, his heirs and assigns forever, of all the lands under water required for the purpose and also a considerable amount of upland on the Manhattan Island side, embracing a valuable gore between the road leading to the dam and Seventh Avenue. Forfeiture for non-payment of rent was provided in the lease. The annual rental was the same as for the mill at King's Bridge, and was in arrears for many years, but in the mean time Macomb and his successors levied toll on all vehicles and persons who passed over the bridge, and continued to do so down to the time of the erection of the present Central Bridge.

But it appears that this unauthorized toll-bridge and obstruction to the navigation of the river was resisted by the people on both sides of the river. In 1839 Charles Henry Hall, Thomas W. Ludlow, Robert Morris, of Fordham, his son, Lewis G. Morris, of the same place, Lewis, Gouverneur and William H. Morris, of Morrisania, the Valentines, Berrians, Devoes and others and even citizens of the village of Westchester, and most of the farmers in the vicinity, determined that the dam should at least be so

[1] Docs. Board of Supervisors of N. Y. County and personal information from Isaac Michael Dyckman, of King's Bridge.

Digitized by Google

constructed that it would afford an unobstructed passage for vessels. Public meetings were held,[1] the best legal talent retained, and money was raised to protect the full navigation of the river.

Lewis G. Morris, then quite a young man, was by the votes of his associates entrusted with the leadership of the fight. In order to bring the question, if necessary, within the jurisdiction of the United States Courts, it was determined that a vessel laden with a cargo from a neighboring State should ascend the river and demand passage way through the *opening* which the grant had directed should be kept for vessels, but which Macomb and his successors had neglected to provide. Mr. Morris therefore built a dock on his place about a mile north of the present site of High Bridge and chartered a *periauger*, called the "Nonpareil," with a cargo of coal on board consigned for delivery at Morris Dock. He arrived with his boat at the dam one evening at full tide and demanded of Feeks, the toll gatherer, that the draw or passage-way be opened; of course Feeks could not comply. Some flat boats which had been provided had on board a band of one hundred men; and Feeks not opening the draw, Mr. Morris with his men forcibly removed a portion of the dam, so that the "Nonpareil" floated across. From that time a draw was always kept in the bridge, but for many years the passage was very difficult, the tide being so strong that it was only possible to pass at slack water.

The Renwicks had succeeded the Macombs to the rights in the dam. At first an attempt was made to indict Morris for disturbing the public peace, but by the advice of the recorder and district attorney it was determined he had a right to demand passage for his vessel. The Renwicks then brought suit in the Superior Court to recover from Morris the damages for his alleged trespass, but on the trial the judge charged the jury that the dam as built was a *public nuisance* and that any one had a right to abate it. An appeal was then taken to the Supreme Court and there Mr. Justice Cowen held likewise. Not content with this decision, the Renwicks carried the suit to the Court of Errors on appeal, where all the judgments below were affirmed.

Chancellor Walworth wrote the opinion; among other things he said: "The Harlem River is an arm of the sea and a public navigable river; it was a *public nuisance* to obstruct the navigation thereof without authority of law. The act of the Legislature did not authorize the obstruction of the navigation of the river in the manner in which it was done by the dam in question." He also held that no time runs against a *public nuisance*.[2]

It is fair to Mr. Morris and his associates to state that this overt and bold act on their part has preserved to the city the navigation of the stream, and largely to their efforts is due the fact that some years later the Croton water was brought into the city by the High Bridge and not over a low bridge without a draw, as was first contemplated. On the 3d of May, 1839, the Legislature passed an act directing the water commissioners to construct an aqueduct across the river, with arches and piers. The arches in the channel were to be eighty feet span, and one hundred feet in height above high water-mark to the under side of the arches at the crown, or they might carry the water across by a tunnel under the channel of the river, the top of the tunnel not to be higher than the present bed of the channel.[3]

Later on, by act of April 16, 1858, the Legislature directed the mayor and aldermen of New York and the supervisors of Westchester County to erect and maintain a public free bridge across Harlem River from a point in the city near the terminus of Eighth Avenue to a point in Westchester County at or near the terminus of the Macomb's Dam road. This was the authority for building the present Central Bridge. Lewis G. Morris and Charles Bathgate were appointed commissioners for the county. The commissioners were directed to remove the old Macomb's dam and the obstructions in the river caused by it and to see that the river was made navigable according to its natural capacity. The expense was limited to ten thousand dollars for each county, and of the share of Westchester County, one-third was taxed upon West Farms and Morrisania and the residue upon the rest of the county. The cost proving much heavier than was anticipated, each county was authorized in 1859 to double its original appropriation, and in 1860 Westchester was

[1] The free navigation of the Harlem River had always been an important question with the people of the southwestern section of Westchester County. On March 3, 1838, the land-owners of the town of Westchester held a meeting at Christopher Walton's store, at Fordham Corners, and appointed a committee to memorialize the General Assembly in opposition to the low bridge which it was proposed to build, without a draw, to convey the Croton water supply into New York City. The same committee was instructed to ascertain the best method of removing the obstructions in the river at Macomb's dam and Cole's bridge. The memorial stated that the signers had been informed that the water commissioners intended to carry the Croton water across Harlem River by inverted syphons built over an embankment of stone, filling up the whole of the natural channel, and with only one archway on the New York side only eighty feet in height, instead of by an aqueduct bridge, which had already been planned, one hundred and twenty-eight feet above the tide with arches of eighty feet span disposed across the entire width of the river. The city of New York might by the low bridge plan save $509,718, the high bridge having been estimated to cost $935,745, and the inverted syphon plan would cost but $426,027; but the memorialists claimed that their rights to the navigation of the river would by the latter plan be totally destroyed. They showed that prior to the obstructions of Macomb's dam and Cole's bridge the Harlem was navigated to Berrian's Landing and that their ancestors and some of themselves had used the Harlem to ship their produce to market. They also showed that at that early day surveys for the improvement of the navigation of the river had been made at the instance of the corporation of New York; that Macomb had been guilty of violating his grant by not putting a draw in his dam, and asked the Legislature to compel the water commissioners to direct such an erection across the river as would not impede navigation. Counsel were employed, who gave an opinion that the people had a right to remove the existing nuisances by force, and the result was Mr. Lewis G. Morris' forcible passage of McComb's dam, as elsewhere related in this chapter.

[2] Renwick *vs.* Morris, 7 Hill, 575.

[3] Chapter cccxviii. Laws 1839, page 293.

Digitized by Google

authorized to add another ten thousand dollars, New York at the same time contributing forty thousand dollars more. The commissioners paid to the Duncan P. Campbell estate, then the owner of the dam, piers and abutments of Macomb's dam, eighteen thousand dollars for all his property and rights, including the approaches to the bridge on each side of the river and his privilege of using the waters of the river. In 1861 the bridge was completed and thrown open to travel. It is in contemplation to remove this bridge and cross the river at this point by a tunnel underneath the stream.[1]

THE MADISON AVENUE BRIDGE. — Next in order is the bridge crossing the Harlem from the terminus of Madison Avenue to One Hundred and Thirty-eighth Street on the Westchester side. As early as October, 1874, the citizens on the Westchester shore petitioned to have a wooden pile-bridge built at that site. After several changes of plans an appropriation of one hundred thousand dollars was made. In June, 1877, a resolution was passed authorizing the acquisition of the right of way for the approaches to the bridge, and in 1878 the Board of Estimate authorized the issuing of bonds for building the bridge. Soundings were again made so as to determine the sites for the piers, but not until February, 1879, did General Greene, the engineer, submit plans and specifications as to soundings and cost. On October 15, 1879, John Beattie was awarded the contract for fifty-nine thousand four hundred and forty-four dollars. A. P. Boller was called in as consulting engineer and made some suggestions as to change of plan. Beattie complained of the changes. On October 3, 1880, Eugene E. McLean, engineer of construction, was relieved from duty, and E. B. Van Winkle, topographical engineer of the Department of Parks, was placed in temporary charge. A change in the masonwork was again recommended in 1880 and the work was again delayed. Wm. J. McAlpine was then appointed engineer of construction and A. P. Boller was invited to consult with the board as to the iron superstructure. June 6, 1881, the contract for construction of approaches was awarded to John McQuade for ninety-four thousand six hundred and twenty dollars. The whole cost of the bridge was four hundred and ninety-two thousand two hundred and ninety-five dollars.

This bridge is now crossed by the Madison Avenue line of horse-cars operated by the Harlem Railroad Company.

THE HARLEM OR THIRD AVENUE BRIDGE.— The Harlem Bridge, at the terminus of Third Avenue, was first authorized by an act of the Legislature passed March 31, 1790,[2] granting the privilege to Lewis Morris, his heirs and assigns. The Morrises assigned this grant to one John B. Coles, who, on the 25th of March, 1795, obtained an act of the Legislature authorizing him, his heirs or assigns to build a dam across the Harlem River at that place, to be of stone and to be so built as to answer for the foundations of the bridge as well as to collect the waters of the river for the use of grist and other mills. The act provided for locks and that a man should be in attendance on the lock at all times; that the bridge should be completed within four years; that Coles and his heirs should keep it in repair for sixty years and collect the tolls, after which it should vest in the people of the State.[3]

It appears, however, that although Coles erected the bridge in pursuance of the last act, and though the commissioners named in the first act did lay out a road from the bridge to East Chester, yet the damages to the persons through whose hands the road passed were not paid and some part of the road was not opened, though Coles had expended a considerable sum in making and clearing the road, but that much money would still have to be expended. Nevertheless, the Legislature in 1797 established the road as a public highway and directed it to be opened as such, although the damages to the adjoining land-owners were not paid. Coles was authorized at his expense to cause the road to be cleared and rendered convenient for travelers, and for thirty years afterwards to collect an additional toll for passing the bridge, not exceeding fifty per cent. above what was authorized by the other acts, but he was to keep the road in repair for that time.[4]

The original Coles or Boston road extended up Third Avenue as far north as a point near the present line of One Hundred and Sixtieth Street, and thence ran east down the hill across Mill Brook over a bridge. (The stream is now filled in and forms a part of Brook Avenue at this point.) The road then deflected north and followed the present Fordham Avenue until what is now known as the Boston road was reached, and then followed it to the village of West Farms, where it struck the present Main Street in that village and ran north, crossing the Bronx at the bridge by the Bleach, and thence through Bronxdale and along the present route of the East Chester road till the East Chester line was reached, at Black Dog Brook. It then extended north through East Chester on the present route as it passes the tavern of Stephen Odell.

[1] Acts above referred to and Reports of Commissioners on file in New York and Westchester Counties.

[2] March 31, 1790.—Chapter xxxvii. of the laws of that year authorized Lewis Morris to construct a bridge from Harlem to Morrisania, which was to be provided with a draw; the rates of toll were established. The commissioners of highways in New York were authorized to lay out a convenient road from any part of the main road leading from the city of New York to Harlem River at the bridge then authorized, and Doctor Joseph Brown, George Embree and John Bartow were authorized, at the expense of Lewis Morris, to lay out a road four rods in width from the bridge through the towns of Morrisania, Westchester and East Chester until it should strike the main road in East Chester. The land for the new road was to be condemned and paid for by the respective towns, but Mr. Morris was to pay the commissioners.—Ed. Laws of N. Y., Childs & Swayne, 1790, page 30.

[3] Chapter xxxi. Laws 1795, page 23.

[4] Chapter lxiii. Laws 1797, page 151 (Robins' edition).

Digitized by Google

In 1798 Coles was relieved from a part of his duty to keep the road in repair, and his additional toll cut down twenty-five per cent.[1] This was undoubtedly occasioned by reason of the State having lent its aid to build a part of the road, for we find that in 1797, by an act passed for improving certain great roads in the State, the road from Coles' Bridge to East Chester was provided for, and a sum of money authorized to be paid on the order of a justice of the Supreme Court. The moneys for paying for this road were raised by a lottery which was authorized by the act.[2] In 1808 Coles and his associates prayed that they might be incorporated, and the Legislature passed an act incorporating the "Harlem Bridge Company." They were, by the act, compelled to keep the road leading from the bridge to East Chester in good repair. The following rates of toll were permitted to be collected:

Every four-wheeled pleasure carriage and horses	37½	cts.
Every two-wheeled pleasure carriage and horses	19	"
Every pleasure sleigh and horses	19	"
Every common wagon and horses	12½	"
Every common sled and horses	12½	"
Ox cart and oxen	12½	"
Every one-horse cart and horse	9	"
Every man and horse	9	"
Every ox, cow or steer	1	"
Every dozen hogs, sheep or calves, and so in proportion for a greater or less number	6	"
For every foot passenger	3	"

State and United States troops, with their artillery, carriages and stores were to pass free of toll.[3]

Under the foregoing acts and grants Coles and his associates built the bridge, and although it was insufficient for land travel and its draw so narrow as to seriously impede the navigation of the river, as late as 1855 his successors were endeavoring to have the charter renewed. In 1857 the Legislature passed an act reciting the fact that on April 1, 1858, it was to become a free bridge, to be maintained as such by the counties of New York and Westchester The mayor and street commissioners of New York City and the county judge and chairman of the Westchester Board of Supervisors were empowered to build a new bridge in their discretion and levy a tax for the cost. Judge William H. Robertson and Chairman Alsop H. Lockwood were the Westchester members of this commission, which, in June, 1860, appointed William H. McAlpine engineer of the work. He made plans for an iron draw-bridge on stone piers, at a cost of three hundred thousand dollars, and it was eventually built, although not until some changes had been made in the plan to better accommodate navigation. On July 14, 1886, the New York authorities awarded a contract to a Wilmington, Del., company, for the construction of a new iron bridge at a cost of two million two hundred thousand dollars.

The Harlem Bridge is crossed by the Fordham and West Farms Horse Railways.

In addition to the above traveled bridges are the Hudson River Railroad Bridge, at the junction of Hudson River and Spuyten Duyvil Creek; the New York City and Northern Railroad Company's bridge, at the terminus of One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street and Ninth Avenue, connecting with west-side system of elevated railways in New York (it was constructed in 1879–80 under authority of the Rapid Transit Act of 1875 and by permission and under the supervision of the Park Department;[4] the Fourth Avenue Harlem Railroad bridge, an iron structure;[5] and the new iron bridge of the suburban Rapid Transit Company at the terminus of Second Avenue.[6]

In the early part of the century a bridge also crossed the Harlem, connecting Ward's Island with New York Island, but the bridge and its piers were removed many years ago.

HIGHWAYS AND ROADS IN MORRISANIA AND WEST FARMS.

By the Sautier surveys, printed in 1779 by Fadden, we find the town traversed by two principal highways. One came from Morrisania, opposite Harlem, and ran northeast to Westchester village, and then north to the present Farmers' Bridge, then called Dyckman's Bridge. From King's Bridge the highway ran at the foot of the Giles place to the Boston and Albany road, as at present, crossing the Bronx at Williams' Bridge. Another road led east from the Farmers' Bridge to the village of West Farms.

From the Westchester town records, however, we find a record dated October 5, 1725, which relates to a highway "in the manor of Ffordham, beginning at the foot of the hill to the westward of the Bronx River near Peter Bussing's land and running thence along the side of the hill to the corner of Benjamin Archer's orchard, where it comes into the old road." This in all likelihood is the road leading from the present King's Bridge road near Judge Tappen's place at Fordham.

Another road ordered in 1729 led from the King's road "to the landing below John Hunt's house, which landing was formerly known by the name of

[1] Laws 1798, page 448, Chapter lxxvi. (Loring Andrews' edition of the Laws).

[2] Laws 1797 (Robins' edition).

[3] Laws 1808, page 16.

[4] A. P. Bollen was the engineer of this bridge and Smith & Bidley the contractors. It is the most graceful structure which spans the stream excepting, perhaps, the High Bridge.

[5] Many of our readers will undoubtedly recall the old covered wooden structure which used to span the stream at this point with a way for foot-passengers as well as the railroad.

[6] This bridge was constructed under the same authority as the New York City and Northern Railroad bridge above mentioned. J. J. R. Croes was the engineer. By the efforts of the company, and especially its president, Mr. S. R. Filley, of Woodstock, the people of the annexed district are insured of a speedy connection with the east-side system of elevated railways in New York City. Much praise is due to Mr. Filley for his unremitting efforts, in spite of great opposition, in accomplishing the organization of his company and promoting rapid transit.

Digitized by Google

White Bank," and the people on whose property it touched were authorized "to keep gates." It would seem that this must be a road leading from the highway between Morrisania and West Farms to Hunt's Point. On November 15th of the same year a road was ordered to begin at the King's road in Fordham, and lead "nigh to the water side and landing;" and the same day provision was made for a road "beginning at the King's Road in Fordham, at the Corner of Peter Kens' field, and thence southerly until it comes to the abovesaid road leading to the Dutch meeting-house."

The present Farmers' Bridge road dates back to June 6, 1730, when Commissioners Honeywell and Leggett, acting upon the complaint of the people of Fordham Manor, condemned the King's road "down the hill through the farm which Benjamin Archer now possesseth," and laid it "through the enclosed field of Archer to the eastward where the road now is cleared and beginneth at the Post road leading to King's Bridge at the corner of the fence near John Archer's orchard, and thence southerly until it comes to the road that leads through the farm which John Vermilyea now possesseth on the Manor." June 13, 1730, an order was passed for a road from the King's road below the hill on Fordham Manor to the highway leading to the Fordham Meeting-house. The meeting-house which was the old Dutch Church formerly stood at the junction of the Macomb's Dam road and the Berrian Landing road. It was mentioned that this thoroughfare was to pass by "Michael Odle's Still." A road to East Chester must have been in existence prior to 1733, as it is alluded to in the act of March 1st of that year. On April 9, 1733, the highway through Jonathan Lawrence's land down to West Farms was altered and laid "nigher the river, according to stakes set up and rocks marked." What is now the road from Farmers' Bridge to the depot at King's Bridge was made under the following order in 1734:

"Upon a review of the road from King's Bridge to Halstead's Bridge, we have made the following alteration, to wit: Beginning where said road and the road from West Farms meet, we have laid out said road through the Widow Archer's land as stakes are now set up to the old road, and then across said road to the Yonkers line, from which place John Archer, assisted by us, has himself agreed to and laid out the said road to run through his land in the Yonkers as stakes are this day set up until it meets ye former or old road again, and then ye old road is continued as formerly."

The old Macomb's Dam road came under the care of the commissioners in 1768, their proceedings of May 3d in that year being understood to have reference to it. The transcript from the road-book of that date says,—

"Commissioners, at request of the freeholders and inhabitants of that part of the Manor of Fordham lying upon Harlem River to the South of the Old Dutch Church, viewed the road as then used from the publick road (laid out to the river by said church), beginning a little to the eastward of the said Dutch Church and thence running southerly as the said road runs to the landing at the back of the house now occupied by Charles Doughty on the patent to Turneur; and have at their request now laid out the same road as and for a publick highway, to be two rods wide, with privilege to hang gates on the same, provided they are kept in repair so as to swing with conveniency and not otherways."

The present cross-road from the Macomb's Dam road to Tremont is of recent date (say about 1845) and the road connecting the Macomb's Dam road with the King's Bridge road, near the present Dutch Reformed Church, was opened about the same time.

The writer can remember when no road led to West Farms from Tremont, but a person desiring to drive from Harlem River to West Farms was compelled to drive by way of Fordham. Fordham Avenue was merely a lane through Gouverneur Morris' farm, which extended from the old Quarry road near the Home for Incurables to Rae's Corners (the crossing of the Coles road at Mill Brook at One Hundred and Fifty-sixth Street), and then the lane continued south to Saint Ann's Church and Gouverneur Morris' gate, substantially by the route of St. Ann's Avenue as now laid out. Most of the cross-roads and some of the main ones of to-day were opened by land-owners for the purpose of developing their property. The limits assigned to the author does not permit him to pursue this subject further.

POLITICAL HISTORY OF THE TOWNSHIP, INCLUDING THE COLONIAL, REVOLUTIONARY AND MODERN PERIODS.

Cornelis Steenwyck, one of the earliest proprietors in Westchester town, was a member of the Council of the province of New Netherland during the restoration of the Dutch rule, in 1673. We find Lewis Morris in the Council from 1684 to 1685, and also James Graham. Richard Paxton, in 1689, was one of the Councilors of Leisler, and Samuel Edsall, at one time owner of Bronxland, in 1690. Caleb Heathcote was also in the Council from 1692 to 1697, and Robert Waters, of Westchester, served from 1698 to 1702, when he was suspended for taking the popular side. Caleb Heathcote served as Waters' successor from 1702 to 1720, and Waters was again in the Council from 1710 to 1731. He died in June, 1731. Lewis Morris was in the Council again from 1721 to 1729, in Caleb Heathcote's place, and the rival family of De Lancey, as successor of Heathcote, displaces Lewis Morris in the person of James De Lancey, who served from 1729 to 1753. This distinguished man was Lieutenant-Governor of the province from 1753 to September 3, 1755; also from June 3, 1757, to July 30, 1760. He returned to the Council from 1755 to 1760, when he died. Oliver De Lancey served in the Council from 1760 to 1766, and James, the son of James, was offered a seat in 1769, but declined it. Gouverneur Morris, a citizen of this township, was one of the members of the Council of Safety, which was appointed by the New York Assembly and sat from May 14 to Sept. 10, 1777, and from Oct. 8, 1777 to Sept. 10, 1778. For many years Richard Morris, of Fordham, chief justice of the Supreme Court, served as a member of the Council of Revision. The township has at various times furnished its quota of

Digitized by Google

distinguished men to the State Senate. Lewis and Richard Morris served at the sessions of 1777–1778; Richard alone in 1778–1779; the two brothers again in 1780–1781; and Lewis in the fourth session down to July 1, 1781. He was returned in 1784–1787–1788–1789 and 1790. Philip Livingston, who owned the Van Schaick place, on Throckmorton's Neck, was a State Senator in 1780–1790–1791 and 1792. Samuel Haight, from the old borough town, represented the district in 1799–1800; and Thomas Thomas in 1807–1808. Then the old town furnished no Senator until 1868, when William Cauldwell, of Morrisania, was elected, and was returned in 1870.

Caleb Heathcote was the first of the townsmen who filled a place on the bench of the County Court. He was appointed in 1695, and Samuel Purdy in 1752. In 1777 Lewis Morris was appointed, but the next year resigned in favor of his son-in-law, Robert Graham. Silas D. Gifford became a judge of the County Court November, 1871. March 13, 1715, Lewis Morris was made chief justice of the Supreme Court of the province, and on August 21, 1733, was succeeded by James De Lancey. Richard Morris was appointed chief justice of the Supreme Bench of the State October 23, 1779, and served until he was retired by reason of age. Abraham Tappen was elected to Supreme bench November 5, 1867, his term expiring January 1, 1876.

The township has furnished three surrogates of the county. John Barton held the office from 1739 to 1754, inclusive, and Richard Hatfield entered upon the discharge of its duties March 23, 1778. On May 15, 1862, Silas D. Gifford was appointed surrogate by the Governor in place of Mr. Coles, deceased.

Natural Characteristics, Residences, Etc.—The territory comprised within the limits of what was formerly the townships of West Farms and Morrisania, now Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards, New York City, presents varied aspects of scenery. The rapid growth of the city of New York has already destroyed much of its natural beauty, and in a few years its appearance will be changed. A plain, old-fashioned country road is already the exception; macadamized avenues and in many places paved streets fill up the valleys and cut through the hills where formerly the green country lanes, shaded by beautiful trees, delighted the wayfarer. Still, there is much of natural beauty left, and the city authorities, in adopting plans of streets, roads and avenues through the townships now in the city limits, have shown good taste and judgment in abandoning the rectangular plan of streets so common in all modern municipalities and laid out the thoroughfares in accordance with the natural slope of the ground. The country is hilly, with broad valleys between, the direction of the hills running generally north and south. Along the ridge overlooking the picturesque Spuyten Duyvil and Harlem are to be found views which a resident of the great city would travel miles in foreign lands to visit. Owing to the windings of the stream and the irregular shape of Manhattan Island, vistas of Hudson's River and the straight line of the Palisades of New Jersey greet the eye looking westward, while at the base of the ridge the Harlem and Spuyten Duyvil lie in a deep valley, giving the appearance of a succession of lakes rather than one continuous stream.

Historic associations, blended with natural beauties, tempts one who has known the territory all his life, in giving a description of its present appearance, to combine with it a short gossipy account of its present as well as former owners. Beginning at the northwest corner of what was West Farms, just south of the Yonkers line, we find a beautiful panoramic view of the Harlem and Spuyten Duyvil Creek. At one's feet lies King's Bridge or Paparinamin or Fordham, as we see by the colonial account of the region the present King's Bridge was formerly called; just over the Yonkers line, on the site of the present residence of William O. Giles, stood Fort Independence, the last American work on the Westchester side abandoned by the American army on Washington's retreat to White Plains. Immediately south of the Giles place is still to be seen, just east of Sedgwick Avenue, the remains of an old powder magazine used by the British during the Revolution, and just east of the avenue stood the Negro Fort, now on the grounds of H. B. Claflin, which afterwards, with other works, formed a chain of redoubts and cantonments and outworks for the British during the entire period of their occupancy of New York City during the Revolution.

Another of these works is on the lawn of N. P. Bailey, which has been identified as the King's Battery. On the grounds of H. W. T. Mali earthworks are also recognizable near the line of the New York City and Northern Railroad. The residence of Gustav Schwab stands upon the site of Fort Number 8. Immediately south of that fort, and in the valley just below the residence of ex-Mayor Franklin Edson, still stands an old stone farm-house which during the Revolution was occupied by one of the Archers, and the writer of this article remembers to have heard his grandfather give an account of his visit there when the fort on the hill was in the occupation of the British.

Farther south and crossing a small stream which intersects the ridge at this point, soon to be the route of a thoroughfare called Burnside Avenue, one comes to the residence formerly of Mrs. Emma Dashwood, now owned by Timothy C. Eastman, and nearer the river, fronting on Sedgewick Avenue, is the residence of Gulian Ludlow Dashwood, clerk of St. James' Vestry, president of the Fordham Ridge Whist Club, and the bachelor factotum of the neighborhood. According to Burke's "Landed Gentry of England," Mr. Dashwood is Baron de Spencer in his own right, but, like a sensible man, he prefers his American

Digitized by Google

friends and a competency in his native land to an empty title in a foreign one.

Just south of the last place is Fairlawn, the beautiful residence of Hugh N. Camp. On the river side of the homestead stands the picturesque cottage of his son-in-law, Perry Williams. At some point of the ridge near this place the batteries of the British troops were stationed, and under the cover of their fire the British flat-boats were able to descend the river and scale the heights of Laurel Hill, immediately opposite, when the attack was made on Fort Washington. From Mr. Williams' house the earthwork at Laurel Hill is discernible. Immediately opposite Mr. Camp's entrance-gate, on the site now occupied by the embankment of the Croton Aqueduct, stood the residence of Richard Morris, colonial judge of Vice Admiralty, and afterwards second chief justice of the Supreme Court of the State of New York. Mr. Lewis G. Morris, who owns a part of the original farm of Judge Morris, occupies the adjoining place, Mount Fordham, inherited by his father, Robert Morris, from the chief justice.

Still farther south on the same ridge are several beautiful residences. At the beginning of the century this tract was known as the Poole Farm, and John Poole, one of the original family, still occupies a portion of it. The most northerly of these places is High Cottage, belonging to the estate of the late Romanzo W. Montgomery, a wealthy merchant of New Orleans, though originally from the Eastern States. The view from High Cottage is one of the finest on the Ridge. Mrs. Lees, widow of the late James Lees, of the well-known firm of Lees & Walker, now succeeded by Lindlaw & Company, occupies the next place, and the most southerly property on the former Poole Farm is Villa Boscobel, the residence of the late William B. Ogden, the first mayor of Chicago, and a railroad king of the West. During his later years he gave full rein to his refined taste and Villa Boscobel, with its beautiful grounds, green-houses, choice shrubberies, flowers and arboretums, is a fit monument to his taste and refinement. He was also much interested in developing the neighborhood. To his wise counsel and experience much is due for the present plan for laying out and improving the city suburbs, of which Villa Boscobel will for years form a notable feature. His widow keeps up the villa in a style befitting its founder, and her kind deeds in this vicinity and in other communities give additional lustre to the memory of one who has left a precious trust in worthy hands.

Just south of the Ogden estate is a pretty cottage belonging to the estate of Mr. Ogden's sister, the late Mrs. Judge Wheeler, whose husband, Norman K. Wheeler, was the first police magistrate appointed to serve in the annexed district after West Farms was annexed to New York City.

Just south of the Wheeler and Ogden properties the stone aqueduct known as High Bridge crosses the Harlem.

South of High Bridge, not far from the junction of Ogden Avenue and Woolfe Street, is a small stream which was the southern boundary of the Archer patent, already mentioned. Crossing the stream, the lands in Daniel Turneur's patent are reached, and all south of the stream, bounded on the east by the Harlem and on the west by Cromwell's Creek, was afterward known as Devoe's Point—the Nuasin of the Indians. Upon this southerly end of the back-bone of Westchester is situated the settlements of Clermont and Highbridgeville. Ogden Avenue passes along the ridge in a southerly direction, and after leaving the village passes between several very pretty residences. On the highest part of the ridge is Woody Crest, the residence of the late Mrs. Anderson, and somewhere near this place stood the house of Daniel Turneur, the original patentee. At the terminus of Ogden Avenue a junction is formed with it and Central or Jerome Avenue and Sedgwick Avenues, and the Harlem River is crossed at this point by the Central Bridge or Macomb's Dam.

Returning to the Yonkers line, and taking in all the territory lying between the summit of the ridge and the Harlem Railroad, are two valleys, one the headwaters of Cromwell's Creek, the other that of Mill Brook. Immediately at the Yonkers line are the lands of the American Jockey Club, formerly the Bathgate Farm. The property belongs to the corporation known as the Jerome Park Villa Site Improvement Company, but the American Jockey Club is the lessee. This club was formed soon after the close of the Civil War, for the purpose of improving thoroughbred stock, and conducting race meetings honestly, free from the rowdy and gambling element which had brought them into disrepute. Leonard W. Jerome, William R. Travers and S. L. M. Barlow, of New York, John Hunter, of Westchester, and Governor Oden Bowie, of Maryland, were the leading spirits in establishing the organization. It at once raised the standard of racing in America, and from this Renaissance of the turf dates the present prosperity and good management of all our large race courses, and the increased interest in improving the breed of horses. It is a curious coincidence that "Eclipse," the celebrated American racer of former days, was for some time under the care and management of James Bathgate, the former owner of the present park of the American Jockey Club.

To the east of Jerome Park is the farm of Michael Varian, in whose family the lands on which the old stone house stands have been held for nearly, if not more than, a century. Upon the crest of the high ridge, overlooking the Bronx Valley to the eastward, stood an earthwork erected by General Heath in 1776, so as to command the crossing of the Bronx at Williams' Bridge. This site has now been acquired by the city of New York for a reservoir, in which the waters

Digitized by Google

of the Bronx River are to be stored and from which they will be distributed through the city.

Still farther east, and at the northeast corner of what was formerly West Farms, is the small village of Williams' Bridge. The ancient highway which passes through this section east and west and descends the steep hill to the Bronx was the former road to Connecticut and the other New England States, and before the construction of Harlem Bridge was the only traveled route to New England. It is still known as the "Boston road," but should not be confounded with another highway farther to the eastward in Morrisania, also called by the same name. In the valley to the east of the residence of Mr. Varian is the residence of Hon. W. W. Niles, a prominent lawyer in New York City, who has represented the district several times in the New York Legislature. He is a friend of Hon. Samuel J. Tilden and is recognized as a leading man in the counsels of the Democracy.

Returning to the west and the line of the aqueduct, south of the Jockey Club, stands the Dutch Reformed Church of the Manor of Fordham, and near by are the residences of H. B. Claflin and William G. Dun, of the great dry-goods house of H. B. Claflin & Co. On the hill, to the east, is the old Briggs house, one of the land-marks of the neighborhood, and now celebrated on any race-day as the place of assemblage for the crowd who desire to witness the events without paying entrance-money at the gates. It has recently received the appropriate appellation of "Donnybrook Hill," and many scenes transpire there similar to those which are enacted at the historic fair in Ireland. Near by is the residence of Charles L. Cammann, of the old banking firm of Cammann & Co., whose wife, Cornelia de Lancey, belongs to the family of de Lancey, so closely identified with the history of the township. Next-door is the residence of the Rev. D. Lawrence Jewett, whose wife, Miss Dickinson, was the daughter of the Rev. Dr. Dickinson, one of the oldest and most respected of the late residents of the township, and on Central Avenue, not far from the last, is the residence of Frederick W Devoe.

Farther down the Fordham and King's Bridge road is the residence of Hon. A. B. Tappen, ex-justice of the Supreme Court of this State. The old Josiah Briggs homestead stands on the crown of the Fordham Ridge, and across the way is an humble cottage, the residence of the poet, Edgar Allen Poe, about the years 1843–45. It is said that while residing in this house he composed "The Raven." Near the present Central Avenue is the old Peter Valentine homestead farm-house, now much modernized by the "old squire's" son-in-law, the Hon. John B. Haskin. Mr. Haskin has filled many offices of trust and honor. He served at one time as chairman of the Board of Supervisors, was president of the Board of Education of School District No. 2, and represented the district in the House of Representatives.

Just south of the Haskin property, extending east from the Croton Aqueduct to the valley of the Mill Brook, were the Butler, Berrian, Bassford and Fisher farms, now mostly cut up into village lots and fast improving. Just west of Mr. Haskin's house, on the corner of Jerome and Croton Avenues, stands the church and rectory of St. James Parish, Fordham; and east of the railroad is St. John's College, near which is St. Mary's, the Catholic parish church. On the rocky ridge on the west side of Mill Brook is the Methodist Episcopal Church and the old Bashford homestead, in recent years much improved by the late E. V. Welch. To the south are the growing villages of South Fordham, Mount Hope and Mount Eden, and, overlooking the village of Tremont, the House of Rest for Consumptives.

The territory south of the King's Bridge road and as far south as the south boundary of the Woolf farm and the north boundary of the present Zborowski place was still in the Manor of Fordham, and at the beginning or early part of this century was divided up between the Butlers, Berrians, Archers, the easterly part of Judge Morris' farm, the Fishers, Weeks, Poole and Woolf families. The Woolfs were of Hessian origin, their ancestor, Anthony Woolf, having come to this country with the Hessian troops during the Revolution; but taking a fancy to America, he did not return, and settled on the Woolf farm on Cromwell's Creek, which, by his industry and frugality, he was enabled to purchase. The present owner of the property is now the lessee of the de Lancey or Lydig's Mills at West Farms.

South of the Woolf and Weeks farms we strike the line of the old Manor of Morrisania. On the hills overlooking central Morrisania stands the handsome residence of the late Martin Zborowski, who built it about 1855–56. The land came to him by his wife, Miss Anna Morris, a descendant of the original patentees. The house is very beautiful and the grounds about it well laid out and finely wooded. This place is soon to be taken in as a part of Clermont Park by the city of New York. Eliot Zborowski is the present owner. Adjoining the Zborowski place is a tract of land now called Inwood, formerly the property of Mrs. Julia Stebbins, *née* Morris, a sister of Mrs. Zborowski, but the property has been sold off into small lots and has lost its distinctive features. South of the Zborowski places and Inwood was the former Cromwell farm and that part of the Manor of Morrisania which fell to the share of James Morris, formerly sheriff of New York City. The mansion-house is still standing and occupied by his son, William H. Morris. It commands a fine view of the Mill Brook Valley to the east and the now growing village of Morrisania. Much of this tract has been sold by Mr. Morris to the Astors and others. Bordering upon his lawn the Gentlemen's Driving

Association have established a race track called Fleetwood. While Fordham boasts of the American Jockey Club, Fleetwood is patronized by the lovers of that purely American institution, the trotter. Not far from the park Mr. Robert Bonner had his residence, and "Dexter," "Maud S." and other "flyers" are familiar with Fleetwood. It is a notable fact that before the Revolution a portion of the same ground was used as a race-track. The rest of the territory between Cromwell Creek and the Harlem Railroad is greatly subdivided. The creek is spanned by two bridges built by the town trustees of Morrisania during their existence. The whole of this region has been largely affected of late years by the opening and construction of Central or Jerome Avenue. This broad avenue, seventy-five feet wide, runs from the Central of Macomb's Dam bridge north, first through the Cromwell's Creek Valley and thence to the Woodlawn Cemetery gate in Yonkers. The old Macomb's Dam road was taken into the lower part of the avenue and the excavations and embankments have practically changed the surface. The avenue is the favorite resort for persons owning fast horses. The commissioners who were charged with the construction of the road thoughtfully planted shade trees at the sides and in a few years' time it will be one of the best shaded avenues in the city.

Returning to Williams' Bridge, we find just at the foot of the hill, on the Bronx, the large estate of Peter Lorillard, which occupies most of the space between the Harlem Railroad and the Bronx, the estate being on both sides of the latter river. Saint John's College comes in at this point and just south of the college grounds comes in the Powell farm. This property was owned in the early part of the century by the Bayard family, and the widow of Mr. Bayard married Reverend William Powell, rector of St. Peter's Church at Westchester. In addition to his parochial duties, Dr. Powell kept a boys' school at Fordham, which, in its day was as famous as any of the present modern boarding schools for young men. The old house is still standing, but the property has been cut into lots and Dr. Powell's pupils would have great difficulty in recognizing their former playgrounds. South of the Powell farm, at the junction of three roads at Belmont, is located the Home for Incurables, on the property formerly owned by Jacob Lorillard, deceased. Going east, toward the village of West Farms, we reach the fine brick mansion built by Captain Frederick Grote, and occupied by him for many years. Captain Grote served the town for some time as supervisor.

West of Belmont is a large tract of land formerly belonging to the de Lanceys, but now owned by the Lydig estate. It extends east of the Bronx and has within its limits de Lancey's Mill of revolutionary fame, but known for more than half a century as Lydig's Mills. The most beautiful part of the place is on the border of the Bronx, where a pond has been formed by the mill dam. It is in about the centre of this pond that the several boundary lines of the Archer, Westchester Borough and Jessup and Richardson's patents met.[1] Mr. David Lydig, an extensive miller of his day, purchased the place in the early part of this century, and there established himself in the old de Lancey house, which stood on the east side of the Bronx. The old house and the mill were burnt, and another house was built west of the Bronx which is still standing.[2] Mr. Lydig owned mills in the valley of the Genesee when that region was the grain-growing part of our country and later on he built the mill near West Point, on the Hudson, which was turned by the stream which forms the Buttermilk Falls. His son, the late Philip Lydig, who married a Miss Suydam (the daughter of another Genesee miller celebrated in his time), succeeded to his father's estate and lived there for many years. He was the father of the late Lieutenant-Colonel Philip Lydig, who served with distinction as assistant adjutant-general on the staff of General Ambrose Burnside during the Civil War. His brother, David Lydig, resides part of the year at the family homestead. This Mr. Lydig married a granddaughter of the late Vice-President and Governor, Daniel D. Tompkins, of Westchester County. One of the daughters married Hon. Charles P. Daily, chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas in the city of New York. Another daughter married Hon. John R. Brady, one of the present justices of the Supreme Court in the First Judicial Department, of which a portion of our townships form a part. The Lydig place, together with much of the land adjoining it on the north and east, will soon be condemned by the city authorities as a public park which is to be named Bronx Park. Just south of the Lydig place is the village of West Farms.

This village, formerly known as de Lancey's Mills, owes its settlement to the location of the mills at that point, but prior to the building of the Harlem or Coles' Bridge its population was inconsiderable and the village of Westchester was the principal village of the township. The making of the Coles or Boston road through the village placed it on the highway between New York and New England, and for several years the Bronx attracted many manufactories to it.[3] The terminus of the Harlem Bridge and West Farms Horse Railroad and the depot of the Port Chester Branch of the New Haven Railroad just east of the Bronx renders it accessible. In the centre of the village stands the residence of Samuel M. Purdy, Esq., counselor-at-law, who on several occasions represented the township as justice of the peace and member of Assembly. He at one time was elected to the lat-

[1] Personal information given me by Andrew Findlay, the oldest and most experienced surveyor of the neighborhood.

[2] Old merchants of New York.

[3] Its water was found to be particularly suitable for the preparation of textile fabrics.

Digitized by Google

ter office by the unanimous votes of his townsmen. James L. Wells, twice member of Assembly and since annexation twice alderman, also resides in the village, and here Daniel Mapes, a respected, public-spirited citizen, resided for many years and kept the country store.[1] At the south end of the village is the tidy residence of Dr. Norman K. Freeman, one of the oldest practitioners of medicine and surgery in the district. The doctor was also much interested in former years in organizing a higher grade in the common schools in the township and has held many offices of a public nature. Along the line of the Southern Boulevard, southwest of the village, stands the Vyse mansion, formerly erected by Thomas Richardson, a wealthy Irish linen merchant, and at the junction of the Westchester road and Southern Boulevard stood the Fox Mansion, this point being known, and still by old settlers spoken of, as "Fox's Corners."

William Fox was a wealthy merchant of New York City. He married a daughter of William Leggett, of West Farms and Leggett's Point. He was of the Quaker persuasion, and the members of the Fox and Leggett families are buried in the old Quaker burying-ground at Westchester, just south of the Episcopal Church. He had several children,—William, George, Mrs. Augustus Schell and Mrs. Tucker. From him is descended the Tiffany family (who still own some of the original property) and Austin G. Fox, a rising lawyer of the New York bar, and Mrs. Rebecca Riggs, of the same city.

To the east of Fox's Corners stands Brightside, the beautiful residence of Colonel R. M. Hoe, of the world-renowned firm of R. M. Hoe & Co., printing-press manufacturers.

Since this work has been in press Mr. Hoe died in Europe. Though a poor boy, by the industry and mechanical skill of himself and his brothers, the firm increased its business to such an extent that it has its factories on both sides of the Atlantic. Most of the improvements made in the steam-presses of to-day are due to the careful study and knowledge of practical mechanics which Colonel Hoe possessed. The colonel was also diligent in the affairs of his township; was one of the commissioners who constructed the Southern Boulevard, a promoter of the Morrisania Steamboat Company and the Suburban Rapid Transit Company, and vestryman of St. Ann's Church at Morrisania. He was respected and beloved by his fellow-townsmen.

Near the southeast corner of the Westchester road and the Southern Boulevard stand the residences of the brothers Simpson, the well-known bankers; and on Hunt's Point, to the east of Fox's Corners, are the former residences of the late Edward G. Faile, Paul N. Spofford, William Caswell and Francis Baretto.

Edward G. Faile was one of the founders of the firm of Thomas Hall and Edward G. Faile & Co., grocers in New York. He settled at Hunt's Point about the middle of this century, erecting a handsome mansion and making great improvements on the farm. He was an extensive breeder and importer of Devonshire cattle, and at one time was president of the New York State Agricultural Society. He was a vestryman of St. Ann's Church, Morrisania, and engaged in many works of charity and benevolence. He left surviving him, Thomas Hall Faile, Charles and Edward (merchants), Samuel (a farmer at White Plains), and Mrs. William Smith Brown.

Paul N. Spofford was one of the founders of the firm of Spofford & Tileston, of New York, the well-known shipping merchants and managers of the Charleston and Savannah Line of steamers. He moved to Hunt's Point about 1830 and built the present house now standing on the Hunt's Point road. He left several children, among whom are General Paul Spofford, Gardner Spring Spofford, Joseph Spofford and Mrs. Thomas Pearsall.

William Caswell, a member of the well-known grocery house of Wm. Caswell & Co., of New York City, married Miss Watson, a daughter of William Watson, of Westchester. (*q. v.*)

Francis Barretto, a New York merchant, married a Miss Coster, daughter of John G. Coster, of New York, and settled at Hunt's Point many years ago. Mr. Barretto represented the township in the Board of Supervisors; was also at one time a member of Assembly.

The view from Hunt's or Barretto's Point is one of the finest on the East River. It commands a view eastward of the entrance to Long Island Sound and to the south of Flushing Bay and the Long Island shore. On it is also the old family cemetery of the Hunts and in it repose the remains of Joseph Rodman Drake, the poet, the author of the famous poem to the American flag. It is said that Drake wrote those lines while having before him the panoramic view of the region now being described. On the stone over his remains are inscribed the immortal words,—

> "None knew him but to love him,
> None named him but to praise."

During the author's last visit to this cemetery the tombstone was in disrepair. Some literary organization should see that Drake's last resting-place is properly preserved.

Southwest of Hunt's Point, and divided by the Sackwrahong Creek, is Leggett's Point, the most southerly and westerly part of the former Jessup and Richardson's patent, and later on township of West Farms. Originally possessed by the Richardsons, by intermarriages and purchases it finally came into the possession of the Leggetts, a respectable Quaker family, for more than a century identified with the history of West Farms. It was finally purchased by Benjamin Whitlock, of the formerly well-known firm of grocers,

[1] Sketches of these gentlemen appear elsewhere.

B. M. & E. A. Whitlock, who greatly improved it; later it fell into the hands of B. S. Arnold, a wealthy coffee merchant of New York, and now has become a pleasure resort. To the west of this point and along the line of the Southern Boulevard is the country-seat of Mr. Samuel B. White, formerly owned by his father-in-law, Mr. Dennison, an old and respected merchant of New York. Mr. White was at one time president of the Grocers' Bank in New York City, but has now retired. Near by is also the former residence of Philip Dater. Much of this property has been cut up into city lots, but some of it still remains in the family's possession. Philip Dater, of New York, merchant, succeeded the firm of Philip Dater & Sons.

Near Leggett's Point is the North Brothers' Island in the East River, now the property of the city of New York and formerly belonging to the township of Morrisania. On it the United States government has erected a light-house to warn vessels seeking a passage through Hell Gate and the East River. Near by, on the main, is Port Morris, formerly known as Stoney Island, the same having originally been separated from the main by a small creek or canal. Here is the terminus of the Port Morris Branch of the Harlem Railroad, and off Port Morris is the deepest water in the vicinity of New York. The "Great Eastern" made her first anchorage here, having come in by way of Long Island Sound, her captain fearing that the bar at Sandy Hook would not admit of her entrance into the lower Bay of New York. Near by is Pot Rock, on which, during the Revolution, a British ship-of-war was sunk. A company has for years been seeking to find, by means of divers, some of the lost treasure, but with what success has not yet been revealed. Just west of Port Morris, and on the westerly side of the Southern Boulevard stands Rockwood, the beautiful residence of Samuel E. Lyon, Esq., a distinguished lawyer of New York and Westchester County.

Mr. Lyon is of old Westchester County stock. He was born in East Chester and married the daughter of Jonathan Ward, for many years surrogate of the county. When quite a young man he distinguished himself by sustaining the will of Henry White, of Yonkers, better known as Van Cortlandt, thereby saving to the Van Cortlandt family of the present day, at King's Bridge (see King's Bridge), the large estate now in the possession of the present proprietor, Augustus Van Cortlandt. He for years stood at the head of the Westchester bar. He resided at White Plains for several years. Cases of great importance, however, compelled him to abandon his Westchester home and take up his residence in the metropolis, where he has ever since enjoyed a lucrative and honorable practice. Though several times offered a judicial position and political honors, Mr. Lyon has preferred the emoluments, honors and retirement of private practice to public positions, and now, in his declining years, though as vigorous as ever, he reaps the reward of his ability, industry and integrity. To him our townsmen are indebted for much sound advice and counsel. He served as one of the commissioners for the Morrisania survey; was counselor for the Southern Boulevard commissioners and commissioners of the Central or Macomb's Dam bridge; is entitled to the credit of having drafted the act for the annexation of West Farms, King's Bridge and Morrisania to the city of New York; he drew the acts authorizing the improvement of Harlem River by the Federal government, and has recently carried through the courts, to a successful issue, the preliminary work incident to acquiring the right of way for that important undertaking.

Just south of Mr. Lyons is situated the residence of John J. Crane, Esq., a respected merchant of New York, and one of the promoters of the Suburban Rapid Transit Company. Near by, to the west of Mr. Lyons, are a number of country-seats, fast being absorbed into city lots, many of which will, in a short time, be absorbed into a new park, which the city is about to make, called St. Mary's Park, and in the immediate vicinity is old St. Ann's Church, described in another chapter. Just on the banks of the Harlem Kills stands the house formerly of Gouverneur Morris, and not far distant, near the Port Chester Railroad depot, was the site of Bronx's house, where, as we have already seen, the first treaty of peace with the Indians was signed. To return to Fordham and describe the valley of the Mill Brook, as it used to appear before the flourishing settlements, near the Harlem Railroad, of Tremont, Central Morrisania, Morrisania Station, Melrose and Mott Haven, would be a pleasing task; but all their former beauties have departed, and suffice it to say that they are part and parcel of the great metropolis. One oasis of rural occupancy still exists at Central Morrisania. The Bathgate farm is still almost intact, and the old farm-house, with its barn-yard, orchard and other agricultural surroundings, still remaining entire within ear-shot of the tinkling of horse-car bells and the tooting of locomotive whistles. But the easterly portion of this property is soon to be taken by the city to form a new pleasure ground, which is called Crotona Park.

The Bathgate family came to the township in the early part of the century from Scotland. One brother, Alexander, settled at Morrisania as foreman for Gouverneur Morris, and afterward purchased from his son the farm now situated at Central Morrisania. He left three sons and several daughters,—James, a doctor of medicine, and Alexander, a farmer, who occupy the old homestead on Fordham Avenue, with their sister still unmarried. Charles, recently deceased, who was at one time supervisor of the town. James, the other brother, resided at Fordham, and was a farmer. He owned the farm on which the Jerome Park Jockey Club is now located. He left four children,—Charles W., formerly supervisor;

Digitized by Google

Maria (single), now residing with her brother at Fordham; Mrs. Myers; and Mrs. Ardil B. Raymond, whose husband was for many years the miller at De Lancey's Mills, and town clerk of West Farms (Devoe).

Three members of this family are, or have been residents of the township. They are of Huguenot origin. Frederick is the senior member of the large paint and oil firm of F. W. Devoe & Co., of New York City. His brother, Moses Devoe, resides on Fordham Ridge, on the Fordham Landing road, in the old Valentine homestead. He is a retired butcher of New York, but the family are of Westchester origin. Another brother, Colonel Thomas F. Devoe, has been for years inspector of markets in New York City, and a fourth brother, George W. Devoe, was supervisor of the township. This branch of the family came from Yonkers.

THE PRESENT TOWN OF WESTCHESTER SINCE THE REVOLUTION.

BOUNDARIES.—We have seen that though Westchester township at the time of Colve's interregnum was erected into a town, it did not become a borough entitled to elect representatives to the General Assembly until 1686, when Governor Dongan confirmed the Nicolls patent to Quimby and others. It was still, however, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, attending the courts that were held on Long Island and contributing its quota, to that precinct. Morrisania in the mean time was a separate manor, and what are now known as West Farms and Fordham had their distinct courts under the Archer patent. In 1691 the county of Westchester was formed, and in 1696 Governor Fletcher granted to the inhabitants of Westchester town a charter erecting them into a borough town under the name and title of the Mayor, Aldermen and Commonalty of Westchester.[1] Colonel Caleb Heathcote, then a Councilor, and at that time erecting a mill at Westchester Creek, was appointed the first mayor, and William Barns, John Stuart, William Willett, Thomas Baxter, Josiah Stuart and John Bailey, gentlemen, were appointed the first aldermen. Israel Honeywell, Robert Hustis, Samuel Hustis, Samuel Ferris, Daniel Turneur and Miles Oakley were appointed assistant aldermen. The new officials were duly sworn in. Colonel Heathcote presented the town with its seal, and in the following year a town hall was erected. Though not mentioned in the charter as being within the bounds of the borough, the people of Fordham and West Farms seem to have borne allegiance to the rulings of the Mayor's Court of Westchester.

[1] Liber 6 of Patents, page 101. It is believed that the original patents granted to the town by Dongan and Fletcher were in the possession of the late Mr. Leggett, of West Farms. The writer's information is from a printed abstract, kindly furnished him by Edward F. de Lancey. He has also seen a full printed copy of the charter, in possession of Albion P. Man, counselor at-law, New York City.

The change from the borough existence under the colonial system to that of a town under the State government took place in 1785, when the town of Westchester was created by an act of the New York General Assembly.[1] Still there was some doubt as to the precise limits of the town, and in 1788 the Assembly defined the bounds as follows:

"All that part of the County of Westchester bounded Easterly by the Sound and the land granted to Thomas Pell, called the Manor of Pelham; Southerly by the Sound; Westerly by the County of New York and Northerly by the North bounds of the Manor of Fordham and the north bounds of the land called the Borough Town of Westchester, including the islands in the Sound, lying Southward thereof and in the County of Westchester, excepting thereout the tract called Morrisania."

By Chapter 279 of the Laws of 1846, passed May 13th and entitled "An Act to divide the town of Westchester, in the County of Westchester," all that part of the town of Westchester described agreeably to a map of that part of the town lying easterly of the Bronx River, made by Andrew Findlay, surveyor, was erected into a separate town and was to retain the name of "Westchester." The new town is described as follows and that description covers its present limits:

"Beginning at a point in Long Island Sound where the Bronx River empties into the same; thence running Northerly along the centre of the Bronx River, as the same now runs, until it comes to the boundary line, between Eastchester and Westchester aforesaid; thence running Northeasterly along the said last-mentioned boundary line until it comes to Eastchester bay, which separates the town of Pelham from the town of Westchester aforesaid; thence running still Southeasterly, easterly, Southerly and westerly, winding and turning as the shore winds and turns, extending as far into Long Island Sound as the true boundary line of said town extends until it comes to the Bronx River aforesaid and place of Beginning. All the remaining part of the town of Westchester, as the same is now defined, shall be and hereby is erected into a new town to be named the town of West Farms."

The unsettled claims and the privileges heretofore had by the people of the old town of Westchester under the "Old Charter" were directed to continue to be held and enjoyed by the inhabitants of each of the new towns of West Farms and Westchester. The town-meeting for Westchester was directed to be held at the house of Benjamin Fowler, in said town, on the first Monday in June, and for West Farms at the place where the last town-meeting was held. William H. Bowne was appointed moderator for the Westchester meeting and Ardil B. Raymond as moderator at the West Farms meeting.

GOVERNMENT.—Formerly the borough of Westchester elected its supervisor at a different season of the year than the other towns of the county. In the Manor of Morrisania the steward was the supervisor, and whether Fordham had a separate supervisor the data

[2] By Chapter lxxii. of the Laws of 1785, the freeholders and inhabitants of Westchester were authorized to elect at their town-meeting six freeholders, for the purpose of having such trustees to order and dispose of all or any part of the undivided lands in the township as fully and amply as trustees have been used to do under any charter given heretofore to the inhabitants of said town. Power to lease a ferry across the East River from the township of Westchester to the township of Flushing was given the trustees. The district heretofore called and known by the style of the borough and town of Westchester was directed hereafter to be called and known as the town of Westchester.

Digitized by Google

prior to 1788 do not show, but in that year Fordham and the borough had but one such official between them. From 1773 we find James Ferris representing the borough and Lewis Morris the manor, but from the opening of the Revolution down to 1784 Westchester, Fordham and Morrisania were not represented in the board. In that year Thomas Hunt was supervisor and William Morris represented the Manor of Morrisania, which was a separate precinct and entitled to separate representation in the board. In 1785, Abraham Leggett represented the borough and Lewis Morris the manor, and in that year the tax on Morrisania was £1 11*s.* 11*d.* and on Westchester £9 10*s.* 4*d.* Prior to 1786 the parish had supported the poor, and in that year, Lake Hunt being supervisor, provision was made for adjusting the accounts of the church wardens relative to support of the poor. In 1787 Israel Underhill represented the town in the County Board and continued as such until 1802. In 1791 Morrisania was deprived of representation and made a part of the town of Westchester. Westchester township was erected in 1788.

The jail and court-house, which was formerly located at Westchester village, near the site of St. Peter's Church, was burned in 1790, and the supervisors of the county allowed the trustees of the village £70 therefor. In 1802 the number of taxable inhabitants was 185, and the total valuation of real and personal property $696,822. Captains Ferris, of Westchester, and Berrian, of Fordham, commanded two town military companies. From 1802 till 1816 Benjamin Ferris was the supervisor; from 1816 to 1818 Basil J. Bartow succeeded him, but from 1819 to 1828 Ferris continued to represent the town. In the latter year the aggregate assessed value of property in the town had increased to $833,010, and the number of taxable inhabitants to 229. Israel H. Watson was supervisor from 1829 to 1832, in which year Asiatic cholera prevailed in the township and the sum of $88.52 was expended by the Board of Health in suppressing the disease. In 1833–34 Augustus Huestace was both supervisor and justice of the peace; but in 1835 Israel H. Watson returned to the board. In that year William Barker, of Westchester, who for twenty-eight years had been clerk of the Board of Supervisors, resigned, and the board passed a vote of thanks for his faithful services. Watson continued to represent the town until 1839, when Andrew Findlay, the well-known civil engineer and surveyor, succeeded him. Findlay continued to serve until 1846, with one exception in 1844, when Robert R. Morris, of Westchester, filled the office. In 1846 the Legislature passed an act dividing the township, all that portion of the territory west of the Bronx being erected into the township of West Farms, and that east of the Bronx continuing under the old name of Westchester.

The division of the township created a contest for the seat of supervisor. Both Findlay and Watson claimed to be legally elected. It seems that when, on the 13th of May, 1846, the act was passed, Mr. Findlay claimed that he was duly elected at the regular town-meeting, which was held prior to the passage of the act, and Watson claimed that he was elected for the new town of Westchester at an election held on the 30th of June, after the passage of the act. The supervisors decided in Mr. Findlay's favor; so he became the last supervisor of the old town of Westchester and the first supervisor of West Farms. At the time of the division of the township the aggregate assessment amounted to $841,490; the number of taxable inhabitants was 442 and the population in both townships was about 5052.

In 1847 Mr. Findlay was again supervisor; in 1848 Daniel J. Coster succeeded him. During that session Mr. Coster presented a complaint to the board, made by the Rev. Henry Duranquet, a priest of the Roman Catholic faith and a resident of Westchester, stating that the keeper of the county poor-house had refused to permit him to administer the sacrament to an inmate, on the ground that the priest's services were "idolatry" and that he *was helping souls to hell.* The supervisors, at Mr. Coster's suggestion, passed a resolution recommending the superintendents of the poor to remove the keeper. Mr. Coster served another term and was succeeded by Robert R. Morris, who continued in office till 1853, with the exception of the year 1850, when Bayard Clark served one term. In 1852 Mr. Morris was extended the courtesy of being the nominee of the board for chairman, but his party being in the minority, Robert H. Coles, of New Rochelle, was elected. In 1853, '57, '59, '60, '61 and '64 Abraham Hatfield represented the town. Denton Pearsall served in 1858. In 1862 Wm. H. Bowne was supervisor, and served another term in 1876. In 1870–71 the office was filled by Patrick Hendricks, who served until succeeded by Hugh Lunny, in 1872. The subsequent supervisors have been F. C. Havemyer, (1874), J. M. Furman (1875), Wm. H. Bowne (1876), Hugh Lunny (1877), Robert C. Watson (1878), James Henderson (1879), Peter Briggs (1882), James Henderson (1883), Daniel J. McGrory (1884), who was re-elected in 1885.

In 1847, after the division, the number of taxable persons in Westchester town diminished to 215 and the assessment to $763.775. In 1850, although the taxables had increased only to 249 persons, the property valuation had risen to $2,079,799. In 1855 the taxables were 1265 in number and the assessed valuation $2,184,750. In 1870 the total population was 6015, and in 1880, 6789.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—As the early settlers of Westchester town were Puritans, who had fled from England to find freedom of worship beyond the sea, it was their first care, after they were housed, to provide for religious services. We touch the first account of a congregation in the report of the Dutch

Digitized by Google

commissioners, who, when they visited Oostdorp, in 1656, witnessed a Sunday meeting, at which Mr. Baly said a prayer and Mr. Bassett read a sermon. The people had no regular minister until 1674, when Rev. Ezekiel Fogge officiated for them, and was in all probability the first clergyman who held services in the village. On February 11 and October 7, 1680, Morgan Jones performed baptism and the marriage ceremony, from which it must be supposed that he was a regular Congregational minister. On April 2, 1684, the justices and vestrymen of Westchester agreed with those of East Chester and Yonkers to accept Warham Mather "as our minister for one whole year," and to pay him sixty pounds in country produce. On January 2, 1692, the people in meeting resolved that Colonel Heathcote or Captain William Barnes should procure them an orthodox minister, but it does not appear that either of them fulfilled the mission. By the act of Assembly of September 21, 1693, the parish of Westchester was set off to include the precincts of Westchester, East Chester, Yonkers and the Manor of Pelham, and was required, as were the other parishes, to call "a good, sufficient Protestant minister." The Westchester freeholders and inhabitants failed to take any steps in conformity with this statute until May 7, 1695, when they deputized Church Wardens Justice Barnes, Justice Hunt and Edward Waters to agree with Warham Mather for a settlement among them.[1]

Pending Mather's acceptance, the town voted, May 5, 1696, to repair the old meeting-house, and on May 3, 1697, to build a town-house, which should also be used for public worship; but as the General Assembly passed an act to aid the towns to build and repair their meeting-houses, the work on the town-house was stopped, and in 1700 a new parish church was erected under the supervision of Trustees Josiah Hunt, Edward Waters, Joseph Haviland, John Hunt, Joseph Bayley and Richard Panton, who resolved that it should be twenty-eight feet square, with a "terret" on the top, and should cost forty pounds.

Meanwhile, the struggle which occurred in all the other towns between the Puritans and the adherents of the Church of England, the latter being supported by the provincial government, was in progress in Westchester. The Puritans, who were in the popular majority, contended that under the act of 1693, which merely specified "a good sufficient Protestant minister," they had the right to call in a clergyman of their own faith. The Church of England people held that the Assembly meant to particularize ministers of the Established Church. It is not necessary to go into details of the controversy here, as they have been set forth in another chapter. It is sufficient to say that Colonel Caleb Heathcote, who had been chosen one of the church wardens, fought the Puritans on the point of installing the non-conformist Mather. The ultimate decision rested with Governor Fletcher, and he refused to induct Mather to the living. Mather preached in the parish for several years, however, and quitted it in 1701 to remove to New Haven.

The first regularly inducted rector of the parish was John Bartow, who was elected by the vestry of 1701–2, of which the town members were William Willett, Thomas Hunt, Joseph Haviland, John Bayley, Richard Ward, John Buckbee and Edward Collier. He came over from England in 1702 and was an ordained priest of the Anglican Church, having been vicar of Pampsford, Cambridgeshire. His first service in the Westchester Church was on December 6, 1702. He had first been appointed to the parish of Rye, but Governor Cornbury had settled him at Westchester upon the petition of the all-powerful Heathcote. He appears to have been a hard-working pastor, for, in a letter to the secretary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, he commends his own conscientious discharge of his duty and informs him that he has "hardly ever missed to officiate on the Lord's Day" and has frequently ridden ten or twenty miles a day to visit the sick. His salary was always in arrears, but he managed to buy a house and five acres of land for one hundred pounds, and the town had granted twenty acres of glebe and three acres of meadow within half a mile of the church, "which in time will be a convenient residence for the minister, and also a small share in some undivided land, which will be to the quantity of about thirty acres more, but about four miles distant."

In 1702–3 the church wardens were Col. James Graham and Justice Josiah Hunt and the vestry Thomas Baxter, Sr., Joseph Drake, John Archer, Thomas Pell, Joseph Haviland, Miles Oakley, Daniel Clark, Peter Le Roy, John Buckbee, Thomas Hunt, Sr., Edward Collier, clerk, and Erasmus Allen, messenger. They resolved, June 5, 1703, to raise £55 for the support of the minister and the maintenance of the poor, the share of Westchester town being £27 18*s*., and of Morrisania £3 7*s*. In this year the church was threatened with dispossession of its lands by George Hadley, grandson of John Richardson, their original owner. Hadley claimed them as an inheritance from his mother, the daughter of Richardson, but the church replied that they had already been sold by Joseph Hadley, father of George, to one Thomas Williams and had escheated to the crown because of the latter dying intestate. Hadley failed to substantiate his title, and at meetings on August 3, 1703, November 3, 1703, and May 3, 1704, the trustees of the town confirmed these grants for parsonage lands, and further confirmation was had by the act of the General Assembly, August 4, 1705. In 1706 Mr.

[1] Warham Mather was born at Northampton, Mass., in 1666 and was the grandson of Richard Mather, the famous non-conformist divine, whose sons were Nathaniel, Samuel, Increase and Eleazer, all of whom followed their father in the ministry. Eleazer was pastor of the church at Northampton, Mass., and married the daughter of Rev. John Warham. His son, Warham Mather, bought land in Westchester from John Yeats, on May 29, 1697, and sold them in 1703 to Daniel Clark. He died in 1745.

Bartow suffered much discouragement. He wrote on August 14th to the secretary of the Gospel Society that his task of planting the Church of England "amongst prejudiced, poor and irreligious people" was greater than he could bear, and, to add to his troubles, the society in 1707 stopped the annual salary of £50 which it had been paying him in addition to his receipts from the parish. Two years afterward he was much more cheerful and wrote about making "many proselytes to our holy religion, who are very constant and devout in their attendance on divine service; and those who were enemies at my first coming are now zealous professors of the ordinances of our church."

January 10, 1709, Joseph Hunt, Jr., and Jeremiah Fowler were chosen wardens, and Miles Oakley, Thomas Baxter, Sr., and Thomas Hunt vestrymen for the town. It is a curious fact that the majority were dissenters, of whom the minister wrote that "they will part with no money but barely what the Assembly has allowed for the maintenance of the ministers and poor;" but yet his congregation "rather increases both in hearers and communicants," and in 1709 he baptized forty-two persons, and thirty-six the next year. In 1724 he had in his parish two hundred families, and the average attendance on afternoon services on Sunday was seventy, the morning attendance being smaller. He died at Westchester in 1726, having firmly established his church and also a public school. The first schoolmaster was Charles Glover, who was appointed by the Gospel Propagation Society in 1713, he being "recommended under the character of a person sober and diligent, well affected to the Church of England, and competently skilled in reading, writing, arithmetic, psalmody and the Latin tongue." The society paid him a salary of £18 annually. His successor was William Foster, who had the school when Bartow died.

The next rector was Rev. Thomas Standard, whom the society sent over in 1725. Governor Burnett's mandate, inducting him to the Westchester parish was issued July 8, 1727. In his report of November 5, 1729, to the society, he relates that there are not above three or four families well affected to the Church of England, the majority of the people being Quakers, but he had thirty communicants, and under the most favorable circumstances, in summer, one hundred attendants upon services. In the spring of 1735 he had some trouble with Schoolmaster Foster, who, in 1744, was superseded by Basil Bartow. In 1745 his church was "in a peaceable and growing state." He died in 1760, and the parish was vacant until the appointment of Rev. John Milner, June 12, 1761. In Governor Colden's letters of institution it is first officially spoken of as St. Peter's Church, the name which it still retains. Things had changed so much that on June 29, 1762, he was able to write to the society that there were no dissenters, except a few Quakers, in his parish. A year later he wrote that the number of communicants had increased to fifty-three and that he had baptized eighty-seven persons since his arrival.

On May 12, 1762, on petition of John Miller, John Bartow, J. Willett, Lewis Morris, Jr., Peter De Lancey, N. Underhill, James Graham and James Van Cortlandt, they were incorporated, with the rest of the inhabitants of the town, in communion with the Church of England, by royal charter, as "The Rector and Inhabitants of the Borough Town of Westchester." By this instrument Isaac Willett and Nathaniel Underhill, Sr., were appointed church wardens, and Peter De Lancey, James Graham, James Van Cortlandt, Lewis Morris, John Smith, Theophilus Bartow, Cornelius Willett and Thomas Hunt vestrymen. A house for the minister was purchased with a glebe of thirty acres not far from the church. Mr. Milner appointed Nathaniel Seabury schoolmaster, and was so successful in his ministrations that many families of Quakers joined his church. In 1765 he resigned because the vestry refused to refund him any of the money he had expended on the glebe, and in the fall of 1766, Rev. Samuel Seabury was settled as his successor. The latter found that the communicants had fallen to twenty-two in number, and that the general condition of church affairs was very unsatisfactory. He was a partisan of the crown and attributed to the growing spirit which culminated in the Revolution "unbounded licentiousness in manners and insecurity to private property." In April, 1775, he was one of the signers of the White Plains protest against "all unlawfull Congresses and Committees," and the pledge of royalty to the King. On November 22, 1775, a party of Connecticut troops carried him to New Haven, where he was imprisoned for a month. In September, 1776, he fled to the protection of the royal troops on Long Island, abandoning his pulpit and his school, in which he had a fair number of scholars. He kept, for the remainder of the war, under British protection, and in 1784 became the first bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in this country.

The church was utterly disorganized during the Revolution. On February 15, 1788, it was recreated by a meeting of the citizens of Westchester town, who elected as trustees Henry Lewis Graham, Joseph Browne, Thomas Hunt, Israel Underhill, John Bartow, Philip I. Livingston and Samuel Bayard. Under the act of Assembly of April 6, 1784, they organized as "The Corporation of the Protestant Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, in the Town of Westchester," and the act of incorporation was duly acknowledged, April 19, 1788. On August 2, 1795, the parishioners assembled for the purpose of a second incorporation under the act of Assembly "for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church." The trustees of 1788 sold the old church to Sarah Ferris for £10, who removed it, and they sent around a sub-

Digitized by Google

scription paper to obtain money to build a new church on or near the site of the old one. They also obtained from the Gospel Propagation Society a grant from the legacy of St. George Talbot, and on January 26, 1789, contracted with John Odell to build a church for £336. On January 2, 1792, they chose as rector Rev. Theodosius Bartow, who was followed on January 20, 1794, by Rev. John Ireland. In 1795 they obtained from the trustees of the town a release for the site of the church and cemetery, and Israel Underhill and Philip I. Livingston were elected wardens, and John Bartow, Jr., Thomas Bartow, Oliver De Lancey, Warren De Lancey, Joseph Brown, Jonathan Fowler, Robert Heaton and Nicholas Bayard, vestrymen. Mr. Ireland served as rector until 1797, during which period the new church building was finished and consecrated. March 9, 1798, Rev. Isaac Wilkins succeeded him, and in 1806 reported forty communicants and eighteen baptisms. Rev. William Powell was elected his assistant July 12, 1829.

Mr. Wilkins served until his death, February 5, 1830, and Mr. Powell was called to the rectorship. He died April 29, 1849, and was succeeded by his assistant, Rev. Charles D. Jackson. A new parsonage was built in 1850, and a new church in 1855, at a cost of sixty thousand dollars. This was burned to the ground January 9, 1877, during the incumbency of Rev. Christopher B. Wyatt, who succeeded Mr. Jackson, October 26, 1871. The present church was built upon the site of that destroyed by fire, which itself occupied a portion of the church erected in 1790. Near by is the parochial school-house, and adjacent to it the church-yard, which dates back to the settlement of the village. It has many monuments and stones erected to the memory of members of the De Lancey, Bayard, Honeywell, Livingston, Post, Doty, Hunt, Bartow, Baxter, Lewis Adee, Findlay, Tucker, Reed, Burnett, Ludlow, Timpson, Wilkins, Lorillard, Morris and other prominent families who are interred therein.

THE FRIENDS.—The very numerous element of Friends among the early population of Westchester has been referred to in the preceding pages. It appears, indeed, that they held religious services within the town almost or quite as soon as did the Puritans, and that the old meeting-house already spoken of as having fallen into decay in 1696 was built and used by them. There is a tradition that the first meeting of the Friends in America was held in Westchester, and that George Fox preached here in 1672. Monthly Meeting was appointed by the Yearly Meeting at Flushing, L. I., to be held at Westchester on the 9th day of Fourth Month, 1725. In 1723 the Friends built the meeting-house which is still standing south of St. Peter's Church, and is now in possession of the Hicksite branch; nearly opposite stands the meeting house of the Orthodox Friends, which was erected in 1828.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—On the 8th of October, 1808, the congregation of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the town of Westchester met in pursuance of the act to provide for the incorporation of religious societies, passed March 27, 1801, and elected the following trustees: William Johnston, Gilbert Lewis, Abraham Secord, Benjamin Morgan, Moses Hunt and Gilbert Shute. They assumed the name of the Zion Methodist Episcopal Church of the town of Westchester. Other articles of incorporation, dated October 26, 1826, seem to have been filed with reference to this church, for on that day, at a meeting held in their place of worship, the congregation elected John Westfield, Andrew C. Wheeler, Joseph Smith, Frederick Titus, John F. Fay and Isaac Lounsbury trustees.

Zion Church became dissolved by reason of *non-user*, and therefore, to effect a re-incorporation, on February 7, 1835, the congregation assembled at the church near the village of Westchester, where they were accustomed to attend for divine worship, and elected Isaac Lounsbury, Thomas Bolton, Samuel R. Munn, William H. Lounsbury and Thomas J. Phillips trustees, and resolved that the society should be thereafter known as the Methodist Episcopal Church of Zion, in the town of Westchester. The church edifice was erected in 1818.

Another Methodist Episcopal Church is situated at Olinville, and was known as Olin Chapel. It was incorporated August 29, 1854, the first trustees being Smith H. Platt, John Pratt, Alexander Ramsey, W. P. Janes, W. S. Dodge, Christopher Knauer and Garrett Burgess. On September 23, 1871, other articles of incorporation were filed, under the name of "The Olinville Methodist Episcopal Church." The trustees then chosen were Charles C. Von Benschoten, Stephen Barker, Walter P. Jayne, Burton Bradley, William S. Dodge, W. W. Niles, John T. Briggs, Daniel Burgess and Levi H. Mace.

THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—The First Presbyterian Church of Throgg's Neck stands at the top of a hill, just opposite the causeway crossing Westchester Creek, at the village of Westchester. It is not far from the site of the British batteries, which were erected on that hill. The congregation was incorporated June 6, 1855, and George S. Robbins, Edwin D. Morgan and James E. Ellis were its first trustees.

CATHOLIC INSTITUTIONS—*The Protectory, etc.*—Within the limits of the town of Westchester, on its western border and near the Harlem and Port Chester Railroad Station, is the New York Catholic Protectory. It grew out of the solicitude of a number of laymen and clergy of the church for the welfare of the street gamins of the great city. Projects previously mooted by the Society of St. Vincent proved barren of results because of the lack of funds, but in the latter part of 1862 a meeting of prominent gentlemen in the parochial residence of the Church of the Annunciation, Manhattanville, then in charge of the late Rev. John Breen, resolved upon taking practical

Digitized by Google

steps, and, as an earnest of their intentions, subscribed, in sums of $5000, $2500 and $2000, enough money to assure the financial success of the undertaking. Dr. Levi Silliman Ives, formerly Protestant Episcopal bishop of North Carolina, who was converted to Catholicity in 1852, volunteered his services for the supervision and guidance of the institution. Rev. Brother Patrick, of the Order of Christian Brothers, tendered the services of that order for its immediate management, whereupon Archbishop Hughes gave his approval of the work and set upon it the seal of his official authority.

On January 2, 1863, a number of the twenty-five gentlemen selected by the archbishop presented the "Articles of Organization of the Society for the Protection of Destitute Children." February 11th another meeting was held at the residence of Rev. Monsignor Quinn, then rector of St. Peter's Church, New York City, who was participating most zealously in the project, and with whom for two years Dr. Ives was in daily consultation. At this meeting there were present Dr. Henry J. Anderson, Charles O'Conor, Charles M. Connelly, Eugene Plunkett, Dr. Donatien Binsse, Dr. L. S. Ives, Rev. William Quinn, Joseph Fisher, Daniel Devlin, John Mullen, Lewis J. White, John McMenomy, Florence Escalante, Eugene Kelly, Henry L. Hoguet and Edward C. Donnolly. These gentlemen discussed the fact that, year after year, thousands of Catholic children were lost to that faith through a system which ignored such a principle as religious rights in the helpless objects of its charity.

A committee of seven was appointed to seek a charter from the Legislature, and on April 14th this was granted under the title of "The Society for the Protection of Destitute Roman Catholic children in the city of New York." The corporators were Felix Ingolsby, Charles A. Stetson, Eugene Kelly, Charles M. Connelly, Daniel Devlin, Andrew Carrigan, L. Silliman Ives, Edward C. Donnelly, Edward Frith, Henry J. Anderson, Joseph Fisher, Eugene Plunkett, John McMenomy, Donatien Binsse, Lewis J. White, John O'Brien, John Milhau, Bernard Amend, John E. Devlin, Florencio Escalante, John O'Conor, Henry L. Hoguet, James Lynch, Frederick E. Gilbert and Daniel O'Conor.

In the charter it was provided that the Protectory may take and receive into its care:

"Children under the age of fourteen years, who, by consent in writing of their parents or guardians, may be entrusted to it for protection or reformation.

"Children between the ages of seven and fourteen years of age, who may be committed to the care of such corporation as idle, truant, vicious or homeless children, by order of any magistrate in the city of New York empowered by law to make committal of children for any such cause.

"Children of the like age who may be transferred, at the option of the Commissioners of Public Charity and Correction of the city of New York, to such corporation.

"The Society has power to place the children in their care at suitable employments, and cause them to be instructed in suitable branches of useful knowledge, to bind out the children, with their consent, as apprentices or servants during minority or any less period, to learn such proper trades and employments as shall be judged most conducive to their future benefit and advantage; and any person to whom any such child shall be bound shall execute a bond to the said corporation in a sufficient penal amount, conditioned for the good treatment of such child, and to instruct, or cause to have him or her instructed, in reading, writing and arithmetic, and to give such child, at the expiration of his or her apprenticeship, at least one new suit of clothes and five dollars in money, and the said corporation may insert in the indentures of apprenticeship such clauses and agreements as the poor officers, authorized to bind out children, are empowered or required to insert in like indentures.

"Children intrusted to the corporation by the voluntary act of their parents or guardians shall be deemed to be in the lawful charge and custody of said corporation; and such intrusting shall be evidenced by writing in form.

"Whenever any child above the age of seven and under the age of fourteen years shall be brought by any policeman of the city of New York before any magistrate of said city, upon the allegation that such child was found in any way, street, highway or public place in said city, in the circumstances of want and suffering, or abandonment, exposure or neglect or of beggary, . . . and it shall be proved to the satisfaction of such magistrate . . . by competent testimony, or by the examination of the child, that by reason of the neglect or vicious habits of the parents, or other lawful guardian of such child, it is a proper object for the care of this corporation, such magistrate, . . . by warrant in writing under his hand, may commit such child to this corporation, to be and remain under its care until therefrom discharged in manner prescribed by law. . . .

"Whenever the parent, guardian, or next of kin of any child between the ages of seven and fourteen years, about to be finally committed for any of the causes specified in the preceding sections of this act, shall request the magistrate to commit such child to said corporation, it shall be the duty of such magistrate so to commit such child.

"If, at any time after a child shall have been committed to said corporation, as above provided for in the act, it shall be made to appear to the satisfaction of the said corporation that such child was, on insufficient cause, or otherwise wrongfully so committed, the said corporation shall, on the application of the parents, . . . discharge the child from the said asylum, and restore it to such parents. . . . If, after a child shall have been properly committed, . . . any circumstances should occur that, in the judgment of said corporation would render expedient and proper a discharge of such child from the asylum, having a due regard to the welfare of the child and the purposes of the asylum, the said corporation . . . may, at discretion, discharge the child from the said asylum . . . on such reasonable conditions as the said corporation may deem right and proper.

"This corporation shall be the guardian of every child, bound or held for service, by virtue and in pursuance of the provisions of this act . . . and it is hereby made its special duty to inquire into the treatment of every such child, and redress any grievance in manner prescribed by law."

An appeal for financial aid met with generous response, and the Protectory began its career of usefulness in two private dwellings in Thirty-sixth and Thirty-seventh Streets, near Second Avenue, where, under the pastoral care of Rev. Father Clowry, who attended to their spiritual wants, the boys found their first home and shelter. The Christian[1] Brothers assumed charge.

Notice of these partial arrangements had only time to reach the poor, or the benefactors of the poor,

[1] Rev. B. L. Pierce, chaplain of the House of Refuge, in his book entitled "Half a Century with Juvenile Delinquents," makes the following statement:

"The officers of the Boys' Protectory belong to the order of Christian Brothers. They give themselves to the Church when they take the vow of the order, to be teachers wherever they may be appointed to labor. They will never be priests; they are expected to pursue no form of business hereafter, but for life will remain in the office of instructors. Their salaries are simply the requisite provision for their living, sick or well. These men are constantly with the boys in school, work, recreation and in the dormitory.

Digitized by Google

when applications in behalf of unprotected children became so numerous and pressing as to compel the executive committee, in view of their necessarily limited means and accommodations, to restrict the number of inmates to such boys as might be committed from the courts or transferred to their care by the "Commissioners of Public Charities and Correction." Hence the records of their office show that, but for the want of sufficient room, at least double the number which they now report might be enjoying the blessing of the institution.

Owing to the difficulty of renting suitable buildings, the committee were unable to make provision for the reception of girls before the 1st of October. About that time, however, they succeeded in procuring a building at the corner of Eighty-sixth Street and Second Avenue, well suited to the purpose. This they were enabled to place under the direction of the Sisters of Charity, a religious order whose members, by their noble and generous self-devotion, in the care of the sick, forlorn, the destitute and helpless in every form, age and condition in life, have been the theme of praise in story and song in every clime and tongue, and from persons of all shades of belief, race and religion.

The houses in Thirty-sixth and Thirty-seventh Streets were soon found to be inadequate for the accommodations of the daily increasing numbers, and the managers, were within eight months of the day of opening, forced to seek other and more commodious quarters. Two buildings were then rented in Eighty-Sixth Street, near Fifth Avenue, and so soon as convenient the boys moved into them.

The difficulties experienced in providing accommodation, in obtaining the considerable sums necessary in the inauguration of so vast a work, were but a minor portion of the onerous task placed upon the managers' shoulders. The far more difficult problem of "what to do with the abandoned child," and "how to do it" had now to be directly solved.

Most of the children received, particularly during the first few years, were the victims of indolent or vicious habits. Experience taught that, to succeed in this work of reformation, constant occupation, pleasantly diversified, was essential, and space for play-grounds, out-door labor, and places wherein trades could be learned was required.

In the earliest reports of the Protectory we find,—

"In the course of five months, in the shoe department, where 32 boys are employed, there has been expended the sum of $1737.12, including machinery, material and instruction, with the result of $2197.26 produce, which nets us a profit of $460.14 and the machinery. In the tailoring department the training of the boys requires more time, and hence a less expeditious profit."

While the New York Catholic Protectory thus pursued its mission, each day's experience more fully proved the necessity of moving out of the city. Apart from the fact that it was impossible to secure sufficient accommodation in the heart of a great metropolis, the managers became daily more convinced that the influence of the surroundings in a vast city like New York was against their work. The problem which then propounded itself was to secure "proper location elsewhere." In the minutes of one of the regular meetings held at this time the president said,—

"In view of the circumstances, and in firm conviction of the prosperity, if not the very existence, of our institution, depends upon the immediate erection of a building somewhere, every exertion possible has been made by the Executive Committee to discover a suitable place for this purpose. We have visited all the islands in East River and found in them all some fatal objections. We then turned our attention to the mainland, and could discover nothing within the limits of the city which seemed to promise any better accommodations. After consulting our legal adviser we felt gratified in looking beyond these limits. An advertisement of the sale of a farm, near the village of Westchester, induced us to visit and examine it in respect to its suitableness to meet our object in view. Four members of the Executive Committee,—Dr Anderson, Mr. Hoguet, Mr. White and the President,—with the Most Rev Archbishop, the Advisory Chaplain and a number of the clergy, have visited the farm, and, after a thorough examination, have unanimously come to the conclusion, taking everything into consideration, that we are not likely to secure a more favorable site for our institution. Your President, therefore, after making himself master of the facts relating to this property and to the terms of sale, recommends its purchase by the Managers."

It will be remarked that thus far the managers of the New York Catholic Protectory have relied chiefly upon private generosity to sustain the work. But, beginning with 1864, we find that the State and other authorities recognized the work as of public utility, and assisted it accordingly.

It has already been remarked that want of proper space and accommodation alone prevented the accomplishment of the full measure of success which the managers hoped to attain.

It was, therefore, with no little satisfaction that they announced the purchase, on the 9th day of June, 1865, of a valuable farm of about one hundred and fourteen acres, with commodious barns and outhouses, near the village of Westchester, for forty thousand dollars, upon which they have completed a spacious brick building, designed to accommodate from six hundred to eight hundred destitute boys, and another of equal dimensions for the accommodation of girls.

St. Raymond's Catholic Church is located on the road leading from Westchester to West Farms, and is not distant from the Protectory. Attached to it is an extensive cemetery and a fine, large parochial schoolhouse. It has a numerous congregation.

HIGHWAYS, BRIDGES, ETC.—From the Sautier Surveys (Doc. Hist. of N. Y.), printed in London by Fadden in 1779, we find a main highway running from Morrisania *via* de Lancey's Mills (West Farms) to the village of Westchester, but by an entry on the 13th day of the Ninth Month, 1722, in the county road-book, on file in the office of the county clerk, it appears that on June 8th of that year Commissioners Lewis Morris, Jr., John Stephenson, Joseph Drake and John Hoit made return that they had laid out a public road in the town of Westchester,—

Digitized by Google

"From the bridge that lies across the brook that runs between Underhill Barns's land and runs westerly as the way has usually been run, four rods wide between said Barns's land, including the watering place lying by ye side of Underhill Barns's home lot, according to the bounds now sett up and marked, till it meets wth a public road laid out by the Commissioners through the sheep pasture."

The road through the sheep pasture was probably the one which was discontinued in 1727. It began at the "Northerly corner of the Quaker meeting-house," and after passing through "ye common land" and skirting the properties of Peter Ferris, the Widow Colyer and John Maphis, terminated at "the town landing by the Mill." In 1723 a road was run "from the corner of John Huestis' garden" to the country road "by the house that John Packer lives in." In 1726 a road was built to "Jethamar Polton's saw-mill upon Brunck's River;" and on July 29, 1727, the highway "from the road y^t goes to Brunx's River, where Joseph Hallstead now lives, from the causeway by Col. Heathcote's Mill, between the land then of Israel Honeywell, Senr., since deceased, and the land of Thomas Hadden to the said Ferris' land," was ordered to be closed. November 21, 1728, the commissioners reviewed a highway "from Joseph Hallstead's land southerly, to be an open road; he (the said Hallstead) to build a good stout bridge over the low ground against the house where Abigail Reed liveth, at his own cost." April 10, 1729, they closed the road "already laid out through ye Frog's (Throgg's) Neck," but in 1731 revoked their action, and the highway was again established from the ferry through Augustine Baxter's land.

The road mentioned as laid out in 1727 is undoubtedly the old road which ran from the present Westchester Bridge to the old bridge next south of the mill at West Farms. The road of 1729 is undoubtedly the present highway leading to Fort Schuyler through Throgg's Neck, but we find it again laid out in 1737 in order to avoid some difficulties occasioned by Peter Baxter's fence. The present road from Westchester Bridge to Pelham Bridge was authorized as follows:

In 1817, Hermann Le Roy, Thomas C. Taylor, William Edgar and their associates were incorporated as a turnpike company to make a turnpike road beginning at the causeway leading from the village of Westchester, at some point on the east side of the bridge over Westchester Creek, and to run from thence in the most convenient route to the bridge lately erected over the mouth of East Chester Creek and were to be known as the "Westchester and Pelham Turnpike Road Company."

The Boulevard running from Pelham Bridge to the bridge south of the Westchester village causeway is of recent origin, but the road which runs from Westchester village to the Bronx at the south end of the village of West Farms was originally known as the Westchester turnpike. The road known now as the East Chester road, extending from the Bleach to the East Chester line, and sometimes called the Boston road, is a continuation of the Coles road mentioned in the chapters on West Farms and Morrisania.

Bridges in the Township.—William's Bridge, the most northerly of the bridges in the township which cross the Bronx, has already been mentioned in our colonial account. The next bridge south of it at the Bleach was constructed when Pelham Avenue was authorized by the Laws of 1864 and 1865.

The bridge at Lydig's Mills was built probably about the time the road from Westchester to the mill was constructed, though a wading-place existed there after the construction of the dam. The other bridges over the Bronx were constructed in comparatively late years; that in the centre of the village when the road from Tremont to Westchester was opened. All the bridges over the Bronx are now maintained at the joint expense of the township and the city of New York.

Pelham Bridge, which crosses East Chester Creek at the head of East Chester or Pelham Bay, was authorized as follows:

By a legislative act of March 16, 1812, Herman Le Roy, James Harvey, William Bayard, John Bartow, Richard Ward, Elbert Roosevelt, Daniel Pelton, Joshua Eustace and John Hunter were incorporated as the East Chester Bridge Company, and authorized to build a toll-bridge from the farm of James Harvey, in the town of Pelham, to the point of Throgg's Neck called Dormer's Island. Within a few years a storm destroyed the bridge, and on April 12, 1816, the General Assembly empowered the company to sell its property and franchises at public auction, the purchaser to become the owner of the franchise for forty-five years. Nothing seems to have been accomplished under this act, and in 1834 George Rapelje was authorized to build a bridge over East Chester Creek "at the point where the bridge formerly stood." If the draw permitted free navigation, and the Common Pleas judges of the county were satisfied with the structure, it being made their duty to inspect it, Rapelje was allowed to collect tolls upon traffic. His grant was to run thirty years, but in 1860 the supervisors of Westchester County were directed by an act of the Legislature to purchase this Rapelje's or Pelham Bridge and make it free, which they promptly did.

Dormer's Island, mentioned above, is the present hummock or high land since known as Taylor's Island, and now occupied by General Ellis and others.

Characteristics and Present Occupants.—The township is a well-wooded, park-like country, interspersed with thriving settlements, and at the extreme eastern limit the East River expands into the broad Long Island Sound, indented on the Westchester shore with numerous bays and inlets washing the feet of commanding eminences, from which combined views of inland and marine scenery are to be obtained unsurpassed in any other part of this

Digitized by Google

beautiful State. It seems to have been designed by nature to form a fitting suburb to the great city which adjoins it.

On its extreme eastern limit on Throgg's Point, at the commencement of Long Island Sound, is Fort Schuyler and the United States government lighthouse. The fort was erected about the middle of this century, and, in connection with the batteries on the Long Island shore, protects the entrance into New York Harbor by the East River. Hammond's Point, near by, now owned by the estate of the late F. C. Havemeyer, a well-known merchant, and at one time supervisor, commands one of the finest views on Long Island Sound. Near by the bay is Pennyfield, the residence of the widow of the late George T. Adee, a respected citizen, and one of the members of the old family of Adee, long settled in the township. Mr. Adee was for many years identified with some of the largest financial institutions in New York. He was a director of the Equitable Life Insurance Company, and for a long time vice-president of the Bank of Commerce. Near by are the Dominick Lynch, Francis Morris and Van Schaick places, all now the property of the Havemeyer family and Mr. John Morris. Mr. John Morris is the son of the late Mr. Francis Morris, an English gentleman who came to this country many years ago, and who, besides being prosperous in business, was a successful breeder of the thoroughbred race-horse. In the immediate vicinity, fronting on Pelham Bay, is the residence of Miss Catharine Lorillard Woolfe, whose power to do good to her fellow-creatures is only surpassed by her judgment, discretion and generosity. The grounds are adorned with rare shade-trees, greenhouses and graperies, and, though rarely at the paternal mansion, the town claims her as a townswoman, and finds in her a worthy successor to her father, the late John David Woolfe.

On the Neck road is also the Van Schaick homestead, whose owners some years since left by his will a sum of money to found a free library and reading-room for the township. This building is on the road near the Episcopal Church in the village. Driving towards the village on the Neck road, one passes the old Carter mansion, the Turnbull place and the Cemetery of St. Raymond (Roman Catholic), and near by is the former residence of William H. Bowne, now deceased, who, with his family, have for generations been identified with the town. On Ferris' Neck and Zerega's Point are the residences of Mr. Ferris, whose family owned the land for generations, Mr. Zerega and Jacob Lorillard. And near by, next to the Presbyterian Church, is the celebrated boys' school, kept by Mr. Thomas Harrington, at which he is now teaching the sons of his former pupils. On the road to Pelham, before crossing the old causeway, stands the former residence of the late Mr. Syndey B. Bowne, a worthy and respected Quaker, resident of the township, whose son Thomas has succeeded him and his brother William in the management of the old country store in the village, known throughout the county still as "Sydney Bowne's." This store is and probably was the best sample of a country store ever known. Sydney always had everything which was asked for. Once on a wager some gentlemen asked for some goose-yokes, rather a rare commodity. Sydney furnished the article on the spot. Another bet was then made that he could not furnish a pulpit. For a moment the venerable Quaker was at a loss, but suddenly, recalling the contents of the garret, he exclaimed, "Thomas, thee will find Parson Wilkins' old pulpit behind the chimney in the garret." It seems that when the church was renovated, Mr. Bowne had bought the old pulpit.

On the north side of the neck at Pelham Bridge are the neat cottages of Mr. Pierre Lorrillard, Jr., ——— Kent, Gouverneur Morris, Jr., and the beautiful residence of General Ellis. The general, after an adventurous life in California, among other public trusts, having been adjutant-general of the State during the last war, and in other respects having done much to keep that State in the Union, has retired to his beautiful home at the head of East Chester Bay, for rest from his labors. Next to General Ellis' is Anneeswood, the residence of John Hunter, Esq., of the Hunter family of Pelham. Mr. Hunter has, near by, his paddocks for his racing stock, and may be counted as one of the successful gentlemen of the turf. He was one of the promoters and founders of the American Jockey Club, and is perhaps as well informed on turf matters as any one in America. His house, a large stone mansion, sets back from the Boulevard in a fine forest of oaks and chestnuts.

Next to Mr. Hunter's is the former residence of John F. Furman, recently deceased, a gentleman of public spirit and liberal views. He, at one time, represented the town as supervisor. Adjoining the Furman place on the west is the former residence of the late Lawrence Waterbury, now occupied by his son, Mr. James M. Waterbury, who is at present the president of the Country Club in Pelham. Near by is the old George Lorillard mansion, now owned by his grand-nephew, Mr. Lorillard Spencer. On the road leading to the village, through Middletown, is the residence of Claiborne Ferris, of the family of Ferrises, identified for generations with the township. At one time Mr. Ferris represented the district in the State Assembly. Near by, on the Boulevard, is the residence of James Henderson, for several terms supervisor of the township. Leaving Throgg's Neck and crossing the old bridge, we pass through the picturesque village of Westchester, and turning to the left and south, we find on the left of the road old St. Peter's Episcopal Church and the two Quaker Meeting-houses.

Farther on is the former residence, on Indian Brook, of the late Edward Haight, who represented the district in Congress, and near by is the residence

Digitized by Google

of Dr. Ellis, one of the oldest and most experienced practitioners of medicine in the county. To the left and farther south is the glebe and parsonage of St. Peter's and by a road turning to the east one arrives at Castle Hill, the former residence of Gouverneur Morris Wilkins, a grandson of Rev. Isaac Wilkins, one of the former pastors of St. Peter's, and son of Martin Wilkins, a distinguished lawyer, of whom an account is given in another part of this work. The property is now owned and occupied during the summer months by Colonel Screven, a son-in-law of the late Mr. Wilkins. On Clason's Point are the old Daniel Ludlow and Robert Henry Ludlow places. The former, after passing through many hands, is now the property of Mr. Leland, of New York, and the westerly portion of this neck is in the possession of the estate of Robert Henry Ludlow, Esq. Near by, after crossing Pugsley's causeway, we come to Wilmont, the former residence of the late William Watson, Esq, a well-known dealer in Irish linens and for many years a respected citizen of the town. His son, Mr. R. C. Watson, represented the township for one term in the Board of Supervisors. Near Wilmont, on the east side of the Bronx, is situated the De Lancey estate, or so much of it as is within the township of Westchester. The de Lancey family are descended from Etienne de Lancey, a French Huguenot who came to this country after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. The mill and the other property adjoining before the Revolution was in the possession of Peter de Lancey. His son John was the father of Mrs. Governor Yates, whose daughter, Mrs. Samuel Neil, now owns and occupies a portion of the premises. James, the other son, was the famous commander of the Westchester Light-Horse, the British partisan chief already mentioned in our Revolutionary chapter. It is a strange fact that though both sons were Loyalists during the Revolution, James' property was forfeited by the act of attainder, while John's was not.[1]

The other part of the de Lancey estate is owned by the heirs of Philip Lydig.[2] Just north of the mills on the banks of the Bronx is Bronxdale, the site of the bleaching mills of the Bolton family, and immediately north of the Bleach is the large estate of Peter Lorillard, extending both sides of the river with a handsome stone mansion, garden, hot-houses and graperies.

Peter Lorillard was the son of Peter Lorillard, who, with his brothers George and Jacob, were well-known and respected merchants in New York in the early part of this century. Peter, the elder, and George were the founders of the celebrated firm of P. Lorillard & Co., now perhaps the largest manufacturing firm of tobacco in New York. The snuff mill of the firm was formerly operated on the Bronx, but of late years the factory has been located in Jersey City. Jacob, the other brother, was a leather merchant in New York, in "*the swamp.*" George never married. Peter had him surviving—Peter married Miss Griswold, from whom descended Peter (or Pierre), the present head of the firm; Catharine married James Kernochan, of New York; Jacob married Frances Uhlong, of New York; Eva married Lieut.-Col. Lawrence Kip, United States army; Ernest, deceased, *sans* issue; Mary married Henry Barhey, of Switzerland; George married Miss Lafarge, of New York; Louis married Miss Beekman, of New York. Jacob, the third son, leather merchant, married Miss Kuntze, of New York; by her he had Catharine Anna, married George P. Cammann, M.D., late of Fordham; Margaretta H. married Thomas Ward, M.D., of New York; Eliza M. married N. P. Bailey, of Fordham and New York; Jacob, deceased, married Miss Bayard, of West Farms; Emily married Lewis G. Morris, of Fordham; Julia married Daniel M. Edgar, formerly of Westchester.

North of the Lorillard place, and fronting the Bronx, are the hamlets of Olinville and Williams' Bridge. Here is the residence of Mr. Peter Briggs, and near by on the East Chester road that of the late Harvey Kidd, the first a supervisor and the latter member of Assembly from the township. On the road from Williams' Bridge to Westchester are situated the country places of the late Abraham Hatfield, for many years supervisor, and near by resided Denton Pearsall, at one time president of the Bowery Butchers' and Drovers' Bank.

RAILROADS.—The township is intersected by the Port Chester Branch of the New Haven Railroad. On this line the following stations are within the township: West Farms, Protectory, Westchester, Timpson's and Baychester.

Fordham and Morris

[1] "History of New York," by Chief Justice Jones and notes by Edward F. de Lancey.

[2] For Lydig, see West Farms

BIOGRAPHY.

FREDERICK C. HAVEMYER.

The progenitors of the family who have obtained so honorable a position in this State were William F. and Frederick C. Havemyer, who came to America from Buckeburg, Schaumburg, Lippe, Germany, about the year 1802. The former was the father of William F. Havemyer, late mayor of the city of New York. The latter married Catharine Billiger, and their children were Charles H., Diederick M., George L. H., Edward H., Frederick C., Charlotte (wife of W. J. Eyer, a clergyman of the Lutheran Church), Catharine (wife of Warren Harriot), Susannah (wife of Dr. Henry Senff) and Mary R. (wife of John I. Northrup).

Digitized by Google

Frederick C. Havemyer, the only surviving son of this family, was born in the city of New York in 1807. At the age of nine years he entered the classical school conducted by Joseph Nelson, a very popular instructor and familiarly known as the blind teacher. In 1821 he entered Columbia College, where he remained till the completion of the sophomore year, obtaining that mental discipline and classical knowledge which have so largely assisted him in mercantile life. His father and uncle had previously established a sugar refinery, under the name of W. & F. C. Havemyer, in Vandam Street, New York. This establishment he entered as an apprentice and was formally introduced as such to his uncle by his father. Having obtained a thorough knowledge of the business, he formed a partnership with his cousin, William F. Havemyer, late mayor of New York, which continued till 1842, when both retired from business, and were succeeded by their brothers, Albert and Diederick. Possessing, at the age of twenty, sufficient skill and knowledge to conduct the business of a refinery, during all the years of this co-partnership he worked with his men in every branch of the business, from passing coal to the furnaces to the highest duties of refining, becoming an expert in every department, and this experience gave him immense advantage when, at a future day, under systems not then discovered, it was his destiny to re-enter a business which he then supposed he had left forever.

His father died in 1841, and for more than ten years Mr. Havemyer devoted himself to the care of his own and his father's estates. During these years he made a tour of pleasure and observation through the United States, and also traveled in Europe. In 1855 he again engaged in active business in Williamsburg, then a suburb of Brooklyn, and the business then established has been continued with greatly increased facilities up to the present. So greatly has it grown that the capacity of refining has been increased five hundred tons of raw sugar a day, and four thousand barrels of refined sugar are turned out every twenty-four hours. The consumption of coal is one hundred tons per day, while two thousand men are employed and the steam-engines represent twenty-two hundred horse-power. Throughout the whole establishment everything is conducted in the most systematic manner, and a practical man visiting the establishment is immediately impressed with the magnificient engineering everywhere present,—the arrangement of the machinery, the closeness of the connections and arrangements for the cheap and easy handling of the immense amount of material daily used. There are seventeen steam-engines, many of them of large capacity, and all of modern construction.

In 1861 the firm was composed of Frederick C. Havemyer, his son George and Dwight Townsend, under the firm-name of Havemyer, Townsend & Co. George Havemyer was killed by an accident before the close of the year. He was a young man of brilliant promise and his death was a severe blow to his father's family. Subsequently Mr. Havemyer admitted his son, Theodore A., and his son-in-law, J. Lawrence Elder, as partners, and the firm-name became Havemyers & Elder, which is still retained. F. C. Havemyer, Theodore A. and H. O. Havemyer and Charles H. Senff now constitute the firm.

In January, 1882, the principal buildings of the refinery were destroyed by fire. A new and more capacious refinery was soon after erected upon an adjoining site and is now in full operation.

The present residence of Mr. Havemyer is a mansion built by a Mr. Hammond, a large landholder, about 1800. The place adjoins the grounds of Fort Schuyler, is beautifully located and affords fine views of Long Island Sound.

Mr. Havemyer married Sarah L. Osborne. Their children are Frederick, George W. (deceased), Theodore A., Thomas J., Harry O., Mary (wife of J. Lawrence Elder), Catharine (wife of L. J. Belloni, Jr.) and Sarah L. (wife of Frederick Jackson).

COLLIS POTTER HUNTINGTON.

Mr. Huntington was born October 22, 1821, at Harwinton, Litchfield County, Conn. He comes of good stock, which counts among its noted men in this country Samuel Huntington, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, president of the Continental Congress, and Governor and chief justice of Connecticut; Bishop F. D. Huntington and the celebrated painter, Daniel Huntington.

Mr. Huntington's father was a farmer, and at one time a manufacturer on a small scale. He was an honest, prudent and painstaking man, but never attained wealth. He had nine children, of whom Collis P. was the fifth. After the usual and excellent custom of New England people in former days, the children were not only sent to school, but were early and carefully trained to habits of regular industry, taught the value of time and money, and encouraged to take a just pride in contributing to the maintenance of the household, or where, as in this case, that was not necessary, in depending on their own labor for pocket-money.

A story, very characteristic of the man in later years, is related of the boy Collis by a neighbor, still living, who gave him the opportunity to make his first dollar. The boy, then scarcely nine years of age, was employed by this neighbor to pile up in the woodshed a quantity of wood which had been sawed for the winter. He piled it neatly and smoothly, and when this was done, with that spirit of thoroughness and liking for good work with which, in middle age, he built railroads, he picked up all the chips in the wood-yard, and swept it clean with an old broom. His employer, returning home in the evening, was so well pleased with the way in which the boy had done his

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

mos.
the esta.
magnificien.
arrangement o.
connections and a.
easy handling of the
daily used. There are seve.
of them of large capacity, and a
tion.

In 1861 the firm was composed o.
Havemyer, his son George and Dwight
under the firm-name of Havemyer, Townsend

Digitized by Google

F C Havemeyer

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

work, that he patted him on the head, praised him for his faithfulness, and gave him a dollar, saying: "You have done this so well that I shall be glad to have you pile my wood next fall again." Young Huntington showed himself greatly delighted with the praise and the dollar—the first dollar he had ever earned or owned. "But," added the gentleman, who remembered this incident in the boy's life, "Collis said to me, with a bright laugh, 'You don't suppose I'm going to pile wood for a living the rest of my life?'"

When he was fourteen years of age he left school, and asked his father to give him his time on condition that he should thenceforth support himself. It was the custom in those days in New England for boys to serve their parents until they were of age; this service, of course, entitling them to maintenance. It is a curious proof of the confidence which the boy inspired in those who knew him, that not only did his father presently consent to his proposition, but when young Huntington went to New York, at the age of fifteen, he was able to obtain credit for a small purchase of goods, with which he began his career as a merchant, a country neighbor of his father's not only vouching for him, but saying: "You may send me all Huntington's notes; he is sure to pay."

Beginning in a small way, the young man soon extended his business, and before he was twenty-four had traveled over a considerable part of the Western and Southern States. He took as partner an elder brother, who is now a farmer in Otsego County, in the State of New York; and at Oneonta, in this county, the two finally settled themselves as general dealers or country merchants, extending their operations also in grain, butter, coopering, and, in fact, in all business directions which the region made profitable.

In October, 1848, the two brothers made a shipment of goods to California, where the rush of gold-seekers had created a sudden demand for many and various products. They sent their cargo around Cape Horn, and almost before it could arrive, Mr. Huntington determined himself to try the new region. He probably felt that he needed a larger field for his enterprising spirit and his ability than was afforded by an interior county in New York. He transferred his share in the home business to his brother, and sailed for San Francisco, by way of the Isthmus, in March, 1849. He had then been actively engaged in business, but upon a small capital slowly saved, for ten or twelve years. He was twenty-eight years of age, in perfect health, active, stronger than most men, with an iron frame and good New England habits; and his first adventure on the way showed that the man had kept the sagacity and clear-headed enterprise of the boy. He was landed on the Isthmus in company with several hundred other anxious gold-seekers; they all got across to the Pacific as well as they could, hiring donkeys for their baggage and marching on foot themselves. But when they reached Panama, no vessel appeared to take them north. They found a great crowd—the passengers by a previous steamer—waiting impatiently, and they were detained long enough to see several other steamer-loads arrive from New York and New Orleans. Thrown together in a small foreign town, a promiscuous company of adventurers, with no restraints of public opinion, and nothing to occupy their minds or hands, the unhappy people took to gambling and various kinds of dissipation; and the climate and their own imprudence caused much misery and sickness and a great many deaths. Mr. Huntington feeling the need of employment to while away the tedium of delay, and disinclined to dissipation, undertook the transport of baggage and cargo across the Isthmus. He began with one donkey, and was so successful that he was presently the owner of a train of animals, and while the less energetic gold-seekers were wasting their means and health, the long delay of ten or twelve weeks enabled him to earn a handsome sum of money, which gave him an important start on his arrival in San Francisco. It is a notable fact that while almost all the delayed passengers suffered from fevers, and many died, Huntington, who worked constantly, and marched on foot in the hot sun many times across the Isthmus, had not a day's illness.

He arrived in San Francisco in August, 1849, having been five months on the way. He saw at once that that city was not the place for him, and on the very morning of his arrival, after buying a breakfast of bread and cheese, hunted up a vessel going to Sacramento. He found a schooner, the master of which—later the captain of one of the finest steamers on the Sacramento River—offered him a dollar an hour to help load her, and he earned his passage-money in this way, and landed in Sacramento richer by some dollars than when he arrived in San Francisco.

His training and natural inborn capacity as a merchant and business man now came into play. Neither he nor his partner and dear friend of many years—the late Mark Hopkins—ever spent much time in actual gold-mining. Mr. Huntington, it is said, returned to Sacramento after four days at the nearest mining camp, convinced that gold-digging had too many risks beyond the control of the digger to be to his taste. He became again a merchant, and began, in a small tent and with a very limited supply of goods that business career in California which made him during many years, one of the foremost merchants of the State and one of the most successful.

There are many amusing stories current among old Sacramento men of Mr. Huntington's early business career, all showing the remarkable sagacity, quickness to see and grasp opportunities, and sterling honesty and love of fair play which have been his conspicuous traits. It is told of him that he was once besought to buy a large tent, the property of a com-

Digitized by Google

pany of intending miners who had disagreed, and were eager to divide their property and separate. He offered them one hundred and fifty dollars for it, which they accepted on condition that they should have a day to remove their other possessions. He had no sooner bought it than he took a lump of charcoal and marked on the tent in large letters "For Sale," and in two hours had sold it for two hundred and fifty dollars, to the amazement of the previous owners, still sitting under its shade, who had not thought of the simple device of advertising their desire to sell.

When San Francisco harbor was filled with ships deserted by their crews, Huntington was offered large quantities of ship's bread at a very low price, and bought all he could get, foreseeing that some day all these ships would sail away home and would then need supplies; and when this came to pass, and he sold at a great advance, those who had thought him foolish wondered they had not foreseen the event also. Old Californians say that in those early days, when anybody in Sacramento was "stuck" with a consignment of something which had no sale, he went to Huntington, who was pretty sure to buy if the article was cheap enough, and very certain, after a while, to resell it at a handsome profit. Those who knew him in those days say that he was always content with a fair profit; that he soon became known as a man who never misrepresented the article he wished to sell, and that his customers increased rapidly because he left them also the opportunity to make a good profit. There is a story told of him that he once bought several hundred grain cradles, which had lain for a long time in the owner's loft. Huntington unpacked them, showed them on the street, and presently, as he had foreseen, there was a brisk demand for them. They went off "like hot-cakes" at eighteen dollars apiece. "You might get thirty for them," said a friend; "are you not making a mistake?" "Not at all," replied Huntington; "I paid five, and I want to sell them all, don't you see? They are too bulky to keep. It is better to let others have a chance also to make some money." No doubt his experience and training as a country merchant in Otsego County was of great advantage to him in those early and busy Sacramento days, when he turned his hands to everything, and knew, as by intuition, what his customers would like, and how to arouse as well as to meet a popular demand.

One thing remains to be said: he retained his early New England habits; he did not drink, nor smoke nor gamble; he slept in his store, and was up and at work before the earliest of his clerks. He was scrupulously honest, and to use a phrase current in those days in Calfornia, he "did not allow anybody to run over him." The miscellaneous business, begun in a tent, grew by-and-by into a permanent hardware store at 54 K Street, in Sacramento, where Huntington sold all kinds of miners' supplies. Next-door to him Mark Hopkins kept store also, until one day he sold out and thought he would retire. The two men had become acquainted. Hopkins, from the hill country of Massachusetts, and Huntington, from the neighboring parts of Connecticut, found they had many ideas in common, political and religious, as well as business ideas; and naturally, in that new country, they became friends and, before long, partners in business, constituting the firm of Huntington & Hopkins. "He was the truest man I ever knew," said Mr. Huntington of his old partner, a few years ago; "he had the clearest head in California; but for the mere work of buying and selling goods in those early days he was no better than a child. He had no taste for it, and left it to me; but there were many things of greater importance than mere buying and selling which Mark Hopkins could do far better than any of us." The two partners never had even the ripple of a disagreement in all their many years of close business and social intimacy. They were friends in the truest and deepest sense, and this friendship has been among the pleasantest and most important of the influences which made up Huntington's life.

By 1856 the firm of Huntington & Hopkins had accumulated what was then, even in California, a handsome fortune. Their house was one of the most solid on the coast; they were known as shrewd, careful and very wide-awake business men; their rule was to ask a high price for everything, but to sell only a good article—the best in the market. They avoided all hazardous speculative transactions, and "stuck" to hardware. Mr. Hopkins once told the present writer: "We never owned a dollar of stock in a mine, never had a branch house, never sent out a drummer to get business, and never sued a man for a debt."

But Huntington & Hopkins were not merely or only business men. Both took a lively interest in political questions, though always avoiding what is called politics. They were Free-Soilers and Republicans at a time when the wealth and social influence in the State were mostly on the Democratic side. Naturally, No. 54 K Street presently became a place where leading Republicans met to discuss the news and plan opposition to the Democratic party, and in a small upper-story room in 54 K Street, the *Times*, the first Republican newspaper of California, was begun, under the editorship of James McClatchey, one of the ablest publicists in the State, and now editor of the *Sacramento Bee*. But, besides hardware and politics, another subject was much discussed at 54 K Street in those days—a railroad across the continent. This was the great question which then agitated every cabin in the State. How to get a railroad across the Sierra Nevada range was the great difficulty, and California was deeply stirred when an engineer named Judah, who was, as they said, "Pacific Railroad crazy," gave out that he had found a long and easy ascent by the way of Dutch Flat, which was practi-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

C P Huntington

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE HUNTINGTON HOMESTEAD,

THROGG'S NECK,

RESIDENCE OF C. P. HUNTINGTON

Digitized by Google

cable for a road. Judah was an enthusiast. He called public meetings and solicited subscriptions to enable him to make a thorough reconnoissance, and merchants and miners, and even women, gave, according to their means, ten, fifty or a hundred dollars for this object. At last came the Presidential election of 1860, and the rumble of war, and everybody buttoned up their pockets. The scheme was about to fail. The public had something else to think of. San Francisco, where the Democrats and Southern men wanted a southern line, turned its back on poor Judah. Matters seemed to have come to an end, when Huntington came forward with a new proposition.

"I will be one of seven, if Hopkins agrees, to bear the expense of a careful and thorough survey," said he; and the result was, that at a meeting held at 54 K Street, seven men entered into a compact that they would pay out of their own pockets all the needful expenses of a complete survey for a railroad across the mountains. Of these seven, Judah, the engineer, presently died, and another dropped out. The five who remained were helped by a few outside subscriptions, but so visionary was the enterprise believed to be at that time that a Sacramento banker, who desired to help it, felt himself obliged to decline aid on the express ground that the credit of his bank would suffer if he were known to have business relations with so wild a scheme. In this way the Central Pacific Railroad Company was organized, with Leland Stanford as president, C. P. Huntington as vice-president, and Mark Hopkins as treasurer; and the latter once said, years afterwards, that about this time he often thought they "had more railroad in 54 K Street than would be good for the hardware business." They were determined not to be swamped, and agreed to pay cash for all that was done; to keep no more men at work than they could pay every month, and to make every contract terminable at the option of the company. The time came when this policy saved them.

Mr. Huntington went to Washington when the company was formed, to see to the conditions of the government charter then before Congress; and before he departed for the East, the five middle-aged business men, who had undertaken this huge enterprise, gave him a power of attorney to do for them and in their name anything whatsoever—to buy, sell, bargain, convey, borrow or lend, without any condition except that he should fare alike with them in all that concerned their project. From this time forward Mr. Huntington's labors were mostly in the East. He remained in Washington, looking after the Pacific Railroad Bill, until it was at last passed and signed, and his opinion of the adventure on which this launched him and his associates was not different from that of the general public; this opinion, as well as a singular courage and determination on his part, were well expressed in the telegram in which he announced to his partners his success: "We have drawn the elephant; now let us harness him." Having telegraphed this message, he instantly went to New York to begin arrangements with hesitating and doubting capitalists for feeding the ravenous beast. It was now that all his qualities of persistence, courage, financial ability and knowledge of men were brought to the test. The government bonds were promised only upon the completion of certain miles of road; the capitalists of New York would not take the bonds of the road until some part of it was in operation; stock subscriptions came in too slowly to help out and Huntington saw failure staring him in the face. But his courage and determination rose with the emergency. Instead of going begging among speculators, or pledging his bonds for material, he boldly announced that he would not part with the bonds except for money—cash; and that he would not sell any at all unless a million and a half were taken. His boldness won; but when the required amount was bid for, the purchasers timidly desired some further security, and Huntington, without a moment's hesitation, made himself and his four partners personally responsible for the whole amount, and it was on this pledge of their private fortunes that the first forty miles of the Central Pacific Railroad were built. But even then, so great were the straits of the enterprise, that when Huntington returned to Sacramento, after completing this first loan, and buying and shipping rails and other needed material, he found the treasure-chest so low that it was necessary either to diminish the laboring force on the work or raise more means. Once more he was equal to the emergency. "We have no time to lose," he said, "and we must do it ourselves; Huntington & Hopkins can keep five hundred men at work on the road for a year at their own charge; how many will the rest of you undertake?" And it was agreed that the five partners should maintain out of their private fortunes eight hundred men on the works for a year. That resolution greatly diminished their troubles; for before the year was over they received their government bonds and their credit was established.

But for Huntington this was only the beginning of worries and labors which would have crushed any man only a little weaker or less able than he. It was his task to remain in the East, not only to raise money, but also to expend a great deal of it for material and supplies. All the rails, locomotives, powder and various other material for the road were bought by him, and shipped around Cape Horn or across the Isthmus. His transactions brought him into contact with all sorts of people in New York and other Eastern cities, and it is still told of him that when some one who did not know him came to him in 1862 with an offer of a handsome commission if he would deal with him, Huntington replied: "I want all the commissions I can get, but I want them put in the bill. This road has got to be built without any stealings;" and his bold refusal to be fleeced by sharks, and his straightforward ways of conducting

Digitized by Google

business, gained credit for him and his partners, and secured for himself the high and honorable rank he enjoys as one of the few really great financiers of this country.

Allotted space does not permit a narration of the vast labors of Mr. Huntington in building the Southern Pacific Railroad, and the Chesapeake and Ohio and its adjuncts—constituting together a continuous line four thousand miles long from San Francisco, the dominant harbor of the Pacific coast, to Chesapeake Bay, the finest natural harbor on the Atlantic; nor of the other great systems of transportation by land and water over which his control is primary and direct. It is said that the total length of railroads completed and in progress, now intrusted to the charge of C. P. Huntington, is, in round numbers, something over ten thousand miles.

Mr. Huntington continues to live, during the winter, in New York, where he manages the affairs of his railroads and other great enterprises. He is largely interested in over seven of the great steamship lines of the country, is one of the founders and directors of the Metropolitan Trust Company, of New York, and has a place on the directory of the Western Union Telegraph Company. He does not go much into general society, but keeps a hospitable house of his own on Murray Hill. He spends about seven months of every year at his charming country-seat at Throgg's Neck, on Long Island Sound, whence he can reach his business and return every day. In person he is tall, of a vigorous build, with grayish-blue eyes, an aquiline nose, and a firm, solid jaw, which feature in him resembles that of General Grant. His favorite in-door relaxations are reading and whist, of which game he is an excellent player. He has formed a large and well-selected library, and has a familiar and constant acquaintance with the best books in it. He is a lover of poetry and a student of history, particularly of modern history, and has known admirably how to use his scant leisure. He has also gathered a large and very valuable collection of paintings, and is pretty certain to be seen at any notable sale of pictures, not only in New York, but in other Eastern cities, bidding judiciously, but unhesitatingly, paying a long price for a good work of art. He was, until recently, not only a skillful, but a very daring horseman, and while he was building the Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad, parts of which run through an extremely difficult country, he was noted for his horsemanship, even among the people of that region of horsemen. Friends and business acquaintances know him as the possessor of a shrewd wit. He is an admirable story-teller, and knows how to settle a dispute with an apposite illustration almost as well as the late Mr. Lincoln. His years and labors have not told heavily upon him, and have not robbed him either of his physical activity or of his gay humor, which makes him a pleasant companion and friend. He has always had the capacity to bind friends to him by strong ties, and to get the best and most zealous service out of those he employs, who know him as one who exacts the strict fulfillment of duty, but who also generously rewards faithful service. In business he is careful and laborious, but an excellent administrator. He has the capacity to do a great deal of work in the hours he gives to it, and he has always been wise enough to redeem some part of his daily life from business cares and devote it to his family and to his library, where most of his evenings are spent. "Neither cast down nor elated" might very well be his motto; for neither has his great and fortunate career spoiled him or changed the simple habits of his life, nor have the vicissitudes of fortune been able to disturb his equanimity.

His country residence, at Throgg's Neck, is a refuge and great source of pleasure to him. From the broad verandah of the house a neatly-kept lawn slopes away under the branches of noble trees down to the water of the Sound, and here, on a clear day or a pleasant evening, Mr. Huntington, a gentleman of commanding stature, dressed in black and wearing a black skull-cap, may often be seen strolling up and down in conversation with friends, or watching the steamboats and sailing-vessels as they pass, rarely otherwise than in a genial humor, and always ready with his jovial story and generous laugh. His beautiful estate, consisting of some thirty-odd acres, was purchased from F. C. Havemeyer. This gentleman had expended a great deal on its embellishment; and Mr. Huntington, securing the best talent and sparing neither time nor money, has continued to adorn and improve the house and lands until at present—with its system of water, its gas-works, its private wharf, at which large vessels are occasionally moored, its stables, conservatories, farm buildings, pastures, shady walks, gardens and flowers—it is a model residence and a place well fitted to divert the fancy, restore the strength and rest the heart of one so earnest and unsparing of himself in work.

CHAPTER XXI.

MORRISANIA.[1]

BY FORDHAM MORRIS.

THE town of Morrisania was formed from West Farms December 7, 1855, incorporated as a village in 1864, and, in 1873, was annexed to New York City. It embraces the villages of Morrisania, Mott Haven, Port Morris, Wilton, East Morrisania, Old Morrisania, West Morrisania, South Melrose, East Melrose, Woodstock, Claremont and Eltona. The lines of division between these places are, however, being lost in the extension of the streets, and they now scarcely possess a geo-

[1] For the early history of Morrisania, including the manor and the Morris family, see the preceding chapter on the town of Westchester.

Digitized by Google

THE WHARF.

RESIDENCE FROM THE NORTH

VIEWS AT THE HUNTINGTON HOMESTEAD.

Digitized by Google

graphical existence. By the act of the supervisors of the county creating the town of Morrisania, the north line began at Harlem River, near the present Aqueduct High Bridge, and extended east to Union Avenue, which was practically the east bounds of the Morrisania Manor. Its east boundary was Union Avenue, continued to the head of Bungay Creek and thence to Harlem Kills, and its south and west boundaries, the Harlem River and Kills. The division between the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards is now extended along the old division between the townships of West Farms and Morrisania, east to the Bronx.

On April 22, 1864, the town was divided into four wards, in each of which three trustees were elected for two years, at the same time as the supervisor. When it was set off from West Farms the assessed valuation of property was $1,788,840.

Gouverneur Morris, elected in 1856, was the first supervisor of the town. William Cauldwell was elected in 1857, and served until 1870, when he was succeeded by Silas D. Gifford. In 1871 Mr. Cauldwell was again elected. In 1872 John H. Hopkins was chosen, but the next year Mr. Cauldwell began another term, during which annexation took place.

It may be mentioned here that, before the selection of the site on the Potomac, a very strong feeling existed in favor of locating the capital of the nation at Morrisania. The files of the New York Historical Society contain the draft of a petition which Lewis Morris forwarded to Congress on that subject. It bears no date, but must have been written shortly prior to 1790, when Congress had the question of a site under consideration. It is as follows:

"*To his Excellency the President and the Honorable the Members of the Congress of the United States of America.*

"The Memorial of Lewis Morris, of Morrisania

"Respectfully Sheweth.

"That your Memorialist has heard that Congress intend, on the first Monday in October next, to fix on some proper place for their future permanent residence, and that propositions are to be given in from different places in order that the most eligible choice be made on that day.

"That your Memorialist therefore is induced to address your Honorable body in behalf of the Manor of Morrisania, in the State of New York, and humbly conceives and hopes that it will fully appear evident to Congress that the said Manor is more advantageously situated for their residence than any other place that has hitherto been proposed to them, and much better accommodated with the necessary requisites of convenience of access, health and security.

"That the convenience of access to Morrisania from most of the parts of the United States is much more easy, safe and expeditious than to any other place as yet proposed for the residence of Congress; that vessels from the four Eastern States may arrive at Morrisania through the Sound, which separates Long Island from the main, in the course of a very few hours, and that ships from the Carolinas and Georgia may perform voyages to Morrisania with much more safety and dispatch than they can to the ports of either Philadelphia or Annapolis, not being incommoded with tedious passages of two hundred miles each up Bays and Rivers which often consume a fortnight or three weeks—passages rendered hazardous by rocks and shoals, and annually obstructed by ice.

"And that Morrisania is so situated that vessels may arrive from or proceed to sea, sometimes in six hours, and at no time can be detained by contrary winds or tide more than 48 hours, and that this passage, from the quantity and saltness of the water, has never been totally impeded by ice.

"That your Memorialist conceives that the health of the place proposed and the salubrity of its air are points highly worthy of attention and consideration, and that your Memorialist is therefore happy to add that Morrisania has always been noted for this particular, that the fever and ague is there unknown, and that persons from other places, emaciated by sickness and disease, there shortly recover and are speedily reinstated in health and vigor.

"That your Memorialist conceives that Morrisania is perfectly secure from any dangers either from foreign invasion and internal insurrection, that no naval force can arrive at Morrisania without passing by New York, and of course possessing that city, or without attempting a passage of 100 miles through the Sound, which separates Long Island from Connecticut, which for a fleet is impracticable, and that Morrisania being distant only twenty miles from the State of Connecticut, and eight from the City of New York that it therefore can be amply protected by the hardy sons of New England on the one side, and the inhabitants of the populous City of New York on the other; that as the chief defence of this country in future must be by its militia, that therefore the number of fighting men which might at a short notice be collected at each place proposed ought in some measure to be ascertained—that by reason of the lands in the neighbourhood of Morrisania being parcelled out into small farms, and the vicinity of several towns, together with the city of New York, there are more fighting men within a sweep of thirty miles around Morrisania than perhaps within the same distance around any other place in America, as there are many populous places which contain large proportions of inhabitants who are principled by religion against bearing arms, and other places which contain many negro inhabitants who not only do not fight themselves, but by keeping their masters at home, prevent them from fighting also." [1]

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—Morrisania was associated with the parish of Westchester until 1840, when Gouverneur Morris founded the present parochial Church of St. Ann's, the first building in the town devoted to worship. It was incorporated July 20, 1841, at which time Robert Morris and Lewis Morris were wardens, and Jacob Buckhout, Daniel Deveau, Benjamin Rogers, Benjamin M. Brown, Edward Leggett, Lewis G. Morris and Harry M. Morris, vestrymen. On the preceding July 17th, Gouverneur Morris conveyed the church and the ground on which it stands to the rector, wardens and vestry, only reserving the two vaults in which repose the remains of his mother and father. The conditions of his gift were that the church edifice "shall be devoted to the service of God according to the rites and ceremonies of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, and shall not be used for any other purpose whatsoever; that such of the pews as are marked in the plan annexed to the deed as 'free' shall never be sold or rented, but shall remain free, so that all persons coming to the said church to worship therein may freely use and occupy the same." The land conveyed with the church could only be used for the purposes of a parsonage and a garden and a site for sheds, and the residue as a cemetery or burying-ground. No rector or minister could be called or employed to officiate during the life of the donor, without his previous consent in writing. The donor also prohibited the premises from being mortgaged. The march of improvement has cut up all the surrounding property into streets and avenues, and in a few years St. Ann's will be like old St. Mark's in the Bowery, a rural church in the midst of a city. In vaults be-

[1] The above was kindly communicated by Mr. Kelby, Assistant Librarian of the N. Y. Hist. Soc., to whom for this and many other favors the author is greatly indebted.

Digitized by Google

neath the church repose the remains of most of the Morrises who owned Morrisania, they having been removed there when Mr. Harry Manigault Morris, executor of the estate of Lewis Morris, sold that portion of Morrisania which lies west of the Mill Brook. These remains were brought from the family vault, which stood not far from the present house, now known as Christ's Hotel. Amongst the remains are those of Lewis Morris, the colonial Governor of New Jersey, and Lewis Morris, the signer of the Declaration of Independence. In another vault repose the remains of Robert Hunter Morris, a son of Robert Morris, of Fordham, thrice mayor of New York City, also its recorder, postmaster of New York, and justice of the Supreme Court. In another are the remains of Brevet Brig.-Gen. Wm. Walton Morris,[1] colonel of the 2nd U. S. Artillery, and an officer who, during the late Rebellion, by his sound judgment and moral bravery, is entitled to much of the credit of saving Baltimore from falling into the hands of the Confederates.[2]

The church is built on rising ground near Old Morrisania, and is a handsome Gothic structure of white marble. The rectory adjoins it on the west. This is a list of pastors,—1841, Rev. Arthur C. Cox; 1842, Rev. Charles Jones; 1843, Rev. Charles Aldis; 1847, Rev. Abraham B. Carter; 1852, Rev. S. Pinkney Hammond; 1861, Rev. William Huckel, resigned.

St. Paul's Episcopal Church, situated on Fordham Avenue, near the former town line, owes its origin to the labors of Rev. A. B. Carter, who, while engaged as rector of St. Ann's, organized the congregation on July 8, 1849. It was at first a connection of St. Ann's, the chapel having been consecrated June 22, 1850. In May, 1853, it was erected into a full parish

[1] As one of General Morris' personal staff, in Baltimore, I wish to add that my commanding officer received the first, or one of the first, brevets as a brigadier general given by the government during the Civil War, and the above correspondence is given, not for the perpetuation of the family name, but as a loyal act, due from a staff officer to his general. I also wish to add that his brevet and assignment to duty as a general was a personal detriment to him, for, a few months afterwards, being given his regular commission as colonel of the Second United States Artillery, he could, as such, have drawn higher pay than a brigadier, as his "old fogy rations" as colonel and his long service in the army entitled him to higher compensation than that of a brigadier-general. But Mr. Lincoln having given him his commission by brevet, and his assignment, he did as he always did, his duty, and took higher rank and less pay. General Morris' services dated back to the Florida War, and in Mexico he was a veteran. [*Author.*]

[2] General Morris was a participant in a very notable incident of the early days of the war. This was his refusal to obey a writ of *habeas corpus* issued by Judge Giles of the United States District Court for Maryland. The subjoined correspondence gives the history of the affair.

"FORT MCHENRY, MD., Monday, 6th August, 1861.

"*Hon. Wm. Fell Giles, Judge of U. S. Dist. Court for the Dist. of Maryland:*

"*Sir,*—My attention has been directed to an article in the Local Column of the *Baltimore Sun* of this date, headed, 'The Habeas Corpus Refusal.' Presuming that that article is authentic, I wish very respectfully to submit for your consideration the following remarks on this unhappy 'Conflict of authority between those owing allegiance to the same government and bound by the same laws:'

"To avoid implicating parties in nowise connected with this case, permit me to observe at the threshold that my action in the premises was taken entirely on my own responsibility, without instructions from or consultation with any person whatever, and now I wish most respectfully to inform your Honor that I regard the writ of Habeas Corpus as the very basis of *free* government, and that under all ordinary circumstances I am very ready to acknowledge the Supremacy of the Civil authorities. But, as you admit, the Constitution of the United States has provided that this writ of Habeas Corpus may be suspended in case of rebellion if the public safety requires it. You, however, allege that there is 'no such state of affairs existing as would authorize its suspension.' On this point it is with regret that I am compelled to differ from so eminent an authority, and I am further constrained to add that the question is one of fact rather than of opinion.

"At the date of issuing your writ and for two weeks previous, the city in which you live and where your Court has been held was entirely under the control of revolutionary authorities. Within that period United States soldiers, while committing no offence, had been perfidiously attacked and inhumanly murdered in your streets; no punishments had been awarded, and I believe no arrests had been made for these atrocious crimes; supplies of provisions intended for this garrison had been stopped; the intention to capture this fort had been boldly proclaimed; your most public thoroughfares were daily patrolled by large numbers of troops armed and clothed at least in part with articles stolen from the United States; and the Federal flag while waving over the Federal offices was cut down by some person wearing the uniform of a Maryland soldier. To add to the foregoing, an assemblage elected in defiance of law, but claiming to be the legislative body of your State, and so recognized by the Executive of Maryland, was debating the forms of abrogating the Federal compact. If all this be not rebellion, I know not what to call it. I certainly regard it as a sufficient legal cause for suspending the writ of Habeas Corpus.

"Besides, there were certain grounds of expediency on which I declined obeying your mandate.

"First, the writ of Habeas Corpus in the hands of an unfriendly power might depopulate this fortification and place it at the mercy of a 'Baltimore mob' in much less time than it could be done by all the appliances of modern warfare.

"Second. The ferocious spirit exhibited by your community towards the United States Army would render me very averse from appearing publicly and unprotected in the city of Baltimore to defend the interests of the body to which I belong. A few days since a soldier of this command, while outside the walls, was attacked by a fiend or fiends in human shape, almost deprived of life, and left unprotected about half a mile from garrison. He was found in this situation and brought in covered with blood.

"One of your evening prints was quite jocose over this laughable occurrence. And now, sir, permit me to say, in conclusion, that no one can regret more than I this conflict between the civil and military authorities.

"If, in an experience of thirty-three years you have never before known the writ of Habeas Corpus to be disobeyed, it is only because such a contingency in political affairs as the present has not before arisen. I claim to be a loyal citizen, and I hope my former conduct, both official and private, will justify this pretension.

"In any condition of affairs, except that of Civil war, I would cheerfully obey your order, and as soon as the present excitement shall pass away I will hold myself ready not only to produce the soldier, but also to appear in person to answer for my own conduct; but in the existing state of sentiment in the city of Baltimore, I think it your duty to sustain the Federal military and to strengthen their hands, instead of endeavoring to strike them down.

"I have the honor to be very respectfully Your obedient servant,

"W. W. MORRIS, *Major 4th U. S. Artillery Comdg. the Post.*"

"SIR: "BALTIMORE, May 7, 1861.

"As your letter of yesterday just received by me, is addressed to me in my official character, I shall file it in Court as your reasons for not obeying the Writ of Habeas Corpus—you are correct in the supposition that the article to which you refer in the *Sun* is authentic. I reduced to writing what I said in Court on the return of the Marshal because I deemed it important that the daily press, which had on the morning of Friday noticed your action in reference to the writ before I knew of it myself, should not unintentionally misrepresent anything said by the Court. You will excuse me for any revision of the fact and argument of your letter. As I have no personal wish in this matter other than to discharge the duty devolved upon me by my official position and from which I cannot turn aside, I will only repeat again my deep regret that you have deemed it your duty particularly to suspend the 'writ of Habeas Corpus,' a power which, in my opinion, belongs to Congress only.

"I am very Respectfully your obedient Servant,

"WILLIAM F. GILES, *U. S. District Judge for Maryland.*

"*To Major W. W. Morris, 4th U. S. Arty., Fort McHenry.*"

Digitized by Google

organization, with its present title, and Rev. Benjamin Akerly was called as rector. He was followed in 1858 by Rev. Samuel G. Appleton, during whose incumbency the rectory was built. Rev. F. B. Van Kleeck was called in November, 1868, and resigned May 1, 1870. Rev. Thomas R. Harris then accepted the vacant place. In 1871 the church was redecorated and many repairs were made.

St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church, of Morrisania, is situated on the east side of Alexander Avenue, near One Hundred and Forty-second Street. It is a frame building, in the Gothic style, and seventy-five by fifty feet in dimensions. It was originally a chapel of St. Ann's Church, which erected the building on Garden or One Hundred and Forty-third Street, near College Avenue, and then removed it to its present location, as being more central. The corner-stone of the first edifice was laid May 1, 1856. The church was consecrated on September 15, 1856, and the parish incorporated September 29, 1857, when Rev. George C. Pennell was rector and Edward Haight and George Richmond wardens. Mr. Haight then liquidated its debts and the deed of the property was transferred to him. The corner-stone of the second church was laid September 9, 1875, by Bishop Potter. Rev. Christopher S. Stephenson was then rector; George Briggs and John C. Grant, wardens; William R. Beal, Richard Sterling, John T. Almaise, Edmund Pyne, Thomas Lockwood, William T. Hargrave, George W. Thurber and David P. Arnold, vestrymen; William R. Beal, John C. Grant, William T. Hargrave and G. W. Thurber, building committee.

The pastors have been,—

1856–57 . . . . . Rev. Mr. Hammond.
1857–62 . . . . . Rev. George C. Pennell.
1862–63 . . . . . Rev. Eastman Benjamin.
1863— . . . . . Rev. John W. Buckmaster.
1864— . . . . . Rev. Samuel R. Johnson, D.D.
1864–66 . . . . . Rev. J. H. Hobart De Mille.
1866–70 . . . . . Rev. Francis F. Rice.
1870–74 . . . . . Rev. C. S. Knapp.
1874–78 . . . . . Rev. C. S. Stephenson.
1878–83 . . . . . Rev. J. R. Davenport, D.D.
1884— . . . . . Rev. Harry Floyd Auld, present incumbent.

The wardens in 1886 were W. T. Marvin and D. P. Arnold, vestry; J. B. Brown, A. H. Pride, D. H. McCormack, T. Conklin, W. W. L. Voorhis, C. A. Waterbury, E. L. Smith, J. S. McCoy. The carved wood altar was presented by Dr. Davenport, and the vases and cross by Mr. and Mrs. Alfred Davenport.

THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.—The parish church of St. Augustine is located at the corner of Jefferson and Franklin Avenues. The church buildings and rectory were erected in 1859. The first parish priest was Rev. Stephen Ward, a native of County Longford, who departed this life June 22d, and is interred beneath the church, an appropriately inscribed tablet marking his place of sepulture. In the church are many articles of ecclesiastical furniture, windows, memorials, etc., presented by Mrs. M. E. Monaghan, James McGarrity, J. and V. Lynch, Mrs. Rose Ferrigan, Henry McGough, Michael Cunningham, Francis McKenna, James McKenna, St. Augustine's Beneficial Society and the parish.

In East Morrisania is the Convent of the Ursuline Nuns, and connected with it an academy, which they conduct for the education of young ladies. It is under the direction of Mother Dominick, the Superioress. Father Stumpfe is the resident pastor, and he has charge of St. Mary's church, at Melrose, of the same denomination, and another church of the same persuasion is under the guidance of Rev. Father Nolan, at Highbridgeville.

THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—The First Presbyterian Church of the village of Morrisania was organized at a meeting at the house of Lawrence S. Mott, September 10, 1849. The first trustees were Lawrence S. Mott, Andrew Cauldwell, David Austin, Enoch S. Burstrand and Daniel Ayres.

At Washington Avenue and One Hundred and Sixty-seventh Street is the Potts Memorial Presbyterian Church, a handsome edifice erected to the memory of Rev. Dr. Potts. Rev. Arthur Potts was elected the first pastor April 1, 1866. The present pastor is Rev. James Morton.

METHODIST CHURCHES.—February 8, 1850, a meeting was held at the Episcopal Chapel for the purpose of organizing a Methodist Episcopal Church in Morrisania, under the care of the Harlem Station, and the New York District of the New York Conference. The name of the congregation was declared to be the "Methodist Episcopal Church of the village of Morrisania, County of Westchester." Stephen T. Wright, Moses T. Farrington, James Parker, John York and John T. Ferguson were the first trustees.

The German-speaking people of the Methodist faith have their own church at Morrisania. It was organized on April 12, 1853, by a meeting held at the residence of John J. Knoeppel, and the first trustees elected were Mr. Knoeppel, Charles H. Buttner, Jacob Weible, Anton Romnig, Lewis K. Osborn, John L. Haynes and Robert Crawford.

OTHER DENOMINATIONS.—At Mott Haven is the Reformed Dutch Church, which was incorporated September 18, 1855, with J. L. Cummings, E. S. Burstrand, Thomas H. Leggett, Hayward A. Harvey, William H. McMasters, M. D. Van Doran, James Smith, William Kidd and William Potter.

The Dutch Reformed Church of the village of Melrose was incorporated September 25, 1857. Rev. Ernst Schoeppel was the first minister, and the deacons were Charles L. Georgi, Frederick Lambart, Peter Herlick and Christopher Mabus; the elders, George Illig, Valentine Kolter, Christian Gumpert, George Hoffman and John Spaeth.

The First Congregational Church was organized October 1, 1851. The congregation elected as the first board of trustees Philo Price, John A. Henry, Charles Speaight, Daniel Desmond, Joseph S. Ives and George Pollock.

Digitized by Google

[illegible]

[illegible] of Independence [illegible]

[illegible] Mrs. [illegible]

[illegible] daughters,—Isabella, [illegible] W[illegible] D. D.; Sarah [illegible] and Catharine, wife of [illegible]

[illegible] a family [illegible] May [illegible] Morris [illegible] painted [illegible]

[illegible] Lewis Morris married [illegible] daughter of [illegible] of New York [illegible] survived him several years, and died in [illegible] in Mar-[illegible]

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF WM. H. MORRIS,

MORRISANIA, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

At Highbridgeville is the Union Chapel, founded largely by the efforts of the late Mrs. Anderson, of "Woody Crest," and her daughters.

The First Baptist Church dates from a meeting for purposes of organization held September 17, 1850. The trustees chosen were Joseph Wiley, Thomas W. Hyde, Alexander M. Stratton, James Hardwick and George Hull.

Fordham Morris

BIOGRAPHY.

THE MORRIS FAMILY.

Among the names of ancestral note there are none who are more closely identified with American history than the family which has produced so many distinguished representatives, and whose annals must ever remain a most important part of the chronicles of the country and State. As the purchase and establishment of the Manor of Morrisania is fully narrated in another portion of this work, present attention is confined to the tracing of the line of descent of the family which has just claims to be called illustrious.

William Morris, of Tintern, Monmouthshire, England, was the father of three sons,—Colonel Lewis Morris, who inherited the estate in England, but emigrated to the West Indies in 1662, and settled in Morrisania, Westchester County, in 1674; William, who lived in Wales, and was an officer in the Parliamentary army; and Richard, who was a captain in the regiment of which his brother Lewis was colonel, and was the first of the name who owned the manor so long known as Morrisania. The latter married Sarah Pole, in the Island of Barbadoes, to which he had retired upon the restoration of the monarchy in England, and their only child was Hon. Lewis Morris, born in 1672, and by the untimely death of his parents left an orphan in early infancy. He rose to the highest positions, and was the first Governor of New Jersey, and a man of wealth and the highest distinction, and at an early period was the representative in the Assembly of New York for the county of Westchester. He was among the early benefactors of Trinity Church, of which he was for many years a vestryman, and after a long life of honor, usefulness and influence, he died at Kingsbury, near Trenton, on the 21st of May, 1746, at the advanced age of seventy-three. In accordance with the directions in his will, his mortal remains were deposited in a vault on his estate of Morrisania, and were accompanied to their last resting place by the highest dignitaries of the time.

Hon. Lewis Morris married Isabella, daughter of Sir James Graham, attorney-general of the province of New York. She survived him several years, and died in 1752, and was laid to rest by his side in Morrisania. She was lamented as one who was richly endowed with the graces that ornament, and the virtues that adorn, humanity.

The children of this marriage were Hon. Robert Hunter Morris, chief justice of New Jersey; Hon. Lewis Morris, judge of the High Court of Admiralty, and of the Court of Oyer and Terminer; and six daughters,—Elizabeth wife of —— White; Margaret; Arabella G.; Ann; Mary, wife of —— Pierce; and Euphemia.

Hon. Lewis Morris, who succeeded his illustrious father as the owner of Morrisania, was born September 23, 1698, and died July 3, 1762. The whole of his life was devoted to public affairs, and he was justly considered one of the foremost men of the days that preceded the Revolution, in which his son was destined to gain an imperishable name. His first wife was Catharine Staats, and the children of this marriage were General Lewis Morris, the illustrious signer of the Declaration of Independence; General Staats Long Morris;[1] and Hon. Richard Morris, judge of the High Court of Admiralty in 1776.

LEWIS MORRIS.

After the death of Mrs. Morris, Mr. Morris married Sarah Gouverneur. Their children were Hon. Gouverneur Morris (a name famous in our country's annals) and three daughters,—Isabella, wife of Rev. Isaac Wilkins, D. D.; Sarah Euphemia, wife of Samuel Ogden; and Catharine, wife of V. P. Ashfield.

---

[1] He was an officer of high rank in the British army, and married Catharine, the celebrated Duchess of Gordon, whose son, Lord George Gordon, was famous as the leader of the Anti-Popery Riots, 1793. A portrait of General Morris is now in possession of William H. Morris, Morrisania

Digitized by Google

[illegible]
[illegible]

Digitized by Google

LEWIS MORRIS.

[illegible] and a [illegible] and [illegible] at [illegible] New-York [illegible] County [illegible] among the [illegible] benefactors of [illegible] Church, of which he was for many years a vestryman, and [illegible] of May, [illegible] in a vault [illegible] is a place [illegible]

[illegible] Lewis Morris [illegible] Isabella, daughter of [illegible] several of the province [illegible] several years, and [illegible] his position in Mor- [illegible] one of [illegible]

[illegible] States, and the [illegible] Lewis Morris [illegible] of Independence [illegible] Lewis Morris [illegible] and Hon. Richard [illegible] High Court of Admiralty [illegible]

After the death of Mrs. Morris [illegible] Sarah Gouverneur. Their [illegible] Morris [illegible] and three daughters,—Isabella [illegible] Sarah [illegible] and Catharine, wife of [illegible]

[illegible] Catharine, the [illegible] Gouverneur [illegible] Morrisania.

Digitized by Google

RESIDENCE OF WM. H. MORRIS,
MORRISANIA, N. Y.

Digitized by Google

James Morris.

Digitized by Google

ve no
. Livingston,
, Orquhart); Helen
. David King, but left

Digitized by Google

[illegible]

Digitized by Google

General Lewis Morris, the eldest son, and the fifth proprietor of the Manor of Morrisania, was born April 8, 1726. He enjoyed the best opportunities for education that the country then afforded, and graduated from Yale College in 1746, and his *alma mater* did honor to herself by conferring upon him the degree of Master of Arts in 1790. After finishing his education he returned to his native manor, where for years he passed the life of a quiet agriculturist. The Revolution found in him a man ready for the hour, and from the time when the struggle for independence began to the day when victory closed the contest there was no man whose heart and soul were more devoted to the cause. In the early part of the war he was a brigadier-general in the Continental army, and was instructed by Congress to take possession of such parts of the province bordering on Long Island Sound and Hudson River as might be most exposed to attack and occupation by the enemy. In 1775 he was elected a member of the Continental Congress, and was one of that noble band who pledged their all to the country's good. In 1777 he issued an address to the citizens of New York urging them to support the Constitution prepared by the convention of the United States for the temporary form of government. His honored life was closed in 1798, and his remains were laid with those of his ancestors in the family vault at Morrisania, but were in after-years removed to a vault under St. Ann's Church.

General Lewis Morris married Mary Walton, who died in 1794. Their children were Colonel Lewis Morris, aid to General Greene; General Jacob Morris, of Otsego County, New York; William; James; Staats; Commodore R. Valentine;[1] Catharine, wife of Thomas Lawrence; Mary, second wife of Thomas Lawrence; Sarah; and Helen, wife of John Rutherford.

James Morris, the fourth child, was born 1764, and his early childhood was passed at his father's seat in Morrisania. He was sent to England, under the care of his uncle, General Staats Long Morris, and was educated at the famous school at Eton, and afterward traveled extensively with his uncle's family. After remaining in England several years he returned to his native land and studied law in the office of Aaron Burr, then in the zenith of his legal fame. At a later date he was appointed high sheriff of New York by Governor John Jay. In 1796 he married Helen, daughter of Augustus Van Cortlandt, of Yonkers, and removing from the city of New York, settled at Morrisania, where the remainder of his life was passed as a country gentleman of ample means and refined tastes. His large estate gave him favorable opportunities as an agriculturist, and he was foremost among the farmers of the State and one of the founders of the Westchester Agricultural Society, one of the first in the country, and throughout his life was a man of success, integrity and honor.

Mr. Morris died September 7, 1827, at the age of sixty-three, leaving a family of twelve children,—

1. James Van Cortlandt, who married Catharine, daughter of Wright Post, M.D., of New York, and had one son, James, who died unmarried.

2. Augustus, who assumed the name of Van Cortlandt, to succeed to the ownership of an estate in Yonkers. He married Harriet, daughter of Peter Jay Munro, Esq., and had two sons,—Augustus, a physician, who died in 1885, without children; and Peter Jay Munro, who married Ann M. Hunter, and is now living at Pelham, without children.

3. Catharine, wife of Dr. Alexander H. Stevens, of New York. They had one child, Alexa, wife of Rev. James Bowdoin, of New York. They have one child, Constance.

4. Mary Walton, who died unmarried.

5. Helen, who married Richard R. Morris, son of Col. Lewis Morris, and grandson of the signer. Their children were Helen and Lewis, both of whom died unmarried; Anna, second wife of the present Gouverneur Morris, of Morrisania; she died in 1884, leaving no children; Mary W., who is now living at Pelham; Sophia, who married Charles B. Burrill, a lawyer of New York, who has children—Drayton, Mary and Percy.

6. Nancy, who died unmarried.

7. Dr. Richard L., who died June, 1880. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel N. Fish, and sister of Governor Hamilton Fish. Their children are James, who married Elizabeth W. Gray, and has no children; Elizabeth, the wife of Elliott Marshall, of Mississippi, both deceased (they left children,—Elliott, Elizabeth M. and Sarah E.); Nicholas Fish, who was lost at sea by the foundering of the man-of-war "Albany," leaving no children; Richard L., who married Lillian Munson, both deceased (they left children,—Munson and Helen, now living in Astoria); Stuyvesant Fish, M.D., who married Ellen J., daughter of Smith Van Buren, son of President Van Buren, and is now living on Lexington Avenue, N. Y. (they have four children,—Elizabeth M., Ellen V. B., Richard L. and Stuyvesant F.); Charlotte Louisa, who married Martin Wilkins, of Morristown, N. J., who have no children; Margaret, wife of Bayard U. Livingston, of Albany (they have one child, Urquhart); Helen V. C., deceased, who married David King, but left no children.

[1] Commodore Morris, United States Navy, died in 1815 on the family estate now occupied in part by his grandson, Henry Lewis Morris. He married Ann Walton, and their issue were Gerard W., Richard V. and Henry. Gerard married Martha Pyne, and their children were Gerard, Isabella, Annie P., Richard B., Captain John P., Henry W. (who attained the highest honors in the Masonic order), Mononah and Mary Pyne. All died unmarried, except the last two named. Mononah married Francis Barretto, Jr., who died in 1866, leaving as sole heir Gerard M. Barretto, of New York City. Mary Pyne married Jonathan Edwards. Their children were Gerard M., Mary Morris and Rev. Arthur Morris, Episcopal missionary at Tokio, Japan. Richard V. Morris died unmarried in 1843. Henry, third son of the commodore, married Mary N., daughter of Hon. J. C. Spencer, Secretary of War and of the Treasury under President Tyler. Their children were Mary Natalie (died unmarried, 1870) and Henry Lewis, who married Anna M. Russell, and resides on Mott Avenue, Morrisania, and whose children are Eleanor R. and Lewis Spencer.

Digitized by Google

8. Robert Rutherford, who lived at Davenport's Neck, New Rochelle. He married Hannah, daughter of William Edgar. They had children,—Catharine, who married Henry Phelps; Annie, died unmarried; Edgar, died unmarried; Cornelia, unmarried; and Helen, wife of Dr. Magill, United States army, who left no children.

9. Louisa, who married Edward Leroy, of Avon, Genesee County, N. Y. They had one child, Helen, now living in New York. She married Pinckney Stewart (deceased). Their children are Louisa, wife of James Kent, grandson of the illustrious jurist, and who is now a practicing lawyer in New York; Helen, who married —— Kent; and Edward.

10. William H.

11. Charlotte, who married Richard Kemble, who has one child, Mary, now living in New York.

WILLIAM H. MORRIS.—William H. Morris, the tenth child and the sole surviver of the above family, was born August 3, 1810. In his childhood he attended school at Harlem, and afterwards at Bloomingdale, under the care of Dr. Davenport, from which he went to the school at Hyde Park, under the charge of Dr. Allen, and was subsequently a student at the Military Academy, Middletown, Conn. He returned home at the time of the death of his father, and under the charge of his guardian, Gerard W. Morris, traveled extensively in Europe in 1831 and 1832. Returning, he married, in 1834, Miss Hannah, daughter of Thomas Newbold, of New York. Their children were James Staats, born 1836, died 1875; Augustus Newbold; and William H., who died unmarried in 1852. Mrs. Morris died in 1842, and Mr. Morris subsequently married Caroline, daughter of Caleb Halsted, of New York, who died in 1848. In 1850 he married Ella, daughter of Hugh Birckhead, of Baltimore. Their children are Augusta McEvers, wife of Frederick J. De Peyster, and Juliet B., who is now living with her father in Morrisania. Mrs. Morris died in 1881.

The greater part of the life of Mr. Morris has been spent upon his family estate at Morrisania, where he was for years extensively engaged in agriculture, which he conducted with great energy and success. During his long life he has seen the rural district of Morrisania become the thickly-settled ward of a great city, and the place where he now lives may be called the last relic of Morrisania, as it was in early days. The mansion, which stands upon an eminence overlooking the country round, was built by his father in 1816, and stands a few feet east of the site of a former house, built in 1795. In the family mansion, surrounded by the relics of the past, Mr. Morris passes the evening of his days in quiet and dignified repose, and commanding the respect and the confidence of the entire community.

Among other relics of days gone by are fine portraits of Hon. Gouverneur Morris, painted while minister to France; Colonel Lewis Morris, son of the signer; and General Staats Long Morris.

AUGUSTUS NEWBOLD MORRIS, the only surviving son of William H. Morris, was born June 3, 1838. He graduated from Columbia College in 1860, and traveled extensively in Europe and the East, including the Holy Land, in 1864-66, and again in 1874-75, and the third time in 1882. He is identified with many benevolent institutions, and is a member of the executive committee and a liberal supporter of the Home for Incurables, one of the noblest institutions in the county. Prominent in the social and business life of New York, he is governor of the Union Club, and as the financial manager of large estates he commands by his integrity the respect and confidence of all who know him. His beautiful country place at Pelham was noted as the seat of elegant hospitality, and famous for the valuable horses and cattle raised under the care of the owner.

Mr. Morris married Eleanor Colford, daughter of General James I. Jones. Their children are Newbold and Eva Van Cortlandt. Mr. Morris and his family are members of the Church of the Holy Spirit, of which he was warden for many years, and is now a member of the vestry.

His country-seat at Pelham has lately been taken as a portion of the New Park, and his present country residence is at Ridgefield, Conn.[1]

LEWIS G. MORRIS.

Lewis Gouverneur Morris, son of Robert Morris, and sixth in the line of descent from Richard Morris, the first settler of the name, whose numerous descendants have acted so prominent a part in the history of the country, was born at Claverack, Columbia County, N. Y., August 19, 1808, while his parents were making a visit there. His father, who had inherited an estate from his ancestors, was engaged in mercantile pursuits in New York, and the rest of the children having been provided for, it naturally devolved upon Lewis G., as the son of their old age, to remain with his parents upon the ancestral heritage. To the care and development of this estate his time and energies were devoted, and under his skillful management the "Mount Fordham" farm became known far and wide, and his name was justly ranked as foremost among the agriculturists of the State. His attention was early called to the necessity and advantage of improving the various breeds of domestic animals. With this end in view, he made repeated visits to Europe, at first in company with Mr. N. J. Becar, forming the acquaintance of the leading agriculturists of Great Britain, and returning to this country, brought with him the finest specimens of live-stock to be purchased in England. The rare value of his imported animals was quickly known, and the public and private sales at Mount Fordham, which began in 1848 and continued for many years, were noted events and brought purchasers from every portion of the country, and cattle from this farm were sent to

[1] The sketch of the Morris family was prepared by a friend.

Digitized by Google

signer; and General Staats Long Morris.

[1] The sketch of the Morris family was prepared by a friend.

Digitized by Google

Wm L. C. Morris

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A. Newbold Morris.

Digitized by Google

A. Neu-Hol. Chronis.

Digitized by Google

L. G. Morris

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

every State in the Union, and also to Canada, Cuba and the Sandwich Islands.

So greatly did these herds improve, on this side of the Atlantic, that the owners of large estates in England sent agents who purchased at fabulous prices, and carried back to the Old World the descendants of animals which Mr. Morris originally selected and which had been so lately exported from their own shores. It is safe to say that the increased value of live-stock in this country, which is directly attributable to the various importations made by Mr. Morris, must be estimated by millions.

One of the most important events in his life was his connection with the improvement of Harlem River and building of the High Bridge. At the time of constructing the Croton Aqueduct, the commissioners had determined to carry the water across Harlem River by inverted syphons over a low bridge, with only one archway, eighty feet in width. This attempt, which would have effectually destroyed the navigation of the river, met with the most determined opposition from the land-owners along its shores, and of this opposition Mr. Morris was the most prominent representative. To his far-seeing mind it was evident that the time must come when water communications made by nature between the Hudson River and Long Island Sound, would, when improved by art, become the channel for a mighty commerce. From time immemorial, it had been a navigable arm of the sea, and Mr. Morris, with his neighbors, resolved to have it restored to its former condition. At that time the navigation of the stream was impeded, if not wholly destroyed, by Macomb's dam, constructed under an act of Legislature passed in 1813. This obstruction to a navigable stream was, in the opinion of Mr. Morris and his associates, a public nuisance, and a plan was forthwith formed for its abatement. Mr. Morris, at the request of his neighbors, hired a small vessel, owned by parties in another State (with a view of having the question brought before the Federal courts), and engaged the master to deliver a cargo of coal at his landing. The attempt of the vessel to proceed on her voyage being prevented by the dam, the company on board proceeded, on the night of September 14, 1838, to abate the nuisance by tearing down and removing a portion of the obstructing work. The suit-at-law which followed, in the case of "William Renwick *vs.* Lewis G. Morris *et al.*," was carried up to the Court of Chancery, and the final decision established the theory that Harlem River was a navigable stream, and any obstruction was a public nuisance liable to be abated by any one interested in the navigation. The constant remonstrance and persistent efforts of Mr. Morris and his associates to prevent the building of a low bridge over the river were at length crowned with success, and an Act of Legislature passed May 3, 1839, prescribed that the Aqueduct Bridge should be constructed with arches and piers of at least eighty feet span and a hundred feet in height; and the magnificent High Bridge is a lasting monument to their perseverance and energy.

Mr. Morris was appointed in 1840 inspector of the Fourth Division of Militia Infantry, with the rank of colonel, a position which he held till 1847.

In 1861 Mr. Morris was a member of the War Committee, was appointed colonel of volunteers August 14, 1862, and was instrumental in raising the One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Regiment, known as the "Anthony Wayne Guards," later as the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, and which was afterwards commanded by Colonel (afterwards Brigadier-General,) Wm. H. Morris.

Mr. Morris was president of the New York State Agricultural Society, and has been since 1850 a life member of the Royal Agricultural Society of England.

The estate of Mount Fordham is a portion of the old Manor of Fordham, was purchased by Lewis Morris, grandson of Richard, the first settler, and has descended to its present owner from his ancestors.

So much has been written concerning the distinguished family of which Mr. Morris is a representative, that little remains to be said. The line of descent is: first, Richard, who came to this country in 1670; second, Lewis, born at Morrisania, in 1672; third, Lewis, Governor of New Jersey, as was also his father; fourth, Richard, who was judge of Admiralty under the crown, and the successor of John Jay as second chief justice of New York, and whose brother, Lewis Morris, was the illustrious signer of the Declaration of Independence; fifth, Robert, born in 1763, and married Frances, daughter of Isaac Ludlam, of Goshen, Orange Co. Their children were Richard; Julia, wife of William B. Ludlow; Mary, wife of James A. Hamilton, son of the illustrious statesman; James L., who married Lucretia, daughter of Peter Crary; Francis W., wife of Thomas W. Ludlow; Robert H. who was mayor of New York, recorder, and judge of the Supreme Court, and married Ann Eliza Munson; Wm. L., who married Mary E. Babcock; and Lewis G.

Mr. Morris married Emily, daughter of Jacob Lorillard. She died in 1850, leaving two children,—Fordham and Francis.

Fordham Morris, the elder son, is a practicing lawyer in New York. He married Annie Louise Westcot, and had one child,—Emily Lorillard.

Francis Morris, the younger son, was educated in the United States Naval Academy, at Annapolis. He served in the late war and was present at the attack on Fort Fisher, rose to the rank of commander, and shortly before his death, which occurred February 12, 1883, was executive officer of the "Tennessee." He married Harriet H. Bedlow, and left two children, —Alice and Lewis G.

The family mansion at Mount Fordham, was built in—— and greatly enlarged and improved by its present owner. The family portraits here preserved

Digitized by Google

embrace a fine engraving of Lewis Morris, the owner of Morrisania, and elegant paintings of his son Lewis and his grandson Richard, the Judge of Admiralty, attached to which is the hilt of his official sword; and also of Robert Morris, the father of the present owner of the mansion.

Shunning politics, and declining all offers of official preferment, Mr. Morris has been content to lead a life of quiet usefulness; and to all who have the honor of his acquaintance, he is known as one who is "worthy to bear without reproach, the grand old name of Gentleman."

JORDAN L. MOTT.

The ancestor of the Mott family, which has so many representatives in various portions of the country, was Adam Mott, who was born in England in 1606 and came to Boston in 1636. He was chosen freeman in Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1637, from which place he moved and settled at Newton, L. I., and afterward went to Hempstead. At the time of the English conquest, in 1664, he was one of the commissioners for arranging the transfer of New Amsterdam to the English government. He died at Hempstead, L. I., in 1686, leaving a wife, Sarah, and six children—John, Adam, Joseph, Elizabeth, Nathaniel and Mary.

Of this family, Adam, the second son, was born in England in 1629, and came with his father to America. His first wife was Phebe, whose maiden-name is unknown. After her decease he married Elizabeth, probably daughter of John Richbell, whose name was prominent among the early settlers of Westchester. He died at an advanced age, leaving fourteen children—Adam, James, Charles, John, Joseph, Gershom, Elizabeth (wife of Henry Goder), Henry, Grace, Richbell, Ann, William, Mary and Hannah (wife of John Seaman). The descendants of these are very numerous. Charles, the third son, was one of a company of eighteen who, in 1719, emigrated from Hempstead, L. I., to what is now Rockland County, N. Y. where they purchased a large tract of land, and some of his descendants are still to be found in that region. Among the descendants of William Mott may be mentioned the famous surgeon, Dr. Valentine Mott, late of the city of New York, while James has many descendants in Westchester County.

Joseph, the fifth son, was the father of Jacob Mott, born August 9, 1714, and died October 6, 1805.[1] He married Abigail Jackson, born November 18, 1720, and died in 1781. They were the parents of eleven children—Joseph, born October 18, 1736; Samuel, May 31, 1738 (died young); Jackson, August 16, 1740; Isaac, May 6, 1743 (married Nancy Coles); Miriam, April 30, 1745 (died in childhood); Ruth, June 6, 1747 (she married Jordan Lawrence, and after his decease married Stephen Coles); Samuel I., February 9, 1753; Jacob, June 30, 1756; Miriam, September 7, 1759 (married Benjamin Birdsall); Richard, May 9, 1769 (he married, first, Polly Sutton; second, Freelove Sutton); and Joseph, August 21, 1763 (who removed to South Carolina).

Jacob Mott, the eighth child of this family, married Deborah, daughter of Dr. William Lawrence, whose ancestor, John Lawrence, was one of the commissioners who were appointed to arrange the boundaries of New Amsterdam in 1664, and whose descendants are among the most prominent of Long Island families. Removing from Hempstead, his native village, to New York, he was for many years one of its most prominent citizens, and was elected alderman of the Seventh Ward from 1804 to 1810, and was president of the Board of Aldermen and deputy mayor of New York. Mott Street, in that city, was named in his honor. After a life of usefulness and credit, and vicissitudes as well, Mr. Mott died August 16, 1823, leaving a family of five children—William L., born January 16, 1777 (married Dorothy Scudder); Richard L., born June 6, 1782 (married Elizabeth Deal); Jacob L., born September 13, 1784 (married Hannah Riker and settled at Tarrytown, where he was a prominent preacher of the Society of Friends); Jordan L.; and Mary (wife of Ezekiel G. Smith).

Jordan Lawrence Mott was born at Manhasset, L. I., October 12, 1798, during a temporary residence of his parents at that place, to which they had gone on account of an epidemic of yellow fever in New York. The affluent circumstances of his father rendered his early life one of ease and leisure, and he in youth developed that inventive genius which has since made his name so widely known. At the age of fifteen he invented a machine for weaving tape, which was successfully operated, and from that time till 1853, when he retired from business, was constantly engaged in various inventions, and more than fifty patents are recorded in his name. The business reverses which overtook his father rendered it necessary for him to engage in active labor for himself, and in 1820 he commenced commercial life as a grocer. At that time cooking-stoves were a recent introduction, the fuel being wood, which was then plentiful, and Mr. Mott invented the first cooking-stove in which anthracite was burned as a fuel. The comfort and convenience caused by this invention can hardly be over-estimated and justly entitled him to the gratitude of the community. The stove-castings were at that time made at blast furnaces in Philadelphia and were very rough. Mr. Mott built a cupola furnace and made his castings smooth and beautiful.

The stoves made at his works soon became popular, and the small foundry, which was situated in the rear of

[1] Joseph Mott, "of Charlotte Precinct, Duchess County," who died in 1762, was probably a brother of the Jacob Mott, mentioned above. In his will, dated September 28, 1762, he leaves his farm, "Lot No. 3, in the Patent of Nine Partners," to his sons, Richard and Jacob. He mentions daughters,—Martha, wife of James Valentine; Jane, wife of Timothy Smith; Elizabeth, wife of Samuel Smith; Jemima, wife of John Connon. He also mentions "My loving brother Jacob, of Queens Co., L. I."

Digitized by Google

"MT. FORDHAM."

RESIDENCE OF L. G. MORRIS.

A VIEW FROM WEST PIAZZA, MT. FORDHAM.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Lyman L. Nott

[illegible]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

his store on Water Street, in New York, was the beginning of the famous Jordan L. Mott Iron-Works, the productions of which are now sent to every country on the globe.

The rapid increase of business led Mr. Mott to purchase an extensive tract of land at the northwest corner of the Manor of Morrisania, on the Harlem River, and adjoining the Harlem Bridge at Third Avenue, and upon this spot soon arose the populous village of Mott Haven. The foundry was at first of limited extent; the buildings were of wood and twice destroyed by fire, but were each time rebuilt with greatly enlarged proportions. It is narrated, as an illustration of the energy of Mr. Mott, that at the time of the second fire, while the firemen were endeavoring to subdue the flames at one end of the building, a company of workmen under his direction were laying the new foundations at the other, and in nine days the business was resumed. With a premonition of the rapid growth of the city of New York, Mr. Mott, in company with Colonel Nicholas McGraw and Charles W. Houghton, formed an association to purchase a large tract in Morrisania and establish a new village.

An agreement was made with Gouverneur Morris, owner of the land, to sell a tract of two hundred acres for one hundred and seventy-five dollars per acre, which comprised lots from No. 16 to No. 23, inclusive, "as laid down on a map of Morrisania made by John Randall in 1816." This tract was surveyed and streets and avenues were located, and persons who bought lots received their deeds directly from Mr. Morris, the inheritor of the ancestral domain. The village thus established is now the thickly-settled Twenty-third Ward of the city of New York.

Mr. Mott lived to see the business which he founded on a limited scale gradually increase till it became one of the largest establishments in the country and the creations of his inventive genius have made his name a household word. During the administration of President Buchanan he was offered the position of commissioner of patents, but declined to accept. The Reformed Dutch Church at Morrisania, which he built and presented to the people, will be a lasting monument to his name. After a life of active and untiring usefulness he died May 8, 1866, and was buried in Greenwood Cemetery.

He married Mary W. Smith, who was born September 6, 1801, and died December 24, 1838.

The children of this marriage were Mary J., wife of Matthew Dyckman Van Doran, whose children were Alice H., wife of Guy Fairfax Whiting, of Virginia, and Amelia A., wife of General Edward H. Ripley, of Rutland, Vt., and Jordan L.

Jordan L. Mott, who is the successor to the business established by his honored father, and which, under his care and skill, is continued with greatly increased facilities, was born November 10, 1829. Deprived of a mother's care in early childhood, he knew little of home life, being sent to school in Tarrytown at an an early age and finished his education at the University of the City of New York. The excitement that followed the discovery of gold in California led him to abandon college life, with the intention of seeking his fortune in that land of promise, and he wrote to his father, who was then in Washington, for his permission and assistance. Mr. Mott, with the practical shrewdness which distinguished him, made the following proposition to the young adventurer: "You can have the privations and the profits of a miner's life without going to California. You shall live in a tent in my garden, without seeing any of your friends or relatives, and holding no communications with them except by mail and at long intervals; you shall do your own cooking and washing and mending. You will be deprived of all that now makes your life enjoyable, and in return I will pay you the average wages of a miner—about fifteen dollars a day. Or you can remain at home in possession of the comforts you enjoy, with the prospect of succeeding to the business I have established."

When these two pictures were presented in such vivid contrast the young man was not long in making his decision, and leaving the gold of California to be dug by other hands, he sought for wealth with equal energy, and doubtless far more success, in his native city.

From that time it was the object of his life to establish the works that bear his name on a firmer foundation, and increase their extent and capacity, and in the prosecution of this enterprise he has met with well-merited success. At the works at Mott Haven sixty tons of iron are now melted daily,—a vast increase, indeed, from the time when to melt two tons on alternate days was their full capacity. Taking an active interest in political affairs, Mr. Mott was elected alderman for the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards and was president of the board in 1879 and acting mayor of the city during the illness of Mayor Cooper. At the conclusion of his term of office Mr. Mott received an elegant testimonial, signed by the full Board of Aldermen, expressing their high appreciation of the integrity and ability with which he had performed the duties of his official position. He was also one of the trustees of the village of Morrisania. Being appointed a member of the Rapid Transit Commission he was noted by his activity in promoting one of the improvements of the day. Prominent in social circles and widely known in business affairs, he is justly considered a representative of the successful men of the great metropolis.

Mr. Mott married Marianna, daughter of James V. Seamen, of Westchester. Their children are Marie (wife of the late William M. Olliffe, park commissioner of New York), Jordan L., Jr. (who married Katharine Jerome, daughter of Fay Purdy, of Western New York, and has one child—Jordan L., the fourth of this name) and Augustus W.

Digitized by Google

The old homestead built by his father in the early days of Mott Haven, and standing at the corner of Third Avenue and One Hundred and Thirty-fourth Street, still remains in his possession.

SAMUEL M. BIXBY.

Among the magic titles of the present day, none has become such an universal household word as that of "Bixby," not alone in this country, but in all parts of the world.

As a type of the American self-made business man, Samuel M. Bixby has secured a prominent position. He was born at Haverhill, N. H., May 27, 1833, and for many years past has been a resident of Fordham, Westchester County, N. Y. Those who are familiar with his reputation for energy and force of character can readily see, from a brief history of his origin, which was coupled with an early New England education, how he has been endowed with the elements that have made his success.

From a man so full of information, and so keenly alive to the bent of events transpiring about him, it is not difficult to secure a fund of interesting matter that would be valuable not only to remote members of the Bixby family, but to people generally who have heard of him. Among the interesting mementoes in his possession, of early New England days, is a rare "Book of Poems" (first published in 1650), by Anne Bradstreet, well remembered as the "Tenth Muse," or first American poetess, who is a grandparent of Mr. Bixby through four generations.

The name Bixby is of Danish origin, and the American Bixbys are descendants from Danish, English and Scotch blood. Few families can boast of an ancestry more notable for all the qualities that go to make up the characteristics that rank highest in American character. They are lineal descendants of the lords of Dudley, families prominent in English history, and thence through the families of Governor Thomas Dudley and Governor Simon Bradstreet and many others of the noblest pioneers of New England.

The family, which is large, is widely scattered throughout the United States, devoting themselves with the most remarkable energy to all the avocations of life in a new country and achieving success as lawyers, doctors, ministers, missionaries, manufacturers, merchants and tillers of the soil, and in every line they are remarkable for longevity, probity and intensity of purpose, strong will and determination,—characteristics which come from a hardy, strong and uncompromising ancestry.

The meaning of the name Bixby is "the house or town near the box-trees." "By," means town, village or house; "bix" means the box—*i. e.*, the tree by that name.

Boxford, in Suffolk County, Mass., was planted and reared by the Bixbys. Boxford,—*i. e.*, the ford by the box-trees—was the home of the emigrant, Joseph Bixby, and received its name from him.

The first record of the Bixbys in this country is that of Nathaniel and Joseph Bixby, father and son, in the town of Ipswich, Mass., where Nathaniel is recorded as a householder in 1638.

From this date the father and son are readily traced, the son marrying, in 1647, a lady from Asington, Suffolk County, England, and settling in Rowley village, afterward incorporated, under his leadership, as the town of Boxford. It is recorded that Joseph Bixby died, "being aged," in 1700.

From Nathaniel and his son Joseph, the original immigrants, can be traced all the Bixbys at present known to exist in the United States, and they inhabit nearly every State and Territory. The oldest known to be living to-day is a lady past her ninety-ninth birthday, who is well preserved, mentally and physically, and displays a degree of cheerfulness and great good humor rarely observed in aged people.

In point of health, vigor and other characteristics, Samuel M. Bixby is a true type of his ancestors. His genial disposition, with the faculty of discerning the bright side of life, warrants the prediction of his enjoyment, for many years to come, of the success he has achieved.

COLONEL RICHARD M. HOE.

Among the names of American inventors whose discoveries have increased the welfare of the world, few deserve more honorable mention than the late Colonel Hoe, the inventor of the Lightning Printing-Press. Mr. Hoe was the head of the great firm of R. Hoe & Co., manufacturers of printing-presses. The history of this house, originally established by his father, and carried on from one success to another by his father's sons, is the history of the evolution of the art of printing, not only in America, but throughout the civilized world. Prior to the invention of the presses which bear the name of Hoe, the machinery by which the uses of "the types" are made manifest on paper was indeed slow-running and, in the light of the development of to-day, very crude. It was the Hoes who gave to the world, in 1847, the first rotary press ever known, and later, the wonderful Web Perfecting Printing-Machines with which the press-rooms of the leading newspapers of the United States and Europe are now provided, and which, from an endless roll or web of paper, print, cut and fold twenty-four thousand eight-page papers an hour. The honor of having devised and invented this almost human machine, which has made the cheap newspaper a possibility, and completely revolutionized the world of printing, belongs jointly to Colonel Richard M. Hoe and Mr. S. D. Tucker, one of his partners. Although many years ago the mammoth business which he had inherited from his father had made him a wealthy man, abundantly able, had he seen fit, to retire from its active management, Colonel Hoe to the day of his death was the actual head and manager of the great manufacturing house, giving his time and

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The old homestead built by his father in the early days of Mott Haven, and standing at the corner of Third Avenue and One Hundred and Thirty-fourth Street, still remains in his possession.

SAMUEL M. BIXBY.

Among the magic titles of the present day has become such an universal household of "Bixby," not alone in this coun of the world.

As a type of the Ameri Samuel M. Bixby has He was born at Hav for many years pa Westchester C with his re ter can r which w cation, l that hav

Fro ali

The first record of that of Nathaniel ar in the town of I corded a

name.

Boxford, in reared by the Bixbys. the box-trees—was the home o Bixby, and received its name from hi

Digitized by Google

S. M. Bixby

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Richd M. Hoe

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

inventive brain abundantly to the development of the business.

Robert Hoe, his father, and founder of the house of R. Hoe & Co., was a native of Lancashire, England, and was born at Hose, in 1784. At an early age he was apprenticed to learn the trade of a carpenter, but being of an ambitious disposition, he "bought his time" and came to New York at the age of nineteen. Arriving in the New World solitary and friendless, he accidentally met with the famous Grant Thorburn, who entertained him with hospitality and nursed him with care when prostrated with yellow fever. Some years after he married Rachel, daughter of Matthew Smith, of North Salem, Westchester County.

His brother-in-law, Peter Smith, invented an improved printing-press, and he was engaged with him in the manufacture. When the news came of the introduction of the flat-bed cylinder press in England, Mr. Hoe sent a skilled workman to examine the new invention, and upon his return he extended his manufacturing operations. Robert Hoe died in 1833, at the age of forty-nine, leaving the business to his son, Richard M. Hoe, whose name is now known world-wide as an inventor. He took his cousin, Matthew Smith, with Sereno Newton, as partners, and the firm-name was made R. Hoe & Co., which is still retained.

Colonel Richard M. Hoe had inherited his father's inventive skill, and he also developed rare executive ability. The business under his management prospered apace. Invention after invention followed rapidly from his fertile mind. One of his first inventions, was a new method of grinding circular saws, a mode which is now in general use. In 1847 he made the great discovery which must ever rank him as one of the foremost inventors of the age, and invented the "Lightning Press," better known as the "Rotary Press," in which the type is fixed upon the circumference of a cylinder. By this means from ten to twenty-five thousand impressions could be made in an hour; the new printing-machine superseded the former styles, and the press of Franklin's days became a thing of the past. His great discovery was still further perfected by the invention of the Web Perfecting Press, which prints on both sides of the paper, cuts it off and folds it, ready for the carrier, at the rate of twenty-four thousand copies an hour. When one sees this piece of mechanism in full running order, the thought that first arises is that in this machine human ingenuity and skill have reached their limit. The business of R. Hoe & Co. is of immense extent. A whole block on Grand Street, New York, is occupied with their manufactory, and the enterprise, which was begun on a very limited scale in 1805, in 1885 employed over one thousand hands, and the whole world acknowledges their superiority in the manufacture of machinery for perfecting the "Art preservative of Arts."

The children of Robert Hoe and Rachel Smith were Mary, wife of Rev. Ebenezer Seymour; Elizabeth, wife of Merlin Mead; Emeline, wife of Giles S. Ely; Rachel, wife of M. W. Dodd; Theodosia, wife of Rev. William S. Leavitt; Richard M., Robert and Peter S.

Colonel Richard M. Hoe was born September 12, 1812, and married Lucy, daughter of Josiah Gilbert. Their children are Emily, wife of Cyrus J. Lawrence; and Adeline, wife of De Witt C. Lawrence, brother of the former. Colonel Hoe was married a second time, to Mary S., daughter of Henry E. Corbin, of Virginia. Their children are Annie C., Mary S., wife of J. Henry Harper, and Fannie B., wife of John Harper.

Colonel Hoe purchased an estate at West Farms, of Christopher Spencer, about thirty years since. Upon this property he had an elegant residence, while the farm produces some of the finest specimens of blooded cattle that can be found in the county.

The attitude of Colonel Hoe toward those in his employ may properly be held up as a model. Nearly thirty years ago he established an evening school for the apprentices in the manufactory, where free instruction was given in those branches of study likely to be of the most practical service in properly developing their minds. For years he gave this school his personal attention, and up to the day of his death was deeply interested in its conduct, firmly believing, as has been well said, that "the diffusion of knowledge among the working classes makes the man a better mechanic and the mechanic a better man."

Personally, Mr. Richard M. Hoe is described by those who knew him intimately as having been a man of exceptionally cheerful temperament and gentle ways. He was devoted to his life-work, but at the same time was essentially domestic. He was a prominent member of St. Anne's Episcopal Church, situated near his residence. His name as an inventor, and the fame of the wonderful presses that he called into being, are known the world over. He died of heart-disease at Florence, Italy, in June, 1886.

WILLIAM REYNOLDS-BEAL.

William Reynolds-Beal, president of the Central Gas-Light Company of New York City, was born in Newark, New Jersey, May 13, 1838. His parents, Joseph R. and Elizabeth (Austen) Beal, were natives of England, and came to this country about 1830. His early life was passed in Newark, where he attended the school connected with Grace Episcopal Church, and graduated with high honor. His father, who was a man of education and intelligence, died at a comparatively early age, and the son, although offered a collegiate education, resolved to enter at once into active business. At the age of fourteen he became assistant in the office of the Newark Gas-Light Company, and afterwards removed to Elizabeth, where he was assistant to the engineer who built the gas-works. In 1855 he went to Yonkers, Westchester County, and took charge of the works of the Yonkers Gas Company, where he remained for eleven years, and left the company in a very flour-

ishing condition. While in Yonkers he was also extensively engaged in business as a general contractor, and employed large numbers of men and horses in local contracts. Mr. Beal took the initiative in organizing St. Paul's Episcopal Church, and assisted largely in building its church edifice, and was also a vestryman of the parish.

In 1866 he removed to Morrisania and became connected with the Westchester County Gas-Light Company, now known as the Central Gas-Light Company of New York City. From that time to the present, when Mr. Beal is the largest stockholder of the company, he has made the advancement and extension of this enterprise the principal business of his life. During the past fifteen years he has been its president, and under his able management its business and prosperity have been very largely increased. He was also the builder of the works of the Northern Gas-Light Company in the Twenty-fourth Ward of New York City, and is the consulting engineer and one of the directors of that company. His thorough knowledge of the details of the business of illumination by gas has enabled Mr. Beal to produce many inventions, whose value and usefulness are widely recognized. Among these may be mentioned "Beal's Hydraulic Main," which is now in use in several of the largest works of the country, while his latest invention is a "Scrubber" for purifying gas, which bids fair to secure recognition as a valuable improvement.

Foreseeing the rapid growth of the Twenty-third Ward of the city of New York, Mr. Beal purchased extensive tracts of real estate, and is the owner of many houses in that district, and is also the president of a recently organized "Land and Improvement Company." He was largely instrumental in the establishment of St. Mary's Episcopal Church, which is built upon land formerly owned by him. He is now a vestryman of St. Anne's Church, and intimately identified with its work.

The cause of popular education has found in him an active and liberal promoter. For six years he was a member of the board of trustees of Rutgers Female College, and is the present chairman of the board of school trustees of Morrisania. His connection with the public schools has been distinguished by the breadth of views which has been his characteristic in all other business affairs, and he has always felt an ardent interest in all that could advance their welfare and increase their usefulness. He has always been a strong advocate of the principles of the Republican party, but has declined repeated offers of nomination for political office. He is a member of the Masonic order, and was one of the charter members of the Gavel Lodge of Morrisania, and is also well known as an enthusiastic member of the Knickerbocker Yacht Club and of other organizations.

Mr. Beal married Miss Eleanor L., daughter of Thaddeus Bell, of Yonkers. Their children are Reynolds, Alice R., Thaddeus R., Mary R., Albert R. and Gifford R.

Mr. Beal is a fair representative of the class of business men who, without the advantages of inherited wealth, have established both fortune and high reputation by their own activity, foresight and energy. His is a well-rounded character, and as a manufacturer, inventor and man of business he is well known as among the most active and energetic of the public-spirited citizens of the Twenty-third Ward of the city of New York.

HUGH N. CAMP.

Hugh N. Camp, well known in the financial and social circles of New York, was born in Hanover, N. J., October 14, 1827, but has always resided in the city of New York. He is descended from an English family, which settled in Connecticut at a very early date, and his ancestors removed to New Jersey in 1660, where his grandfather, William, and his father, Isaac B., were born. The latter married Jeanette Ely, of Hanover, and they were the parents of four sons and two daughters. Hugh N., the fourth son, obtained his early education in the public schools in New York. At the age of sixteen he found a position as clerk in the employ of Booth & Edgar, commission merchants, on Front Street. With them he remained eleven years, and in 1854, in company with E. W. Brunsen and Charles Sherry, Jr., established a sugar refinery at Bristol, R. I., upon a capital of forty thousand dollars, which was principally furnished by his former employers and Francis Skiddy. This was conducted very successfully till 1868, when the partners retired on account of ill health, and Mr. Camp, with two clerks as partners, continued the business until 1870, when the firm was compelled to suspend on account of financial reverses. Mr. Camp settled its affairs in a satisfactory manner, and in 1871 established a real estate business in New York, which he continued till 1883, when he relinquished it in order to give his time and attention to matters of more importance. In 1866 he became connected with the St Joseph Lead Company, and was elected treasurer. In 1882 he established the Lehigh Valley Cement Company, of which he is now president, and in 1884 became vice-president of the Title Guarantee and Trust Company of New York.

Mr. Camp has long been prominently connected with many institutions of which New York is so justly proud, having been for twenty-seven years trustee and treasurer of the Five Points House of Industry and for twenty-eight years trustee of St. Luke's Hospital. He was also one of the directors of the Mercantile Library and secretary of Clinton Hall Association from 1862 till the present time. For eight years he was director of the Mechanics' Bank and for seven years director of the Mutual Life Insurance Company. He was also one of the originators and first trustees of Woodlawn Cemetery and has

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

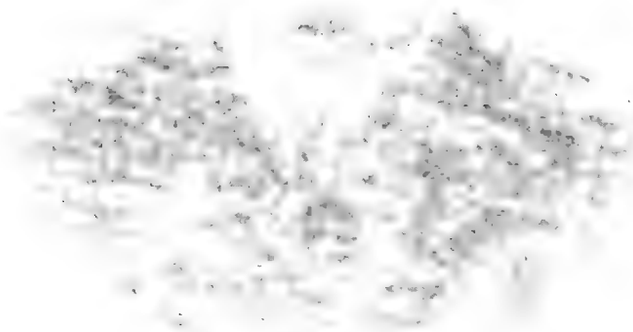
Wm R. Steel

Digitized by Google

Yours very truly
Hugh L. Camp

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



been for several years a member of the Chamber of Commerce.

Prominently connected with the Republican party, he has been a member of the Union League from its commencement. He is also one of the oldest members of the Century Club, so well known in literary and artistic circles.

In 1861 he purchased an estate in Westchester County. This place, which has since been his home, is situated on the north side of the highway leading from Morris' Dock to the old McComb's Dam road, and is a portion of the Morris farm in the old Manor of Fordham. Taking an active interest in the cause of education, he was for six years president of the School Board in the town of West Farms. He is a member and an active and liberal supporter of St. James' Episcopal Church at Fordham and one of the present vestry.

In 1883 he was appointed by Mayor Edson, of New York, a member of the Aqueduct Commission to determine as to the necessity of a new aqueduct and to decide upon the route and manner of building, a position of great importance and responsibility.

Mr. Camp married Elizabeth D., daughter of John McKesson, of New York, in 1854. They are the parents of eight children, seven of whom are still living,—Edward B., Maria L. (wife of P. P. Williams), John McK., Frederick E., Alice, Emily, Hugh N., Jr., and William H.

In the social, financial and political society of New York the name of Mr. Camp is widely known and justly popular. There are few who can boast of a more extensive acquaintance or a more intimate knowledge with the varied phases of life and manners as they are seen in the great city.

COLONEL M. O. DAVIDSON.

Colonel Davidson was born in Plattsburg, Clinton County, N. Y., March 28, 1819, and at the time of his death, September 1, 1872, was nearly fifty-four years of age.

He was a son of Dr. Oliver Davidson and Margaret M. Davidson, and was one of a gifted family, his sisters Margaret and Lucretia having attracted much attention from the literary world of their time by their brilliant poetical efforts.

His professional career and services began in his eighteenth year.

One of his first appointments was on the Croton Aqueduct, where he served some years. He was subsequently employed upon the Erie Railway, and after that upon a road in Canada. Thence he went to Cuba in 1842, remaining there nearly a year on the Coliseo Railroad. Upon his return to this country, in 1843, and for ten years after, he was engaged in the Cumberland coal region of Maryland, which he was principally instrumental in developing. While there he constructed an inclined plane, opened and worked the mines, and made many experiments in machinery and in the combustion of coal that have been of value to the profession.

In the year 1857 Colonel Davidson went to Havana, Cuba, under an appointment as engineer-in-chief of the Havana Railways, an office he filled with great credit to himself and advantage to the company, until he resigned his position in the year 1863.

During the period Colonel Davidson was in Cuba he reconstructed the entire length of the nearly worn-out road, some one hundred and ten miles long, elevating it from a condition of almost complete uselessness to a first-class railway in all respects. The improvements introduced by him covered everything relating to permanent way, bridges, passenger, freight and water stations, as well as a complete revolution in equipment. He also constructed thirty-six miles of new and heavy line, reflecting great credit upon himself, especially for his wisdom and energy in completing in time some heavy rock-cutting and bridging, when a failure as to time would have been equal to loss of franchise to the company.

During his stay in Cuba he was often called upon to arbitrate delicate questions between conflicting interests, and his decisions were always looked upon as perfect and just solutions of the difficulties to be settled.

Shortly after Colonel Davidson's return from Cuba he was appointed chief engineer and superintendent of the Arizona Mining Company. He was in Arizona between two and three years in the exercise of these duties, and was at the same time United States Indian agent for the Territory.

In the years 1865 and 1866 he was much occupied in the question of rapid transit for the city of New York, and was commissioned to proceed to London to observe and report upon the system of constructing and operating the underground railways in use there.

In 1867 he was named chief engineer of the New Haven and Derby Railroad, a short line involving many interesting points in location and construction, which he treated in the most successful manner.

From the year 1867 to the time of his death he was engaged in public works in Westchester County, N. Y., embracing a system of avenues, which he skillfully developed as chief engineer, and which have been of great value to the county.

In 1869 and 1870 a portion of his attention was taken up in the consideration of such questions as the construction of the Shore Line Railway Bridge across the Connecticut River and in the project of the Hudson River Highland Suspension Bridge, submitted to boards of engineers, of which he was a member.

In concluding this sketch much might be said touching the excellent traits of character he possessed in a pre-eminent degree, endearing him to all with whom he came in contact.

In his public life as a civil engineer he was an

ornament to the profession, and in his private life he was the model of a Christian gentleman.

HENRY B. HALL.

Henry B. Hall was born in London March 11, 1808, and at the age of fourteen was articled as a pupil to Benjamin Smith, known by his works for "Boydell's Shakespeare Gallery." After completing his studies with Mr. Smith he was engaged by Henry Myer, the favorite engraver of Sir Thomas Lawrence, from whom he derived much benefit in his profession. He was subsequently engaged for four years with H. T. Ryall, Engraver to the Queen, and during that time engraved all the portraits in the large plates of that engraver, including the very celebrated one entitled "Coronation of Queen Victoria," after Sir George Hayter.

For many years Mr. Hall's thoughts had been attracted towards the United States as a new and great field for art, and in the year 1850 he, with his eldest son, made a visit to New York City, leaving the remainder of his family in England. Soon after his arrival in New York he was met in a most friendly spirit by many artists and publishers of note, and among the latter the late G. P. Putnam, who, in addition to being among the great publishers of that time, was a devoted patron of art, and such offers were made to Mr. Hall as determined him upon making his home here. His family joined him the following fall and he settled in Hoboken until the spring of 1851, when he removed to Morrisania and occupied a house on Union Avenue, near Wall Street, Woodstock. In 1854 he purchased a house on George Street, near Boston Avenue, where he passed the remainder of his life, and died on April 25, 1885.

Among his well-known portraits, for which he was particularly noted, are twelve separate portraits of Washington, after all the celebrated artists and sculptors; and etchings of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, done for private parties and printed exclusively for their use; also an etching of the well-known American composer, George F. Bristow, and one of himself, in 1872, which is the best likeness extant.

His larger works were very numerous, including "Washington and family after hunting," and "Washington at Mount Vernon."

Mr. Hall had eight children—four sons and four daughters: Anne, married Ed. H. Knight, and died in Brooklyn in 1858 and her husband in 1872, leaving a son, Ed. H. (now a resident of Morrisania), and two daughters; Emily, married William Momberger, of Morrisania, a lithographic artist and designer; Henry B., living in Morrisania, married and has three children living; Charles B. (same), has five children; Alfred B. (same), has five children; Ernest (same), has three children; Alice and Eliza, unmarried, all living in Morrisania.

Henry B., Charles B. and Alfred B. are all engravers and have been established in business together for many years, and are now located at 22 Park Place, New York. Ernest is a justice of the City Court of New York and worthily represents the old township.

All the sons and daughters have remained near together in Morrisania and have for many years been identified with its growth.

CHAPTER XXII.

WEST FARMS.[1]

BY FORDHAM MORRIS.

THE town of West Farms was formed from the town of Westchester by the act of Assembly of May 13, 1846. It lies upon the Sound and along Harlem River in the southern part of the county. Bronx River forms its eastern boundary and Mill Brook flows through its centre. The surface is rolling, the ridges extending north and south. Within its boundaries are the villages of West Farms, Fordham, Williams' Bridge, Tremont, Fairmount, Belmont, Claremont, Monterey, Mount Eden, Mount Hope and Woodstock. In 1874 it was annexed to New York City, and the extension of streets and railways is rapidly converting it from a suburban to an urban community. It originally embraced the town of Morrisania, which was set off from it in 1855. Within its boundaries are numerous splendid residences, some fine church edifices and denominational institutions.

Andrew Findlay was the first, and Francis Barretto the second, supervisor elected in West Farms after its creation as a town. In 1847 the number of residents subject to taxation was returned as 270 and the assessed valuation of property as $1,193,920. In 1848 the taxables numbered 341 and the assessment amounted to $1,282,570, producing a tax of $7094. Andrew Findlay was elected supervisor in 1848 and 1849. In the latter year the taxables had increased to 659 and the property valuation to $1,391,150, the tax being $8435. John B. Haskin served as supervisor in 1850 and 1851. West Farms then had 1114 inhabitants and their property was assessed at $1,603,602. Mr. Haskin was succeeded in 1852 by Charles Bathgate. A prison was built in that year and the property valuation rose to $3,535,162, owned by 2814 persons. In 1853 Wm. N. Lewis was elected supervisor, and his successors were John B. Haskin (1857–60); James Davis (1861–64); Walter Roche, from 1865 to the date of annexation to the city of New York.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

CATHOLIC INSTITUTIONS AND CHURCHES.—One of the most notable educational institutions in the Unit-

[1] The history of West Farms, up to the time of its separation from the town of Westchester, will be found in the chapter devoted to the latter town.

Digitized by Google

H B Hall N.Y.
1872

H. B. Hall

Digitized by Google

ed States is located at Fordham. This is St. John's College, which is under the care of priests of the Society of Jesus. It was incorporated as a university in 1846, but had been established as a college in 1841. The incorporators and first trustees were Revs. Jacob Harvey, Peter A. Hargous, John McKeon, James R. Bayley, John Harley, John McCloskey, William Starrs, Hugh Kelley and David Bacon. It is empowered to confer literary honors, degrees and diplomas, and is subject to visitation by the regents of the university of the State. The grounds, containing nearly two hundred acres, extend from Mill Brook to the Bronx, and on the south side the college is approached by a handsome driveway shaded by magnificent elms and maples. The western portion of the grounds were purchased about 1835–36 by the Catholic Diocesan Theological Seminary. The old Corsa, Watts and Brevoort homestead still stands on the premises and is now used as the infirmary, while Rose Hill, the former residence of, and built by, Mr. Mowatt, of New York, a fine large stone building with brick wings, which have been subsequently added, includes the residences of the professors, the reception parlor, refectory and chapel.

St. John's Hall, originally used as the Theological Seminary, is on the westernmost part of the premises. It is a Gothic building and was erected about 1836–41. It is now devoted to the class-rooms, dormitories and school-room of the students of the Preparatory Department. The entrance porch of this hall is a fine specimen of architecture, the arch resting upon pediments very curiously carved in stone representing the eagle of Saint John, the ox of Saint Matthew, the angel of Saint Luke and lion of Saint Mark.

The ground-floor of this hall is now occupied by the laboratory and chemical lecture-room of the college and the museum, containing mineralogical and conchological specimens, electric, optical and other scientific implements. The collection of corals is as fine as any in this country. The class-rooms and study-room are cheerful and well ventilated, and the dormitories models of neatness and order.

Just east of St. John's Hall stands the Chapel of St. Mary, which is used as the parish church for those in the vicinity of the Catholic faith. It was built about 1841, and is a well-proportioned structure. It is ornamented on the east and west sides with six brilliantly-colored stained-glass windows, imported many years ago from Europe. Saints Peter and Paul flank the altar, and the four evangelists fill up the other well-turned Gothic windows. One of the fathers officiates as parish priest. The infirmary, just west of the chapel, has the extensive garden of the college in its rear, which is kept in most beautiful order under the direction of one of the lay brethren. Another lay brother has the control of the infirmary, Dr. Purroy, of Fordham, being the attending physician. The Rose Hill house has, on the right of the entrance-hall, a large, well-proportioned reception-room. Its walls are hung with pictures representing sacred subjects, by Mexican and South American artists. The president's reception-room, to the left of the hall, has in it several very fine paintings. On the eastern wall is a picture by Louis Lang, representing Mary, Queen of Scots, bidding adieu to her maids of honor just before her execution. On the south wall hang two panel pictures of the Virgin and Child and a fair copy of the Annunciation of the Virgin, the original of which is in the Quirinal at Rome. There is also a fair copy, by Mols, of Rubens' "Descent from the Cross;" and on the west wall, in the old German style, a beautiful Virgin, surrounded by twelve Sisters of the Ursuline Order, a work displaying fine coloring and reverential feeling. A portrait of the founder of the Order of Jesuits (Ignatius Loyola), by a Mexican artist, also hangs in this room, and the motto of the Order is displayed, on an open book before him, in the following order: "*Ad majorem gloriam dei*," though the usual order is "*Ad majorem dei gloriam*." The north wing of the Rose Hill house contains the offices and refectory,—a fine room, rather gaudily frescoed and capable of seating from three hundred to four hundred people, without crowding. Here the students of all the departments take their meals, under the supervision of the prefect of discipline. Loyola's portrait is also displayed in this room.

The south wing contains the college chapel. It is a roomy, pleasant place of worship, plainly but tastefully frescoed, not many years since, by lay Brother Rache. The organ was built by Erben. Over the altar is a figure of our Saviour, flanked right and left by the Holy Virgin and St. Joseph. Two small kit-kats, on each side of the altar, represent Saints Aloysius and Stanislaus, the patron saints of youth. The rear wing of Rose Hill contains, on the second floor, the library, which is provided with some twenty thousand volumes of works on history and theology. There is also a circulating library for the students. The great hall of the college, a new building, is devoted exclusively to the students of the upper classes.

In it are the gymnasium, reading-room, billiard-rooms, class-rooms, dormitories and a very fine school or study-room. The dormitories are in the upper stories. The school-room is provided at the east end with a stage and scenery, used for declamations and dramatic representations by the students. The students compose the orchestra, as the college affords instruction on nearly all kinds of musical instruments. A portion of the building is devoted to music-rooms, where the corps of musical instructors can conduct their classes without the sounds of the different instruments interfering with each other.

So soon as funds can be procured the college buildings will be enlarged and the old ones pulled down. The college is attended by students from all parts of the United States, Mexico, Central America, South America, Cuba, Hayti and other West India Islands, and even by a few from Europe. It has a

Digitized by Google

Preparatory Department, in which boys from ten years upwards are prepared for the higher classes of the collegiate course. By the catalogue of 1884–85, it appears that eighty-three pupils are in attendance on this course. The instruction furnished in the collegiate course is of two kinds—classical and commercial. The curriculum of the classical course takes the student through a course of Latin, Greek, English history, geography, chemistry, mathematics, mechanics and religious instruction, which fits him for the under-graduate classes. The latter, corresponding to the freshman, sophomore, junior and senior classes in other colleges, is divided into classics, belles-lettres, rhetoric and philosophy. A graduate from this course receives the degree of Bachelor of Arts. There is also a post-graduate course. The graduates from this course receive the degree of Master of Arts. The commercial course embraces all the branches necessary for an English education—English grammar, history, geography, book-keeping, penmanship, commercial law, elocution, chemistry, natural history, philosophy, both mental and moral, mechanics, astronomy, geology and religious instruction. There are also optional studies. All students are compelled to speak the English language. German, Spanish and drawing are also taught, and a special scientific course has also been established. The course is for three years, at the end of which, after a successful examination, the degree of Bachelor of Science is awarded. By the catalogue for 1884–85 it appears that there are one hundred and ninety-nine students attending the collegiate course. The present principal of the college is Rev. Thomas J. Campbell, who is assisted by a faculty of seventeen professors. Near the college is the institution for deaf mutes, presided over by Miss Morgan, and in the village of West Farms is also a chapel of the Roman Catholic denomination, an offshoot of St. Augustine's of Morrisania.

Episcopal Churches.—The parish of St. James, Fordham, was formed in 1853, by a meeting called on July 5th of that year, at the residence of William Alexander Smith. Lewis G. Morris and Mr. Smith were elected wardens, and Oswald Cammann, Francis McFarlan, W. W. Waldron, George B. Butler, Samuel R. Trowbridge, Gulian L. Dashwood, William O. Giles and Nathaniel P. Bailey, vestrymen. The church was consecrated November 4, 1865. It is constructed of Westchester granite with red sandstone trimmings. It is adorned with several very fine stained-glass windows. The four evangelists flank the centre window in the chancel, which represents the calling of St. James. Back of one of the reading desks, on the south side of the church, is a window representing the healing of the lame man by Saint Peter and Saint John. This window is a memorial to the late Dr. George Philip Cammann, one of the founders of the church and inventor of the stethoscope which bears his name and which he nobly presented as a free gift to the medical profession. Over the font, which stands in the transept, is a memorial window to Oswald Cammann, Jr., representing the baptism of the Savior, and in the south aisle is a memorial window to Oswald Cammann, Sr., one of the benefactors of the church. The lectern, in the form of an eagle with outstretched wings, from which the Scriptures are read, was also a memorial gift to the parish from the Cammann family, in memory of the wife of Mr. Oswald Cammann, who survived her husband a few years. On the altar is a cross, a memorial of Maria Cammann Mali, the wife of William Weyman Mali, who has also followed her. The organ was the gift of the late Henry W. T. Mali. In the east wall of the transept are memorial windows to Miles Standish Davidson and Kate Miles Davidson, children of the late Colonel M. O. Davidson, and lineal descendants of the famous New England soldier, Miles Standish.

In the west side of the transept is a memorial to Catharine and Eliza Howell, infant children of Richard Stockton Howell and Elizabeth Holsman, and the northwest window is a memorial to the late Charles Drake, M.D., erected by his sister, Mrs. Seaman, of King's Bridge. A wheel window in the south transept was placed there in memory of Mary Bailey Woolsey, the wife of Theodorus Bailey Woolsey, of New York, and daughter of Nathaniel P. Bailey and Eliza Lorillard. The Rev. Dr. Tiffany, a former pastor of the church, presented the bell. The rectory has just been completed and is a substantial, tasteful building. The chapel, built of wood, also stands in the church grounds. The west part of it was originally used as the district school-house for the children of Fordham, but it then stood on the Fordham Landing road, southwest from the church, and was removed to the present site many years since. Following is a list of the rectors of the parish from its foundation.

1854.—Rev. Joshua Wenner, resigned.

1863.—Rev. Thomas Ritchie, D.D., resigned.

1867.—Rev. Charles C. Tiffany, D.D., resigned and now the rector of Zion Church, New York City.

1871.—Rev. Mylton Maury, who resigned.

1875 down to May, 1885.—Rev. Joseph Blanchard, who resigned, having been called to church in Detroit, Mich.

At present there is a vacancy in the rectorship, though the vestry have called a gentleman to fill Mr. Blanchard's place.[1]

September 23, 1844, a meeting was held of the congregation or society commonly called Grace Church, in the town of Westchester, at St. Peter's Church. The object of the meeting was to incorporate the new church at West Farms. Captain William H. Spencer, U. S. N., and Philip M. Lydie were elected wardens, and Peter Lorillard, Richard Crother, Dr. William Bayard, Charles S. Valentine, Benjamin Lee, Jacob N. Van Winkle, William B. Hoffman and Robert J. Turnbull were elected vestry-

[1] Since filled by Rev. Mr. Holt.

Digitized by Google

men. They assumed the name for the corporation of the "Rector, church wardens and vestrymen of Grace Church, in the town of Westchester."

The edifice was a handsome Gothic structure, of wood, and was consecrated June 28, 1847. The first rector was Rev. Washington Rodman. This building has been abandoned and a new congregation formed under the old name. It is situated on the north side of Locust Avenue, and has just been consecrated.

The "House of Rest for Consumptives," which is under the patronage of the Episcopal Church, is situated at Mount Hope, a short distance from Tremont Station. It stands on about an acre of ground. The house is capable of accommodating about forty patients. It is a hospital purely for the treatment of consumption. In 1884 the house had under treatment one hundred and thirty-two patients. At the end of the year there were thirty-two patients in the hospital. Of the one hundred and thirty-two patients, forty-eight were Protestant Episcopalians, forty-four Roman Catholics, eleven Methodists, seven Baptists, six Lutherans, two Dutch Reformed, twelve Presbyterians, one Congregationalist, one Hebrew. Its policy is to open the door to the poor and as the above figures show, there are no restrictions as to creed.

The "Home for Incurables," also in charge of the Episcopal Church, stands near by. This institution has been in existence for the past eighteen years. Its inmates are those whose diseases are past relief, and the main object of the institution is to make the last days of those who can never hope to be well again as happy and as comfortable as possible. The old Lorillard house, in which it was first located, was found too small for the growing number of patients, and a large and handsome brick structure has been erected, but the present building is found to be inadequate to the demands for admission and the board of managers are about erecting a new pavilion for the accommodation of sixty-six more patients. The total capacity of the institution is forty. It is under the care of a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church, but no distinction as to creed is made with reference to the admission of the inmates. It is under the direction of the following board of managers: President, Benjamin H. Field; Vice-Presidents, Martin E. Greene, William H. Guion; Treasurer, George Sherman; Secretary, H. M. McLaren; Superintendent, Israel C. Jones, M.D.; Physician, Archibald Campbell, M.D.; Chaplain, Rev. Thomas Drumms.

THE DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH.—South of the Jockey Club grounds is the Dutch Reformed Church of the ancient Manor of Fordham. The church was originally organized in 1696 by the ministers, elders and deacons of the Reformed Dutch Church and its first minister was Dominie John Montaign. It was built at the junction of the old McComb's Dam road and the Fordham Landing road, and stood near the present residence of Moses Devoe. (See note at end of chapter as to Devoe family.) In 1801 a new structure was built on the present site and in 1872 the present building was erected. The most conspicuous benefactor of the church in its modern history has been Mr. H. B. Claflin, the New York merchant prince, whose country-seat is not far distant. Mainly at his expense, it has recently been enlarged and beautified. The following is a list of its clergy:

1696.—Rev. John Montaign.
1707.—Rev. Henricus Boyse.
1776.—Rev. Dominie John Peter Tetard, a chaplain with General Montgomery in his ill fated expedition to Quebec.
1802.—Rev. John Jackson.
1840.—Rev. Peter I. Van Pelt, D.D.
1846.—Rev. William Cahoon.
1850.—Rev. Robert Van Amburgh.
1853.—Rev. John H. Bevier.
1855.—Rev. James Beattie.
1864.—Rev. James Bolton.
1866.—Rev. James B. Hardenburgh, D.D.
1869.—Rev. John Truman.
1874.—Rev. William Brush.
1876.—Rev. D. Lawrence Jewett.
1876.—Rev. William Anderson, the present incumbent.

There is also a Dutch Reformed Church in the village of West Farms. It was organized in 1839 and incorporated in 1840, March 16th. The first elders were Thomas Butler, George Wilson and Abijah Rogers and the deacons James P. Fitch, James G. Rowland and Stephen Kelly. The ministers have been,—

1839 . . . . . Rev. George Bourne.
1842 . . . . . Rev. Barnabas V. Collins.
1845 . . . . . Rev. John Simonson.
1852 . . . . . Rev. Philip Burkhardt.
1856 . . . . . Rev. Polhemus Van Wyke.
1867 . . . . . Rev. Evert Van Slyke.
1871 . . . . . Rev. John Simonson.
Present Incumbent . . . . . Rev. James Bolton.

METHODIST CHURCHES.—The Methodist Episcopal Church is a neat wooden structure on Marion Avenue, Fordham. It was built in 1858, and is owned by the Church Extension Society. The congregation was incorporated April 14th of that year, Jacob Berrian, (See note at end of this chapter as to Berrian family,) Benjamin Westervelt, Benjamin F. Ferris, Peter Demarest and Richard White being the first trustees. The first pastor was Rev. Thomas Davis, who was supplied by the Local Preachers' Society. In 1870 the then pastor, Rev. Jacob Washburn, succeeded in freeing the church from debt. In 1876 Rev. A. Coons was pastor; 1879, Rev. W. G. Browning; 1880, Rev. T. B. Smith, who in April, 1883, was followed by Rev. Thomas S. Bond, the present incumbent. The congregation in 1885 numbered one hundred members and thirty-five communicants, and was in a flourishing condition. The stewards were John V. Briggs, Charles Y. Campbell and Benjamin Westervelt.

On the west side of Washington Avenue, between One Hundred and Seventy-sixth and One Hundred and Seventy-seventh Streets, on ground donated by Louis K. Osborn, stands the Methodist Episcopal Church of Tremont. It is a wooden building of one story and basement, the latter being the Sunday-

Digitized by Google

school room. The congregation was formed in 1853, and began worship in the old stone school-house now occupied as a police-station. After Mr. Osborn had given the lot for a church, he and Peter Buckhout and other active Methodists collected money for a building fund. In 1855 the congregation was incorporated, and Jacob Buckhout, Peter Buckhout, Henry L. Jolly, Andrew Foote and William G. Lent were made trustees. Messrs. Jolly, Lent and Peter Buckhout were appointed the building committee and erected the church at a cost of $2000. A parsonage was built at the corner of Marble Street and Washington Avenue. A new church, from the designs of Architect L. B. Valk, is about to be built, the land having been bought and $3000 contributed. The church has a membership of two hundred and fifty-one, over one hundred having united with it since 1885. The Sabbath-school numbers three hundred and forty pupils and thirty-five officers and teachers. The stewards are L. K. Osborn, G. D. W. Clocke, John Greatcap, W. E. Andrews, David Woodall, W. L. Johnson, W. W. Osborn, T. W. Lewis and George Weeks. The trustees are A. T. Buckhout, J. H. Buckbee, T. C. Lewis, R. J. Lomas, Jr., G. Nonemaker, A. P. Shove, W. R. Holder and G. D. W. Clocke.

The following is the list of pastors:

1857–60	Rev. Solomon C. Perry.
1860–61	Rev. John A. Sillick.
1861–63	Rev. Valentine Buck.
1863–64	Rev. A. C. Field.
1865–69	Rev. John W. Ackerley.
1869–71	Rev. N. B. Thompson.
1871–73	Rev. P. R. Brown.
1873–74	Rev. A. N. Osborne.
1874–75	Rev. T. B. Smith.
1875–76	Rev. Thomas La Mont.
1876–79	Rev. D. L. Marks.
1879–82	Rev. F. Bartome.
1882–83	Rev. N. B. Thompson.
1884—	Rev. Philip Germond, present pastor.

THE BAPTIST CHURCH.—On the east side of Washington Avenue, in Tremont, the Baptists have just erected a new church. For several years the Baptists of Tremont worshipped in a building which stood on Mount Hope, to the west of the Harlem Railroad, but that congregation was dissolved and the lot on which the church stood was sold, and out of the avails the present lot on Washington Avenue was purchased. For a year or more the congregation have attended services in the Young Men's Christian Association building at Tremont. The new building stands on a lot fifty four by one hundred. It is semi-cruciform and built of stone in the old English style of architecture. It will be finished in the interior in hard woods and will be ornamented with stained-glass windows. The Rev. Frank Fletcher, A.M., of Madison University, is the enterprising pastor, this being the third church which he has built since he commenced his ministry. Before coming to this parish Mr. Fletcher ministered at Brewster's, in Putnam County, Paterson, N. J., and Brooklyn. The lot on which the church stands is paid for.

ST. JOSEPH'S CATHOLIC CHURCH.—This church and parsonage are situated on the west side of Washington Avenue, Tremont. The congregation was organized about 1873, and the church was built for the purpose of accommodating the German-speaking citizens of Tremont, the priest always preaching in that language. But it was found that the number of attendants was not sufficient to warrant the exclusive use of German, and at this time the preaching is in English. The church is built of stone and brick. Rossi, of New York, was the architect, John Kirby the carpenter, and Francis Druhe the mason, both the latter being residents of Tremont. The church stands on a lot fifty by one hundred, and north of it the pretty parsonage sets back from the street, with an attractive flower-garden in front. The church, which is Gothic in its architecture, is ornamented in the interior with frescoes by Aviati, also a resident of the vicinity. At the back of the high altar is a representation of St. Joseph carrying the Holy Child. St. Patrick flanks him on the right and St. Boniface on the left. Two frescoes of the Resurrection and Ascension also adorn the chancel. The bishop's chair was donated by Mr. William Haskin, for many years one of the deputy county clerks of New York County, and a resident of the old township. Over the windows in the clere-story are frescoes of the Twelve Apostles. The church is lighted by stained-glass windows at the sides, each the gift of some member of the parish or of the neighborhood. With the exception of three of the windows, in which the names of the donors had been effaced by the breaking of the glass, the following is the list of donors: Franz Druhe and family, two windows; J. Ortmann, John Kerby, M. J. Heimburger, Benedeck Bernsseer, Hugh Ferrigan, August Druhe, St. Joseph's Verein of Melrose, August Rickersfeld, Mr. O'Brien, Mr. Donohue and Rev. Joseph Stumpe, of St. Mary's, Melrose. A window was presented by three persons who did not wish their names to appear. It is designated "Charity." The organ was built by Jardine & Sons. At the west end of the church, near the confessional, is a representation of the votive grotto and chapel at Lourdes, which was made by Father Tonner, a former pastor of the church. In the basement is a large hall for school-room and festivals, which is provided with a stage for the representations of the Dramatic Society. The parish is growing. Its average attendance on Sundays is four hundred; communicants, two hundred and fifty; baptisms last year (1884-85), forty. The rectors of the parish have been as follows: Father Long, now removed to New York; Father Tonner, who was succeeded by Rev. Peter Farrell, a graduate of the Diocesan Theological Seminary, of Troy, the present incumbent.

THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—On August 31, 1814, the Presbyterian congregation was incorporated

Digitized by Google

commenced his ministry. [illegible]

parish Mr. Fletcher ministered at Brewster's, in Put- | 1814, the Presbyterian congregation was incorporated

Digitized by Google

Danl. Mapes

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

as "The First Presbyterian Church in the village of West Farms," and Robert Givan, Caleb Pell, Ebenezer Waterbury, James Bathgate, James Renwick and John B. Gillespie were elected trustees. The church was erected in 1815 and occupies the highest ground in the village. These are the pastors,—

1815	Rev. Isaac Lewis.
1819	Rev. Truman Osborne.
1821	Rev. Samuel Nott.
1823	Rev. Joseph B. Felt.
1823	Rev. Thomas S. Wickes.
1824	Rev. Ithamer Hillsbury.
1824	Rev. E. D. Wells.
1825	Rev. J. D. Wickham.
1828	Rev. George Stebbins.
1835	Rev. William Gray.
1836	Rev. M. I. Adam.
1841	Rev. James B. Ramsey.
1846	Rev. Charles Moase.
1847	Rev. Isaac Watts Platt.
1858	Rev. George Nixon.
1876	Rev. C. W. Adams.
1880	Rev. Willard Scott, present pastor.

The Union Presbyterian Church of Tremont was incorporated April 7, 1855. The first trustees were John Thain, John B. Fraser and Warren Bonney.

Forth and Morris

BIOGRAPHY.

DANIEL MAPES.

Southold, Long Island, is one of the oldest English towns in the State, and was settled in the fall of 1640. Among the earliest of the settlers was Thomas Mapes, of English descent, the ancestor of the many families of the name found in various portions of the country. Thomas Mapes was not only one of the pioneers in Southold, but was also interested in the settlement of the town of Brookhaven, Long Island, and had a share in the various divisions of land in that town. He married Sarah, daughter of William Purrier, also among the first settlers of Southold. In 1683, Thos. Mapes was made freeman of the colony of Connecticut, of which Southold was a part at that time. He was taxed for £244, which shows him to have been a man of means. He went to Brookhaven in 1655, but returned to Southold in 1657, and died there in 1686. He possessed much land in Southold and one part known as "Mapes' Neck," was owned by his descendants for three generations. He left nine children,—Thomas, William, Jabez, Jonathan, Abigail (wife of John Terrell), Sarah (wife of William Coleman), Mary (wife of Barnabas Wines), Naomi and Rebecca (wife of Thomas Young, son of Rev. John Young, the first minister of Southold.)

These children have a large number of descendants. Jonathan, the fourth son, was born in 1671 and died in 1747. He married Hester Horton in 1696 and had two sons,—Jonathan and Benjamin.

Jonathan was the father of John Mapes, born March 10, 1766, and married Julia Ann Wood, January 24, 1793. Their children were Samuel, born June 19, 1794, who has no living descendants; Anna, born December 7, 1796, who died unmarried; Daniel, the subject of this sketch, born February 23, 1800; John, born September 10, 1802 (he had two daughters, Charlotte and Caroline, who are still living); Leonard, born November 16, 1804; Benjamin, born March 24, 1810, (he left three children,—Cornelia, wife of Theodore Fitch, Emily, wife of Frederick Strang; and Charles, who married Clara Masters); James, born October 7, 1812, married Rachel Archer and had four children,—Leonard, John A., Emily and Anna.

John Mapes, the father of this family, died in 1836 and his wife died in 1840.

After the death of the parents, Daniel Mapes and his sister Anna, owing to their age and great decision of character, became the acknowledged heads of the family, and by their industry, perseverance and integrity exerted a very salutary influence in the community in which they resided. In early life Daniel engaged in mercantile pursuits in the village of West Farms and for half a century was one of the most prominent and successful business men in the southern portion of the county, amassing a large fortune, which he dispensed in the latter years of his life in acts of beneficence and charity, making liberal contributions to the educational institutions of the Reformed Church at New Brunswick, N. J., Cornell University, and the Syrian College at Beirut. From his early youth he was noted for strictly temperate habits, to which he attributed his uninterrupted good health for more than four-score years.

He was for many years a useful and honored member of the Reformed Church at West Farms and manifested his attachment to it by his munificent gift of the Mapes Parsonage, as well as by his liberal contributions to its support. On the 20th of January, 1884, he fell asleep in Christ, full of years, riches and honors, and was buried in Woodlawn Cemetery.

LEONARD MAPES.

Leonard Mapes, the fifth child of John Mapes, was born November 16, 1804, and married Mary, daughter of William Archer. Their children were,—first, Sarah, wife of Hampton Brown, of Ulster County; second, Daniel, a merchant and resident of West Farms, who married Evadna, daughter of Matson Arnow; third, William, a merchant and resident of West Farms, who married Ida Arnow; fourth, Mary A., wife of Edward Myers; fifth, Henry C., who married Susan, daughter of Daniel Tier, and is now living in Westchester; sixth, Harriet, wife of George Shepherd; seventh, John S., who married

Digitized by Google

Ella, daughter of John Frost, and is now living at the old homestead at Westchester; eighth, Catharine A., unmarried, resides in West Farms.

EDWARD B. FELLOWS.

Among the men who have been prominent in the business circles of New York City there are few who have been longer before the public than Mr. Edward B. Fellows, the president of Rutgers' Fire Insurance Company.

Descended from a long line of New England ancestry, his great-grandfather, John Fellows, was among the early settlers in Salisbury, N. H., and the latter's sons were soldiers in the War of the Revolution. One of these sons (Richard) married Rachel Scribner, and their oldest son (Benjamin) was the father of Edward B., and, in his early years, was one of the pupils of Daniel Webster when he was a school-teacher in Salisbury, his native town.

Benjamin Fellows married his cousin, Hannah, daughter of Daniel Fellows, and Edward B. was born June 20, 1811. In 1817 he removed with his parents to Tunbridge, Vt., where he attended school and was subsequently a student at the academy at Royalton. Upon arriving at manhood, like most Yankee boys, he resolved to seek his fortune abroad, and, in 1831, went to the Wyoming Valley, in Pennsylvania. Here he engaged in teaching school, which he continued for a year or two, and afterwards obtained a position as clerk in a store. In 1834 he came to New York and entered a dry-goods store as clerk, and a few years later established business on his own account. Becoming interested in politics, he was for several years collector of taxes for the Fourth Ward, and, during the administration of James K. Polk, held a position in the New York Custom-House under Collector Cornelius W. Lawrence.

The most important event in the life of Mr. Fellows was his connection with the cause of education and the establishment of the public schools of the city, which, previous to 1842, were under the direction of the Public School Society. In 1841 an act was passed authorizing the election of trustees and commissioners. Mr. Fellows was elected one of the trustees for the Fourth Ward, and was afterwards a member of the Board of Education. In the exciting controversy concerning the reading of the Scriptures in the public schools he took the position which experience has shown to be the wisest, and, by making a complete separation between religious and secular instruction, has removed from the Catholic portion of the community all just cause of complaint.

While he held the office of commissioner he was the first to introduce resolutions for the establishment of evening schools for the benefit of apprentices and others whose vocations prevented their attendance in the day-schools, and this in itself is enough to justly entitle him to the gratitude of thousands of citizens. The schools thus established were eminently successful, and their benefits will be felt for all time to come. It was largely owing to his efforts that evening schools were established for the benefit of females. Six were established during the first year, and this number was doubled in the following year. Mr. Fellows was appointed chairman of the Committee on Evening Schools, and devoted so much time and labor to their advancement that their acknowledged success is largely attributed to his active energy. He was also prominent in the establishment of the New York Free Academy, and introduced resolutions for establishing a free academy for females, a scheme which is now perfected in the Free Normal College. No truthful history of the cause of education in New York can be written which does not give a leading place to the name of Edward B. Fellows.

In June, 1853, he, in connection with John W. Ketcham, conceived the idea of organizing an insurance company, to be located in Chatham Square. At a meeting held June 2d there were twenty persons present who had consented to be directors, and it was resolved that the name of the intended corporation should be the "Rutgers' Fire Insurance Company of New York." Property was purchased at the corner of Chatham and Mott Streets, which is still owned and occupied by the company. Mr. Fellows was the first secretary of the company, and, upon the death of Isaac O. Barker, the first president (which occurred in 1866), he was elected president, has been unanimously re-elected at every annual meeting and now holds the office.

He removed his residence to Westchester in 1861, and purchased a place at West Farms, which has since been his home.

He was married, in 1836, to Henrietta, daughter of Aaron Brown, who was at one time the owner of the Slocum farm, on which a large part of the city of Scranton, Pa., now stands. By this marriage he had four children,—Augusta (wife of Monmouth H. Chambers), Edward, Theodore and Charles. Theodore, the only surviving child, is now living in New Hampshire.

Mrs. Fellows died in 1871, and Mr. Fellows afterwards married Amelia S. Peters, by whom he has one son, George P., now living with his parents at West Farms. The mother of Mr. Fellows is yet living, at the age of ninety-three.

He has always been a Democrat. In early life he was a prominent member of the Odd-Fellows' Association. He is now the oldest member of the Church of the Divine Paternity, and has held many official positions in connections with it. During the lay pastorate of the eminent and eloquent divine, Rev. Dr. Chapin, Mr. Fellows was one of his most devoted friends and supporters. He is one of the founders and supporters of the "Chapin Home," a non-sectarian institution for the aged and infirm, and has been a member of the advisory council from the time of its organization. He is also the treasurer of the Univer-

Digitized by Google

be
trover
the public
rience has show
complete separation
struction, has removed
the community all just cause
While he held the office of co
the first to introduce resolutions for the
of evening schools for the benefit of appre
others whose vocations prevented their attenda
the day-schools, and this in itself is enough to justi
entitle him to the gratitude of thousands of citizens.
The schools thus established were eminently success-

a n
organiza

Digitized by Google

E. B. Fellows

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

James L. Wells

Digitized by Google

salist General Convention, and a trustee of the Universalist Relief Fund of the State of New York.

He was one of the original trustees of the Morrisania Savings Bank, and continued in that position while it had an existence. After a successful course of thirteen years the institution was closed, all the depositors being paid in full.

ANDREW FINDLAY.

Andrew Findlay, the eminent surveyor and civil engineer, was born in the village of Westchester, August 6, 1811. He is the son of Robert Findlay, who was born at Wigton, Gallowayshire, Scotland, in 1766. Hannah Milroy, the wife of Robert, was a native of the same place. They came to the United States in 1801 and soon after settled in Westchester, where Robert Findlay began the business of surveying. He died in 1833, and his son Andrew succeeded him the following year, continuing the business with success until within a few years past. Andrew Findlay was educated in the district school of Westchester village, and early in life was foreman of a branch of the Bronx Bleaching Company's works. He was supervisor of the town of Westchester from 1839 to 1848, except in the year 1844, when Robert R. Morris was elected. West Farms was set off from the town of Westchester in 1846, and Mr. Findlay was elected supervisor in 1847 and 1848. He had been a member of the Legislature in 1843, and was re-elected in 1844. While a member of that body he served on several important committees. As a surveyor, Mr. Findlay has been frequently called upon to settle boundary disputes, and has frequently made partition of some important estates. He has held the office of justice of the peace for sixteen years, was trustee of the town of Westchester, and for many years was inspector of the common schools.

JAMES L. WELLS.

Among the men who have been most actively engaged in devising beneficial legislation for the old towns of Morrisania, West Farms and King's Bridge (now the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards of the city of New York), and in securing the enactment of the measures that are so rapidly transforming these former portions of Westchester County into thickly-settled sections of the great metropolis, none have been more prominent than James L. Wells. None have secured for the district more public improvements, and few, if any, are more closely identified than he with the growth and prosperity of these wards.

Mr. Wells was born at West Farms December 16, 1843. His parents are English, but have resided in New York and vicinity since 1817. He received his early education in the public schools of his native town. In 1860 he entered Kenyon College, Ohio, and remained there during the freshman year. He completed his collegiate course at Columbia College, New York, and graduated in the class of 1865. For several years he was engaged in mercantile business at West Farms. At an early day he became interested and took an active part in the various public matters relating to the town. In 1869 he was elected a member of the Board of Education of West Farms, and by subsequent re-elections was continued in that position until the annexation of the town to the city of New York. His course in this board was distinguished by strict attention to the duties of the office, by his interest in educational matters and by the beneficial reforms which he advocated and introduced in the schools of the district.

Attached to the principles of the Republican party, he was, both before and since annexation, frequently chosen a delegate to represent the Assembly District in various State and other conventions of that party. He was for several years president of the Republican Association of the Twenty-fourth Ward, and has been frequently a delegate to the Republican County Committee of the City of New York and a member of the executive committee. His ability and energy being fully recognized by his party associates, he was nominated for member of the Assembly of 1879 to represent the First District of Westchester County, then comprising the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards of the city of New York, the city of Yonkers and the town of Westchester. Notwithstanding that the district was overwhelmingly Democratic, so great was his popularity and the confidence reposed in him by the people of both political parties, that he was elected. During his first term in the Legislature he served as chairman of the Committee on Federal Relations, and as a member of the Committees on Commerce and Navigation, Roads and Bridges, and the special committee charged with the investigation of the affairs of the Brooklyn Bridge. His course was marked by such constant and careful attention to the interests of his district that he was renominated for and elected to the Assembly of 1880, as the representative of the new Twenty-fourth District of the city of New York, comprising the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards, as provided by the Reapportionment Act of 1879. During his second term he served as chairman of the Committee on Expenditures of the Executive Department, a member of the Committee on Commerce and Navigation, Roads and Bridges, and special committees appointed by the Speaker.

The following are some of the more important measures introduced and advocated by Mr. Wells and enacted by the Legislatures of 1879 and 1880: Acts to facilitate the improvement of the Harlem River, and for the construction of bridges over the same; to extend the water supply in the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards; to reduce expenses and correct abuses in street-opening proceedings in the city of New York; for the proper drainage of the Twenty-

third and Twenty-fourth Wards; to reduce the rate of interest on unpaid taxes and assessments in Morrisania, West Farms and King's Bridge; to abolish the office of trustee of the town of Westchester; and also several acts amending the Annexation Act, and measures relating to Yonkers and Westchester. He also actively supported, by voice and vote, the various bills introduced during both these sessions, for the reduction of fare on the Harlem, New Haven and Elevated Railroads; bills reported by the Hepburn Railroad Committee; bills for the revision of the tax laws, for the taxation of corporations, for the reduction of official salaries, and for the more economical government of the city of New York. His course in the Legislature was again so eminently satisfactory to the people of the district that he received the unusual compliment of a third unanimous nomination, every member of the convention arising, as his name was called, and announcing him as his choice for member of the Assembly of 1881. The honor, however, was dcelined on account of his desire to return to business.

But the people were determined that they would retain his services, and the following letter, signed by the most prominent and influential citizens of the district and by hundreds of voters, irrespective of party, was addressed to him:

"NEW YORK, October 23, 1880.

"HON. JAMES L. WELLS:

"*Dear Sir*,—Impressed with the belief that the people of the 23d and 24th Wards require that they should have in the Board of Aldermen a representative whose past experience in and devotedness to public matters affecting this District will afford a guaranty that their interests will be fully protected and cared for, and believing, from our past acquaintance with you and your public course in the Legislature, that you would, when elected as Alderman, faithfully represent the people of the District, we earnestly request that you will permit the use of your name as a candidate for Alderman. We assure you of the hearty co-operation and support of ourselves and the electors of the District."

Mr. Wells was, accordingly, nominated by the Republican Convention for member of the Board of Aldermen of 1881, indorsed by a mass convention of citizens and triumphantly elected in a Presidential campaign over his opponent, the nominee of the united Democratic party, and was the only Republican chosen in the district. A mass convention of the people nominated him for member of the Board of Aldermen for 1882. He was also nominated by the Republicans and elected. Similar action was taken by the people of the district and his party in the fall of that year, and he was elected to the board for 1883. He was nominated for 1884, but declined the honor. Contrary to his wishes, however, his name was presented to the public by his friends and he came within a few votes of being elected to the board for the fourth time. He was a member of the Committee on Public Works during his three terms in the board, and in 1882 was chairman of that committee, an unusual honor for a Republican in a Democratic board. His position on this committee enabled him to be of great service to the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards, and the large number of much-needed public improvements which have been made within the past few years is evidence of his industry in personally preparing the necessary measures, and his ability and success in securing their enactment.

Among the important measures introduced and advocated by him and enacted by the boards of 1881, 1882 and 1883 were hundreds of ordinances for monumenting, opening, regulating, grading, repairing, sewering, flagging, curbing, paving and lighting various street, roads and avenues in the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards; for extending the Croton water supply and establishing fire and drinking hydrants; for the systematic numbering of the houses and lots; providing for gates at railroad crossings; for building a railroad bridge over the Harlem River, opposite Second Avenue; for the construction of various rapid transit routes, and for the promotion of the innumerable public works incidental to and necessary for the development and growth of a new section of a great city. These public improvements have given the greatest impetus to building operations in these wards, and the beneficial results of his zealous and disinterested labors, both in the State and City Legislatures, will be felt long after the present generation has passed away.

During the Presidential campaigns of 1880 and 1884, Mr. Wells was actively engaged in supporting the nominees of the Republican party, and addressed large meetings in various parts of the district.

In the campaign of 1884 he was unanimously nominated by the Republican Convention for member of the Assembly of 1885, and was urged by men of both parties to accept, but he positively declined the honor on account of business engagements and his disinclination to hold office.

During the past fifteen years he has been actively engaged in the business of a real estate broker and is at present a director of the Real Estate Exchange and Auction-Room (Limited), of the City of New York. In his avocation he has gained a well-merited reputation and success, and there is no one who has had a more extensive experience in sub-dividing and bringing into market real estate in the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards and the adjacent parts of Westchester County, or who has a more thorough knowledge of property value in these sections, and he is frequently called upon as an appraiser in apportionment of estates and in the acquisition of lands for public purposes. He is not indebted for his success to inherited wealth, but to his own activity, perseverance and enterprise.

WILLIAM W. FOX.

Mr. Fox, who was prominent as a business man of New York during the past generation, was born September 26, 1783. His grandfather, Jonathan Fox, was descended from a family whose name was prom-

Digitized by Google

inent in the history of the Society of Friends. With his wife, Deborah, he settled in New Jersey, where his son George was born. The latter married Lydia Woolly, and after her decease married Esther Shotwell. The children of these marriages were William W., George S. and Deborah, wife of Joseph Shotwell.

William W. began business on his own account at a very early age, his first ventures being to meet incoming vessels in a small sail-boat and purchase goods, which he sold in the city before the vessels were unloaded. He next entered into a partnership with John K. Townsend and established a dry-goods store, under the firm-name of Townsend & Fox. After the death of Mr. Townsend he became a partner with his father-in-law, Thomas Leggett, under the name of Leggett, Fox & Co., a firm well known in business circles in New York. The idea of lighting the city with gas was said to have originated with Samuel Leggett, but Mr. Fox had the executive capacity to put it into practical operation, and in 1829 he became the president of the Gas-Light Company, a position which he retained until his death, and was the master-spirit of the undertaking. During the period of his business career there were few public institutions with which he was not prominently connected. He was one of the ten governors of the House of Refuge and one of the founders of that institution. During the building of the Croton Aqueduct he was appointed one of the water commissioners by Governor William L. Marcy and devoted his time and labor unceasingly to the promotion of that important work. It may be mentioned as an illustration of his conscientious care in the enterprise, that when the aqueduct was completed he traveled the entire length on foot, making a careful personal inspection of every portion of the work, and of the names engraved in the lasting granite of the High Bridge there is none that deserves a more prominent place than his own.

WILLIAM W. FOX.

He married Charlotte, daughter of Thomas Leggett, of West Farms, June 9, 1808. Their children were George, who married Maria F., daughter of Benjamin Clark (their only son, William W., died without heirs); Thomas L., who died unmarried, and Mary L., who married Francis A. Tiffany. Their children were George Fox (who died unmarried), Lyman (who married Sarah, daughter of George Stanton, formerly of Albany, and has children—Charlotte Fox, Helen, Margaret and George Stanton), Francis H. (who died unmarried), Henry D. (who married Caroline, daughter of Josiah D. Chase, and has three children—George Fox, Edith and Isabel), Charlotte Fox, (who married Minor Trowbridge, of Brooklyn, whose children are Clarence M., Guion, Vaughan R., Ethel and Constance), Mary P. (wife of George F. Tucker) and Isabel (wife of Charles B. Perry, whose children are Langdon, Francis T., Lyman T. and Egbert B.).

The Fox estate at West Farms, which is now a part of New York City, has descended to its owners in the following manner: Robert Hunt, who was the owner of lot No. 9 of the original division of the West Farms Patent, sold it to his son Robert, in March, 1723, for £9 19s. From him it passed to his son, Phineas Hunt, who left it to his three children — Tamar, James and Rachel—who sold it to Ebenezer Leggett in March, 1814, and he, in turn, sold it to Thomas Leggett, from whose heirs it was purchased by William M. Fox, whose heirs are its present owners. To the original lot Thomas Leggett added largely by purchases from Gouverneur Morris, the owner of a portion of the Manor of Morrisania, which bounded the West Farms Patent on the west, and from the owners of the lots on the north and south.

The deed from Ebenezer Leggett to Thomas Leggett thus describes the tract: "The piece of land formerly the farm of Phineas Hunt, deceased, beginning at the North-east corner at a stone standing in the meadow adjoining the salt meadow of Thomas Walker, near the corner of Joseph Tucker's land; thence running South by Thomas Walker's salt meadow to a stone standing at the corner; thence west to the line fence of Thomas Walker and Frederick Courser; thence along as the fence stands crossing the turnpike road to a small ditch; then following the course of said ditch till it reaches Bronx River to a ditch adjoining Samuel Kelly's salt meadow, then west by the upland of Samuel Kelly; then north by an old ditch unto the corner of the line fence of Samuel Kelly; then west by the land of

by Google

Samuel Kelly until it comes to the land of Gouverneur Morris, deceased; then north along the land of said Gouverneur Morris as the line fence now stands unto land belonging to Jonathan Tucker; then east by the said Tucker's land to the place of beginning."

In addition to the parcels above mentioned, one portion of the Fox estate descended by inheritance from Elizabeth Leggett to Thomas Leggett, being lot No. 11 of the original sub-division of the Richardson and Hunt patent.

CHAPTER XXIII.

MAMARONECK.

BY EDWARD FLOYD DE LANCEY, ESQ.

Copyright, 1886.

THE Town of Mamaroneck was erected as a Town with its present boundaries by the "Act for dividing the Counties of this State into Towns," passed the 7th of March 1788.[1] The language of the Act is, "And all that part of the said County of Westchester, bounded southerly by New Rochelle, easterly by the Sound, Northerly by Mamaroneck River, and westerly by the Town of Scarsdale, shall be, and hereby is, erected into a Town, by the name of Mamaroneck." Scarsdale, which comes just before Mamaroneck in the Act, was erected into a town with these boundaries: "Westerly by Bronx River, Southerly by the Town of Eastchester and New Rochelle, easterly by the East Bounds of a Tract of Land called the Manor of Scarsdale, and Northerly by the North Bounds of the said Manor of Scarsdale." Both Towns were carved out of the old Manor of Scarsdale, hence the reference to Scarsdale in the boundaries of each. The latter have never been altered since the erection of the Town and are its bounds to-day. It fronts upon Long Island Sound, and extends from it northwestward nearly four miles, with an average width of nearly three miles. It is situated twenty-one miles Northeast of New York City, and is distant South from Albany, the Capital of the State of New York, about one hundred and forty miles, and the village is south from White Plains, the county seat, seven miles. All these distances are those of the roads as they existed prior to the introduction of Rail-Roads.

The town of Mamaroneck has an area of about 4000 acres, or 6¼ square miles. Its population as shown by the State and U. S. census reports at different periods, has been as follows: in 1790, 452; in 1800, 503; in 1810, 496; in 1814, 797; in 1820, 878; in 1825, 1032; in 1830, 838; in 1835, 882; in 1840, 1416; in 1845, 780; in 1850, 928; in 1855, 1068; in 1860, 1351; in 1865, 1392; in 1870, 1484; in 1875, 1425; in 1880, 1863. Owing to a political squabble in 1885, the Legislature being Republican, and the Governor a Democrat, the former would not pass a law to take a census in that year, consequently there are no figures for it, but the population is now believed to be 2000. The average number of voters is about 350.

The name is Indian, and signifies "The Place where the Fresh water falls into the Salt," and describes the unusual natural fact, that the bed of the Mamaroneck River some distance above the place of the present bridge connecting it with the town of Rye, (at which place a bridge did not exist till the year 1800) was originally crossed by a ledge of rocks sufficiently high to prevent the tide rising above it, over which the fresh water fell directly into the salt water, and at low tide with a strong rush and sound.[2] The Indians gave the name to the place of this uncommon occurrence and to the River itself.

In the earliest deeds and documents, the word is spelled "Momoronock," "Mamoronack" and "Mamaranock;" the modern spelling does not seem to have obtained generally till toward the middle of the eighteenth century. Very many ways of spelling this word are met with, but all evidently aiming at expressing its Indian sound. The Indians having no written language, all their names and other words which we now have, are based upon the reproducing of their spoken sounds in our letters. If a Dutchman, Frenchman or an Englishman, undertook to write the same word from an Indian's mouth, very different looking and sounding words would be produced. And as very many of our New York Indian terms and names represent an English spelling of a Dutch or French translation of an Indian sound, we should never be surprised at any variety of spelling.[3]

Though erected a town so late as 1788, Mamaroneck is one of the oldest places in the County and the State, dating back to 1661, when the then Indian owners Wappaquewam and Mahatahan sold and deeded their individual lands to John Richbell, an Englishman, on the 21st of September 1661. Long previous to this time, and in the year 1640 the entire and general Indian title, both to the land and the sovereignty, of all the territory of southeastern Westchester and Connecticut as far east as the Norwalk Islands inclusive, had been obtained for the Dutch West India Company by purchase by Governor Kieft, through Cornelius van Tienhoven, from the Siwanoy Indians.[4] Richbell however was the first white man to purchase the individual right of the local Indian owners to the lands at Mamaroneck.

He was an Englishman of a Hampshire family of

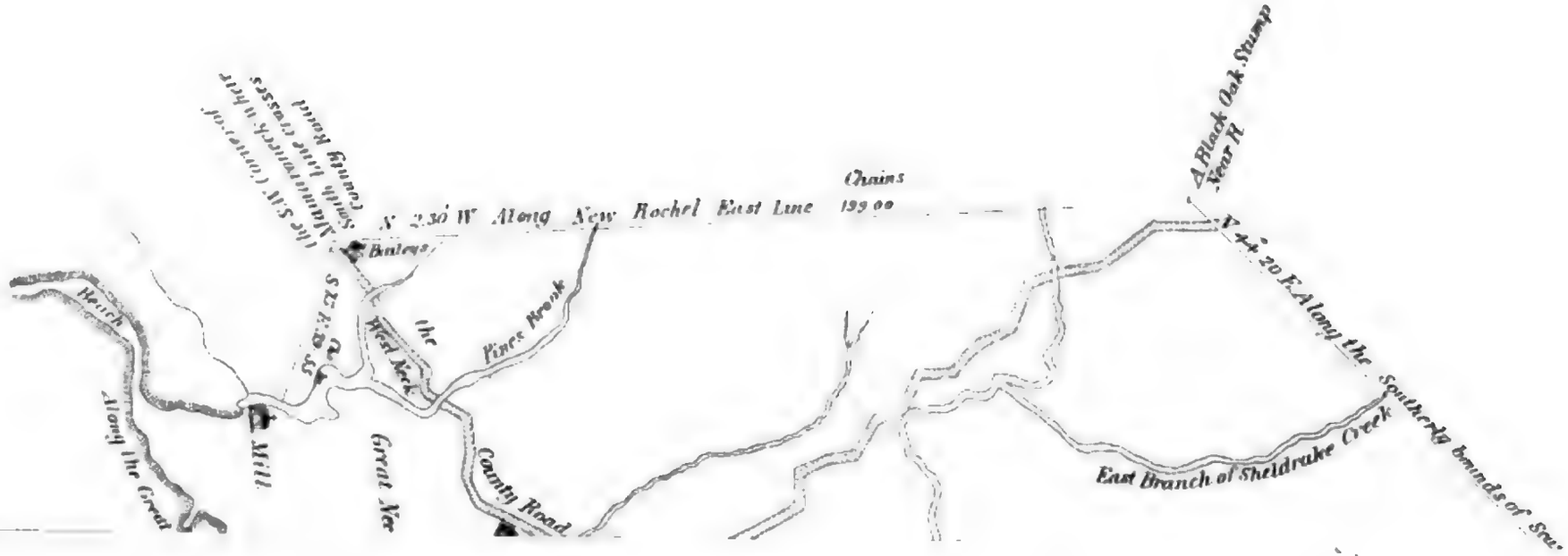
---

[1] H. Jones and Yorck's Laws, 310.

[2] Time, blasting, and a succession of dams, have obliterated the original ledge, but the remains of the reef can still be seen.

[3] It has been stated that "Mamaroneck" meant "the place of rolling stones," but for this I can not find any authority. There are not rolling stones anywhere about Mamaroneck either in the river or the town, though both abound with rocks *in situ*, in the language of the geologists.

[4] I. Brod. 296, II. Albany Records 78, 147, II. Hazard 273, I. O'Call. N. N. 215.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by the California Academy of Sciences
Cathleen Cobb

Southampton or its neighborhood, who were merchants in London, and who had business transactions with the West Indies and with New England. He was in Charlestown Massachusetts in 1648 according to Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, and he appears in an Inventory of the estate of Robert Gibson of Boston, as owing the estate 36£ on the 8th of August 1656. Prior to 1657 he had been in St. Christopher's Island in the West Indies. In 1657 he entered into a business partnership in Barbadoes, then the centre of the English trade with the West Indies and North America, being at that time, as it is now, an English Island. The severe and oppressive English Navigation laws the scope of which Cromwell had enlarged, and which he strictly enforced, drove many Englishmen at that period to embark in a contraband trade, a trade which increased in the next century to so great an extent in North America, that the severe measures adopted by the English Government to suppress it in the latter part of that century proved to be one of the strongest, if not very strongest of the causes of the American Revolution.[1] At Barbadoes the following curious and striking agreement was entered into by John Richbell with Thomas Modiford of that island, and William Sharpe of Southampton, to establish on the North American coast a plantation for the carrying on a trade not permitted by the Navigation laws.

It is headed,

"*Instructions delivered Mr. John Richbell in order to the intended settlement of a Plantation in the south-west parts of New England, in behalf of himself and of subscribers:*"

"God sending you to arrive safely in New England our advice is that you informe yourselfe fully by sober understanding men of that parte of land which lyeth betwixt Connecticott and the Dutch Collony and of the seacoast belonging to the same and the islands that lye bettwixt Long Island and the Maine, viz.: within what government it is, and of what kinde that government is, whether very strict or remisse, who the Chiefe Magistrates are, on what termes ye Indians stand with them, and what bounds the Dutch pretend to, and being satisfyed in these particulars, (viz.) that you may with security settle there and without offence to any. Then our advise is that you endeavor to buy some small Plantation that is already settled and hath an house and some quantity of ground cleared and which lyeth so as you may enlarge into the woods at pleasure in each, be sure not to fayle of these accommodations.

"I. That it be near some navigable Ryver, or at least some safe port or harbor, and that the way to it be neither longe or difficult.

"II. That it be well watered by some running streame or at least by some fresh ponds and springs near adjoining.

"III. That it be well wooded which I thinke you can hardly misse of. That it be healthy high ground, not bogs or fens for the hopes of all consists in that consideration.

"Being thus fitted with a place look carefully into the title and be sure to have all pretenders satisfied before you purchase, for to fall into an imbroylid disputable title would trouble us more than all other charges whatsoever. Having passed these difficultyes and your family brought in the place direct your whole forces towards the increase of provision which must be according to their seasons, for planting of corne, pease, beanes and other provisions which the country affords, increasing your orchards and gardens, your pastures and inclosures; and for ye familyes employment in the long winter be sure by the first opportunity to put an acre or two of hemp-seed into the ground, of which you may in the winter make a quantity of canvass and cordage for your own use. In the falling and clearing your ground save all your principal timber for pipe stands and clap board and knee timber, &c., and with the rest endeavor to make Pott ash, which will sufficiently recompense the charge of falling the ground. But still mindfull not to put so many hands about the matter of present profitt that you do in the meane tyme neglect planting or sowing the grounds that are fitt for provisions, our further advice is that as you increase in pasture fitt for cattle and sheep you fayle not to stocke them well, but be sure never to over-stock them by taking more than you can well keep, for an hungry cowe will never turne to account. Lastly we desire you to advise us or either of us how affairs stand with you, what your wants are and how they may be most advantageously employed by us: for the life of our business will consist in the nimble, quiet and full correspondence with us; and although in these instructions we have given you clearly indicates, yet we are not satisfied that you must needs bring in the place so many difficultyes and also observe many inconveniencies which we at this distance cannot possibly imagine and therefore we refer all wholly to your discretion, not doubting but that you will doe all things to the best advantage of our designe thereby obliedging

your faithful friends and servants
Thos. Modiford
Will. Sharpe.[2]

Barbadoes, Sept. 18, 1657."

The precise date of Richbell's arrival in the province of New York is not now known. He seems first to have gone to Oyster Bay Long Island, and thence to Mamaroneck. He certainly could not have found a place more in accordance with his "instructions" on the whole coast of North America than the latter.

Directly on the Sound, close to Connecticut, and claimed by its people, but a part of the Dutch prov-

[1] The famous cause of the Writs of Assistance, in which John Adams first distinguished himself, were in defence of Boston Merchants engaged in this contraband trade.

[2] Deed Book III. 126, Sec. of State's Off°, Alb.

Digitized by Google

ince of New Netherland and ruled by its authorities, with a running river falling directly into its harbour the latter overlooked by high wooded hills, and its borders skirted by the cleared "planting fields" of the Indians, and within a day's easy sail of the "Manhadoes" it was well adapted to the "nimble" business proposed to be carried on by his Barbadoes friends and himself. Richbell first went to Oyster Bay, where on the 5th of September 1660 he bought the beautiful peninsula, afterwards and still known as "Lloyd's Neck." He had a controversy with the Oyster Bay people about some land at Matinecock, which he also bought, and which was finally settled in his favor. In 1665, after the English conquest he obtained a patent for Lloyd's Neck from Governor Nicolls dated December 18th 1665, and the next year sold it to Nathaniel Sylvester, Thomas Hart, and Latimer Sampon, for 450£, by deed dated October 18, 1666.[1] He then resided at Oyster Bay where in 1662 he was appointed a constable.[1] In the preceding year 1661 his name appears on the Southampton Records as a witness to a mortgage to one Mills on a Virginia plantation.[2] In May 1664 he was one of the Commissioners for the five English Towns in Long Island.[3] In the autumn of that year the English captured New York from the Dutch. Of the expedition to attempt that capture Richbell probably had early knowledge.

It will be recollected that two of the ships the "Martin" and the "William and Nicolas," of the expedition sent to capture New Netherland by the Duke of York, were forced to run into Piscataway, now Portsmouth, New Hampshire, on the 20th of July 1664, on board of which were Carr and Mavericke, two of the Commissioners.[4] One or both of them knew, or had letters to John Richbell who apparently was then in Boston to whom they sent the following communication announcing their arrival, written the third day after it happened,—

"Mr. Richbell

Wee shall desire you to make all convenient haste to your habitation on Long Island, and by the waye as you pass through the Countrey and when you come hither, that you acquaint such as you thinke the Kings Commission" will be welcome to, and are affected for his Majestyes Service, that some of us are arrived here, & shall suddenly bee in Long Island where they hope they will be ready as in other places to promote his Majestyes interest, their readiness & affection shall be much taken notice of, and your care and Incouragement bee acknowledged by

Your very lovinge friends

Robert Carr.

Samuel Mavericke.

Pascataway July 23d, 1664.

to Mr. John Richbell, there.

A warrant under the same hands to presse a horse for Mr. Richbell if occasion should bee, hee paying for the hire."[5]

Four years before, Charles II. had constituted a Council in England, to which he committed the care of the Trade with the Plantations in America. It was created by Royal Patent on the seventh of November 1660. This "Council of Trade" consisted of the Lord High Chancellor Hyde, the Lord Treasurer of England, Thomas Earl of Southampton, Monk Duke of Albemarle, eleven other peers and Nobles, twenty-three Baronets and Knights, and twenty five "Merchants," together sixty two persons all mentioned by name in the Patent itself. Among the "Merchants" was included Robert Richbell, the brother of John. As this "Council of Trade" embraced the leading public men in England at that day, with the noble at its head who four years later drew the King's Patent to his brother James for New York, it is almost certain that John Richbell had some prior intimation, from his brother, a member of the same Council, of the expedition intended for the capture of that Province from the Dutch, and the persons who were to be at the head of it. Hence, his presence in Boston before its arrival, and if neither Carr nor Mavericke, the latter of whom had been in America before, knew John Richbell personally, they undoubtedly had been informed beforehand where he was to be addressed and what his sentiments were, or they could not have written him the above letter.

It is apparent that Richbell was a man of a better position than the ordinary class of Englishmen then in America, at the time he made his purchase of lands at Mamaroneck in 1661. His purchase of Lloyd's Neck was in September 1660. A year later on September 23d 1661 he bought his lands at Mamaroneck, and received from its Siwanoy Indian proprietors Wappaquewam and Mahatahan, their "Indian Deed" for them dated on that day.

An attempt by another Englishman, also a merchant of Barbadoes, and resident of Oyster Bay, who seems to have been either a business rival, or a personal opponent of Richbell, to outwit him and the Indians has singularly enough been the means of preserving for us a perfect history of the original purchase of Mamaroneck in all its details. This man was one Thomas Revell "merchant of Oyster Bay." Finding that Richbell had obtained the Mamaroneck lands in September 1661 Revell undertook in October of the same year to buy the same lands or a part of them, from some other Indians, including Wappaquewam however, for an increased price. Richbell after getting his deed of the 23d of September 1661 applied to the Dutch Government at New Amsterdam for a "Ground Brief," and subsequently a "Transport," as the Dutch License to purchase Indian lands, and the Patent for them, were respectively termed. Governor

[1] H. Thompson's "Hist. Long Island."

[2] Vol. II., 15.

[3] H. Thompson's "Long Island."

[4] Ante, page 75.

[5] III. Col. Hist., 66.

Digitized by Google

Stuyvesant and his Council thereupon had the purchase as well as Revell's claim thoroughly investigated and testimony taken, and after full deliberation decided in Richbell's favor and issued to him both the "Ground Brief" and the "Transport." After the English conquest and the order directing the confirmation of the Dutch grants to their proprietors and before his English Patent of the 16th of October, 1668, was obtained, Richbell recorded these instruments, and he also had recorded the evidence taken before the Dutch Council, his Indian deed of June 6, 1666, confirming that of 1661, and an affidavit of another witness of the original purchase sworn to in 1665.

These documents in full are as follows, and they give us a very lively picture of the men and matters, at Mamaroneck and at Manussing Island both whites and Indians, in the autumn of 1661.[1]

Immediately after these curious papers will be found the Indian Deed to Thomas Revell, and the Indian Power of Attorney by which he tried to defeat Richbell. These papers Revell had recorded in the records of the Town of Southampton upon Long Island December 23d, 1661, probably as a means of strengthening his claim. Thus we have a documentary history of both sides of this contest for the beautiful lands of Mamaroneck in the reign of Charles the Second.

INDIAN DEED TO JOHN RICHBELL.

Recorded Mar: 13th 1666 for Mr Richbell.

(Liber Two of Deeds 192-199, Albany).

1. Mammaranock, ye 23d Sept. 1661.

Know all Men by these pres^ts. That I Wappaquewam Right owner & Proprietor of part of this Land, doe by order of my brother who is another Proprietor & by consent of the other Indyans doe this day, sell, Lett & make over, from mee my heyres assignes for ever unto John Richbell of oyster bay his heyres & assignes for ever three necks of Land. The Eastermost is called Mammaranock Neck, and the Westermost is bounded with Mr Pells purchase: Therefore know all Men whom these presents concerne that I Wappaquewam, doe this day alienate & estrange from mee, my heires & assignes for ever unto John Richbell his heyres & assignes for ever, these three necks of Land with all the Meadowes Rivers & Islands thereunto belonging, also the sd. Richbell or his assignes may freely feed Cattle or cutt timber twenty miles Northward from the marked Trees of the Necks, ffor & in consideracon the sd. Richbell is to give or deliver unto the aforenamed Wappaquewam the goods here under mentioned, the one halfe about a moneth after the date hereof, and the other halfe the next Spring following, As the Interpreters can testify, & for the true performance hereof I Wappaquewam doe acknowledge to have rec^d. two shirts & ten shillings in wampum the day & date above written,

Twenty two Coates
one hundred fathom of wampom
Twelve shirts
Ten paire of Stockings
Twenty hands of powder
Twelve barrs of Lead
Two firelockes
ffifteene Hoes
ffifteene Hatchets
Three Kettles"

John Finch's affidavit.

2. The deposition of John Finch & Edward Griffen both of Oyster bay.

These deponents testify & affirme, That they being at Peter Disbroes Island[2] (being to the westward of Greenewich) the 23^d day of September last past & being there employed by me John Richbell for to Interpret betwixt the said Mr. Richbell & the Indyans (mentioned in this writing annext) about the purchase of three Necks of Land. The said deponents doe both of them affirme, that this herein written was a true and reall bargaine, made the day above s^d. betwixt the said Mr. John Richbell & the said Indyans, & the Condicons thereof.

Taken before mee

John Heickes

Hempsteed this 20th of December 1661.

Peter Disbrow's affidavit.

"The Deposicon of Peter Disbroe of Monussing Island ætates suæ 30th.

3. The s^d deponent upon oath Testifieth, that Mr. Richbell &c went to Mr. Revell (then on the Island afores^d) & warned Mr. Revell not to buy the Land beyond Mammaraneck River of the Indyans, for that (hee said) hee had bought it already: At that time Wappaquewam came to my house Mr. Richbell and John ffinch being there also, the said Wappaquewam said hee was the owner of the Land, & did in my hearing owne that hee had sold the land to Mr. Richbell, but the other Indyans over persuaded him to sell it to Mr. Revell, because hee would give a great deale more; The said Wappaquewam did also owne that hee had rec'd part of pay for the Land, of Mr. Richbell & John ffinch: This to my best understanding was ye Indyans speech unto them; Also at the same time the said Indian Wappaquewam did verbally offer unto Mr. Richbell the Pay that hee had rec'd in part for the sd Land. But Mr. Richbell refused, saying hee would not receive it, but according to bargaine hee would have the land & pay him (the sd Indian) his pay: Moreover the said deponent saith that Mr. Revell being at his house (before the former discourse) that hee the said deponent did tell Mr.

[1] The doings of the parties at Manussing Island in this matter are it is believed the earliest actions in which its settlers took part outside of themselves, that are now known.

[2] Peter Disbro or Disbrough, was the leading man of the Greenwich people who first settled Mannussing Island.

Digitized by Google

Revell that the Land was agreed for by John Finch, & some part of the pay paid. This deposed unto the 12th of M 1 : 61/62 : Before us

Richard Laws
Francis Bell

Affidavit of William Joanes.

4. The deposicon of William Joanes of Monussing Island about 22 years of age.

The sd Deponent upon oath testifieth, That Thomas Close & himselfe being mates, the said Close having beene at oyster bay upon his returne to Monussing aforesd, did tell him that when hee was at oyster bay, That John ffinch and Henry Disbroe of oyster bay did tell him, that John ffinch & Mr Richbell had agreed to purchase the land at Mammaranock River, & desired him not to discover what hee had told them, for that hee had promised them to keepe silence, & if it should bee knowne that hee had told him (the said Joanes) hee should then bee counted a Traytor, this was about September 1661: Severall moneths after Mr Richbell & John ffinch & Edward Griffin being at Mamaranocke River & they waiting for the Indyans coming to them to receive that part of the pay for the land as was agreed there to bee paid, & Mr Richbell had then by him; They wanting bread sent for some to the Island Monussing, wherefore the sd deponent came and carryed them some: when to the land he came Mr Richbell had there sett up a Shedd to shelter from the weather, & took possession there, Staying for ye Indians to receive the pay as was promised. Mr Revell being then at Monussing, & hearing that Mr Revell came to buy the land, did tell Mr Richbell what hee had heard: Wherefore Mr Richbell & John ffinch & myselfe came to Monussing Mr Richbell saying that hee would purposely goe to forewarne Mr Revell not to buy the land, being hee had already agreed for the same: When to Monussing they came, there was some of the Indyans that had sold ye land vizt: Cakoe & Wappaquewam, who would have secretly gone away (as they judged) but that, John ffinch spyeing of them, called them againe, saying to them, are you ashamed of what you are doeing: Then at Peter Disbroe's house the said Cakoe & Wappaquewam did tender to Mr Richbell & John ffinch the pay againe which they had recd in part of payment for the Land, but they refused. John ffinch & Mr Richbell saying to them that they would stand to ye bargaine that they had made: The said Wappaquewam did there fully owne that he had sold the Land to Mr Richbell & John ffinch: Stamford Apr. 5th 1662. given before me

Rich: Lawes.

The originall was Interlin'd before deposed (unto) in the 28th line, (And Mr Richbell) In the 13th line (Monussing),

Affidavit of John Finch.

5. The deposition of John ffinch of oyster bay & also Edward Griffin.

The sd deponents upon oath testifye, Mr John Richbell Merchant of Oyster bay did buy of Wappaquewam a Certaine Tract of land lyeing westward of the River called Mammaranock River & bounded by Land purchased by Mr Thomas Pell of the Indians. The said Wappaquewam being entrusted by his brother Mathetuson[1] formerly called Mohey (as the said Wappaquewam & Mathetuson did enforme) to sell all his property in the sd Land, & himselfe with Edwd Griffin accompanied the said John Richbell unto ye sd Indian Wappaquewam to buy the sd Lands, which accordingly hee did, & payd unto the sd Wappaquewam in part of payment for the purchase of the said Lands, Two shirts & ten shillings in wampom, and agreed upon Time for the payment of the residue, according to a writing made at Momoronock River, bearing date 23d of Septr 1661, & on that day the said Richbell tooke possession of the sd Lands.

In & upon the 7th day of March 1661, The sd John Richbell employed them the sd deponents & one Jacob Young a Sweed (which are Indian Interpretes) to goe with him to the Indyans to talke wth them, Hee the sd Richbell hearing a Report that ye sd Indian Wappaquewam had afterwards sold the sd lands to Mr Revell, & in our voyage to speake wth Wappaquewam we mett with his brother Mathetuson alias Mohey aforesd, who did fully manifest unto us that hee (acccording to his brothers Informacon), did employ & give power to his brother Wappaquewam to sell his propriety of Land to Mr Richbell, whom Wappaquewam enformed him would buy it of him, & withall did relate to us severall of the particulars that the said John Richbell by agreement was to pay for the sd Lands: Moreover the sd Mathetuson seemed to bee much disturbed in his mind That any Contract was made with any other for ye said Lands, hee affirming that hee knew not that any other than John Richbell had made any contract about it, untill hee came down to the Sea Coast. Wherefore Mr John Richbell did tell the sd Mathetuson that he was now come to settle & plant the same,—And the said Mathetuson did give him free liberty to the same, onely desiring Mr Richbell that hee might be payd for it, & not to loose his pay for a neck & halfe of land, which he was yet unpaid for:

To the former part were deposed John ffinch & Edward Griffin the 11th of ye 1st moneth 61

Before mee

Rich: Lawes.

To the latter part the sd John ffinch & Edwd Griffin & also Jacob Young have deposed this 11th M 1 61

Before mee

Richard Lawes.

[1] This affidavit is the only paper where this name is so spelled. In all other instruments it is spelled "Mahatahan."

Digitized by Google

Affidavit of Jonathan Lockwood.

6. The Testimony of Jonathan Lockwood being aged 30 years or thereabout.

Saith, I being at peter Disbroes, & Mr Thomas Revell being there present, I heard Mr. Revell say hee was buying a parcell of Land of the Indyans of the West side of Mammaranock River to Mr Pells land & I wisht him not to medle with it, for it was already bought by Mr Richbell & I was a wittnesse to it, I saw a part of the moneys pay[d] for it by Mr Richbell—Mr Revell made this answer to mee, that howsoever hee would buy it & Mr Richbell & he would try for it afterwards: ffarther this deponent saith not. Given in upon oath before mee, Stamford Apr. 4th 1665.

Rich Lawes

Taken out of the Records & compared therewith this 23d of August 1665

p. me John Allyn, Recorder

INDIAN DEED OR CERTIFICATE OF CONFIRMATION TO JOHN RICHBELL.

Recorded for Mr. John Richbell, the 6th day of June 1666, this Indyan Deed. I Wappaquewam, together with my Brother Mahatahan, being the right owners of three Necks of Land, lying and being Bounded on ye East side with Mamaranock River, and on ye west side with the Stony River, which parts the said Land, and Mr. Pells Purchase, Now These are to Sertify to all and every one whom it may concerne. That I Wappaquewum, did for myselfe, and in the behalfe of my above said Brother Mahatahan, firmly Bargaine & Sell to Mr John Richbell of Oyster Bay, to him and his Heires forever, the above mentioned three Necks of Land, together with all other Priviledges there unto belonging, Six weeks before I sold it to Mr Tho Revell, And did mark out the Bounds, and give Mr Richbell possession of the said Land, and did receive part of my pay then in hand, as Witness my hand

The mark **0** of Wappaquewum [1]

Wittness
Jacob Yough
Catharine Yough."

The next papers are those Thomas Revell obtained from several Indians, after John Richbell's Purchase, upon which he based his claim.

COCKOO'S DEED TO REVELL.

"Be it known unto all Christian people, Ingians & others whom it may concern that I Cockoo [2] Sagamore do by vertue of a full and absolute power & order unto me given & intrusted by Mahamequeet Sagamore & Meamekett Sagamore & Mamamettchoack & Capt Wappequairan [3] all Ingines living up Hudson River on the Maine land, for me to bargaine & absolutely to sell unto Tho Revell his Hayres Exectrs Administrators & Assigns have or any of them have in one tract of land on ye Main being bounded by ye sea on the south west and at the east of Maramack River and at ye west with Mamgapes River, with two necks of land and meadow & planting land, the necks of land called by the Ingins Caywaywest [4] & Mamgapes with all ye lands Meines and mineralls & trees to cut down at ye said Revells pleasure to plant with all rights & priviliges with (two words here illegible) without let or molestation of us any under us quietly & peaceably to Injoy ye sd land reaching one and a half miles above Westchester path and from thence twenty english miles to the Norward into the County for grass for feed for cattell and Timber as he shall have occasion; for ye lands afforesaid I the said Cockoo doe confess to have received now in hand of the said Thomas Revell at the house of John Coe in full payment for the aforesaid tracts of land in severall goods to the just sum of Eighty odd pounds sterling for the said lands with all reall rights. And fardder more I doe promise and ingauge my self in the behalf of the fore named Ingains & ye rest of those Ingains which I now sell this land for and them to bring suddenly after ye date hereof for to give unto Thomas Revels or his order quiet and peaceable possession to him and his Heyres. And peaceably to keep and defend against all Dutch and English that shall molest him, in witness whereof have ingaidged and confess my hand Subscribed this 27th Oct. 1661

the marke + of Cockoo [5]
ye marke +
of Wappequairan

Signed and delivered in the presence of us
John Budd
John Coe
Thomas ilobe? (close)
Simon Cooper
Mark
Tho. + Stedwell

Dec 23d 1661, A true copy per me

Henry Pierson Regist.

Indian Power of Attorney to Cockoo to Convey Lands.

Be it known unto all Christian people Ingains and others whom it may come unto that we whose names are hereunto published Mahameqeat & Meamehet Naskeway all Sagamores with vngoetaken Mamamettchauck, Wachithe Rawnottoy with Capt Wappaquewam all Ingains living up Hudson River & else where in America, Doe acknowledge & confess to have fully & absolutely & by oath of our free & voulantary Acts, given granted full & absolute power unto our friends & one of our Counsell Cockoo by

[1] Recorded in Liber Two of Deeds, at page 128, Sec. of State's off., Albany.

[2] In some papers of that day this name appears as "Cakoe."

[3] Meant for Wappaquewam.

[4] This is as near as this word can be made out.

[5] The same as "Cakoe" above mentioned.

Digitized by Google

name an Ingaine the which wee do approve of and doe confirm whatsoever the said Cockoo shall doe in bargaining & selling unto Thos Revell of Barbadoes all our real right & interest wee or either of us have, our Hayres Exctrs Adminis^trs & Assigns have in one tract of land on the Mayne the which hath two necks of land within it called Caquanost and the other Mamgapos. Bounded on the southwest against Long Island & at the east with Marramack River & at the west with Mamgapos River, and at the north one and a half miles if noe more above Westchester path for planting ground & it is to improve at the said Revells pleasure as he or his shall see good with the Meddow grounds & other grounds Trees, Moynes, Minneralls or whats soever as Rivers Springs within said bounds of said tract of land. As allsoe free liberty for feeding for all cattell horses & Mayers without lett to Rang or grase & trees to fall and carry away at his or any of his Heirs pleasure above the marked trees for the bounds Twenty English miles if not more into the Cuntry northward if not more with a plot of the tracts of land hereunto annexed and allsoe the marked trees. Now whereas wee the aforesaid the true and well proprietors and Honnors[1] before named of the tracts of land wee are fully contented & paid and satisfied that our friend Cockoo hath bargained and sould the aforesaid tracts of land with all the bounds as aforesaid unto the s^d Thomas Revell with all things standing or lying thereon for himself, Heyres, Exct^rs, Administrat^rs or Assignes freely and forever to possess and peaceably injoy and keep as his proper right without lett or hindrance of us or any from by or under us. And allsoe we the aforesaid true honnors and right proprietors of the said land Mahameqeat Meamchet Naskeway Sagamores with vngoetaken Mamametchouch Wachithe Ronnottoy and Capt Wappaquewam wee and every on of us joyntly & severally doe allow & approve of what our friend Cockoo hath done to bee fearme sold fast and good in selling the said land to Thomas Revell. And of him have received in hand full satisfaction & to our consent for the said land in personal goods to the just sum of ninety pounds sterling to the use of us the aforesaid Ingains. Now for the better Right & tittell of the said land unto the said Revell his Heyres Exct^rs Administrat^rs & Assigns with all the Proprietors Rights & privileges Regard or whatsoever else is just, and allsoe wee ye aforesaid Ingains do freely and absolutely assign and make over all our rights tittell and Interest wee had in the fore mentioned tract of land as appeareth by this our Deed and fearme bill of sall that we now give unto the said Revell and his reall right in the said land before Butting and Bounding as aforesaid. And now for the more fearme and absolute assurance of the said tract of land wee do jointly and severally for us and ours as I Mahameqeat Meamchet with Naskeway Sagamores with Vngoetaken Mamamettchouck Wachithe Rownottoy & Capt. Wappaquewam promise and doe ingage ourselves unto the said Revell his Heyres & Exc^trs to put the saidRevell or his order in quiet and peaceable possession & him so to keep and for ever to injoy as his and to his all right. And Allsoe we do further promise & ingage keepe and defend ye sd Revell and his against all person or persons that shall directly or indirectly annoy Molest or trouble ye sd Revell or his, or lay any claime or former grant of the same by ye Ingains Dutchmen or English or whome soeverfrom the beginning of the world unto the day of Dat; &, forever to mayntaine our right and tittle unto the said Revell & his Heyres Exct^rs & Assigns as witness our hands this 11 of Novemb^r 1661.

Whereas it is above mentioned the land for planting land shall run one & a half miles and more above Westchester path. All of us above Ingains doe freely allow & consent unto that Revell shall have his line run as farre above Westchester path for planting ground into the Cuntry the full length as is from Westchester path to the bottom of the Necks to the sea, this being in consideration the land to the north east is not fit for planting ground but full of hills and Rockey Woods above Westchester path. This we consent unto freely. As witness our hands possession given

In the presence of as	The mark of + Cockoo
witnesses Signed	ye mark of + Mamamettchouch
and delivered in	ye mark of + Wappaquaican
presence of us	ye mark of + Hayoro Sagamore
Simon Cooper	ye mark of + Petowwahen
The mark of	
Tho. + Stedwell	ye mark of + Cauronsoro Sarho
Humphry Hughes	ye mark of + Wappomus Sarho
Thomas ilobs[2]	
John Coe	
The mark of	
Stephen E Champion	

A true Coppey December the 23d 1661

Pr me Henry Pierson Regist^r.[3]

Of the litigation which grew out of this transaction we have the following account in the nature of a report of the evidence produced, taken from the record at Albany. It bears no date but was probably what took place before the English Patent was issued by Governor Lovelace.

"An account of what part was acknowledged before ye Governor concerning ye Purchase of Mamaronock, by Mr. Richbell, and Mr. Revell, and Jans. Rockett, Wappaqueem, and many other Indians,

PRESENT.

Wappaqueem saith, that Mr. Richbell was ye first that spake to him about ye purchase of said lands.

[1] Owners.

[2] This meant for Thomas Close.

[3] For the copies of this Indian deed and Power of Attorney the writer is indebted to William S. Pelletreau, the able editor of the three volumes of the "Southampton Records." The map referred to is unfortunately such a rough and mixed up scrawl that it was useless to reproduce it.

Digitized by Google

Jans. Rockett acknowledges ye like.

Wappaqueem saith that Thomas close with Cokoo spake to him to sett his hand to Mr. Revell's deed and he should have a coate, on which he did it.

He saith further that Mr. Richbell, came and viewed and agreed for ye land, but not bringing his goods tyme enough he sold it to Mr. Revell. He confesses that Mr. Richbell gave another Indian a coate and some seawant and a shirt, to marke out ye trees after ye agreement, but that he had nothing.

Another Indian saith that Cockoe and Thomas Close received Mr. Revell's money betweene them and kept it themselves, for ye proprietors had none of it.

Wappaqueem saith that what he received from Mr. Richbell was by way of (unintelligible) but not in parte of payment.

He whose land it was, and Wappaqueem called brother, but were not natural brothers.

11th Nov. 1661, the power entrusting Wappaqueem and Cockoo to sell 8th, 1661, the date of ye deed which is before ye power. [1]

It is evident from this that Thomas Close and Cockoo were very sharp, but the blunder of dating the power after the deed to Revell ruined their case.

Richbell continued in undisturbed possession, and no claim was ever at any time afterward set up under those Indian deeds to Thomas Revell.

On the 16th of October 1668, the English Patent from Governor Francis Lovelace confirming and granting to John Richbell the lands privileges and immunities he possessed under his Dutch grants and Dutch court decisions passed the seals of the Province.

These Instruments, Dutch and English, having been already set forth fully in part number 14 of the chapter on Manors relating to the Manor of Scarsdale in this work are not repeated here. The description of the lands granted in Lovelace's Patent of Confirmation is as follows:—"A certain parcel of land within this government, on the Main, contained in three Necks, of which the eastermost is bounded with a small river called Mamaranock river, being almost the east bounds or limits of this government upon the main, and the westermost with the gravelly or stony brook or river which makes the east limits of the land known by the name of Mr. Pell's purchase. Having to the south the Sound, and running northward from the marked trees upon the said Necks twenty miles into the woods . . . together with all woods, beaches, marshes, pastures, creeks, waters, lakes, fishing, hawking hunting and fowling, and all other profits immunities, and emoluments to the said parcel or tract of land belonging, annexed, or appertaining, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof."

These "Three Necks" were called the "East," the "Middle," and the "West" Necks. The Middle Neck was sometimes called the Great Neck, from its longer extent of water front, which at first led to the supposition that its area below Westchester Path was greater than that of the East Neck. "The East Neck" extended from the Mamaroneck river on the east to a small stream called "Pipin's brook" on the west, which divided it from the "Middle" or "Great" Neck, and is the same which now crosses the Boston road through the land, and just east of the house of the late Mr. George Vanderburg.[2] The Middle Neck extended from the latter stream westward to a much larger brook called "Cedar or Gravelly brook" which is the one that now bounds the land belonging to Mr. Meyer[3] on the west.

The "West Neck" extended from the latter to another small brook still further to the westward, termed "Stoney or Gravelly Brook" which was the east line of the Manor of Pelham.

Of the three in their order. The East Neck from Mamaroneck River to Pipin's Brook, upon which Richbell took up his permanent residence about 1665, as near as can now be ascertained, was called by the Indians "Mamaranock Neck." This fact is so stated in the Petition of Richbell of the 24th of December 1661, for a "ground brief" or Dutch license to purchase Indian lands.[4] A misunderstanding by Mr. Robert Bolton of the word "Mammaranock" in the crabbed writing of this ancient Document as recorded led him to state in the first edition of his History of Westchester County, published in 1848, that the "aboriginal name" of the East Neck was "Wanmainuck,"[5] and the error has appeared in the second edition,[6] and it has been hence followed by other writers. It was a pure mistake in deciphering the written word. The true "aboriginal name of the East Neck was "Mamaranock" the same as the town and village bears to-day under the later spelling of "Mamaroneck." That portion of it between the Harbour on the east and Pipin's brook and the salt creek into which it runs on the west, bears the name of "De Lancey's Neck" from the fact that it has been possessed as a whole for more than a century and until a few years ago, and in part still is possessed, by the family of Gov. James de Lancey, the son-in-law of Col. Caleb Heathcote, the purchaser of the whole East Neck in 1697. It formed the largest part of the "demesne lands" of Colonel Heathcote's Manor of Scarsdale, and as such was held by his widow until her death in 1736, when an undivided half descended to her daughter Mrs. James de Lancey, who by agreement with her brother-in-law Dr. Lewis Johnston of New Jersey continued in the possession and control of the other undivided half until 1774, when it was divided in the

[1] Deed book III. 97, Sec. of State's office.

[2] Formerly a portion of the western part of the farm of Mr. Peter Jay Munro, and later owned by James T. Roosevelt.

[3] The old "Duncan" or "Danbeny" farm.

[4] Deed-Book iii. 37, Sec. State's office, Albany. *Ante*, p. 145.

[5] Vol. i. p. 282.

[6] Vol. i. p. 463.

Digitized by Google

Partition of that year of the undivided portions of the Manor of Scarsdale. Subsequently John Peter de Lancey the son of Mrs. De Lancey who had succeeded to some of his mother's lands purchased all the rest of the lands on De Lancey's Neck from his brother, and sister, and cousins, and thus became the owner of the whole Neck, nearly a century ago. There was however a small piece of land of about thirty acres on the left of the entrance to the Neck from the old Westchester Path or old Boston Road, which never belonged to the Manor of Scarsdale nor to the Heathcote or de Lancey families. This piece was given on the 8th of August 1684, by Mrs. Richbell just after her husband's death, to her daughter Mary and her husband Capt. James Mott, and was expressly reserved in her deed to Colonel Heathcote of all the rest of her estate in Mamaroneck. This piece from Mott's heirs passed by sale through various parties and about a century ago became the property of a venerable Quaker long well known in Mamaroneck, Giles Seaman. At his death in the settlement of his estate it was bought by the late Isaac Hall, and by him it was sold to the enterprising gentleman who upon it erected the handsome summer hotel, since called by his own name—the "Rushmore," as well as several handsome private residences, now owned by various parties.

In the chapter on Manors in this work, part 14,[1] will be found at length the history of the East Neck as a part of the manor of Scarsdale. It is only necessary here to give an outline. John Richbell died on the 26th of July 1684[2] leaving his widow Ann, and three daughters him surviving. His wife's mother, Margery Parsons, had advanced him some goods in the island of St. Christopher's in the West Indies long previous to his ever coming to Mamaroneck. As soon as he got his English Patent of the 16th of October 1668, and on the 14th of the next month he deeded the entire "East Neck" to her in consideration of that advance. Mrs. Parsons two days later, on the 16th of November 1668, in consideration of natural love conveyed the East Neck to her daughter —Ann the wife of John Richbell as a token of affection and dutiful behaviour. This made Mrs. Richbell the owner in fee of the entire East Neck. But to make her perfectly secure, Richbell made a settlement of it by way of jointure in her favor, by a deed in Trust to John Ryder of the 23d of April, 1669, in consideration of a marriage long since solemnized between them.[3] He died as above stated on the 26th of July 1684, and Mrs. Ann Richbell thereupon became vested in her own right in fee in the entire East Neck, from Mamaroneck River to Pipin's Brook and twenty miles back from the Sound northward into the woods. She continued in possession until by deed of the 23d of December 1697, she sold her entire estate of every kind and nature in her and her late husband's lands to Colonel Caleb Heathcote for the sum of £600 New York Currency and certain other beneficial provisions recited in the instrument.[4] These lands and some others adjoining which he had acquired Colonel Heathcote had erected into "the Lordship and Manor of Scarsdale" by a Manor-Grant from Lieutenant Governor Nanfan then at the head of the Province on the 21st March, 1701.[5] Upon the eminence at the head of the Harbour, still called Heathcote Hill,[6] he built a large double brick Manor

HEATHCOTE HILL.

House in the style of that day in England, with all the accompanying offices and outbuildings, including the American addition of negro quarters in accordance with the laws, habits, and customs of the period. Here he lived during the remainder of his life, which terminated on the 28th of February 1720–21 in his 56th year. The house stood till some six or seven years before the American Revolution, occupied however, only by tenants after the death of his widow in 1736. Later it was accidentally destroyed by fire. The present double frame dwelling standing on a portion of the old site, of which a cut is given, was built in 1792 by the late John Peter de Lancey, a grandson of Colonel Heathcote who had succeeded to the property, on his return to America with his family, having been a captain in the British Regular Army in which he had been placed in 1771, on leaving Harrow School, after a short period at the Military School of Greenwich. Mr. de Lancey lived in this house till his death in 1828. In it were born all his children except the two elder ones, and amongst

[1] Ante, 147.

[2] West. Co. Records Lib. A, p. 34.

[3] Ancient copies of all these deeds in the writer's possession. All are recorded in West. Co. Records, except that from Mrs. Parsons to Mrs. Richbell.

[4] Rec. Lib. B, 371, West. Co. Records.

[5] Lib. 7, p. 195, Sec. of State's Off.

[6] And still in the possession of the writer who is his great, great, grandson.

Digitized by Google

them his son William Heathcote, the late Bishop of Western New York, and Susan Augusta, the wife of the late James Fenimore Cooper, who were also married in it on the 1st of January 1811.

But to return, Colonel Heathcote had succeeded, with the rest of the property, to the Richbell proprietary rights in the two mile bounds of Mamaroneck and he subsequently to his Manor-Grant purchased in addition a twelfth undivided part of the whole tract. This tract had been set apart by John Richbell in his life time about the year 1670 for what he called "allotments or house lots," comparatively small pieces fronting on the Westchester Path or old road to Boston eight in number running northwardly. One he reserved for his own house lot, and he and his wife seem to have sold only two or three others, the first was a gift by deed to one John Basset in 1669, which was No. four, next to his own lot No. 5. Another, No. one, was sold to one Jeremy Kanniffe, and Nos. 2 and 3 to Robert Pennoyer, and another to James Mott. These seem to have been all that were sold up to 1676 when another was sold to Henry Disbrough on the 16th of February in that year. From the language of ancient copies of the first deed to John Basset, and that to Henry Disbrough, in the writer's possession it would seem that these "allotments" were twenty and a half rods wide front on the Westchester Path, and the same in the rear, by eighty rods on each side in depth running northwesterly. Each was subject to a reservation of an annual payment of one bushel of winter wheat or the value thereof on the 1st of March, and one day's work at harvest time, to the Proprietor, and to a covenant that they could not be sold without their consent and approbation. To each lot was appendant an undivided eighth right to commonage and pasture in the two mile bounds. The precise extent of these bounds we know from the Deed to Disbrough, which calls them "Mammaroneck limmits" and describes the tract as "being in length two miles and in Breadth one mile and a half and Twenty eight rods." The length was from the Westchester Path northward, and the breadth was from Mamaroneck River to Dirty Swamp on the west. "Dirty Swamp" being the swampy ground over which the road passed near and east of the intersection of the present Weaver Street. The swamp began some distance north of the Road and extended across it to the salt water, a little stream or ditch running from it under the road in old times through a stone culvert, sometimes dignified by the name of "Dirty Swamp Bridge."

As soon as Colonel Heathcote obtained his Manor-Grant, and about two months thereafter he obtained, on the 11th of June 1701, from the two Indian chiefs of the neighborhood Patthunk and Wapetuck an Indian deed of confirmation for this two mile tract to himself and the seven other persons who in 1701 were the owners of these "allottments or house" or "home" "lotts." There were himself, Caleb Heathcote, Capt. James Mott, William Penoir,[1] John Williams, Henry Disbrough, Alice Hatfield, John Disbrough, and Benjamin Disbrough.[2] This was to satisfy all persons desirous of settling in Mamaroneck, that there would be no difficulty with the natives. About five years later Colonel Heathcote suggested to the owners of the house lots that instead of keeping all the rest of the two mile bounds as undivided property, that they should have it laid out and divided among themselves in severalty. It was talked of, approved, and finally carried into effect by a mutual agreement under seal, made and executed by all the parties on the 19th of February 1706–7. The instrument accompanied by a well executed Map of the lots as laid out, into eight "Long Lotts" is in Colonel Heathcote's handwriting, and bears the autographic signatures of himself and all the other parties above named. It is in these words ;—

Mamoroneck ffeb. ye 14th 1706–7.

The ffree holders of Mamoroneck whose names are hereunder written have mutually and unanimously agreed for dividing the Long or Upper Lotts in said Township as followeth—No. 1 containing 20 chains broad to James Mott, No. 2 containing 21 chains, and No. 3 containing 22 chains to William Penoir, No. 4 containing 21 chains to Henry Disbrow, No. 5 containing 18 chains to John Disbrow, No. 6 containing 20 chains to John Bloodgood, No. 7 containing 20 chains to Peter Hattfield, and No. 8 containing all the remainder of the land to the River to Caleb Heathcote, reserving out of the said Lotts the following Highways for the use and benefit of all the ffreeholders and Inhabitants one highway to be five Rods wide in the ffront of the said Lotts, one highway of four Rods wide through the Sixth Lott into the Woods Leading on the west side of Nelson's ffield into the Woods.

Signed sealed and
delivered in the presence of us

Joseph Purdy	Caleb Heathcote	[L.S.]
Thomas White	his Wm X Penoir mark	[L.S.]
	James Mott	[L.S.]
	Henry Disbrow	[L.S.]
	John Disbrow	[L.S.]
	John Bloodgood	[L.S.]
	Peter Hattfield[3]	[L.S.]

This instrument finally closed and determined forever all the common interests in the lands in the "two mile bounds" of Mamaroneck and made them the separate private property in fee of the various owners. To this there is apparent exception. The five rod

[1] So in the deed. He was a son of Robert Penoyer the original grantee.

[2] Ancient copy in writer's possession, Rec. Lib. C. West. Co. p. 52.

[3] The original instrument came into the possession of the Griffen Family who purchased No. 6 from John Bloodgood, and now belongs to Mr. Charles Field Griffen to whom I am indebted for its examination. A facsimile cotemporary copy is in my own possession.

Digitized by Google

Highway they left at the South end of their "Great Lotts" or "Long Lots" was found to be useless, and the owners subsequently divided it up into nine small lots of about 10 acres each among themselves which ended the whole matter. These "Great" or "Long" Lots, as well as the small ones are all shown on the Map of the Manor of Scarsdale in this volume. They never belonged to any body but the grantees of the eight original house lots to which they were appendant and appurtenant, and with their division by the owners of those lots among themselves all their common rights ended, and the "two mile bounds" or "Mammaroneck Limmits" come to an end forever. The Proprietary rights in them of Colonel Heathcote of course were terminated by his agreeing to their division in fee.

DISBROW HOUSE, ERECTED 1677.

Of the owner of the "allottments or house Lotts" as they were in 1701 the descendants of none except of Colonel Heathcote are now in possession of any part of them, although descendants of Hattfield and the Disbroughs are still well known residents and property holders in other parts of the present Town of Mamaroneck, among whom is Mr. William H. Disbrow as the name is now spelled, the Civil Engineer whose home is scarcely a musket shot from the old ancestral house. But there still stands upon the southern part of the "House Lott" of Henry Disbrough the identical house he built there in 1677 the year after he was deeded the lot by John and Ann Richbell, a memento of the earliest days of Mamaroneck, of the old family who built it, of New York and Westchester in the reign of Charles the Second, and of the Duke of York as its Lord Proprietor. It remained in the Disbrough family till within thirty or thirty-five years, and is now the property of the widow of the late well known Publisher of New York, Mr. Stringer of the firm of Stringer & Townsend. The accompanying cut gives a good idea of it but it is a rear view, the road shown in it and now existing in front of the house not having been opened till the year 1800. It faced the harbour, the side toward the present Union avenue, which at this place is built upon the old Westchester Path, being the original front of the house. It is built of rough hewn timber, and the coarse stone of the country even to the chimney above the roof. The siding has been renewed but always in the old style. It has long been used simply as a storehouse as it was understood when it passed out of the Disbrough family that it should never be pulled down. Its last owners of the name were two maiden ladies who, a few years before their deaths built in the same enclosure the present new and good frame house, which stands almost between the old one and the waters of the harbour. The old house has well borne its 209 years but in the course of things can not last much longer.

The "Middle Neck" or the "Great Neck" or "Munro's Neck" as it was styled after Mr. Peter Jay Munro became the owner of nine-tenths of it about the year 1790, has a curious history. But before it is given it may be better, though a little out of order, to state the facts more fully than they have been mentioned in treating of the Manor of Scarsdale, regarding the Pell-Richbell controversy about the West Neck. Both the Middle and the West Necks together form that part of Richbell's land, now in the town of Mamaroneck, which lay almost wedge shaped between the southern parts of the Manors of Scarsdale and Pelham.

The West Neck extended from the Cedar Tree or Gravelly Brook, (that now running to the west of Mr. Meyer's present house,) westward to another Brook, which was that which crossed the Westchester Path or Road just west of the present residence of Mr. Geo. Stephenson, and upon which for years stood a mill, for a very long time a snuff mill. This brook bore the name of Stony or Gravelly brook. Mr. Pell claimed that his eastern line was the Cedar Tree or Gravelly Brook, that now by the present Mr. Meyer's; Mr. Richbell claimed that the Stony or Gravelly Brook, also called Cedar or Gravelly Brook, that near Mr. Stephenson's, was his western line and Pell's eastern line. The controversy was a very hot one and grew out of the use of similar designations of streams in their respective Patents. After proceedings in the Court of Assizes, and before the Governor and Council the following Agreement was finally entered into by both parties; "Whereas There hath been a Matter or cause of Difference depending between Mr. John Richbell and Mr. John Pell for the which There was an order Issued forth from yͤ Governor for a tryall by a Special Court of Assizes yet Notwithstanding upon proposal of an amicable agreement between them, and to prevent further trouble to his Honour the Governour and the Country by having a speciall Court, it is this Day mutually consented unto and agreed upon, that the Neck of Land and meadow between Ceeder or Gravelly brooke on the East, and Gravelly or Stony Creeke on yͤ West shall be layed out by yͤ Surveyor Generall and devided between them, so that each party shall have Meadow and upland equivalent and proportionable Quantity and

Quality alike. To this agreement both partys do joyntly consent in token of Amity and Friendship buriing in oblivion what unkindness hath formerly past between them and this to be a barr to all future Claymes or pretences that can or may be made on either side or by either of y^r heires Executors or Administrators for ever. As to what expense or charge[8] Either party hath been at Each is to bear his own charges, but for the charges of the Surveys and such other Necessary expenses Relating to the Division of ye Lands according to this agreement it is Equally to be Borne betweene them. In testimony Whereof the partyes to these presents have Later changeably Sett to their hands and Seals ye 22 Daye of January in the 23^d year of his Maj^t Reigne Annoq^e Dom. 1671

John Pell (L S)[1]

Sealed and Delivered in ye presence of

Henry Taylor
Allard Anthony

Remains (as all other Lawful Acts) of forces and There Surveyor may proceed accordingly

E. Andros"

Though thus confirmed by the above order of Gov. Andros, no survey was made, why it is now impossible to say, until the 22^d of May 1677, when it was done by Robert Ryder. His description is in these words;—

Whereas there hath been a difference between John Richbell and Mr. John Pell which by virtue of an order from the right Honourable Major Edmund Andross Esqr. Governor General of New York, I have made a division of the within mentioned Neck of Land by and with the mutual consent of both parties, which is in manner and Form as is hereafter Expressed vizt. That the said Richbell shall extend from Cedar Tree Brook or Gravelly Brook, south westerly fifty degrees to a certain mark't Tree, lying above the now Common Road, thirty and four chains in length, mark on the east with R. and on the West with P., thence Extending South Sixty three degrees East by certain marked Trees p'fixed Ending by a certain piece of Meadow at the salt creek which Runs up to Cedar Tree Brook or Gravelly Brook Extending from the first marked Trees Nor Nor West to Brunkes River by certain Trees in the said Line marked upon the West with P. and upon the east with R. performed the twenty-second day of May 1677.

p me Robert Ryder Surv.^r"

The Preceding Surveyor above mentioned is mutually consented unto by the above mentioned Mr. John Richbell and Mr. John Pell in presence of us

Thomas Gibbs
Walter Webly
John Sharp
Joseph Carpenter"[2]

Thus was settled finally the line, afterwards of much importance, as being the east line of the 6000 acre tract carved out of Pelham Mannor and sold by Pell to Leisler for the Huguenots in 1689. And as also as taken for the line between the later towns of New Rochelle and Mamaroneck when erected in 1788 by the State Township Act of that year.

We now recur to the singular history of the Middle Neck.

It will be remembered that John Richbell purchased his three Necks from the Indians on the 23^d of September 1661, and obtained the Dutch Government's groundbrief and Transport (or 'License to purchase' and 'Patent') for them in May 1662, and his English Patent for them on October 16, 1668; and that the East Neck alone was sold by his widow in 1697 to Colonel Caleb Heathcote, and was included by him in his Manor of Scarsdale in 1701.

Five years after the date of his Patent for the three Necks, on the 20th of November 1673, Richbell mortgaged the West neck to Cornelius Steenwyck, a rich burgomaster, of New Orange, as New York was called on its reconquest by the Dutch in that year, and a member of Governor Colve's Council, by the following singular instrument—one of the few Dutch Mortgages that have come down to our days;

"Appeared before as subscribed Aldermen of the City of New Orange, the honest Mr. John Richbell, Inhabitant of the place Marraneck, in the Main, within this province, who acknowledged and declared for himself, his heirs and executors, fully and duly to be indebted Mr. Cornelius Steenwyck Chief Council[3] of this Province, a just and neat sum of Two thousand and four hundred Guilders, Wampum,[4] being occasioned by and from delivered Merchandizes, disbursed Moneys, or otherwise, by him the said John Richbell, to his full satisfaction received and enjoyed of Mr. Cornelius Steenwyck, which aforesaid sum of 2400 G. he the said John Richbell by these acceptetly and promiseth to pay, or cause to be paid to Mr. Steenwyck aforesaid, or to him, that should or might obtain his action with good current Wampum, or to deliver the value thereof on or before the first of October next ensueing, without delay. For the better security of the aforesaid Mr. Steenwyck, in the full satisfaction of the sum aforesaid, he the said John Richbell bindeth and engageth for a special Mortgage and a Pledge certain of his the said John Richbell's Neck or piece of Land lying upon the Main, being the most Westerly neck of Land of the three, to him the said John Richbell in lawful Propriety belonging, pursuant to certain Patent of Governor Lovelace, dated 16 October, 1668, limiting the Neck of Land aforesaid, upon the gravelly or Stony Water or River, which are the Easterly Limits of Mr. Pell's Land, having at the South side the Sound, and runing thus

[1] This is from an ancient Copy of the document signed by Pell that was delivered to Richbell, in the writer's possession.

[2] Ancient copy in the writer's possession.

[3] So in the original, it means "of the chief council."

[4] The shell money of the Indians.

Digitized by Google

from the Marked trees, standing on the side[1] Neck, North Twenty miles into the Woods, and further in General, his Person, and Goods Moveable and immoveable, none excepted or reserved, submitting the same to all Courts, Laws, and Justices.

In witness whereof is this by the said Mr. John Richbell benevolently or willing.[2] The Esquires Aldermen Gelyn ver Plank and Lawrence Spiegel.

In the Record Books of this Town. Signed in New orange 20 9ber.[3] 1673."[4] This mortgage only covered the West Neck as settled in the agreement with Pell above mentioned.

On the 12th May, 1675, two years later, a mortgage was made by John Richbell on the Middle Neck alone, in consideration of "£250 Boston Silver" to Robert Richbell of Southampton, England for the term of 99 years, redeemable at any time in the term upon the payment of the principal and interest.[5]

The very next year, on the 17 July 1676 Richbell made still another mortgage to one Thomas Kelland of Boston, in consideration of £100 New England money, upon the *reversion* of the Middle Neck for the term of 99 years, and also the reversion of the West Neck for 99 years, after payment of the £2500 to Robert Richbell and the 2400 Guilders to Steenwyck.

These Richbell Mortgages on the Great Neck passed by assignments into the hands of Samuel Palmer, of Mamaroneck; the first of a family of that name who have been closely and honourably connected with Mamaroneck from that day to this, and as they are still robust and numerous, will probably so continue indefinitely for the future. A Palmer was elected to a town office at the first recorded election in Mamaroneck in 1797, and a Palmer is a Justice of the Peace in Mamaroneck to-day.[6]

By these assignments Samuel Palmer became legally entitled to the remainder of the term of 99 years in the Middle Neck, and by his will, dated March 18th, 1712–13, he devised all his right, title and interest in and to the Middle Neck to his four sons, Nehemiah, Obadiah, Sylvanus, and Solomon Palmer. They continued in possession, and on the 8th of February 1722, Edward Richbell, who describes himself as "of the Parish of St. James in the County of Middlesex,[7] in Great Britain heir-at-law of John Richbell theretofore of Mamaroneck in the Precincts of Westchester in the Government of New York (who was Eldest son and Heir of Edward Richbell late of the City of Westminister Esq. who was Eldest son and Heir of Robert Richbell of Southampton in Great Britain, deceased, who was the only Brother and Heir of the said John Richbell" released, in consideration of £380 sterling, to the above four Palmers, the Reversion and Equity of Redemption in the Middle Neck, and all his right title and interest therein. The four Palmers then conveyed a right in fee in that Neck to one Josiah Quinby.

But, the Steenwyck Mortgage of 1673, above mentioned, and another also made by John Richbell to him on the 6th of July, 1678, had been assigned to Frederick Philipse, and under his will passed to his daughter Eve, the wife of Jacobus Van Cortlandt of Yonkers, and of course under the law to him. These were both upon the West Neck. Both Van Cortlandt and Adolph Philipse his brother-in-law were Executors of Frederick Philipse's Will. They sent to England to Edward Richbell, and in consideration of the cancelling of John Richbell's mortgages and of £400 sterling in addition, he by Lease and Release of the 12th and 13th of August, 1723, conveyed to them all his right not only in the West Neck, but in all the lands possessed by John Richbell, except what he had released to the four Palmers above mentioned. Philipse and Van Cortlandt claimed that all the land the Palmers were entitled to under their deed from Edward Richbell lay between the Westchester Path and the Sound, and that they by their later conveyance from Edward Richbell were entitled to all between the Westchester Path northward to the Bronx. This claim the Palmers met by filing a bill in Chancery against Philipse and Van Cortlandt and on May 2, 1729, obtained a decree that the Proprietors of the Middle Neck under their mortgages and their Release from Edward Richbell, were entitled to have the Middle or Great Neck extended as far Northward as the East and the West Neck extended, and that Philipse and Van Cortlandt should be perpetually enjoined from making any claim or pretences to that part of the Great neck south and east of the Bronx River.

In 1731 an action between James De Lancey and wife and Mrs. Martha Heathcote against Josiah Quinby was tried at Westchester for a trespass in the Manor of Scarsdale committed by the defendant. The defendant pleaded that the premises were not in the Manor of Scarsdale, but in the Manor of Pelham, and produced Pell's Patent. The agreement between Pell and Richbell, above given, for dividing the land between Cedar Tree brook and Stony or Gravelly brook was then produced by the Plaintiffs, and the jury found a verdict for the plaintiffs with damages and costs.

A great question arose some thirty five years later in relation to the Middle Neck and the Manor of Scarsdale. Many persons had become interested in the former both as purchasers and as mortgagees. The Palmers had early sold undivided twelfth parts to various persons, among others "one twelfth and a half of one twelfth" were sold to Robert Livingston July 20th 1728. The purchasers had many of them died and left numerous heirs and among these was Mr.

[1] So in the original, it means "said."
[2] So in the original.
[3] November.
[4] From an ancient English translation in the writer's possession.
[5] Not recorded, copy in County's possession.
[6] William D. Palmer, Esq.
[7] Now usually called St. James's Piccadilly, though its legal designation is "St. James's, Westminister."

Digitized by Google

Livingston. There were heirs of many others, who in the same way had become possessed of interests larger or smaller in that Neck. The Palmers under the erroneous idea that the division line between the Middle and the East Neck ran due north and not Northwestward sold some three or four farms upwards of 500 acres altogether to one Cornwall who entered thereon. This land was within the Manor of Scarsdale and a part of the East Neck. Thereupon, the purchaser having in the mean time died, four ejectment suits were begun by Anne de Lancey and Lewis Johnston against his sons Benjamin Cornell (as the name soon began to be spelled and pronounced) Joseph Cornell, Peter Cornell, and John Cornell. This was in 1764. The number of persons who found themselves interested was so great as to greatly delay the proceedings. The question was where was the proper starting point between the Necks and what the true direction the line was to run. Finally it was at last determined by all parties to leave the question to a board of arbitrators. But so delayed was the business by the numbers it affected that the Articles of Agreement to arbitrate were not executed till the 21st of March 1769. The Parties were, "William, Earl of Stirling, Peter van Brugh Livingston, John Stevens, John Reid, Walter Rutherford, Robert R. Livingston, Gentlemen, William Smith Junr., Esq Thomas Smith Esq. Joseph Cornell, John Cornell, Benjamin Cornell, and Sarah Cornell, Executors of Peter Cornell, Edward Burling, Benjamin Palmer, John Palmer, Yeomen, Mary Ashfield Spinster, Sarah Morris as widow and Richard Morris Esqr, William Smith Junr, Esqr, Surviving Executors of Lewis Morris deceased, James Kinsey of New Jersey, and John Thomas junr. of Westchester, of the one part, and Anne De Lancey widow of the Honourable James De Lancey Esq. Deceased, and Lewis Johnston of Perth Amboy New Jersey, Physician of the other part."[1]

The Arbitrators chosen were "Samuel Wyllys of Jericho Long Island, Gentleman, Abraham Clark of Elizabethtown New Jersey, Stephen Crane of the same place, Gentlemen, William Nicoll Jr, of Islip, in Suffolk County Esq." These Parties gave bonds in £5000 each to abide by the award, and it was agreed that each side should bear its own expenses, except as to those for the services of the arbitrators and the running of the line in accordance with the award, of which each side was to pay one half. The point to be decided as stated in the articles of agreement was to fix the true point near and below Westchester Path from which the dividing line was to be run in a North Northwesterly direction.

The hearings were long and much evidence locally interesting was brought forward. The Counsel were, for Anne de Lancey and Lewis Johnston, Thomas Jones, for the other parties, Whitehead Hicks, John Morin Scott, and William Smith Junr, all but Scott subsequently Judges of the Supreme Court of the Province, two, Smith Junr, and Jones, were the two historians of the Province. Hicks was also Mayor of New York, and John Morin Scott was one of the Generals on the Whig side in the Revolution, and a lawyer of eminence. The award was unanimous and the operative part is in these few words, "we do award, order judge, and determine, that the place where the straight line of partition that is to run between the said two Necks or Tracts of Land shall begin in the middle of the creek or run of water leading from Dirty Swamp where the said Creek or Run of Water crosses Westchester old Path." All the original papers in this transaction bearing the autographs of all the distinguished men and other parties mentioned above are in the writer's possession in perfect preservation and from them this sketch has been drawn up. The result was to show the Cornell farms were in the Manor of Scarsdale where Colonel Heathcote had originally laid them out, except in one instance where the line went through one of the houses, which threw a little of the land west of the line and on the Middle Neck.

The Middle Neck continued in the hands of several owners, most of them members of the Palmer family until about 1790 when Mr. Peter J. Munro who a year or two before had bought the original Samuel Palmer House (now pulled down and which stood back and a little to one side of the two enormous elms now standing east of, and near, the Larchmont Railroad crossing at the Boston Road, and about 150 feet south of the road itself) and its farm, acquired all the other lands on the Neck, except the Scott House and the mill pond on the extreme western extremity of the Neck, and became the owner in fee simple of the whole. In his possession and that of his family it remained till the year 1845 when the part south of the Boston road, with the great house he built upon it was sold to the late Mr. Edward K. Collins. From him or his representatives it passed finally into the hands of the late Mr. Flint and his associates who upon it have erected the beautiful summer village called Larchmont.

It is sometimes styled Larchmont "Manor" but as this sketch shows the Neck upon which it is situated never was either a Manor or part of a Manor. The Munro farm was very large and the extent of the part of it below the Boston Road, some 330 acres, and the large Munro House now the chief Hotel, suggested the idea of calling it a "Manor" to the first organizers of the enterprise simply to give it prestige and name. No pleasanter place can be found near New York for a summer home.

The origin of the name Larchmont is a little odd, as neither larches nor hills are indigenous to the Neck. When Mr. Munro built his house, he wished to plant a quick growing grove of trees along the turnpike road west of his entrance. His Scotch gardener, a man of the name of Rae, suggested the

[1] From the original instrument in the writer's possession.

Digitized by Google

larches of his native land as they grow very rapidly indeed, and offered to send to his relatives in Scotland for seed. Mr. Munro assented, the seed came, the trees were planted, and answered the purpose admirably for about twenty or twenty five years, then they grew scraggy, began to die, and were gradually removed, the last of them during Mr. Collins' ownership, by whom the name was given to the place while it was his. This was the origin of the Scotch Larch in Westchester County, neither a handsome, nor long lived tree and not an acquisition of value. The "Mont" Mr. Collins evolved from his own consciousness, perhaps because the larch grows chiefly upon hills in its native land.

Larchmont possesses one of the largest and most flourishing yacht-clubs in the country. The beauty and accessibility of its situation and the wide approach to its shores by water gives it very great advantages, as well its position at the wide opening of the western end of Long Island Sound. The membership is about 400 and is increasing, and the club house on the water's edge is a fine and convenient building. Long Beach Point the western extremity of De Lancey's Neck extending out parallel to the shores of Larchmont forms a cove or small harbour, of great beauty directly in front of the village itself.

That part of the Munro farm west of the Turnpike was bought about 1840 by the late Judge James I. Roosevelt, who arranged the Cottage now the property of the family of the late Mr. George Vanderburg for his own residence. It has since been laid out in several small village plots, a large part of it is also owned by the Proprietors of Larchmont, through which runs the surface railway to the Larchmont station of the New Haven Railroad, which is upon this property. West of the Railroad but invisible from it on account of the forest, is "Hannah's Peak," the highest point on the Southeastern shores of Long Island Sound and one of the stations of the Coast Survey. In its neighborhood can also be seen a fine specimen of that natural curiosity, the Rocking Stone. It is an immense boulder so accurately poised that it can be moved without being overthrown.

The part of the East Neck which early in the last century acquired the name it has since borne of "de Lancey's Neck," remained continuously in that family without any of it being sold until 1848 when the late Mr. Thomas James de Lancey who had inherited the western part of it, with the assent of his uncle the late Rt. Reverend William H. de Lancey who had inherited the eastern part, sold his portion in large divisions to various parties. Its splendid situation, with its two beaches Long Beach and Scotch Beach, with Mamaroneck Harbour on its east side and De Lancey's Cove on its west side marked it out as a place for the fine seats and marine villas of gentlemen, with which its entire water front is now covered. The roads and drives upon it, and the marine and inland views it commands are very beautiful and extensive. The central portion is dotted also with the handsome residences of gentlemen, and on the high ground at the picturesque entrance to the Neck is a large and handsome Hotel in the midst of large grounds handsomely laid out through the good taste and enterprise of Mr. Thomas L. Rushmore the gentleman who built it and who dwells in the neighbourhood with his children around him, each with his or her family possessing handsome places of their own.

Upon Long Beach Point on the west extremity of the Neck stands the splendid home of Mr. Henry M. Flagler. This point, originally with a splendid beach on each side of it, juts into the Sound from the Body of the Neck. The late Mr. John Greacen bought it of Mr. Thomas J. de Lancey, and built a large double brick house, now a part of Mr. Flagler's magnificent mansion, at the western end of this unique situation, and surrounded the point with a huge wide stone sea wall upon the top of which he laid out a drive, which is without a rival of its kind on the American sea coast. The Neck itself is the "Satanstoe" of Fenimore Cooper's novel of that name and is therein generally described. To this point the late Mr. Greacen gave the name of "Orienta," the origin of which as he himself told the writer was this. After he got his house built he found that in the summer mornings, he could lie in bed and see the Sun rise directly out of the water far up the Sound, and therefore he called his place "Orient," but "subsequently" said he, finding that a little hamlet at Oyster-pond Point, Long Island, had appropriated that name, I just tacked an "a" to the end of it and called my place "Orienta." Being a musical name it is often heard as applied to the Neck itself, a fact Mr. Greacen said, he did not like "for it ought to be kept for the place I made, especially as everybody on the Neck laughed at me when I adopted it." Unfortunately it has been taken of late to designate drinking saloons &c in the village of Mamaroneck.

"Vergemere" the writer's place is at the East end of the Neck. It and Mr. Flagler's are the only places upon it which have a double water front, and where vessels can lie in safety in all winds. It is surrounded by old forest trees, is very handsomely laid out, and commands extensive and striking marine views. Between these two are the seats of Mr. James M. Constable, Mr. J. A. Bostwick, the Hon. David Dudley Field, Mr. Wm. G. Read, Miss Van Schaack, Mr. Ambrose McGregor, as well as those of Mr. Leonard Jacob, Mrs. Eldridge, Mr. Meigham, and that of the late James M. Miller, and Mr. James T. Burnet.

The town records of Mamaroneck consist of two volumes, one a small parchment covered folio, beginning only on the 2d of April, 1697, containing the records of the annual elections down almost to the present time, when it became full. The other is a

Digitized by Google

large folio about half full of deeds and miscellaneous papers among which are many freeing negro slaves under the state laws gradually abolishing slavery. It was opened in 1756.

The first entry in the records of Mamaroneck is as follows:

"Captain James Mott elected and chosen assessor for the ensuing year 1697, Samuel Palmer chosen supervisor, Henry Disbrow chosen collector and surveyor of the highways, William Palmer elected and chosen constable and recorder. All done by the freeholders and inhabitants of the above said place at a town meeting held at the house of Madam Richbil's on the 2d day of April 1697."

The entries of elections are made irregularly for a few years subsequently to the above date, but afterwards quite regularly. From an examination the following is a list of the supervisors and clerks of the town from the beginning as accurate as it can be made:

SUPERVISORS.

1697. Samuel Palmer.
1698-99, 1702. James Mott.
1707-8. Henry Disbrow.
1710-11. Samuel Palmer.
1712-14. Nehemiah Palmer.
1715-16. Silvanus Palmer.
1717. Josiah Quinby.
1718. John Griffen.
1719-20. Henry Fowler.
1721-22 Silvanus Palmer.
1723. Henry Fowler.
1724. Silvanus Palmer.
1725-26. Henry Fowler.
1727-42. Silvanus Palmer.[1]
1743. Underhill Budd.
1744. Nehemiah Palmer.
1745-47. Underhill Budd.
1748-58. John Stevenson.
Dec. 1758. John Townsend.[2]
1759-60. Reuben Bloomer.
1761-70. John Townsend.
1771-75. William Sutton.
1776. Reuben Bloomer.
1783-93. Gilbert Budd.
1794-97. Benjamin Griffen.
1798-1800. John P. De Lancey.
1801-2. Edward Merritt.
1803-6. Aaron Palmer.
1807-13. John Pinkney.
1814. John Peter De Lancey.[3]
1815. Monmouth Lyon.
1816. Aaron Palmer.
1817-19. John Pinkney.
1820-24. John B. Underhill.
1825-27. Aaron Palmer.
1828. John Morrill.
1829. Edwin Post.
1830. Henry Munro.
1831-32. James H. Guion.
1833-34. Monmouth Lyon.
1835-42. James H. Guion.
1843-45. Benjamin M. Brown.
1846. Stephen C. Griffen.
1847-49. Benjamin M. Brown.
1850. James H. Guion.
1851. Charles W. Hopkins.
1852. Louis Walsh.
1853. Zachariah Voorhees.
1854. Louis Walsh.
1855-58. John Morrell.
1859-60. William L. Barker.
1861. Louis Walsh.
1862-64. Jonas D. Hill.
1865-66. Louis Walsh.
1867. Jacob B. Humphrey.
1868. Schureman Halsted.
1869-70. Thomas L. Rushmore.
1871. James J. Burnet.
1872-76. Charles H. Birney.
1877. Matthias Banta, who has been continually re-elected to the present year, 1886, and for the last few years by a unanimous vote of all parties, although he is a strong Democrat.

TOWN CLERKS.

1697-99. William Palmer.
1702. Obadiah Palmer.
1708-15. Eliezer Gedney.
1718-54. Nehemiah Palmer.
1755-65. William Mott.
1766-70. John Townsend.
1771-1806. Gilbert Budd.
1807-16. Dr. David Rogers, Jr.[4]
1817-24. Monmouth Lyon.
1825-26. Guy C. Bayley.
1827. Coles Tompkins.
1828-30. Monmouth Lyon.
1831. Daniel D. T. Hadden.
1832-34. Walter Marshall.
1835. Horace B. Slaat.
1836. Amos F. Hatfield.
1837-41. Epenetus C. Hadden.
1842-45. Elijah G. Dixon.
1846-47. Edward Seaman.
1848. George Baxter.
1849-53. Edward Seaman.
1854-56. Joseph Hoffman.
1857-58. Edward Seaman.
1859. Joseph Hoffman.
1860-61. Edward Seaman.
1862-64. Joseph Hoffman.
1865-66. Albert Lyon.
1867-69. Jonas D. Hill.
1870. Albert Lyon.
1871. Jacob Buckter.
1872. John N. Boyd.
1873-74. Francis C. Corner.
1875-76. William A. Boyd.
1877. John C. Fairchild.
1878-79. Joseph H. McLoughlin.
1880. William A. Sickles.
1881. Joseph H. McLoughlin.
1882. William H. Lange.
1883. William A. Sickles.
1884-86. William H. Lange.

Space will not permit the introduction of much curious information contained in the town records which it was the intention to give, and which is found mixed up with the routine entries of town meetings, &c. &c.

The following entry however is of much importance showing as it does the burial place of John Richbell the first white man who bought Mamaroneck of the natives—the Father of the Town, his mother in law, and one of his daughters. As Mrs. Richbell his widow continued to live in Mamaroneck and survived till the first years of the eighteenth century, though the precise date of her death can not be found, it is most probable that she too is buried with her husband. There is no date to the entry, which shows beside the intimacy between the Richbell and the Disbrow families. The James Mott who makes this declaration was the husband of Richbell's daughter Mary whose burial is mentioned in it.

The Burial Place of Richbell.

"I James Mott do give and grant to Margaret Disbrow and her three sons Henery John and Benjamin all belonging to Momoronack to them and their famylies forever the Liberty of burying their dead, whether Father or Mother, husband or wife, brother or sister, son or daughter, in a certain peace of Land Laying near the Salt Meadow, where Mr. John Richbell and his wife's Mother, and my wife Mary Mott was buried in my home lot or feild adjoining to my house, written by William palmer Clerk of Momoronack by order of Capt James Mott."

I. Town Records 71.

The spot is on the property of Mr. Thomas L. Rushmore on the little knoll between the Harbour and De Lancey Avenue, marked by a few trees and a few half buried tombstones of a comparatively late date. How many of the Disbrows are buried there nought remains to tell. They have had for sixty or seventy years a cemetery of their own on West St. The last person whom the writer knows to have been buried on the knoll, was the venerable Quaker who once owned the farm and the knoll itself, Seaman Giles —and of whom he has a vivid recollection. It is the

[1] Died 1742. Nehemiah Palmer was elected supervisor in his stead.

[2] Elected in the place of John Stevenson, who had removed from the town.

[3] The candidates for supervisor in 1814 were Henry Merritt and John Pinkney. The result of the election was contested, and in June, 1814, the justice of the peace appointed Mr. De Lancey supervisor.

[4] Dr. Rogers and Gilbert Budd Horton were the candidates for town clerk in 1814. A contest took place between them over the result of the election, which was terminated in June of that year by the justices of the peace electing Dr. Rogers to the office.

Digitized by Google

oldest burial place of civilized man in the town, and it is hoped that some proper historic monument may yet mark this spot so sacred in the memory of the earliest settler of Mamaroneck and his family and friends.

There is one other entry in the town book of such an odd nature that it must be mentioned, an entry which shows the strength of an agricultural superstition very prevalent in the last century and which may linger still in some old fashioned regions.

"April 5th, 1785. The Freeholders and Inhabitants agree that the overseers of Highways are impowered to call on all the Men in their several Districts for the purpose of Destroying the Barbery bushes, so often as the said overseers shall think proper, until the whole are destroyed, any man refusing to come, if he is legally warned, shall forfeit 4s. for every day, to be recovered in the same manner as the fines for neglect of working the roads are, which fines shall be lay'd out as the overseers think proper." It was the popular belief of that day that the smut or blight in wheat and other grains was caused by these unfortunate barberry bushes, hence in Mamaroneck as in many other places, ridiculous as it seems at this day, they were proceeded against as public enemies.

The de Lanceys of New York so closely connected with the Province, and State, and the County of Westchester, are of French origin, the first of them in America having been driven from France by the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, being a Huguenot. The annexed account of this family is mainly from Bolton's second edition of his History of Westchester County, which was drawn up from the authorities referred to in it, and later information from the late Bishop de Lancey and the present writer.

The de Lanceys of New York, are a branch of the ancient house of de Lancey in France, springing from Guy de Lancey, Ecuyer, Vicomte de Laval et de Nouvion, who in 1432, held of the Prince-Bishop of the Duchy of Laon, the fiefs of the four banier of Laval, and that of Nouvion.[1] These territories formed one of the four Vicomte-cies of the Laonnois, a division of the old province of the "Isle of France," bordering on Picardy.

The manuscript genealogies of this family are preserved in the Armorial General de la France 2d Register, 2d volume, in the National Library of France[2] at Paris, and in the archives of the department of the Aisne, at the city of Laon. The latter have been given in the Dictionnaire Historique du Department de' l'Aisne of M. Melville.[3] The descent is thus given from the French authorities.[4]

The prefixed Roman numerals are so used in the French genealogies to denote the different individuals bearing the same Christian name.

1432. Guy de Lancy, Ecuyer[5] Vicomte de Laval et de Nouvion. Wife, Anne de Marcilly.

1436. Jean I, (John) de Lancy, 2d Vicomte.

1470. Jean II, (John) de Lancy, 3d Vicomte, Deputy to the States-General at Tours in 1484, present at the battles Fornoue and Ravvenna.

1525. Charles I, de Lancy, 4th Vicomte. Wives, 1. Nicole St. Pere, issue, one daughter, married Antoine Pioche, of Laon. 2. Marie de Villiers, issue two sons, Charles 6th Vicomte, and Christophe, Seigneur de Raray.

1535. Charles II, de Lancy, 5th Vicomte. Wife, Isabel Branche, married 15th April, 1534; issue, Charles 6th Vicomte, Jacques (James) Claude, and a daughter Barbe.

1569. Charles III, de Lancy, 6th Vicomte. Wives, 1. Madeline Le Brun, married 21st of July, 1569; issue, Charles IV., de Lancy, Seigneur de Cocquebine, (who died in 1667, leaving by Francoise Crochart, his first wife; Charles V, de Lancy, Seigneur de Charlemont, who died unmarried. By his second wife Marthe de Resnel, the Seigneur de Cocquebine, who was created a Counsellor to the King, 20th of March, 1652, by whom he had no children.)

Charles III, de Lancy, 6th Vicomte, was pres-
1590. ent at the battle of Ivry in 1590. 2. By his second wife Claude de May, married 15th Janu-
1593. ary, 1593, he had issue, Charles de Lancy, Sieur de Suine et de Niville, Antoine, a Canon of the Cathedral of Laon, and Claude.

1611. Charles de Lancy, Sieur de Suine et de Niville,
1653. born in 1611, married 25th June, 1653, Jeanne Ysore, was created a Counsellor of State to the
1689. King in 1654, and died 23d of November, 1689, leaving issue, one child,—

Charles Ambroise de Lancy, Seigneur de Ni-
1702. ville et du Condray, de Frenoi, et d'Orgemont, who married 9th January, 1702, Marie Madeleine Labbe. He was confirmed in his nobility
1697. by a decree of the King in Council, Nov. 30th, 1697. He had issue, an only son,—

1707. Pierre Charles de Lancy, Seigneur de Niville et de Blarus, born 5th of June, 1707; an officer of
1750. the King's Guards, who died unmarried in 1750.

Christophe de Lancy, Signeur de Raray, above named, the younger of the two sons of Charles de Lancy 4th, Vicomte de Laval et de
1525. Nouvion, created Baron de Raray, having no issue by his first wife, Barbe de Louen, married
1553. Secondly, January 19th, 1553, Francoise Lami, daughter of Pierre Lami, Seigneur de la Morliere.

[1] Sometimes spelled "Nouvian." These lands and villages are situated a few miles from the city of Laon in the present department of the Aisne.

[2] The official MSS. of this work, the great National Register of the French Noblesse, were first printed by order of Louis XV., in 1738.

[3] In two vols. 8vo., published at Paris and at Laon in 1865.

[4] Le Nobiliaire de Picardie, Paris, 1693, title "Lanci," Dictionnaire de la Noblesse de France, by Chenaye Desbois, vol. viii: title "Lancy." Annuaire de la Noblesse of Borel d'Hauterive for 1855, "Lancy—Raray."

[5] Ecuyer, denotes a gentleman entitled to use coat-armor.

Digitized by Google

1584. He died in 1584, leaving a son Nicholas de Lancy, second Baron, Treasurer of Gaston, first Duke of Orleans who married Lucrèce de Lancise, a Florentine lady, and had four children. 1. Henry de Lancy, third Baron, who
1654. was created January 17th, 1654, Marquis De Raraí. 2. Francois de Lancy, Seigneur D'Aramont, called the Chevalier de Raray, who was killed at the siege of Conde, 17th August, 1674, unmarried; and 3. Charles de Lancy, Seigneur de Ribecourt, et Pimprè, who married Madeleine d'Aguesseau and died without issue in 1675. 4. Madeleine de Lancy, married 11th November, 1619, Charles de Mornay, Seigneur de Montchevreuil.

Henry de Lancy, above named, 1st Marquis de Raray, married January 30th, 1633, Catharine d'Angennes, daughter of Louis d'Angennes, Seigneur de la Loupe and his wife Francoise, daughter of Odet, Seigneur d'Auberville, Bailly of the city of Caen, in Normandy, by whom he had, 1. Gaston Jean Baptiste de Lancy, 2d Marquis; 2. Charles de Lancy-Raray, killed at the siege of Lille, in 1667, unmarried; and 3. Marie Charlotte, wife of Louis des Acres, Marquis de l'Aigle, who died in Paris, August 27th, 1734, aged 82 years.[1]

1660. Gaston Jean Baptiste de Lancy, second Marquis de Raray, married 4th May, 1660, Marie Luce Aubery, daughter of Robert, Marquis de Vatan, and had two sons, Charles Henry de Lancy, third Marquis, made a page to the King
1679. in 1679, who died shortly after, unmarried, and Gaston Jean Baptiste de Lancy, who succeeded his brother as fourth Marquis and died unmarried not long after. Both these brothers died
1680. in 1680; and with them ended the males of this branch of the family. Their sisters were five, Henriette, wife of the Marquis de Crevecœur; Catharine, wife of the Seigneur de la Billarderie;[2] Francoise, died unmarried; Annette, died unmarried, and Marie Luce, wife of the Comte de Nonant, who died 16th March, 1743, aged eighty.

[1] Le Palais d'LHonneur, Paris, 1664, page 312, family "d'Angennes."

[2] In front of the altar at the Church of Vreberie, (department of Oise, France), there is a tombstone erected to this lady, inscribed:—

D. O. M.
Ict repose
Haute etpuissante Dame
Madame Francoise de Lancy Rari, dame
Des Terres et Seigneuries, d'Haramont, Ribecourt,
Pimpre St. Germain et Ruy, en partie Châtelaine
Hereditaire et engagiste des Domaines de Bothizy
et Verberie, possides par ses peres de puisplus
deux cents ans veuve de Messire Barthelemi de
Flahaut Chevelier seigneur de la Billarderie Maitre
de camp de Cavalerie, exempt des gardes du corps
du Roi tue a la bataille de Mal plaquet. La dite
Dame de la Billarterie est decedee la 25 Juin, 1624,
agree de 61 ans.
Priez pour son âme

The Arms are blazoned in the "Armorial Genéral de la France," thus, "Armes; or, a l'aigle eployee de sable, charge sur l'estomac d'un ecusson d'azur, a trois lances d'or, posees en pal, pointes en haut." In English, Arms: Or, an eagle wings displayed, sable, charged on the breast with a shield azure, three tilting lances or, in pale, points upward.

On becoming a British subject, Etienne (or Stephen) de Lancy modified these arms which had originated before the use of crests in heraldry, to make them more like those of English families, most of which have crests; and though not registered in the English College of Arms, they appear as so modified in most English heraldic works, and have since been so borne in America, notably on the official seal of his son James de Lancey, as Lt. Governor and Captain General of New York. They are thus blazoned:—Arms; Azure, a tilting lance proper, point upward with a pennon argent bearing a cross gules fringed and floating to the right, debruised of a fess, or. Crest; a sinister arm in armor embowed, the hand grasping a tilting lance, pennon floating, both proper. Motto; Certum voto pete finem.

The name of this family, anciently spelled "Lanci," and later "Lancy," in France, was anglicised by Etienne de Lancy on being denizenized a British subject in 1686, after which time he always wrote his name Stephen de Lancey—thus inserting an "*e*" in the final syllable. The "*de*" is the ordinary French prefix, denoting nobility.

The Seigneur Jacques (James) de Lancy, abovenamed, second son of Charles de Lancy, fifth Vicomte de Laval et de Nouvion, was the ancestor of the Huguenot branch, the only existing one, of this family. His son the Seigneur Jacques de Lancy of Caen, married Marguerite Bertrand, daughter of Pierre Bertrand of Caen, by his first wife, the Demoiselle Firel, and had two children, a son Etienne (or Stephen) de Lancey, born at Caen, October 24, 1663, and a daughter, the wife of John Barbarie.[3] On the revocation of the edict of Nantes, Stephen de Lancey was one of those who, stripped of their titles and estates, fled from persecution—leaving his aged mother, then a widow, in concealment at Caen, he escaped to Holland, where, remaining a short time, he proceeded to England, and taking out letters of denization as an English subject at London, on the 20th of March, 1686, he sailed for New York, where he arrived on the 7th of June following. Here with three hundred pounds sterling, the proceeds of the sale of some family jewels, the parting gift of his mother, he embarked in mercantile pursuits. By industry and strict application to business, he became a successful mer-

[3] MSS., "Bertrand" Genealogy:—John Barbarie and his family came to New York in 1668, in which year (on 5th January), he and his sons Peter, and John Peter, were denizened as English subjects in London. He was subsequently a merchant in New York, in partnership with his brother-in-law, Stephen de Lancy, and a member of the Council of the Province.

chant and amassed a large fortune. He was a highly esteemed and influential man, and held, through all his life, honorable appointments in the councils of the city, as well as in the Representative Assembly of the Province. He was elected Alderman of the west ward of the city, five years after his arrival, in 1691. He was representative from the city and county of New York, in the Provincial Assembly, from 1702 to 1715, with the exception of 1709; and in 1725, on the decease of Mr. Provoost, he was elected again to that body. The following year he was re-elected, and continued in office until 1737; a service of twenty-six years in all. In 1716, being a vestryman of Trinity church, he contributed £50, the amount of his salary as Representative to the General Assembly, to buy a city clock for that church, the first ever erected in New York. To him and Mr. John Moore, his partner, the city is also indebted for the introduction of fire engines, in 1731.[1] He was one of the principal benefactors of the French church, Du St. Esprit, established in New York by the refugees who fled upon the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, and a warm friend of the French Huguenots at New Rochelle. The following letter addressed by him, 1591, to his friend Alexander Allaire, is still preserved among the public records at New Rochelle.

NIEU YORK, LE 27 JULIET, 1691.

MONS. ALLAIRE:

Monsieur Notre Amy Mons. Bonheiler, avant de partir me donnera ordre qu'en cas quil vinse à mourir il soit fair donnation de ses térres à sa filleule votre fille, Sy vous pouvez faire quelque Benefice des dits terres. Soit à Couper des arbres ou a faire des foins sur les prairies vous le pouves a l'exclusion de qui quose soit, Je suis.

Mons. votre trè humble serviteur,

ETIENNE DE LANCEY.

Ceu est la vèrétable copple de l'original.[2]

He was a vestryman of Trinity church, New York at the time of his death, in 1741. He married January 23d, 1700, Anne Van Cortlandt, daughter of Stephanus Van Cortlandt (whose family was then one of the most opulent and extensive in the Province). Stephen de Lancey at his death in 1741 left issue surviving, James, Peter, Stephen, John, Oliver, Susan and Anne. Of these sons Stephen and John died bachelors. Susan married Admiral Sir Peter Warren, and Anne the Hon. John Watts of New York. The eldest son, James de Lancey, a man of great talent, was born in the City of New York, 27th November, 1703, and received his education at the University of Cambridge, England. He was a fellow commoner of Corpus Christi College (where he was styled the "handsome American") and studied law in the Temple. In 1725, he returned to New York, and on the decease of John Barbarie, his uncle by marriage, was appointed by George II. to succeed him in the Provincial Council. He took his seat at the board, January 29, 1729, and held it to April 9, 1733, when he was appointed Chief Justice of New York and continued so the remainder of his life. In 1753, on the accession of Sir Danvers Osborne as Governor, in the place of George Clinton, he received the commission of Lieutenant-Governor, which had been conferred upon him in 1747 by George II. and had been kept back by Clinton until this time. The oath of office was administered October 10, 1753. The tragical death of Sir Danvers Osborn by suicide two days afterwards, occasioned the elevation of Mr. de Lancey to the Gubernatorial chair, which he occupied till the 2d of September, 1755, when the new Governor, Admiral Sir Charles Hardy arrived, who administered the government till the 2d of July, 1757. Preferring a naval command Hardy resigned, and sailed in the expedition to Louisburgh, and Mr. De Lancey again took the reins of Government.

The ministry of England wished to keep the command of New York in the hands of Mr. de Lancey, but it was then, as it is to this day, a rule of the English Government never to appoint a native colonist to the supreme command over his own colony. To effect their object in this case without violating their rule, they decided not to appoint any new Governor as long as Mr. de Lancey lived; he therefore remained the Governor of New York under his commission as Lieutenant-Governor until his death, some three years afterwards, on the 30th of July, 1760.[3]

"On the 19th of June, 1754, Governor de Lancey convened and presided over the celebrated Congress of Albany, the first Congress ever held in America, over which he presided. This was a Congress of delegates from all the colonies, which the home government directed the Governor of New York to hold, for the purpose of conciliating the Indian nations who were invited to attend it; of renewing the covenant chain and attaching them more closely to the British interest, and comprising all the provinces in one general treaty to be made with them in the King's name, and for no other purpose.[4] Speeches and presents were made to the Indians who promised to do all that was asked of them, but no formal treaty whatever was concluded. The Congress voted instead, that the delegation from each colony except New York, should appoint one of their number, who together should be a committee to digest a plan for a general union of all the colonies.

The choice of the New York committee-man was left to Governor de Lancey, who, acting most impartially, appointed his political opponent, William Smith, Esq., the elder.[5] This movement, which was not within the objects of the Congress as defined in

[1] Miscellaneous works, by Gen. de Peyster; De Peyster Gen. Ref. p. 54.

[2] Copied from original MSS. in Rec. of New Rochelle.

[3] For a full biographical sketch of Governor De Lancey, see Documentary History of New York, vol. IV, p. 1037.

[4] Virginia and Carolina did not send delegates, but desired to be considered as present. Doc. Hist. N. Y., II, 567.

[5] See Letter of Lords of Trade, directing the holding of the Congress, and the minutes of its proceedings in full, in Doc. Hist. N. Y., II. 56[illegible], and N. Y. Col. Hist., vi. p. 853.

Digitized by Google

the letter of the Board of Trade above mentioned, resulted in the adopting of a plan of a union to be made by an act of Parliament, which, after the provisions were resolved on, was put into form by Benjamin Franklin, who was a delegate from Pennsylvania, and which was not decided upon, but merely sent to the different provinces for consideration.

Before the motion for the appointment of this committee was made, Governor de Lancey, being in favor of the colonies uniting for their own defence, proposed the building and maintaining, at the joint expense of the colonies, of a chain of forts covering their whole exposed frontier, and some in the Indian country itself. But this plan, like the other, was without effect upon the Congress; for, as he tells us himself, "they seemed so fully persuaded of the backwardness of the several assemblies to come into joint and vigorous measures that they were unwilling to enter upon the consideration of the matters."[1] His idea seems to have been for a practical union of the colonies for their own defense to be made by themselves; whilst that of the committees, who despaired of a voluntary union, was for a consolidation of the colonies to be enforced by act of Parliament. Neither plan, however, met with favor in any quarter, and the Congress effected little but the conciliation of the Indians.[2]

In the autumn of 1754, the Governor suggested to the Assembly the system of settling lands in townships instead of patents, a measure which, being passed by them, rapidly increased the population and prosperity of the colony.[3]

On the 31st of October, 1754, Governor de Lancey signed and passed the charter of King's (now Columbia) college, in spite of the long and bitter opposition of the Presbyterians, led by Mr. William Livingston. So decided were they against the Episcopalians at this time, and so determined were the efforts of Mr. Livingston to break down the college, that, though signed and sealed, the charter was not delivered in consequence of the clamor, till May 7th, 1755, when, after an address, Governor de Lancey presented it to the trustees in form.[4]

"No American had greater influence in the colonies than James de Lancey. Circumstances, it is true, aided in raising him to this elevation—such as education, connections, wealth, and his high conservative principles; but he owed as much to personal qualities, perhaps, as to all other causes united. Gay, witty, easy of access, and frank, he was, personally, the most popular ruler the Province ever possessed, even when drawing tightest the reins of Government."[5]

[1] See his speech to the Assembly of August 20th, 1754. Ass. Jour., II, 386, 387.

[2] See the proceedings of the Congress. Doc. Hist. N. Y., II, 386, 387.

[3] Assembly Journal, II, for September, 1754.

[4] Doc. Hist. N. Y. IV, 1051.

[5] Doc. Hist. N. Y., p 1057.

The death of Governor James de Lancey, which took place on the 30th of July, 1760, was an event which had a great influence in the affairs of the Province. He was found expiring upon that morning, seated in his chair in his library, too late for medical aid. His funeral took place on the evening of the 31st of July, 1760. The body was deposited in his family vault, in the middle aisle of Trinity Church, the funeral service being performed by the Rev. Mr. Barclay, in great magnificence; the building was splendidly illuminated. The accounts of the funeral and the procession from his house in the Bowery to the church, filled columns of the papers of the day.[6]

The following particulars are copied from a memorandum written by the elder John Watts, of New York, in 1787:

"James de Lancey was a man of uncommon abilities in every view, from the law to agriculture, and an elegant, pleasant companion—what rarely unites in one person; it seemed doubtful which excelled, his quick penetration or his sound judgment; the first seemed an instant guide to the last. No man in either office, (Chief Justice or Lieut. Governor,) had more the love and confidence of the people; nor any man, before or since, half the influence. He was unfortunately taken from us in July, 1760, so suddenly that his very family suspected no danger. We had spent, very agreeably, the day before on Staten Island; after ten at night he left my house perfectly well, in the morning he was as usual, but about nine a servant was dispatched to tell me his master was very ill. I mounted instantly and hurried to his house in Bowery Lane, but on the way was alarmed by a call 'that all was over,' and too true I found it; he sat reclined in his chair, one leg drawn in, the other extended, his arms over the elbows, so naturally, that had I not been apprized of it, I certainly should have spoken as I entered the room. Nobody but his youngest daughter, a child, was present at the time, so little did the family apprehend the least danger. Never did these eyes behold such a spectacle, or did my spirits feel such an impression. The idea affects me whenever I think of it; to lose such a companion, such a counsellor, such a friend."

James de Lancey married as above stated, Anne, eldest daughter and co-heiress of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote, Lord of the Manor of Scarsdale. By her, he had four sons; first, James; second, Stephen; third, Heathcote; fourth, John Peter; and four daughters; first, Mary, wife of William Walton, who died in 1767; second, Susannah, born 18th November, 1737, died a spinster in 1815; third, Anne, born 1746, and died in 1817, who married Thomas Jones, Justice of the Supreme Court of New York, author of the History of New York during the Revolutionary War; and Martha who died a spinster, aged 19, in 1769.

James De Lancey, the eldest son of the Lieutenant-Governor, born in 1732, was the head of the political party, called by his name, from his father's death to the Revolution and its leader in the Assembly of the Province. He married, August 17th, 1771, Margaret Allen of Philadelphia, daughter of William Allen, Chief Justice of Pennsylvania, whose sister was the wife of Governor John Penn of that Province. The late Mrs. Harry Walter Livingston (born Mary Allen) who died in 1855, was a niece of these two sisters. James de Lancey had two sons, Charles in early life a British naval officer, and James, Lieut-Colonel of

[6] Parker's *Post Boy* and other newspapers.

Digitized by Google

the First Dragoon Guards; both died bachelors, the former May 6th, 1840, and the latter May 26th, 1857; and three daughters, Margaret, married July 17th, 1794, Sir Jukes Granville Clifton Jukes, Bart. and died June 11th, 1804 without leaving children; Anna and Susan who both died spinsters, the first, August 10th, 1851, and the last April 7th, 1866.

Stephen the second son of Lieutenant-Governor de Lancey was the proprietor of what is now the town of North Salem in this county, which came to his father as part of his share in the Manor of Cortlandt, which town Stephen de Lancey settled. He built a large double dwelling, which he subsequently gave to the town for an Academy which is still in existence.[1] He married Hannah Sackett, daughter of Rev. Joseph Sackett of Crom Pond and died without issue May 6th, 1795. Heathcote, the third son of the Lieutenant-Governor, died young before his father.

John Peter de Lancey, the fourth son of Lt. Governor de Lancey, was born in the city of New York, July 15th, 1753, and died at Mamaroneck, January 30th, 1828. He was educated in Harrow school in England, and at the military school at Greenwich. In 1771, he entered the regular army as Ensign, and served up to the rank of captain in the 18th, or Royal Irish Regiment of Foot. He was, also, for a time by special permission, Major of the Pennsylvania Loyalists, commanded by Col. William Allen.

He received the Heathcote estates of his mother, in the Manor of Scarsdale; and having retired from a military life, in 1789 returned to America and resided at Mamaroneck. He built a new house, still standing on Heathcote Hill, the site of his grandfather Heathcote's great brick manor-house, which was accidentally burnt several years prior to the Revolution. He married 28th September, 1785, Elizabeth Floyd, daughter of Col. Richard Floyd of Mastic, Suffolk County, the head of that old Long Island family, and had three sons and five daughters. The sons were, 1. Thomas James, a lawyer, who died in 1822, at the early age of 32, leaving by his wife Mary, daughter of Thomas Ellison, an only child, a son, also named Thomas James, who married Frances Augusta Bibby, and died in 1859, without having had issue. 2. Edward Floyd, born 18th June, 1795 and died a bachelor, 19th October 1820. 3. William Heathcote, born 8th October, 1797, at Mamaroneck, and died at Geneva, New York, April 5, 1865, the late Bishop of Western New York.

The daughters were five in number. 1. Anne Charlotte, born 17th September, 1786, married 10th December, 1827; John London McAdam, the celebrated originator of McAdamized roads,[2] and died at Hoddesdon, in England, 29th May, 1852, without issue. 2. Susan Augusta, wife of James Fenimore Cooper, the eminent American Author, born 28th January, 1792, married 1st January, 1811,[3] and died 20th of January, 1852. 3. Maria Frances, born August 3d, 1793; died 17th of January, 1806. 4. Elizabeth Caroline, born 4th March, 1801, and died, single, 25th February, 1860. 5. Martha Arabella, born 10th January, 1803, who died in May 1882.

William Heathcote de Lancey, the first Bishop of Western New York, was born at Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck, October 8th, 1797.

After attending school at Mamaroneck, and then at New Rochelle, where his teacher was Mr. Waite, father of the present Chief Justice Waite of the Supreme Court of the United States, he was sent to the academy of the Rev. Mr. Hart, at Hempstead, L. I., and on the death of that gentleman, was transferred at the suggestion of his father's personal friend, the Hon. Rufus King, to that of the Rev. Dr. Eigenbrodt, at Jamaica. Entering Yale College in 1813, Mr. de Lancey graduated in 1817, and at once commenced the study of theology with the celebrated Bishop Hobart, as a private student. He was ordained a deacon by that prelate on the 28th of December, 1819, and a priest on March 6th, 1822.

Mr. de Lancey married on the 22d of November, 1820, Frances, third daughter of Peter Jay Munro, of New York, and of Mamaroneck, the distinguished lawyer, only child of the Rev. Dr. Harry Munro, the last English Rector of St. Peter's church, Albany, N. Y., by his third wife, Eve Jay, daughter of Peter Jay, the first of that name in Rye, (one of whose younger brothers was Chief Justice John Jay) by his wife Margaret, daughter of the Hon. Henry White, of the Council of the Province of New York, and his wife Eve Van Cortlandt, of Yonkers.

While a divinity student Mr. de Lancey held the first services of the Episcopal Church in Mamaroneck; and with the aid of his father, John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro, who were its first wardens, founded the Parish of St. Thomas in that village.

After serving for short periods as deacon in Trinity church, and in Grace church, New York, he was invited by the venerable Bishop White of Pennsylvania to be his personal assistant in the "Three United Churches" of Christ church, St. Peter's, and St James in Philadelphia, of which he was also the Rector. Mr. de Lancey accepted this position and removed to Philadelphia, where he continued to reside in the closest and most confidential relations with Bishop White, until the death in 1836, of that great and venerable prelate, the first Bishop of the American Church, consecrated by Anglican Bishops.

During this period, in 1827, in his thirtieth year, Mr. de Lancey was chosen Provost of the University

[1] See Town of North Salem.

[2] She was his second wife. His first wife was Glorianna Nicoll of Suffolk County, Long Island; a first cousin of Mrs. John Peter de Lancey, the mother of his second wife.

[3] This marriage was solemnized in the house of Mr. de Lancey, at Heathcote Hill.

Digitized by Google

YORK
RARY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

...lphia"	and yet his courtesy and gentlemanly bearing, together with a pleasant touch of humor, so lubricated the ...of every contest, that no undue heat remained ...en the struggle was over. No higher ...to the manner in which he ... fact of great and ...th a main-

...s after
...nized as it

Digitized by Google

of Pennsylvania, that old "College in Philadelphia" founded by Benjamin Franklin; and also received the degree of D.D., from his Alma Mater, Yale College—being the youngest man upon whom, up to that time, she had conferred that honor. He remained in the Provostship five years, having brought the University up to a very flourishing condition, when he resigned to resume his profession and was elected assistant minister of St. Peter's church, Philadelphia, with the reversion of the Rectorship upon the death of Bishop White.

That event occurring in 1836, Dr. de Lancey then became Rector of St. Peter's and remained such until 1839, when, upon the division of the State of New York into two Dioceses, he was elected Bishop of that part of the State, west of Utica, and consecrated Bishop of Western New York, at Auburn, May 9th, 1839, and took up his residence at Geneva in Ontario County, a town nearly in the centre of the new Diocese the same year.

After a long, distinguished and successful episcopate of twenty-seven years, Bishop de Lancey died in his own house in Geneva, on the 5th of April, 1865, in the sixty-eighth year of his age. "In him," said a writer of the day, "the Church in America loses the further services of one of her oldest and wisest Bishops. Descended from one of the oldest and best families in this country—which dates far back in our colonial history, and was from the first one of the staunchest pillars of the Church—Bishop de Lancey had also the good fortune to be personally connected with the leading minds in our American branch of the Church Catholic. After studying for holy orders under Bishop Hobart, and being ordained by him both Deacon and Priest, he became assistant to the venerable Bishop White, and continued in the closest and most confidential intercourse with him to his death in 1836. * * * During his connection with the Diocese of Pennsylvania, he filled numerous posts of dignity and useful service, among which were the Provostship of the University of Pennsylvania, the Secretaryship of the House of Bishops, and of the Pennsylvania Convention; his activity, high character and living influence, were inferior to those of no other Priest in the Diocese. This early promise was not disappointed, but abundantly fulfilled, in his career as the first Bishop of Western New York. He was one of the men whom nature had marked out for a ruler among his fellows. With sound principles, earnest devotion, personal gravity, and spotless purity of life, he possessed a clearness of head, a keen knowledge of human nature, and a coolness, caution, readiness, and boldness, which all combined in making him a successful Bishop. His skill in debate was remarkable, and was fully equalled by his mastery of all the resources of parliamentary tactics, either for carrying a measure which he favored, or defeating one to which he was opposed. His vigilance and unflinching tenacity were fully on a par with his other qualities; and yet his courtesy and gentlemanly bearing, together with a pleasant touch of humor, so lubricated the friction of every contest, that no undue heat remained on either side when the struggle was over. No higher testimony could be given to the manner in which he discharged his high office, than the fact of great and steady growth in his Diocese, together with a maintenance of an internal harmony, unity and peace, such as no one of our great Dioceses has been able to equal, much less surpass; nor was he ever the subject of systematic attack from outside of his own jurisdiction. But his care was not limited to his own immediate charge. While Hobart College, and De Veaux College, and the Theological Training School, and other flourishing Church schools, manifest his power of organization and maintenance, and his success in rallying aid by means of the confidence which his personal and official character inspired, he never neglected the General Institutions of the Church. Not only in General Convention was he one of the strong men of the Upper House; but in the Board of Missions, in the Church Book Society, in the General Theological Seminary, he has been among the foremost, sometimes the one of all others to lead the way at critical moments, and to sound the call to which others were glad to rally. His clear-sightedness, indeed, sometimes made him a little in advance of his time; and no truer proof of wisdom could be given by a tenacious man than the promptness with which he dropped a subject when satisfied that it was not yet ripe for action. One case of this kind was in regard to the General Theological Seminary, which he foresaw must sooner or later change its form from a general to a local institution; and about twenty years ago he proposed it in the Board. The proposal failed, and was not renewed. The time for that change is much nearer now than it was then, and the shape which it will take, will probably be different in some important respects from Bishop de Lancey's ideas at that time.[1] But his foresight as to the coming change will continue on record. Another and still more important subject was also introduced first by him into General Convention—the adoption of the Provincial System. Bishop White, indeed, had sketched out the plan long before, and he had taken it from the universal system of the Church in all ages and countries; but Bishop de Lancey was the first to propose it, formally, to the Legislature of the Church. The time had not come; and the Bishop wisely let it sleep thereafter; but here, as before, the proof of his foresight as to the approaching and certain needs of the Church is written in the records of her institutions. Bishops of more brilliance in some departments, of more moving eloquence, of more sympathetic temperaments, of more personal popularity, of more rapid visible success, we may behold; but a Bishop more

[1] The change did not come till about fifteen or sixteen years after Bishop de L.'s death, when the Seminary was totally reorganized as it now is.

Digitized by Google

sagacious, more steady, more true, in laying the foundations of the Church, like a wise master-builder, we never expect to see."

John Peter De Lancey by will (dated 28th of January, 1823) devised his property in this town to Thomas James De Lancey, the only child of his deceased son Thomas James, and to his son William Heathcote De Lancey the Bishop of Western New York (except a portion of the western end of De Lancey's Neck which he had conveyed in his life time to his deceased son Thomas James, who had devised the same to his only child Thomas James the younger). All the property of Thomas James the younger lay upon the western part of de Lancey's Neck. The eastern part of that Neck, the Heathcote Hill tract, and sedge lots, with the other lands of John Peter de Lancey in Mamaroneck passed to the late Bishop de Lancey, who devised the same to his four surviving children, Edward Floyd, John Peter, William Heathcote, Jr., and Margaret, wife of Thomas F. Rochester, M.D. The Heathcote Hill estate was devised to them equally, and subsequently by purchase of the shares of his brothers and sister became the sole property of Edward Floyd de Lancey, the present proprietor. Thomas James de Lancey, the younger, sold his part of de Lancey's Neck in his lifetime, and it is now held by many owners. The eastern part, has now been sold by the children of Bishop de Lancey except the extreme south-eastern part, the country seat of Edward F. de Lancey.

Peter de Lancey, second son of Etienne de Lancey the Huguenot, prominent in the affairs of the Province, Member of Assembly from Westchester for many years, and High Sheriff was born 26 August, 1705, and died 17 October, 1770; he married Elizabeth daughter of Gov. Cadwallader Colden Jan. 7th 1737–8 and had issue twelve children. 1. Stephen a lawyer, Recorder of Albany, and Clerk of Tryon County; 2. John succeeded his father as Member for Westchester and was also High Sheriff of the County, married Miss Wickham and had an only child a daughter who was the wife of the Hon. Christopher Yates, Chief Justice and Governor of the State of New York. 3. Peter a lawyer of Charleston, S. C. 4. Anne wife of John Coxe of Philadelphia. 5. Alice, wife of Ralph Izard of S. C. Delegate to the Continental Congress from South Carolina, 1780 to 1783, U. S. Commissioner to Tuscany in 1777, and U. S. Senator from S. C. 1789 to 1795. 6. Elizabeth died single; 7. James High Sheriff of Westchester at and for several years preceding the outbreak of the American Revolution, Colonel of the Westchester Light Horse, the alert and famous Partisan Chief of the Neutral Ground in the war of the Revolution, Member of the Council of Nova Scotia, died May 2d, 1804 at his residence Willow Park, near Annapolis, Nova Scotia, aged 58 years; 8. Oliver, of Westfarms, Lieutenant in the British Navy, resigned because he would not fight against his native land in the Revolution, died at Westchester 4th Sept. 1820; 9. Susanna wife of Col. Thomas Barclay and mother of Henry, de Lancey, Thomas, George, and Sir Anthony Barclay, and Beverly Barclay, and of Eliza wife of Schuyler Livingston, Maria wife of Simon Fraser, and Susan, first wife of the late Peter G. Stuyvesant of New York, and Ann wife of William H. Parsons of that city; 10. Jane wife of her cousin the Hon. John Watts Jr, for a time first Judge of Westchester County, and afterwards Recorder of New York; 11. Warren, drowned by accident, a child; 12. Warren, made a cornet of Horse for his gallantry at the battle of White-plains at the age of 15, he having run away from his mother's house at West-farms to join the British Army; afterwards of New York, and subsequently of Madison County New York, where he left descendants.

Oliver de Lancey, the youngest of the sons of the Huguenot, and the third of them who left issue, born 16th Sept. 1718, died at Beverly, Yorkshire, England, 27th Nov. 1785, a merchant of New York, but more prominent in Public life, was Colonel of the Forces, and Receiver-General, of the Province of New York for many years; Member of Assembly for the City from 1756 to 1760; Member of the Governor's Council from 1760 to 1783; commander of the Forces of the Province in the French War, and as such present at the Repulse of Ticonderoga; commander of the Department of Long Island during the whole Revolutionary War, for which he raised a brigade of three Regiments called "De Lancey's Battalions" of which he was the Brigadier-General. Married Phila Franks of Philadelphia in 1742, and had issue two sons and four daughters; 1. Stephen, a lawyer born 1748, died 6 Dec. 1798 at Portsmouth N. H., Lt. Col. of one of his Father's Battalions, after the war Chief Justice of the Bahamas, and Governor of Tobago, married Cornelia daughter of Rector Barclay of Trinity church, N. Y., had one son, Sir William Howe de Lancey, K. C. B. Quarter-Master-General of Wellington's Army in 1815, who was killed at Waterloo. The daughters of Govr. Stephen, were, 1. Susan, married 1st Col. Wm. Johnson eldest son of Sir John Johnson, Bart., and 2d General Sir Hudson Lowe, K. C. B. Governor of St. Helena during the captivity of Napoleon the Great. Charlotte her only daughter by Col. Johnson married Count Balmain, the Russian Commissioner at St. Helena; 2. Phila died, single, 3. Anne married Wm. Lawson of the Island of Berbice, 4. Charlotte married Col. Child of the British Army.

2. Oliver De Lancey the second son of Brigadier General Oliver, (often confounded in histories and other writings with his Father) entered the British Regular Army, as Cornet in the 17th Light Dragoons, a youth, several years prior to the American Revolution. He succeeded Andre (being then a Major) in 1780 as Adjutant-General of the British Army in America. In 1794 was made Colonel of his Regiment in succession to the Duke of Newcastle, and Barrack

Digitized by Google

Master General of the Empire a year or two later. Died unmarried, Colonel of his Regiment and a full General in the British Army in 1820.

The Daughters of Brigadier-General Oliver de Lancey were, 1. Susanna wife of General Sir Wm. Draper, the conqueror of Manilla, and the opponent of "Junius." 2. Phila wife of Stephen Payne-Galwey of the Island of Antigua, 3. Anna wife of Col. John Harris Cruger, the gallant defender of Fort Ninety Six in Carolina, Member of the Council of the Province of New York, and as such certified to the correctness and legality of the final Partition of the Heathcote estate in the Manor of Scarsdale in 1774. 4. Charlotte wife of Field Marshall Sir David Dundas K. C. B. who succeeded the Duke of York as commander-in-chief of the British Army.

All the usual stores and markets, and conveniences of living are to be found in Mamaroneck, and of a class and grade not exceeded by any other village in the County. Divided from the village of Rye Neck only by the Mamaroneck river with a free bridge across it, the latter has drawn off a large portion of the population naturally belonging to Mamaroneck which is the post town for both, and has made practically both places one except in voting. Hence too the different societies of all kinds found in an American town, social, charitable, musical, mechanical, and to some extent religious have their headquarters in Rye Neck and will be found described in the Chapter on Rye.

The village of Mamaroneck until within the last few years has suffered, from and Rye Neck has been benefited by, a singular cause as far as growth is concerned. In 1811 under a special act of the Legislature was incorporated "The Westchester County Manufacturing Society." [1] The Act gave this corporation power to purchase, hold, and convey, lands and tenements, goods, wares, and merchandise whatsoever necessary to the objects of this incorporation." Under this sweeping clause it bought two farms on the Mamaroneck side of the river belonging to Gilbert Budd, a most honorable and respected man, one called the "Hadley" farm of about 62 acres, the other the "Homestead" of about 182 acres, or together 244 acres. This was all the land in the immediate neighbourhood of the mouth of the river on its west side and the village upon which the latter could grow. The company built a large dam and factory. But after a moderate success for a few years it ended in failure, and from that time till 1870 it was followed by a long succession of unsuccessful enterprises of a manufacturing character each in turn succumbing to failure, or forced sale. The consequence was that the title to the property became so involved, embarrassed, and confused, that faith was lost in it. The land became unsaleable, and it remained practically dead to the great detriment of the village in every respect. About 1870 began a change, and now it is understood that the clouds are entirely dispersed. As soon as this was found to be really the case, village improvement began at once, and is now going on with increasing rapidity.

[1] Ch. 17 Laws of 1811.

Mamaroneck was without a newspaper until four years ago, its local wants being supplied by the neighbouring Journals of Rye and Portchester. In May 1882, The *Mamaroneck Register* was established by William E. Peters, met with very fair success and is still in existence under him as Editor and Proprietor. It is a four page paper, of six columns to a page, and is issued every Wednesday. It pursues an independent course in politics. Several years prior to 1882 an attempt was made to publish a paper called the *Investigator* by George M. Forbes. But it met with no success, and after a brief existence, was given up.

About 1856 an attempt to run a steamer called the Island City, between Mamaroneck and New York was made, stopping at New Rochelle and City Island, and carrying both passengers and freight. The leading man in the enterprise was the late John Griffin. Her landing place was at the foot of Bleecker now Union Avenue in De Lancey's Neck, Bishop de Lancey who owned the spot having at the request of Mr. Griffin and the other gentlemen obtained a grant permitting the building of a Dock below low water mark at that point, and leased them the privilege at a nominal rent. The enterprise failed, was subsequently renewed by Wm. Taylor with a landing on Harbor Island, but that also failed. The "Mary E. Gordon." freight boat only, was built by Capt. Gedney, the old sloop owner in 1880, and makes trips three times a week. Her owners are Captain Joseph H. Gedney and sons. She is the first boat that has brought freight regularly to the present dock, and is the modern successor of a very long line of "Mamaroneck Sloops." Famous vessels in their day were those Mamaroneck sloops, and their day was a very long one.

Some of them were very fast, and there was a fierce rivalry between the old sloop captains of all the ports on the sound as far as New London. They carried passengers regularly as well as freight, and great was the excitement, and often high the betting, when a new and fast vessel made her first appearance from any of the little ports on the "East River."

The necessity of having a fire department was forced upon the attention of the inhabitants of Mamaroneck by a conflagration which took place in the business part of the village on January 1st, 1884. Soon after a Hook and Ladder Company was formed, known as Union Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, of Mamaroneck and Rye Neck. Joseph H. McLoughlin, a very active man and the leading plumber of the town, was elected foreman of the company, Andrew Coles, assistant foreman, Lewis R. Bramm, Treasurer, and Charles F. Seaman, Secretary. The apparatus was purchased by public subscription, and

Digitized by Google

is lodged in the basement of the town hall. The number of members in 1886 was 25.

On January 4, 1884, application was made to the authorities of the town of Mamaroneck by Henry M. Flagler, Jabez A. Bostwick, Ambrose M. McGregor, James M. Constable, Thomas L. Rushmore, William G. Read, David Dudley Field, David F. Britt, Joseph Hoffman, M.D., Samuel W. Johnson, Edward F. De Lancey, Charles J. Osborne, William T. Cornell and Leonard Jacob for authority to form and organize the Mamaroneck Water Company and lay pipes through the town streets. The application was granted, the company was formed and soon after began the construction of a water works, and in the spring of 1885 water was introduced through their pipes into houses in the village. The company has a capital of $25,000. The source from which the water supply is taken is the Mamaroneck River. The site of the old saw mill originally erected by Colonel Heathcote before referred to, was bought, the dam rebuilt in an enlarged form forming a large pond, the waters of which are pumped up into a reservoir on adjacent high ground, about 117 feet above high water mark of the sound. This head is sufficient for all general purposes. The officers of the company are, President, James M. Constable; Treasurer, J. A. Bostwick; Secretary, William T. Cornell.

There are two School Districts in Mamaroneck, Nos. One and Two, well attended and in a good state of efficiency. But they suffer as does the whole school system of the State of New York, from being one of the foot balls of politics, and like all others throughout the State are therefore liable to evil influences. An instance of how oppressive and unjust the School system as now administered is, upon the owners of the real estate of the Commonwealth, is furnished now by our County of Westchester. The writer is informed that the amount apportioned to this County this year, 1886, from the Common School Fund is $56,000 while the amount assessed upon and collected from its real estate last year for that fund was $75,000. No remarks are necessary, the fact speaks for itself.

The Town possesses a Town Hall, a large frame edifice on High Street near Mount Pleasant Street, which was bought and altered for its present purpose, from the former Methodist Society of Mamaroneck a few years ago, when that society removed to Rye Neck. It contains a large Public Hall on the main floor, with public offices, a lock-up, and a house fire apparatus beneath it. There is also in it the Library of the Athenæum Society, and the Safes and Cases of the Town Records in charge of the Town Clerk.

Mamaroneck is a post town and one of the oldest in the State, dating as such from the last century. The present postmaster is William A. Boyd, who has held the office and administered for very many years past to the general satisfaction of the entire community. The salary now is $1100 per annum.

The New Haven Rail Road runs through the town, but so far north of the village, the harbor and the Necks on each side of it and the Sound, that neither can be seen from the station. The daily trains are numerous and convenient. It is now understood that a new Rail Road will be built in a very short time, which will run near the water and across the upper edge of the harbor, and enter the City of New York over the new Bridge across the Harlem river at Second avenue.

The churches of Mamaroneck are two only, the Episcopal church of St. Thomas, and the Society of Friends. The meeting house of the latter, however, is a few feet across the line of Mamaroneck in the adjoining town of Scarsdale, having been thrown into that town by the town line as fixed by the Act of 1788. The Society itself is it is believed the second oldest meeting in the County of Westchester, the first being that at the town of Westchester which was organized in 1685. The Friends came to Westchester, both the town and the County, from Long Island, those who came to the neighborhood of Mamaroneck, chiefly from Flushing and the country immediately about it. The meeting at Mamaroneck was organized in 1686 and was held at a private house.[1] This house the writer believes was that of Samuel Palmer, afterwards the "Old House" of Peter Jay Munro, before referred to and its position described. They increased so much, that in 1704 an application was made to the Court of General Sessions, Colonel Caleb Heathcote presiding, that Samuel Palmer's house at Mamaroneck be recorded as an authorized place for Quaker worship under the Act of William and Mary. The order was granted and a copy signed by Colonel Heathcote delivered to Samuel Palmer. In 1728 the meeting was made a "Preparative Meeting for Business," that is, for the administration of discipline, &c. On the opposite side of the Westchester Path, and west of Samuel Palmer's house, and at the top of the rising ground ascended by the Path or road was laid out, and still is, the old burying ground of the Palmers, and adjoining it was another plot larger, and still existing and still called the Quaker Burying-Ground. The Boston Road to-day at that point is still the old Westchester Path. Both plots were directly opposite the entrance to Mr. Peter Jay Munro's grounds within which, in 1819, he erected his splendid Country House, now the Hotel at Larchmont, termed the "Manor House." In the centre of the last mentioned plot, some little distance back from the road, was built, probably the first Quaker Meeting House in Mamaroneck. The exact year is uncertain but was probably 1739,[2] in which year Mr.

[1] MS. letter of James Wood, the present President of the Westchester Historical Society, who has made exhaustive researches into the history of the Friends in Westchester County.

[2] Letter of James Wood

Digitized by Google

Wood says a meeting house was built there, but he does not know whether it was the first. Mr. William H. Carpenter of the present meeting who at the writer's request made investigations of this point says it was "in 1735 or thereabout."[1] On that spot stood the house, and there the Meeting was held, till 1768. On the 6th of the 2d month,—February—in that year the quarterly meeting at the Purchase directed five Friends to "review" "the place near the centre of said meeting" to which it was proposed to move the Meeting House at Mamaroneck, there being some dissatisfaction.

At the quarterly meeting held at the "oblong" on the 30th of the succeeding 4th month, April, 1768, the committee made the following interesting report:

"The friends that were appointed a Committee to take a review of the place to set the meeting house on made report that they had met the friends belonging to Mamaroneck weekly meeting and taken a review of the places proposed to set the meeting house on for Mamaroneck weekly meeting & are of opinion that a piece of land of Benjamin Palmers near & adjoining Cornells land is the most suitable place for that purpose as being near the centre of said weekly meeting & as Benjamin Palmer offered to give half an acre of land to our Society for that use & purpose & John Cornel half an acre adjoining to it for the same use & also each of them to sell half an acre for three pounds ten shillings apiece therefore this meeting approves of having a meeting house set up & erected on said land of Benjamin Palmer, & appoints Edward Burling & Joseph Griffen to take deeds of Benjamin Palmer & John Cornel for said land, & John Cornel Edward Burling and Joseph Griffen & Benjamin Cornel, or the majority of them are appointed a Committee to sell the meeting house at Mamaroneck with the ground it stands on & the land to the westward of the house adjoining the road the width of the house & give a deed for the same or remove the house to & on the land of Benjamin Palmer aforesaid—if that house should be sold the new house to be near the dimensions of the old meeting house, & to be one story high with a chimney to it, & report to be made by said Committee to next Quarterly Meeting, & said Committee or some of them are to get a subscription made by the weekly meeting of Mamaroneck & bring to next Quarterly Meeting."

The old meeting house was not sold but was taken down and apart and removed to the new location, on the beautiful and commanding hill where it stands to-day. The old plot was not sold but kept as a burying ground. Another plot beside it on the west was sold and is now within the place of Mr. Meyers. This was the lot long known as the Locust lot from its being covered for many years with those trees. At the succeeding meeting in October, Edward Burling reported for the Committee "that the Meeting House was removed from Mamaroneck and set on said land of Benjamin Palmer, and that the expense of removing the house and setting it up, and completing it will amount to about eighty pounds, including the seven pounds for one acre of land bought of Benjamin Palmer and John Cornell, and that a subscription was made by friends belonging to the weekly meeting of Mamaroneck amounting to Twenty-eight Pounds towards the expense of the said house beside the land given; and requested the quarterly meeting to ask for and from each monthly meeting towards paying the debt. At the succeeding November meeting at Purchase, six pounds, 13 shillings were reported from the Weekly meeting at Westchester "and paid in," and there was also "paid in" a subscription "from Oswego particular meeting" of seventeen shillings and sixpence, and delivered to Edward Burling jr. It is most surprising that in 1768, a gift from Oswego then a mere frontier Indian trading station should have been sent down to the Friends at Mamaroneck! By the 6th of 5th month, June 1769, Benedict Carpenter reported that the debt had been reduced to £18, 10, 05. In due time that was paid off, and the new Meeting house—if it may be called so—was entirely paid for. From that time to the present the meeting has continued. It felt the change growing out of the movement of Elias Hicks upwards of sixty years since. The two parties quietly separated and another meeting was formed which erected another small Meeting House in the same grounds with the old one, where worship is also maintained.

"In 1883 the meeting house being in an almost hopelessly dilapidated condition a movement was successfully inaugurated to restore it, retaining however the frame of the venerated structure, which resulted in the present exceedingly comfortable and neat house of worship. During the greater portion of its existence the meeting has been large and influential, many of its members have been noted for their prominence in business and social circles and always for their integrity and stability. During very many years latterly there has been no acknowledged minister in connection with the meeting, yet it has continued without it, and from present appearances although its members are not numerous yet it bids fair to hold its own for many years to come a continuing testimony to spiritual worship without priest or choir. It may be of interest to name a few of its adherents now living, viz. Jonathan Carpenter, William Burling, David F. Britt, Samuel J. Barnes, Thos. K. Morrell, Noah Tompkins, John D. Schureman, James Griffen, George Millets and William H. Carpenter who with their families are earnest in the support of the ancient society they are proud to be connected with."[2]

From 1693 to 1784 Mamaroneck was one of the Pre-

[1] Letter of Mr. Carpenter.

[2] Letter of William H. Carpenter to whom and Mr. Berling I am indebted for copies of the Documents used and cited in the above sketch.

Digitized by Google

cincts of the Parish of Rye, one of the two territorial parishes erected in Westchester County in the former year under the Act establishing parishes of the Church of England within the Counties of New York and Westchester passed March 24, 1693,[1] an act which with several amendments made in later years continued in force till repealed by the Legislature of the State in the year 1784, just about a hundred years. The Establishment of the Church of England within the Province of New York and its Parochial organization in Westchester County will be found fully described in Parts 10, and 11, of the chapter on Manors in this volume.[2] The Inhabitants of the Parish of Rye elected Church wardens and Vestrymen, and paid the charges authorized by law during this whole period. Their duties besides those of seeing to the proper religious Services in the parish churches, were also those in relation to assessments taking care of the poor, and other duties now performed by town officials. During his residence here Colonel Heathcote was usually chosen a vestryman and often a Warden. The first election under the act of 1693 we know was held pursuant to the summons of Justice Theall under the law at Rye on the 28th February 1694–5. John Lane and John Brondig (Brundige) were elected church Wardens, and Jonathan Hart Joseph Horton, Joseph Purdy, Timothy Knapp, Hachaliah Brown, Thomas Merritt, Deliverance Brown, and Isaac Denham, vestrymen.[3] In 1702 is the record of another election, when on the 12th of January at a lawful town meeting in the Precinct of Rye Colonel Caleb Heathcote and the Justice Theall (who summoned the meeting of the Inhabitants for the election of 1695) were elected Church Wardens, and Justice Purdy, Justice Mott, Capt. Horton, Deliverance Brown, Hachaliah Brown, George Lane, Sen., Thomas Purdy, Thomas Disbrow, Isaac Denham, and Samuel Lane, were elected vestrymen for the ensuing year.[4]

These elections will be found mentioned in Baird's History of Rye, chapter 24th, from which I have taken the particulars not having had the time to examine the Rye Records personally as was intended.[5] The very able and Reverend Author of that very valuable work was evidently unaware of the legal nature of the origin of the establishment of the church of England in Westchester County, and has given an eroneous view of it in that chapter, as will be seen by comparing it with that which will be found in the chapter on Manors in this work. A view based on the mistaken idea that it was the Act of 1693 which established the church of England within New York, whereas it was established by the royal authority many years before, New York being a conquered Province. And being the only British American province so conquered from another nation by the English Crown, it was therefore the only one in America in which that Crown, by the law of England, had the power and right to establish the church of England. In 1725 Mamaroneck paid towards the tax to support the Rector of Rye under the act of 1693, £18. Later, in 1767, the amount then, was £19, 2, 6. These sums were the annual ones for those years. The amounts were annually fixed by board of Justices under the law.

So strong was the connection of Mamaroneck with Rye as a part of that Parish, in fact and in feeling, that it continued practically down to the founding of St. Thomas' Church, Mamaroneck. All Mamaroneck people of the Episcopal Church attended at Rye church, and were married and buried, and their children baptized, by the Rectors of Rye. A very few went to the New Rochelle church but the large majority went to Rye. It was simply an example of the power of faith and habit which descended to them from their ancestors.

While a youth in Yale College the late Rt. Rev. William Heathcote de Lancey first began holding Episcopal services in Mamaroneck while on his visits to his home at Heathcote Hill. He entered college in 1813 and graduated in 1817, and these services began in 1814. He met with better success than he anticipated. His Father John Peter De Lancey took great interest in the matter, as did his friend and neighbor Mr. Peter J. Munro, and Mr. and Mrs. Peter Jay, the blind Mr. Jay, of Rye. Finally young Mr. de Lancey was so successful that on April 12th, 1814, under the auspices of his Father and Mr. Peter J. Munro a parish was organized under the old act of 17th March, 1795, to which was given the name of St. Thomas. Mr. John Peter de Lancey and Mr. Peter Jay Munro Church Wardens, and Capt. William Gray, Benjamin Hadden, Henry Gedney, Samuel Deal, Abraham Guion, and Matthias G. Valentine Vestrymen[6] at the first election held on Tuesday in Easter week of that year. The Rev. Mr. Haskell Rector of Rye and several of the clergy of the neighbouring parishes took charge of the services, which were held in the present Town Hall, then a Methodist Church just built, by the courtesy of that Society which had just previously been organized. They were continued with much though not perfect regularity. In 1813 the Legislature passed a new "Act relating to Religious Societies" which changed and made more favorable the method of organizing Episcopal Churches. The parish continued however under the original organization of 1814, till 1817, when by the advice of Mr. Munro, a new organization

[1] II. Bradford's Laws, 19.

[2] Ante pp. 98 to 108 inclusive.

[3] Town Records of Rye.

[4] Town Records of Rye.

[5] In 1704, Madame Knight, in her Journal before referred to, says in speaking of the towns of Mamaroneck, Rye, and Horseneck (Greenwich) "that one church of England parson officiated in all these three towns once every Sunday throughout the year."

[6] Certificate recorded in Lib. A. of Religious Societies in West. Co. Reg'r. office p. 59.

Digitized by Google

was effected under the later law, in order that some of its benefits might be availed of.

The first meeting with this object was held 5 April 1817 and the new incorporation was effected June 9th 1817. The Parish was admitted to union with the Convention on the 1st of October 1817, Dr. Guy Carleton Bayley being its first delegate. The next year 1818 Mr. William H. de Lancey then pursuing his studies in Theology with Bishop Hobart was the lay delegate. The Church Wardens were the same, John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro. The vestrymen under the new organization were Henry Gedney, Benjamin Hadden, Jacob Mott, Thomas J. de Lancey, Benjamin Crooker, Guy C. Bayley, Monmouth Lyon, Edward F. de Lancey. The Rev. Mr. Haskell, who was Mr. John P. de Lancey's Rector at Rye, and under his influence long afforded a nursing hand to the infant parish, often giving it services both on Sundays and week days. Mr. de Lancey kept up his connection with, and pew in Rye Church to the time of his death in 1828, and

ST. THOMAS' CHURCH, (OLD).

he also had a pew in the church at New Rochelle by way of aiding that parish then needing all the help it could get.

No clergyman was regularly called at first. After Mr. William H. de Lancey was ordained Deacon in 1820 he served temporarily for a few months in Grace church, New York, and subsequently in Trinity church, N. Y. In the spring of 1821, when the latter temporary engagement ended he returned to his father's House at Mamaroneck, until Bishop Hobart could give him a permanent parish. While at Mamaroneck he was called to St. Thomas's, accepted, and served gratuitously, till 1822 when through Bishop Hobart's recommendation he was invited by Bishop White of Pennsylvania, to become his personal assistant in the "three United churches" of Christ church, St. Peter's, and St James's in Philadelphia of which he was also Rector. This invitation Mr. de Lancey accepted, and in April 1822 took up his residence in that city. He thus became from June 1821 to April 1822, about ten months, the first clergyman regularly in charge of St. Thomas's, Mamaroneck.

In 1823 a frame church with pointed windows and a low tower was erected, and consecrated on the 17th of June in that year by the Rt. Rev. John Henry Hobart, then the Bishop of New York. The expense was mainly borne by Mr. John Peter de Lancey, Mr. Peter Jay Munro, and Mr. Purdy the father of the present Mr. Samuel G. Purdy, of Harrison. The clergy present were the Rev. Lewis P. Bayard and the Rev. Lawson Carter, both warm friends, and the former a relative of Mr. de Lancey and the wife of Mr. Munro. A cut of it is given which shows the edifice as it was originally. It was enlarged some years later, in 1835 by a chancel, and again in 1857—at the chancel end by an addition containing another window on each side, and so remained until removed, and subsequently torn down, on the erection of the present striking and exceedingly handsome stone church, built at their sole expense and presented to the church corporation, by Mr. James M. Constable and his children as a memorial of his wife and their mother the late Mrs. Henrietta Constable, who departed this life February 11th, 1884. The Cornerstone was laid December 4th, 1884, by the Rt. Rev. Henry C. Potter, Assistant Bishop of New York, and the church was consecrated by the same Prelate June 10th, 1886, the Rev. Dr. Swope of Trinity Parish, New York, preaching the sermon. The new church, of which an engraving is given from a drawing expressly made for the purpose by Mr. Bassett Jones its masterly Architect, is a beautiful building, chaste, simple, dignified, and very effective. It is a perfect specimen of an old English Parish Church. The style is the Early English Gothic, with the massiveness often found in the churches of that period. It is built of Belleville brown stone, rusticated, and consists of chancel, nave, tower, and two porches. The entire length is 127 feet, that of the nave alone 70 feet, the chancel, a square one, is 25 deep by 19 feet wide, and the height of the tower is 87 feet. It has a high open timbered roof in the rich yellow pine of the Southern states. The altar and reredos are of Caen stone richly sculptured, the latter showing an exquisitely executed bas-relief of the Last Supper of Leonardo da Vinci. The pulpit is also of Caen stone carved, surmounted by a wide polished brass panelled rail of antique design. The windows are of English stained glass all showing figure subjects finely executed. The font, after a special and beautiful design of the architect, is of the deeply rich tinted Derbyshire Spar, recently discovered in larger masses than ever before known, not far from the City of Chesterfield in Derbyshire in England, all highly polished inside and outside. The pews in number 80 afford 350 sittings and are of oak. The Tower contains a very musical sweet toned chime of 10 bells, and a clock which strikes the quarters and half hours, as well as the hours.

Digitized by Google

In the same enclosure with the church, and a short distance from it stand the Rectory and parish buildings in the same style of architecture but built of brick with brown stone casings, and slate roofs. They are happily of irregular shape and combined so under a series of varying angles and roofs, that they present to the eye but a single very picturesque edifice. The whole together, though the general effect is impaired by being in the business and not very attractive part of the village, an evil that has been partially remedied by the liberal purchase and removal of adjoining buildings, and throwing their area into fair gardens, form one of the most thorough, complete, beautiful and churchly group of Parish edifices, with appropriate surroundings in this county, and are a noble monument to the Wife and Mother in whose memory they have been erected.

ST. THOMAS' CHURCH, (NEW).

At Larchmont a handsome frame chapel was erected four years ago by the Trustees of the Larchmont Land Company for general services. Afterward it was organized as a chapel of ease of St. Thomas's Church Mamaroneck under the ministration and direction as to its services of the Rector of that church for the time being. It and the Sunday school attached to it is only open during the summer season. Usually an arrangement is made with the assent of the Rector of St. Thomas with some clergyman temporarily for the services at the chapel during the season. The Trustees in 1886 are Marcus P. Woodruff and David Jardine.

A Methodist Society was organized and a frame church built in Mamaroneck, on High Street in 1813. It there continued with a small congregation till about the year 1850, when it was removed to Rye Neck and a large and handsome frame church edifice was there erected about a third of a mile from the Mamaroneck River Bridge and nearly at the junction of the old Westchester Path with the road running east from that Bridge, an account of which falls appropriately in the chapter on Rye. The late Mr. James M. Fuller organized a Methodist Sunday-school and erected a building for its use in 1878 on Weaver street mainly at his own expense, which he superintended himself until his lamented death in June 1885, when Mr. William H. Stiles succeeded him assisted by Mr. Bradford Rhodes. The object is to afford Sunday-school instruction to children in the neighbourhood, which is distant from the villages of Mamaroneck and Rye Neck. All the gentlemen connected with it are Methodists but it is understood that it is not conducted under the auspices of any denomination in particular.

The Incidents of the Revolution which occurred in Mamaroneck are not many. Its inhabitants as well as the great majority of the People of the County were a perfectly satisfied, quiet, community, satisfied with their surrounding, and their lot. They had a market within a day's journey or a day's sail for all that they could raise beyond their own wants. Their taxes were light and they managed their local concerns for themselves under the easy laws of the Province. They felt no pressure of any kind or from any quarter. Even in the politics of the day there was no high party feeling, still less any undue excitements. They were a happy, contented people perfectly satisfied to be let alone.

When the movements of politicians of New York and other places against the English Ministry began, which resulted, contrary to the wishes of those who first started these movements, in the Declaration of Independence, the people of Westchester as a mass were not in favor of them. Neither were some of those who gave a final assent to them. Hence it was that notwithstanding that Westchester eventually became the Neutral Ground, the people who dwelt in it were more in favor of the old state of things than in the proposed new one. It was natural. It is so in all countries under all systems. Those who excite revolutionary movements to overthrow old governments, are always a minority, and usually a very great minority, of the inhabitants of the Country the institutions of which are changed by violence or war. Hence it was that in 1774 the people of Mamaroneck opposed the action of the Committee of Correspondence, set forth in their circular of 29 July 1774 as also did those of Rye.[1]

When it was known that Gage's Army in Boston was getting short of provisions late in 1775, a sort of killing bee was held at William Sutton's house at de Lancey's Neck, the neighboring farmers drove cattle there and a certain day killed and dressed, and afterward salted down and barrelled as soon as it could be done, beeves enough to load a sloop as a contribution to the besieged troops at Boston. She was loaded at Indian point, near the present home of Mr. James J. Burnet, and sent off on her voyage. But she never got

[1] See Proceedings of Mamaroneck, &c., in I. Force's Archives.

Digitized by Google

to Boston. Through some carelessness in running out with a smart breeze, she ran a little too near the end of a reef in rounding the Scotch Caps, struck a pointed rock, and sank beyond it with all on board. The crew was saved but the beef in the hold was all lost. It is not related that any second attempt was ever made.

The most important Revolutionary incident, was the night battle on Heathcote Hill and the high ridge above it, between the Delaware Regiment, and parts of First and Third Virginia Regiments of Washington's army, under Colonel Haslet and Major Green, and Roberts's Rangers of Howe's Army under Major Rogers, resulting in the repulse of the former with severe loss to the latter who retained their position. On October 21st, 1776, Rogers's Corps of about 400 or 450 men which formed the extreme end of the right wing of Howe's Army, then moving up from Pelham Neck, reached Mamaroneck and encamped upon the high flat of Heathcote Hill, under the lee of the ridge above it for protection from the Northwest winds, which at that season had grown cold. No enemy was beyond them and this position was therefore chosen. Rogers himself made his headquarters in a small house which then stood directly on the north side of the old Westchester Path or road, right opposite the gate of the lane which ran down de Lancey's Neck to Sutton's House, which stood within the present Miller premises now owned by Mr. J. A. Bostwick. On the 22d of October Washington rode up to White Plains in advance of his army, who had then reached Valentine's Hill. Learning there of Rogers's advance and position, he at once sent orders to Colonel Haslet to take his Delaware regiment of 600 strong, and 150 men of the First and Third Virginia under Major Green, and surprise and cut him off.[1] The Virginians were to lead the attack and the Delaware troops to support them. Rogers had been a scout of Sir William Johnson's with Israel Putnam, in the French War, was a man of fair education, not much principle, but extremely bold, courageous, and wary. Knowing the American Army was below his position and to the southwest of it, he extended his pickets more than a third of a mile the second night beyond where they were on the first night and doubled their numbers, and then went to his own headquarters. Haslett marched all night and reached the neighborhood before day. His guides not aware of the change in Rogers's pickets led the Virginians directly upon them in the dark, which threw them into confusion. At once all hopes of a surprise vanished. The uproar roused Rogers's camp, the men rushed to the top of the ridge overlooking it and before they could form, their own pickets and the Virginians mixed together came rushing in upon them. It was pitch dark, and the fighting went on in the utmost confusion, the Delawareans, Virginians and Rangers being all mixed together each man fighting for himself. Right in the midst of it rushed Rogers. Roused by the noise, he flew up to the fight not knowing how it was going, but roaring out with presence of mind, in stentorian tones, "They are running," "they are running," "give it to 'em boys, damn 'em, give it to 'em." Reassured by his voice and words the Rangers, actually on the point of fleeing, rallied, redoubled their efforts, and the American forces fell back taking many prisoners with them, and the Rangers remained in possession of the ground. The surprise was a failure, the action really a drawn one though the Rangers retained the field, Rogers's wariness and presence of mind being all that saved them from defeat and capture. Such is the account that has come down from men living in Mamaroneck at the time. Col. Tench Tilghman, Washington's aid, writing the afternoon after the fight to Wm. Duer says "They attacked Rogers at daybreak, put the party to flight, brought in thirty-six prisoners, sixty arms, and a good many blankets; and had not the guides undertook to alter the first disposition, Major Rogers, and his party of about 400, would in all probability have fallen into our hands. We don't know how many we killed, but an officer says he counted twenty-five in one orchard. We had twelve wounded, among them Major Green and Captain Pope."[2] The fact is the number killed on each side is not certainly known. All of both sides were buried just over the top of the ridge almost directly north of the Heathcote Hill house, in the angle formed by the present farm lane and the east fence of the field next to the ridge. There their graves lie together friend and foe but all Americans.[3] The late Stephen Hall, (father of the late Abram, Isaac, and Thomas, Hall) a boy of 17 or 18 at the time, said that they were buried the morning after the fight and that he saw nine laid in one large grave.[4] Such was the skirmish on Heathcote Hill, the only "engagement" about Mamaroneck during the Revolutionary War. There was another on the back part of the Manor of Scarsdale at the Fox Meadows, immediately before the battle of White plains, but that does not fairly belong to this chapter.

The writer, knowing that Mamaroneck did her full duty in the late civil war, tried some years ago to get at Albany the returns of enlistments and names of the men, but failed, the supervisor never having filed them.

The following is an account of the descendants of John Richbell, who left only daughters, and of the Mott family of whom one of them was the ancestress. The writer is indebted for it to Mrs. Thomas C. Cornell, of Yonkers:

John Richbell, the first patentee of Mamaroneck

[1] III. Force, Fifth Series, 576.

[2] III. Force, Fifth Series 57, 6.

[3] My father told me when he was a boy their green graves were distinctly visible.

[4] Abraham Hall told the writer this fact many years ago.

Digitized by Google

leaving no sons, his name has not been perpetuated in his children, but some of the descendants of his daughter have been well known in Mamaroneck, and in Westchester County, and in the State and Nation, and should be mentioned here. John and Ann Richbell left three daughters. 1st. Elizabeth, the eldest who became the second wife of Adam Mott of Hempstead, about the time that her father removed from Oysterbay,—where he had been Adam Mott's neighbour,—to make his final settlement at Mamaroneck. —2d. Mary, who in 1670 married Captain James Mott, second son of Adam Mott of Hempstead by his first wife Jane Hulett. Captain James Mott was long prominent in Mamaroneck, was Justice of the Peace and Supervisor, and left two children James and Mary. —3d. The youngest daughter of John Richbell, named Anne after her mother, married John Emerson of White River, Talbot County, Maryland.

Elizabeth (Richbell) Mott, gave to her eldest son her father's name and called him Richbell Mott and his grandmother Ann Richbell made him one of her executors and three of the grandsons of this Richbell Mott bore the same name. Richbell Mott was a man of Character and Substance, and in 1696 married Elizabeth Thorne. He possessed considerable land in Hempstead and made his home on Mad Nan's Neck (Little Neck). His grandson Richbell Mott son of his eldest son Edmond,—born in Hempstead in 1728 married in 1749 Deborah Doughty, and died in 1758 leaving two daughters Margaret and Phebe. This Margaret Mott married in 1772 the Hon. Melancthon Smith of New York one of the most prominent men of the State during and after the Revolution in the policy opposed to that of Alexander Hamilton. Richbell Mott Smith, one of the sons of Hon. Melancthon and Margaret (Mott) Smith died on the coast of Japan in 1800. Another son was Colonel Melancthon Smith, the father of Admiral Melancthon Smith U. S. N. on the retired list who distinguished himself so highly during the late Civil war especially at the capture of New Orleans, and who is now living in an honored old age, at South Oysterbay L. I.

Dr. Valentine Mott, the celebrated Surgeon of New York was descended from Elizabeth (Richbell) Mott's younger son William Mott of Great Neck,—L. I.

James Mott of Premium Point, long a well known resident of the Mamaroneck of a hundred years ago, was the only child of the first Richbell Mott's youngest son Richard, and Sarah (Pearsall) Mott, and was born in Hempstead at "the Head of the Harbor"—now Roslyn in 1742. He married in 1765 his second cousin Mary Underhill, daughter of Samuel and Ann (Carpenter) Underhill of Oysterbay. Samuel Underhill a cousin of the Underhills of Westchester County, was a great grandson of the celebrated Capt. John Underhill who died in Oysterbay in 1671, and Ann Carpenter's mother Mary Willet, wife of Joseph Carpenter of Glencove was a grand daughter on her father's side of Capt. Thomas Willet the first English Mayor of New York, and on her mother's side of Wm. Coddington the first Governor of Rhode Island. The Underhills and the Coddingtons and the Willets and the Motts had become Quakers. James Mott, after a few years as a successful merchant in New York retired just before the Revolution, with a moderate competence, at the early age of thirty-three and settled in Mamaroneck, on the "West Neck" of his Grandfather's grandfather, John Richbell, on the peninsula nearly in front of the Village of New Rochelle. His wife was then in failing health and he sought a quiet home, remote from the threatenings of war which pervaded the City. But the war soon came, and in place of quiet, he found himself with wife and children between the lines of hostile armies and exposed to depredations from outlaws on both sides. His wife died early in the Revolution.

The ancient handsome two story farm house, occupied by James Mott, with its double-pitched roof, still stands in good repair, fronting to the South, on its own private lane, half a mile east of the Boston road, surrounded by trees and with its own farm buildings and cultivated fields, and in recent years has been occupied by the Pryor family. But the ancient tide Mill which stood near the house on the land locked bay which made the Mill Pond, and which James Mott continued to operate after the Revolution, was replaced about the end of the last century by a large new Mill, and a new dam about half a mile lower down the bay near its mouth.—James Mott's three sons Richard Robert and Samuel had grown to manhood, and they fitted up the new Mill with twelve runs of Mill Stones, and all the improvements then known and gave it the name of the Premium Mill, and it was operated with much success and exported flour to Europe while England and France were at war, with large profit. Soon after the Premium Mill was built Richard Mott, the eldest son withdrew from the milling business, and commenced cotton spinning in a small Mill still standing dismantled, near his pleasant dwelling house, to which he gave the name of Hickory Grove, a little west of where the N. Y. and N. H. Rail Road now runs near Mamaroneck,—and "Mott's Spool Cotton," had a good reputation for many years. Richard Mott became a Quaker Minister of considerable reputation. He was a man of fine presence and a graceful and pleasing speaker. He died in Mamaroneck in 1857, in his 90th year.

James and Mary (Underhill) Mott had four children, born in New York but brought up in Mamaroneck. Their eldest son Richard just mentioned was born in 1767. Their only daughter Anne born 1768 married at Mamaroneck in 1785, while still wanting three months of her seventeenth birthday, her father's cousin Adam Mott of Hempstead, in whose veins ran the blood of the best Quaker families of that first settlement of the Quakers in America. The young Adam Mott, the third in descent of the first Adam Mott

Digitized by Google

of Hempstead, and the fourth from John Richbell,—brought his young bride to the old Mott homestead, on the shore of the Sound near Hempstead Harbor, on land which had been granted to his great Uncle Richbell Mott in 1708 and which Richbell Mott sold to his brother Adam Mott in 1715. The young Adam between 1785 and 1790 built a new Mill at Cow bay—(now Port Washington,) and prospered there for more than fifteen years, and when his wife's brother Richard retired from the Premium Mill, the remaining brothers Robert and Samuel induced their brother-in-law Adam Mott of Hempstead to leave his prosperous Mill at Cow bay and join them in the Premium Mill, and he removed to Mamaroneck in 1803 and settled in a house afterwards the property of Peter Jay Monroe, and called the "Mott House," on a pleasant farm adjoining what is now known as Larchmont. The oldest son of Adam and Anne Mott, born in the ancient Mott homestead near the mouth of Hempstead Harbour in 1788 and named after his grandfather James Mott, went to Philadelphia and there married in 1811 Lucretia Coffin, who afterwards as Lucretia Mott of Philadelphia became eminent as a Quaker preacher and eloquent advocate of many reforms. In 1814 James and Lucretia Mott spent some months at Mamaroneck on the invitation of their Uncle Richard Mott to join him in Cotton Spinning, and if the project had been carried out as first proposed, the eloquent Quaker Preacher would have been known as Lucretia Mott of Mamaroneck, instead of Lucretia Mott of Philadelphia. But she was then only 21 years old, and did not so much as imagine that she could speak in public, and the spinning project not coming to satisfactory terms they returned to Philadelphia. Adam and Anne Mott's youngest son Richard, born at Premium Point in 1804, now for many years the Hon. Richard Mott of Toledo Ohio still survives in a vigorous old age of 82, one of the best known men in Northern Ohio.

When the laws of the first Napoleon dragged the United States into controversies with France and England which culminated in the war of 1812, American Commerce was crippled or ruined and the Premium Mill at length went under a cloud. One entire Ship's cargo from the Mill was confiscated in France on a charge of violating a paper blockade, and no restitution ever made.

James Mott made Premium Point his home until 1816 and died in New York in 1823 in his eighty-first year. He was a man of culture and high character, unusually handsome in person, tall, erect, and of much grace and dignity of manner and stood high in general esteem. In dress and habits he was always a strict Quaker of the old days, and active in the interests of his religious society travelling much in their service in the States of New York, Pennsylvania and New England. He gave freely for many years, in time and means, and in the use of his pen in the advancement of Education, and the suppression of intemperance, and would allow nothing produced by Slave labor to be used in his house, and as far as possible limited his household to American Manufactures. Robert Mott, the second son of James Mott of Premium Point died in New York in 1805 and his youngest son Samuel died there in 1843.

The Premium Mill continued to be operated with varying success for many years and after James Mott and his sons, passed through other hands and in 1843 was purchased by Henry Partridge Kellogg then of Poughkeepsie in whose family it remained for nearly forty years. The Mill itself venerable with age was finally removed within the last three or four years, and near its site now stand several handsome modern Cottages or Villas.

The Three Great Patents of Central Westchester.

Very closely connected with Mamaroneck and Scarsdale as parts of the Manor of Scarsdale, was that part of the County lying between that Manor and Harrison's Purchase on the south, the Manor of Cortlandt on the north, the Colony of Connecticut on the east, and the Manor of Philipseburgh on the west. This immense area containing 70,000 acres of land, was bought from the natives by Colonel Heathcote for himself and associates and granted to him and them in three extremely large Patents, called from their relative situations the West, the Middle, and the East Patents.

In the purchase of the Indian title to these lands, and in the Patents for them express provision was made that the rights of Heathcote under the Richbell patents and deeds, should not be interfered with. Hence their long connexion with his lands now comprised in the towns of Scarsdale and Mamaroneck. These "Great Patents," as they were styled were bounded in part by Scarsdale Manor and are so intimately connected with its history, that some mention must be briefly made of them and their origin. By its terms the Manor-Grant of Scarsdale embraced White Plains, a part of Northcastle, part of Bedford, and part of Harrisons Purchase, but it expressly provided as to White Plains that it should give its Lord no other title than that he already possessed by virtue of his purchase of the right title and estate of Mrs. Ann Richbell in the Estate of her husband John Richbell the original grantee from the Indians and from both the Dutch Government and the English Government. These Great Patents were not Manors, though two of them were larger than either of the Manors of Pelham, Morrisania or Fordham. They were simply Patents for great tracts of land issued according to law to three bodies of grantees as individuals, who each possessed an undivided share, bodies which in modern parlance would be called "syndicates." They were based upon a license to Colonel Heathcote to purchase vacant and unappropriated land in Westchester county and extinguish the title of the Natives

Digitized by Google

granted by Governor Fletcher on the 12th of October, 1696.

He was the most prominent of the gentlemen who formed the bodies above mentioned and who became the Owners and Patentees of these three Patents. The first purchase made by Colonel Heathcote in the region mentioned, was from Pathunck, Wampus, Cohawney, and five other Indians, who on the 19th of October, 1696, executed to him a deed conveying "for and in consideration £100 good and lawful money of New York," "all that tract of land situate lying and being in the County of Westchester in the Province of New York in America, bounded north by Scroton's[1] River, easterly by Byram River and Bedford line, southerly by the land of John Harrison and his associates, and the line stretching to Byram river aforesaid, and westerly to the land of Frederick Philipse."[2]

This covered all the present town of New castle and most of North castle as it now exists, and other lands south and east of the latter. It is hence sometimes called "North castle Indian Deed," or from one of the Indians "Wampus's Land Deed." Colonel Heathcote made most of the purchases of the Indians of Northern and Central Westchester then inhabiting it, in accordance with the customary rule in such matters which has been before explained. That for the lands between the Mehanas[3] and Byram Rivers, he delegated his powers to others to obtain, by this license dated at Mamaroneck the 4th of July 1701, "I underwritten do give free liberty, so far as it lyes in my power (by virtue of a grant to me from Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, late Governor of New York) unto Robert Lockhard, Richard Scofield, Nathaniel Selleck, and Gershom Lockwood, to purchase of the Indian proprietors the lands hereafter mentioned from Mehanas river to Byram River, and so run northward three miles into ye woods upon Byram River, and one mile into ye Woods on the Mehanas River, provided it does not injure the right of Bedford or Greenwich, nor is within my patent right from Mrs. Ann Richbell. Witness my hand.

Caleb Heathcote.

Mamaroneck, July 4th, 1701.

The same day the following Indians "in consideration of a certaine sume of good & lawful money" executed a deed for the land to the above named four persons and Coll. Heathcote, Capt. James Mott, Jonathan Lockhard, Gershom Lockhard's son, and Henry Disbrow, the same persons mentioned in Heathcote's license, thus describing it, "to begin at Byram river at ye Collony Line & so to run to Mehanas river as said line goes running northerly on Mehanas river as ye river goes a mile into ye woods, & from the Collony Line on Byram river three miles northerly as the river runs into the Woods, & from the head of said line to ye head of the other line afore mentioned.[4]

The witnesses were	Seringo +
Benjamin Disbrow	Raresquash +
Benjamin Collier, with	Washpakin +
Uraticus and	Ranchomo +
six other Indians	Packanaim +

On the same fourth of July, 1701, when there seems to have been a meeting of all the parties in interest, Indians and whites, at Mamaroneck, to consummate several Indian purchases, Seringo, and three other Indians executed the following deed to Joseph Horton for a very large tract indeed. It is printed verbatim from the original in John Horton's hand writing in the writer's possession:

"The: 4: of July—1701

"Biet[5] known to all home it may consarn That I Saringo hafe This day Sold unto Joseph Horton saner (senior) A sarten Track or parsal of Land Setuaten and Lyen within the profence (province) of Nu Yorcke which land beginen at the purch[ase] lastly purch^ed by Cornal Hacoc[6] John Horton Cap^n Thall Joseph[7] Purdy and all the Land from biram reuer[8] wassward unpurch^ed and so to run upward to brunkess reuer,[9] and I Saringo do oblidge myself my ars[10] or assins to marcket[11] oute by Mark Treese as may aper her agan[12] and This To be marcked oute The Sext: or Saventh Day of This entant[13] munth and for the Tru Burformance I haf Sat my hand and Sale Sineded Saled and Dleaved In prants of us This been in order To a furder confmashon.

John Horton	Saringo +
(illegible) Hatfield	and three other
Hannah park	Indians (names
his	illegible).
John + Cake	
mark	
his	
Robard + Smeth	
mark	

Endorsed upon the deed is this statement of the consideration by Horton,

I Joseph Horton oblige mysalf To pay one Sarengo

[1] New Croton River.

[2] Lib. I. 52, of Deeds, Sec. of State's off^e, Albany.

[3] Now spelled "Mianus."

[4] Ancient copy of the original deed with Heathcote's license appended, in the writer's possession. Also recorded in West. Co. Records Lib. C, 96.

[5] Be it.

[6] Colonel Heathcote.

[7] Capt. Theall.

[8] Byram River westward unpurchased.

[9] Bronx River.

[10] Heirs.

[11] Mark it.

[12] Appear here again.

[13] Instant.

Digitized by Google

he performen his part accorded to bagen[1] as may apen connsarnend Land which he Is or (illegible) to performe

The a buv named horton Is obliged To Pay Sringo and the ras[2] of his (illegible) as folas[3]

1 barel of Sidar

6 Shurts

5 galans of rum

1 Cot

1 shepe

And this to be payd at or before The furst day of Jnery[4] nex in (three small words illegible) The day manshshened[5] July: 4: 17001[6]

1 hors: 1 Sadal: 1 bridal

2 cots

1 caf

2 shurds[7]

1 ancher of rum "[8]

This deed included all the land that had not before been purchased, from Byram River northwestward to the Bronx River. In the month of June preceding, on the eleventh, twenty-three days prior to the execution of the above deed, Seringo and two other Indians "in consideratione of a certain sum of money" deeded to Colonel Heathcote, Capt. Joseph Theal, Lieut. John Horton,[9] and Mr Joseph Purdy of Mamaroneck a tract "bounded as followeth,—Southerly by Byram River, Northerly to the Northwest corner of a great swamp commonly called the Round Swamp, thence a southwesterly line to Rye, great Pond, and bounded by the said pond westerly, and so runs to Harrisons great marked tree."

On the 5th of July 1701, the same Seringo and the other Indians deeded to Heathcote, Theal, Joseph Horton, and Purdy a tract bounded "southerly by the Colony Line, easterly by Mehanas River, northerly by Bedford line and marked trees to Mehanas River, and southerly as said river goes against the stream to the head thereof."[10]

On the 27th of March 1702 a deed for lands north of Cross River above Bedford village was executed to Colonel Heathcote by Katonah the Sagamore of all that region, which as it is not recorded is here given from the original in the hand writing of the noted Zachariah Roberts[11] of Bedford, in the writer's possession:

Katonah's Deed to Col. Caleb Heathcote.

"This Bill of Scall bearing date in the year one thousand seven hundred and two: testifyeth that we Katonah, Wackamane and Wewanapeag proprietors of the sd land afternamed lying above Bedford and bounded Southward by Cross Riuer, eastward by Marked trees, westward by Cortlandt's land & Northwards petticus Small Riuer, which sd track of land is estimasion is five miles long and three miles wide: this above sd. upland & medow land we Katonah Wackamane and Wewanapeag, we for ourselves and from our ayrs and all other indians whatsumeuer do sell, alienate, asigne, & set over this abousd land lying in the County of Westchester & in ye provence of New Yorck unto Cornall Caleb Hethcut of Mamaranuck and Captain petter[12] Mathews of new Yorck, Joseph purdy of Ry and Richard Scoffeld of Stanford, or any other conserned in the aboue said purches. We the aboue sd indiens trew proprietars of ye aboue sd land as the bounds are named we have sold & doe set over from us our ayrs executors administrators, or asignes for euer unto the aboue named Caleb Hethcut, petter Mathews, Joseph Purdy, Richard Scoffeld to them their ayrs executors administrators and asignes for euer with all the rights titles privileges & apurtenances thereunto belonging promising to them & theyrs that they shall enioye the same peesably without let or molestation from us or ours or any other indians laying any claime thereunto for euer, and we doe acknowledg that we have reciued full satisfacktion for the aboue said track of land as witness our hands and sealls this 27 day of March 1702.

Signed Sealled and delivered in Bedford in the presance of us

Zechariah Roberts
John Dibell
John Miller
Chickheag +
Caconico +
Arottom +
Mangockem +

Katonah +
Wackamane +
Wewanapeag +

Acount of good

to one 6 guns	to 12 par sockins
to anker of rum	to 12 citels[13]
to 20 bars of lead	to 6 iron citels
to 12 drain[14] knifs	to cotun cloth

[1] According to bargain.
[2] Rest.
[3] Follows.
[4] January.
[5] Mentioned.
[6] So in the original.
[7] Shirts.
[8] This extraordinary deed is written on the reverse side of a private letter to Joseph Horton from one Samuel Ufford, dated "Stratford the 14th day of May," but no year; it is not recorded.
[9] The draughtsman of the last Indian deed.
[10] Rec. in "Albany Records," i. p. 94.

[11] Roberts was the leading man of Bedford, noted for his bitter hostility to the Church of England, and his intense desire to profit by all the public employments he could obtain.
[12] Peter.
[13] Sickles.
[14] Drawing-knives.

Digitized by Google

to 20 knifs	to dufils[1]
to 12 hos[2]	to blankits
to 12 swords	to 10 barils of sider[3]
to 12 axis "	

One of the persons prominently engaged with Colonel Heathcote in obtaining the several Indian deeds above set forth for the lands between Harrison and the Croton River was Joseph Horton of Rye the grantee in the above deed of the 4th of July 1701 for all the unpurchased land between Byram river and the Bronx. The following instrument shows the nature of the agreement between them and incidentally Heathcote's precise view of his own bounds and what belonged to him under his Richbell conveyances in the territory covered by the foregoing Indian deeds and the three great patents subsequently based upon them.

Agreement of Joseph Horton with Colonel Heathcote.

Whereas by virtue of a License from Coll. Benj^a ffletcher late Governor of this Province unto Coll. Caleb Heathcote impowering him to buy any lands from the Indian Proprietors betwixt Scroton's River[4] and the north end of Harrisson's Pattent, the said Heathcote and Joseph Horton have [bought] & are about to buy of the Indian Proprietors considerable tracts & parcells of Land; Now know all men by these presents that It is mutually agreed & concluded betwixt the said Caleb Heathcote & Joseph Horton that such parts of any tract or parcells of land bought by them of the indian Proprietors as falls within said Heathcote's lines by virtue of his deeds from Mrs. Ann Richbell late deceased, the bounds whereof run with Mamaronock River to the head thereof thence in a north line twenty miles into the woods from Westchester Path, now all such lands as fall within the lines of those deeds as before mentioned shall be and remain to the said Caleb Heathcote his Heirs & assigns forever notwithstanding any deed or bill of sale in Partnership betwixt said Heathcote & Horton to them from the indians, the said Heathcote paying and bearing the full charge of the purchase of all such land as falls within his lines afforesaid, & the said Heathcote not claiming a greater breadth through said purchase that is, or shall hereafter be made by him & said Horton, than he has at Westchester Path, which is from Mamoronock River to Pipin's brook adjoyneing the great Neck. In witness whereof the said Joseph Horton hath here unto sett his hand & seal this ffourteenth of July in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred & one.

Signed Sealed & Delivered in presence of
Benjamin Collier
Anne Millington

Joseph Horton (L. S.)[5]

Out of the lands the Indian title to which was extinguished by the various Indian deeds above set forth were formed the three Great Patents that have been mentioned, the West Patent dated 14th February 1701 to ten Patentees, the Middle Patent dated 17th February 1701 to 13 Patentees, and the East Patent dated 2d March 1701 to 11 Patentees. Ten of these Patentees were the same in all three Patents. They were the ten persons to whom the West Patent, the earliest of the three, was issued, and their names were Robert Walters, Leigh Attwood, Cornelius De Peyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Chollwell, Richard Slater, Robert Lurting, Barne Cosens, Lancaster Symes, all well known as prominent men of the City and Province of New York. In the Middle Patent in addition to the above ten, Joseph Theale, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, all of Rye, appear as Patentees. In the East Patent besides the above ten Peter Mathews of Bedford appears as a Patentee. Several of these Patentees held their shares not for themselves but in trust for friends and some of them sold their shares to other persons.

Immediately after the Patents were issued, all the different Patentees named in each executed joint covenants under seal, that no survivorship should take place among them, and that each should be divided into as many distinct parts as there were Patentees. The covenant for the West Patent was dated February 18th 1702, those for the Middle and East Patents were both dated the same day, the 25th of June 1702.[6]

The following statement showing in the three Patents, the changes of the Patentees names, the Quit-rents payable for each, the number of acres of improvable land in each, and their respective boundaries, is from the original in the writer's possession. It is undated, but was evidently made out in Colonel Heathcote's lifetime, and probably about 1715 or 1716.

The West Patent.

"Patent: 14 Feb: 1701
5000 Acres Improvable Land
£6, 5, 0, Quit-Rent
10 Shares.

Patentees Names	In trust for or sold to,
R. Walter	Schellenx & Lyon
L. Atwood	Clarksons
C. Depeyster	
C. Heathcote	
M. Clarkson	
Jno. Chollwell	—— Quinby
R. Slater	T. Weaver
R. Lurting	C. Heathcote
Barne Cosens	Peter Fanconnier

[1] A coarse and thick, but soft woolen cloth made in Holland.
[2] Hoes.
[3] This was a very good price for that day.
[4] Now Croton River.
[5] Original deed in Colo. Heathcote's handwriting in possession of the writer. It is not recorded.
[6] From ancient copies of these covenants in the writer's possession.

Digitized by Google

Bounded

Northerly,

By Croton River and the Mannor of Cortlandt, or one of them.

Easterly,

With Bedford Line of Three Miles Square, the White Fields, and Byram Point.

Southerly,

By the land of John Harrison &c, Rye Line stretching to Biram River and the White Plains,

Westerly,

By Brunk's River and the Mannor of Philipsburgh, Excepting out of ye Bounds aforesaid all ye Lands within Richbell's Patent, now in ye Tenour & occupation of Coll. Caleb Heathcote.

The Middle Patent.

"Patent: 17 February, 1701
1500 Acres Improvable Land
£1, 17, 6 Quit Rent
13 Shares

Patentees Names	In Trust for or Sold to
C. Heathcote	
Jo. Theale	
J. Horton	
J. Purdy	
R. Walter	Schellinx & Lyon
Leigh Atwood	Clarksons
M. Clarkson	
Lan. Symes	
C. De Peyster	Y^e Heirs Coll. Depeyster
R. Slater	Tho. Weaver
John Chollwell	—— Quinby
Barne Cosens	P. Fanconnier
Robert Lurting	C. Heathcote

Bounded

Southerly,

by the Division Line betweene ye Colony of Connecticut and the Province of New York parallell to the Sound.

Easterly,

By Mahanas River.

Northerly,

by Bedford Line and Mark^d Trees runing westerly to Mahanas River.

Westerly,

again and as the said River goes against the stream to the head thereof, then along the Easterly branch of Biram River to the said Colony Line again where the same began.

The East Patent

"Patent: 2 March 1701
6200 Acres Improvable Land
£7, 16, 0, Quit-Rent
11 Shares.

Patentees Names	In Trust for or sold to
Ro. Walter	Schellinx & Lyon
Jno. Chollwell	—— Quinby
L. Atwood	Clarksons
C. De Peyster	
R. Slater	T. Weaver
Barne Cosens	P. Fanconnier
M. Clarkson	
Lan. Symes	
Rob. Lurting	C. Heathcote
Peter Mathews	
Caleb Heathcote	

Bounded

South

by the Division Line between N. Y. and said Colony of Connecticut, and so along said Line until it meets with the Patent of Adolph Philipse, and so along his southern bounds till it meets with the Mannor of Cortlandt and from thence by a Line that shall run upon a direct course until it meets with the first easterly Line of 20 of the said Mannor of Cortlandt, and from thence along the said line Westerly till it meets with the Patent granted to R. Walter & others, thence southerly along the said Patent untill it meets with the bounds of the Township of Bedford & thence round along said bounds untill it meets with the patent granted to Coll. Heathcote and others, and along the bounds of said Patent unto the Colony Line where it first began.—

Also a small Tract of Land beginning westerly at a great Rock on the Westmost side at the Southmost end of a Ridge Known by the Name of Richbell or Horse Ridge and from thence Northwest and by North to Brunk's River, Easterly beginning at a mark'd Tree at the Eastmost side on the Southmost end of the said Ridge and thence north to Brunk's River."

This West Patent by its bounds excluded Whiteplains, which Colonel Heathcote claimed under his Richbell deeds and Patents. This led to a controversy between him and some "Rye Men" who claimed Whiteplains as a part of their town. This claim however remained passive, and nothing but a claim during Colonel Heathcote's life as the result of the Richbell verdict against Rye in 1696 (set forth above in full) the year before Colonel Heathcote bought the Richbell estate of Ann Richbell. The land was then worth very little, and the Rye claimants were very few. Colonel Heathcote died February 28, 1720-21, and his entire estate passed under his will to his two daughters, Ann, the elder, subsequently the wife of James de Lancey chief justice of the Province of New York who died its Governor in 1760, and Martha, the younger, subsequently the wife of Lewis Johnston, M.D., of Perth Amboy, New Jersey, who died in 1774. His widow, Mrs. Martha Heathcote, was the sole executrix. By her and the two gentlemen just named, in the course of time, settlements were effected of Colonel Heathcote's interests in Whiteplains, the three patents above mentioned and in Harrisson's purchase.

Digitized by Google

In relation to White plains it has been stated erroneously that Colonel Heathcote died, "about four years later" than 1702, in which year a committee of Rye people were appointed to agree with him on a line between his Patent and White plains, and that the question remained "still unsettled."[1] This is an entire mistake, Colonel Heathcote lived nearly twenty years instead of four, after 1702, and maintained his right to White plains, but was always ready to agree with the Rye people about the matter, but they, though occasionally talking about it, practically remained passive, in consequence of the Richbell verdict against them of December 3, 1696, above set forth. Not till after Colonel Heathcote's death, which occurred on February 28, 1720–21, was the matter closed, though negotiations were pending in his lifetime, and Governor Burnet's Patent for White plains was issued to Joseph Budd, Humphrey Underhill and others, bearing date the 13th of March 1721. The Patentees named therein, with four or five exceptions, were entirely different men from the "proprietors of the White plaines purchase"[2] whose names appear in a list taken from the Rye Town Records under date of 1720, in Bolton's History, (1st ed. vol. ii. p. 341) and copied in Baird's Rye and Bolton's second edition. This list was probably one of the proprietors of some part of the grants embracing the present township of Rye.

The terms of the settlement with Rye of adjoining lands with Colonel Heathcote's representatives, about which there was dispute are thus set forth, in "Notes of agreement between Rye and Devisees of Heathcote," in the writer's possession:—"Rye is to give us their title to all lands which we claim in Harrison's purchase, as also to all the lands lying between the old Collony Line and Mamaroneck River and the White plains. We are to give them the benefit of the covenants in Jamison's deed to Coll. Heathcote for the purchase lands." This was carried out by a deed from Robert Bloomer, John Budd, Samuel Purdy, John Horton, Nathan Kniffen, John Disbrow, Samuel Brown, Roger Park, Joseph Galpin, Abraham Brundige, and nineteen other inhabitants of Rye and White plains, to Mrs. Ann de Lancey and Mrs. Martha Johnston dated September 5th 1739 for all the lands referred to in the above agreement.[3] In connection with these matters it must be borne in mind that when the first claim of the Rye people was defeated by the verdict against them in favor of Mrs. Richbell of December 3, 1696, they were already greatly angered by the grant of the Patent to John Harrison and his associates for what has ever since been known as "Harrison's Purchase" by the Governor of New York, on the 25th of June 1696, about six months before the verdict was rendered. They claimed that territory under an Indian deed to Peter Disbrow and three others of 2d June 1662, for "a certain tract of land above Westchester Path to the marked trees bounded with the above said Blind Brook," (this is the whole description) and as being in Connecticut of which they insisted Rye was a part, but they never would take out a patent for it. Hence when the Quaker Harrison, and his four or five associates, applied to the New York government for a grant of it as "unappropriated and vacant land" it was, after due deliberation, granted them by Patent. In order to quiet the border disputes of that day they had previously tried to get the people of Rye to take out a patent for this land, but they always refused to do so. This grant for Harrison's Purchase, and the Richbell verdict coming only about six months after it, was more than the Rye people thought they could bear, and therefore, early in 1697, they revolted, seceded from New York, and again set themselves up as a part of Connecticut. The New York government by peaceful means tried to bring them back, but in vain, and this secession continued for about three years, until King William by a sharp "Order in Council," made on the 28th of March, 1700, ordered them back to the old jurisdiction, in the words of the order "forever thereafter to remain under the Government of the Province of New York."[4] That government in the beginning had even tendered them a Patent, and Colonel Heathcote, who was one of the Governor's Council, at the request of the latter, in 1697 went to Rye, and personally endeavored to settle the controversy. His letter to the Governor and Council describing his visit and its failure, gives the facts of the case very clearly, and they prove that their own folly lost the Harrison lands to the people of Rye. "I asked them" he says, "why they did not take out a patent when it was tendered them. They said they never heard that they could have one. I told them that their argument might pass with such as knew nothing of the matter, but that I knew better; for that to my certain knowledge they might have had a patent had they not rejected it; and that it was so far from being done in haste or in the dark, that not a boy in the whole Town, nor almost in the County, but must have heard of it; and that I must always be a witness against them, not only of the many messages they have had from the Government about it, but likewise from myself." * * * *

"I told them as to the last purchase wherein I was concerned, if that gave them any dissatisfaction, that I would not only quit my claim, but use my interest in getting them any part of it they should desire. Their answer was, they valued not that; it was Harrison's Patent that was their ruin."[5]

[1] Baird's History of Rye, p. 156. The same erroneous statement was copied from Baird into the second edition of Bolton's Westchester, vol. ii. p. 658.

[2] So styled in Baird, Hist. Rye, p. 156.

[3] From an ancient copy of the deed in the writer's possession.

[4] Iv. Col. Hist. 627.

[5] Vol. xii. p. 36 of the Col. Mss. in Sec. of State's office, Albany. It is printed in Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 100.

Digitized by Google

Some five years after the granting of the West Patent to Robert Walter and his associates in 1701, the southern part of it on the Byram River was, in derogation of their rights, granted to Anne Bridges and four others of the town of Rye. The West Patentees remained quietly in possession however of all their territory. About twenty-three years after the issuing of the West Patent, and about two after Colonel Heathcote's death, a suit in ejectment was brought, by the persons named in the Bridges grant of 1705-6 against Robert Walter and other owners of the West Patent. The reasons for it are now unknown as the latter had never been disturbed in the possession of their lands by any-body. It was unsuccessful however. The following curious and interesting paper entitled "A true state of the case," gives all the facts, and also shows how thoroughly Colonel Heathcote was even then considered "authority" in Westchester County matters. Its author, evidently a lawyer, is unknown, but it is in the small, clear, beautiful, handwriting of Peter Fauconnier an owner, by trust or by purchase, in all three of the great Patents above mentioned, and one of the best surveyors of that day. It is printed from the original in the writer's possession.

"A true state of the case,

Between the ejector John Horton &c., and Robert Walter &c., in behalf of the ejected, for lands in Westchester County.

"Coll. Caleb Heathcote well acquainted with the North bounds of the Tract of land called Well's and Coxe's purchases, being the lands long before claimed by, and since patented to, the Town of Rye the 11th day of August 1720;

"With the East and North bounds of the lands granted the 25th day of June, 1696, to William Nicoll Esq., Ebenezer Willson, David Jamison, John Harrison, and Samuel Haight, called Harrison's purchase;

"With the North bounds of the lands claimed by the Inhabitants of White Plains;

"With the Eastmost bounds of the several contiguous tracts of land granted the 23rd day of December, 1684, to Frederick Phillipse, and the course of Brunks river;

"With the South bounds of those granted the 17th of June, 1697, to Coll. Stephen Cortlandt;

"With the North and West bounds of the lands belonging to the Town of Bedford;

"And well knowing how, and where, the three several lines which have to divide this Province from the Colony of Connecticut, are to fall and to run, and consequently the location, extent, and limits, of the then still vacant lands adjoining thereunto; he did acquaint there with the Persons hereinafter named jointly with, and for the use of, whom, with and by the assistance of Joseph Theale, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Nathaniel Seleick, Richard Scofeild, James Mott, and Henry Disbrow, he did wholly and lawfully purchase the same.

"Being all that certain tract of land in the County of Westchester, bounded Northerly by the Manor of Cortlandt, Easterly with Bedford line of three miles square, the Whitefeilds, and Byram River, Southerly by the Colony second line, Rye line stretching to Byram River, the land of John Harrison, and the White Plains, and Westerly by Brunk's river and the Mannor of Philipsburgh. On the return of which purchase the said Coll. Heathcote and his associates applyed for, and on the 14th day of February 1701-2, obtained the Crown's Grant for the same, To Robert Walter, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depyster, Caleb Heathcote, Mathew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Symes, Robert Lurting [in Quest for the said Coll. Heathcote again] and Barné Cosens, under £6, 5.—Quitrent.

"Notwithstanding all wch yet, and the said lands being vacant and unappropriated, the purchass thereof was so lawfully made, and the grant obtained: On the 12th day of January, 1706, being near five years after, Anne Bridges, John Clap, Augustin Graham, John Horton, and Thomas Height, on a wrong notion of an insufficiency of power and authority in the then Lieutenant-Governour to grant the above mentioned tract to the above named purchasers thereof, and on such other groundless surmises, did sue for and then obtained, an other posterior grant for the Southern part of the same individual tract of Land:

"It being for A certain tract of land in the county of Westchester within the Province of New York, beginning at a Beach tree standing by Byram river near a great rock, markt with the letters I. H. I. P. I. C., thence running up the said river North North West to a certain Ash Tree, on the upper end of a place commonly called Pondpound's Neck, marked with the letters aforesaid &c to the Colony line, Westerly to the eight miles stake standing between three white oak trees markt [viz.] one of the said trees is marked with the letters C C R on the north side and Y D on the south side, and from the said trees on a direct line, runs to the Northernmost corner of Rye pond, and thence south ten degrees Westerly to a white oak sapling marked by the Pond side with the letters T. I. P. thence by a range of marked trees south sixty four degrees East to an Ash Tree standing by Blind Brook on the East side thereof, and thence by another range of marked trees to a certain Chestnut tree markt with the letters J. P. on the North side, on the West side, with the letters I. P. on the south side with the letters I. H. and thence by a range of marked trees to the place where it begun.

"That this last-mentioned grant is all included in, and that the east, south, and most of the west bounds thereof are, the very same with the southmost ones specified in the aforementioned grant of the 14th February, 1701-2 to Robert Walter &c., will unquestionably appear by comparing the southern bounds of the one with those of the other, and both with the northern bounds of the Patent granted the 11th day

Digitized by Google

of August, 1720, to Samuel Purdy and others for the Township of Rye, and with the eastern and northern bounds of that granted to William Nicoll &c., the 25th day of June, 1696, called Harrison's Lands, or Harrison's Purchase.

"Matters relating to that affair being in reality as hath been related, the several questions which do naturally arise therefrom, are, first, what could induce these last Patentees to sue for a Grant of that land in 1705–6, which they well knew had been already patented in 1701–2. Secondly, Why, having been at the trouble and charges thereof, they not only left the said first Patentees so long quietly owne, but also survey the same, and not only be present thereat without the least objection, but also shew them the East and North lines of Well's and Harrison's purchases; to let them dispose of several pieces part of it, and the buyers thereof without interruption enjoy the same about 23 years after that first grant was obtained; and lastly what could induce them, so late then to serve a Lease of Ejectment on it."

The answers to these questions we are left to conjecture, as except the boundaries of the patents it refers to, which accompany it. Nothing else appears on the paper. It is apparently part of a lawyer's statement of facts, upon which to base an opinion. It would seem from the statement itself that the Bridges Patent was granted on the idea that Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan for some reason not stated, had not the power to issue the West Patent when he did, and that it was therefore of no effect. An utterly false idea, for his power as Commander-in-chief was exactly that of all Governors-in-chief, as set forth in the royal "Instructions" to each of them. The West Patent remained, undisturbed, and is the foundation of the present title to the region covered by it (now New Castle and a large part of North Castle and a part of Bedford). The suit was probably a scheme of some lawyer, or some person, who was a personal or political opponent of some one or more of the proprietors of the West Patent, for the value of the land then was entirely too little to induce a speculative action. The following is the text of the West Patent from a certified copy of 1734, in the writer's possession.

THE WEST PATENT.

Recorded at the request of Robt. Walters & others.

William the third by the grace of God of England Scotland ffrance & Ireland King Defender of the ffaith &c, To all to whom these presents shall come or may consern Greeting Whereas—our Loving Subjects Robert Walters Leigh Attwood Cornelius Depeyster Caleb Heathcote Matthew Clarkson John Chollwell Richard Slater Lancater Simes Robert Lurting & Barne Copens have by their petitions presented unto our trusty & wellbeloved John Nanfan Esqr, our Leiut^{t}, Govr, & Commander in Cheif of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America &c, prayed our Grant & confirmation of a Certain tract of Land in our County of West Chester Bounded Northerly by the Mannor of Courtlandt Easterly with Bedford Line of three Miles Square the white feilds & Byram River Southerly by the Land of John Harrison Rye line Stretching to Byram River afores^{d}, & the White plains & Westerly by Bronckx river & the Mannor of phillipsburgh excepting out of the bounds aforesaid all theLand within Richbells patent now in the tenure & Occupation of Coll Caleb Heathcote which first above named tract of Land was purchased by Caleb Heathcote & others with whom he has agreed excepting James Mott & Henry Disbrow whom he hath undertaken to Satisfy within which bounds there are by Estimation about five thousand Acres of profitable Land besides Waste & Woodland which reasonable request we being willing to grant *Know Ye* that of our Special Grace certain knowledge & meer motion we have given granted ratified & confirmed and by these presents do for us our heirs & Successors give grant ratify & confirm unto our Said Loving Subjects Robert Walters Leigh Attwood Cornelius Depeyster Caleb Heathcote M. Clarkson Jno Chollwell Richd Slater Lancaster Symes Robert Lurting & Barne Cosens all the aforesaid tract of Land within our County of Westchester & within the limitts & bounds afores^{d} together with all and Singular the woods underwoods trees timber feedings pastures meadows marshes swamps ponds poolles waters water Courses rivers rivulets runs brooks Streams fishing ffowling hunting & hawking mines Mineralls (silver and Gold mines Excepted) and all other profitts benefitts priviledges Libertys advantages Hereditaments & Appurtenances whatsoever to the afores^{d} tract of Land within the limitts & bounds afores^{d} belonging or innywise appertaining *To have and to hold* all the aforesaid tract of Land together with all & Singular the woods underwoods trees timbers feedings pastures Meadows Marshes Swamps ponds pools waters water Courses Rivers Rivuletts runs brooks Streams fishing fowling Hunting and Hawking Mines Mineralls Silver and Gold mines Excepted & all other profits benefits priviledges Libertys Advantages Hereditaments & appurtenances whatsoever to the afores^{d} tract of Land in this the Limitts & bounds afores^{d} belonging or in any way appertaining unto them the said Robert Walters Leigh Atwood Cornelius Depeyster Caleb Heathcote Matthew Clarkson John Chollwell Richard Slater Lancaster Symes Robt Lurting and Barne Cosens their heirs and assigns to the only proper use benefit & behoof of them the S^{d} Robert Leigh Attwood Cornelius Depeyster Caleb Heathcote M Clarkson, Jno, Chollwell Lancaster Symes Richard Slater Robert Lurting & Barne Cosens their heirs & Assigns for ever *To be Holden* of us our heirs & Successors in free & *Common* Socage as of our Mannour of East Greenwich in our County of Kent within our Realm of England *Yeilding* rendering & paying therefore Yearly & every Year for ever at our City of New

Digitized by Google

York unto us our heirs and Successors or to Such Officer Or Officers as shall from time to time be impowered to receive the same the Annual & Yearly rent of Six pounds five Shillings Current money of New York in Leiu & stead of all other rents dues duties Services demands w'soever *In Testimony* whereof we have caused the great Seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed *Witness* John Nanfan Esq' our Leiu': Governour and Commander in Cheif of our province of New York & the territories depending thereon in America & Vice Admiral of the same &c at our ffort in New York the fourteenth day of ffeb' A° 1701, & in the thirteenth Year of our Reign John Nanfan, By his Hon'' Command M. Clarkson Secry.

Secry' Office N York Mar 22d 173}
A true Copy from the Record
FFRED' MORRIS, D Secry

Compared with the Record
A L D

It will be noticed how carefully this patent by express words excepted and preserved to Colonel Heathcote his lands under the Richbell Patent, which in part were covered by its boundaries. The portion of this Patent in Bedford under the deed from Katonah above given, became the subject of controversy—and remained unsettled till 1771, when the dispute was finally terminated by the following mutual Agreement, the original of which is in the writer's possession.

Agreement between the Proprietors of the West Patent and Bedford.

"It is this day agreed between the proprietors of that part of the West Patent in Westchester County which was released to the said proprietors by Caleb Fowler Benjamin Smith, & Joseph Sutton & the persons settled upon the same Lands and claiming a title thereto under the Township of Bedford, that the whole matters in Dispute between the said parties, shall be submitted to the arbitration of Richard Willis & William Seaman of Jerico, George Townsend of Norwich, Thomas Hicks, & Hendrick Onderdonk of the Township of Hempstead, & all of Queens County, Gent'. That the whole matters Differences in Dispute between the said parties shall be submitted to the determination of the said refferees or any three or more of them without any Exception whatever. That Bonds shall be executed mutually each in the penall sum of £5000 New York Money[1] to stand to the award of the said Refferees or any three or more of them. That the award shall be made and ready to be delivered to the parties or some of them on or before the first day of September next. That if the Arbitrators or any three or more of them shall award the Lands in Dispute to be the property of the proprietors claiming under the West Patent, then the said Refferees or any three or more of them are to award what sum the persons claiming under Bedford are to pay by the acre for the said Lands and the West Patent proprietors are, upon payment thereof, to release all their right in the Lands to the persons claiming under Bedford, & shall warrant & Defend them agt. all persons claiming under the West Patent. The Improvements are not to be valued, and if the Refferees or any three or more of them award that the proprietors of the West Patent are not entitled to the Lands in Dispute but that the same are the property of the claimants under Bedford, then that the former shall release all their right to the latter of, in, and to, the Lands in Dispute. Dated this 27th day of March 1771,

John Bard
David Clarkson } in Behalf of the West
Thomas Jones[2] } Patent Proprietors.
James Wright } in Behalf of the claim-
John Lawrence } ants under Bedford.

Under this agreement the settlement was made, the Bedford people paying about eight shillings per acre, it is believed, for the land to the proprietors of the West Patent.

A somewhat similar settlement had been made six years before, in 1765, by the Proprietors of the Middle Patent, or "the Whitefields Patent" as it was often called, which adjoined the West Patent on the East, by a like arbitration with Samuel Banks and some twenty four others, who having bought the rights of two or three of the Patentees entered upon, and took possession of the whole of that Patent, the grant for which is as follows:

THE MIDDLE PATENT.
(*The Whitefields*).

"William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come or may concern, sendeth greeting: Whereas our loving subjects Col. Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Chollwell, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, have by their petition, presented unto our trusty and well beloved John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, &c., and prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded southerly by the colony line of Connecticut, easterly by Mahanas river, northerly by Bedford line and marked trees to Mahanas river again, and southerly as the said river

[1] 12,500 dollars.

[2] Then recorder of New York, and later Judge of the Supreme Court, the Author of the History of New York during the Revolutionary War. He represented the Heathcote estate, his wife, Anne De Lancey, being a granddaughter of Colonel Heathcote.

Digitized by Google

goes against the stream to ye head of the said river, and so to the said colony line, which said tract of land on the 5th day of July last past, was by our said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton and Joseph Purdy, &c., purchased of the native proprietors, and containing within the limits aforesaid, by estimation, about 1500 acres of profitable land, besides wastes and wood lands, which reasonable request, we being willing to grant, *know ye*, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents doe for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subjects, Col. Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Chollwell, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, all the afore recited tract of land within the county of Westchester, and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, &c., mines, minerals, &c., (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the aforesaid tract of land, within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any way or ways appertaining, unto them the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns to the only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns for ever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage as of our manor of East Greenwich in our county of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor yearly and every year, on the first day of the Nativity of our Blessed Saviour, the annual yearly rent of one pound, seven shillings and sixpence, current money of New York, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed. Witness John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, at our Fort in New York, this 17th day of February, 1701–2, and in the fourteenth year of our reign."[1]

"JOHN NANFAN."

This, the smallest of the three Great Patents, was held by its Patentees without a division of their interests till 1733, when the following appointment of Samuel Purdy to lay it out was made:

"New York Aug. y^e. 20th: 1733.

"We the Undersigned owners and Proprietors of a certain Tract of Land, Called Whitefeild[2] in the County of Westchester, Do authorize and appoint Samuel Purdy, Esq^e. to Lay out and Divide the said Lands in Order To our coming to an Entire Division of the Same, to Each Respective Pattentee or his assigns.

Witness our Hands

James De Lancey
D. Clarkson
C. D'Peyster
P. Fauconnier
John Symes
Josiah Quimby.

Memorand^m. for Justice Purdy to take Notice where the Division Line between Greenwich and Stamford falls upon the Colony Line.

A true copy From ye Originall by

Saml. Purdy."[3]

Mr. Purdy accepted the appointment and acted. He divided the Patent into two parts which he called the "East" and "West" Ranges, containing thirteen "Lotts" each. The number of acres in each is not now known, but the value of each lot is shown by the original list and valuation by Purdy, in the writer's possession, which is as follows:—

An Estimate of the Lotts in Whitefield Pattent.

East Range.		West Range.	
No.	£	No.	£
1.	93 00	1.	73 00
2.	93 00	2.	78 00
3.	85 00	3.	85 00
4.	85 00	4.	96 00
5.	80 00	5.	96 00
6.	54 00	6.	92 00
7.	44 00	7.	77 00
8.	44 00	8.	77 00
9.	44 00	9.	84 00
10.	44 00	10.	88 00
11.	50 00	11.	96 00
12.	62 00	12.	100 00
13.	72 00	13.	100 00
	£850 00		£1129 00
			850 00
Totall			£1969 00

Pr me

Sam^ll Purdy.

The names of the persons living on this Patent six years after Purdy's appointment above given were collected by Benjamin Fox of King Street and sent to Mr. Murray of New York, who was the lawyer and agent of some of the patentees. Under date of "King St. 8^br ye 7th, 1739," Fox writes Murray, "Inclosed have sent you the names of the People Possessed on the Whitefeild, or Middle Patent, which have Indeavour[4] to colect as well as I could." The list which is on a separate paper, is as follows:

[1] Book of Patents, No. vii. 224, Sec. of State's Office, Albany.

[2] This name, singularly enough is so spelled in all the old deeds and documents. It should, of course, have been "Whitefields."

[3] From an ancient copy in the writer's possession, in Samuel Purdy's handwriting.

Digitized by Google

Thos. Hutchins	—— Owens
Thos. Meritt	John Finch
John Runells, Senr	John Brush
John Runells Junr	Benj Brush
Benj. Platt	Sam^{ll} Peters
Jacob Finch	Ebius Brock
Sam^{ll} Banks	Francis Purdy
	John Purdy [1]

When, twenty-five years later, the final settlement of 1765, between the patentees and the settlers above referred to, was made, the parties then in possession, whose names are recited in the award, were;—Sam^{ll} Banks, John Banks, Benoy Platt, Jonathan Platt, John Runnels, Jonathan Owens, John Rundle, John Armstrong, Roger Sutherland, Smith Sutherland, Charles Green, Charles Green, Junr, David Brundige, Walter Morris, Aaron Furman, Junr, Shubel Brush, James Brundige, Stephen Edegett, Nehemiah Brundige, Abraham Knapp, Joshua Lounsbery, Daniel Brown, Junr, Phinehas Knapp, Jeremiah Numan, Rober Murfee, Jeremiah Green.

Some of these names appear in Fox's list of 1739, but only a few.

The arbitrators in 1765 were: "Daniel Kissam, Samuel Townsend, George Weekes, Benjamin Treadwell and David Batty, all of Queens County" and their award dated October 6, 1765, recites that they, "having sat as arbitrators and heard the said disputes, and having deliberately heard, examined, and considered all the proofs and allegations of the said Parties in Controversy, do for the settling peace and amity between them make this our award, order, arbitrament, determination, and judgment of and upon the Premises as Follows—First, We do award and order, that the said Anne De Lancey, John Bard, Pierre Depeyster, David Clarkson, Peter Remsen, and John Ogelbie, and all others who claim lands under the said Patent which are not already sold or conveyed to the persons now in possession of the said lands, or to those under whom they claim, or to some or one of them, shall and do upon demand execute and deliver in due form of law a release of all their rights and Titles of, in, and to, the lands specifyed in the said Letters Patent, to said Samuel Banks and the other persons above named who are now in possession of the said Lands, and to their heirs and assigns forever; and that the said Samuel Banks and the other persons above named, who are now in possession of the said Lands, shall and do upon the delivery of such Release pay unto the said Anne De Lancey and such other persons as are hereby ordered to Execute the said Release, the sum of nine Shillings New York money [2] for every acre of said lands, which the said Samuel Banks and the other persons above named or those under whom they claim, or some or one of them, have not already purchased of some, or one, of the patentees in the said Letters Patent Named, or of those claiming under the said patentees, or some or one of them." [3]

The East Patent was granted March 2^{d} 1701 to the same Patentees as the West Patent with the addition to their number of Peter Matthews of Bedford. Five days before, on the 25th of February in the same year, Katonah, Wakemane, and another Indian executed a deed of confirmation to the Patentees of their right and estate in the tract [4] in which they thus describe, "bounded as followeth viz. Westward by Bedford, and by the patent granted to Caleb Heathcote and others,[5] northerly by Coll. Cortlandt's purchase and Croton's river, southerly and easterly by the Colony lines."

The patent itself in its general language is similar to those of the West and Middle Patents above set forth. It bounds the Tract granted in these words;—

The East Patent Bounds

"Bounded South, by the division Line between New York and Connecticut, East, by the other division Line between New York and Connecticut, and so along said Line untill it meets with the Patent of Adolf Philipse,[6] and so along his southern bounds till it meets with the Mannor of Cortlandt, and from thence by a Line that shall run upon a direct course untill it meets with the first easterly Line of twenty miles of the said Mannor of Cortlandt, and from thence along the said Line Westerly till it meets with the Patent granted to R. Walter and others,[7] thence southerly along the said Patent, untill it meets with the bounds of the Township of Bedford, and thence round along said bounds until it meets with the Patent granted to Coll. Heathcote and others, and[8] thence along the bounds of said Patent unto the Colony Line where it began."

No attempt was made to settle this tract till about the year 1744, when parties from Stamford and its neighborhood acquired portions of land within its limits.

The area of these three great Patents, the "West," the "Middle," and the "East," was very much greater than is commonly supposed. The Patents themselves only give their respective areas in what those instruments term "profitable land," that is, land that could be easily cultivated. But as the greater part of northern and central Westchester abounded in high semi-mountainous ridges, rocky heights, and great forests, characteristics which to a large extent it still retains, the "profitable land" really bore but a small proportion to what was then deemed the unprofitable land. How very extensive these great patents really

[1] Original letter and list in the writer's possession.

[2] One dollar and twelve cents.

[3] From the original award signed by all the arbitrators, in the writer's possession.

[4] Book I. p. 100, Sec. of State's Offe. Albany.

[5] The "Middle Patent."

[6] Philipse's Upper Patent, now Putnam County.

[7] The West Patent.

[8] The Middle Patent.

Digitized by Google

were, will be seen from the following authentic statement:

Peter Fauconnier, who was a surveyor, and as has been stated, an owner in all three patents, was, with Lancaster Symes, the active managers for the owners of all three patents. An account showing the amounts due from each owner, arranged under, the head of each Patent separately, dated in 1716, in the handwriting of Fauconnier is in the writer's possession, and it shows that the three Patents together contained seventy thousand, 70,000, Acres of Land. The headings of the accounts of the three patents are these;—

"The first of the 3 Patents above mentioned containing about 30,000 acres of rough Land, between 10 Patentees." [1]

"The Second of the 3 Patents here-above mentioned containing about 5000 acres of rough Land, between 13 Patentees." [2]

"The Third of the 3 Patents here-above mentioned containing about 35,000 acres of rough Land, between 11 Patentees." [3]

In a "statement of the three Patents" which has already been given, showing the dates of the Patents, the Patentees' names, and the boundaries granted by each, the areas of each are set down in what that document calls "Improvable Land," corresponding to the "Profitable Land" of the Patents themselves. As will be seen, by referring to it, that document gives for the different Patents these areas;—

In the West Patent, 5,000 Acres Improvable Land,
In the Middle Patent, 1,500 Acres Improvable Land,
In the East Patent, 6,200 Acres Improvable Land,
In all together, 12700 Acres Improvable Land, which is not quite one sixth of the actual area of the territory of the three Patents by Fauconnier's account.

As the whole Manor of Cortlandt north of the Croton River and east of the Hudson containing 5000 acres was only valued in 1732 at £9625 or $25,062,[4] and as the twenty six lots of the "Middle Patent" were only valued in 1733, at £1989,[5] or about $5,000, both valuations being made for the respective proprietors by the same man, Justice Samuel Purdy, and as the Patentees of the latter were only awarded nine shillings, one dollar and twelve cents, an acre, for their unsold lands in the same patent in 1765, a generation later, it is easily seen how very little, was the actual value of the 70,000 acres of the three great patents when they were granted, and during the lifetime of their original Patentees. These facts also show how careful we should always be in considering these matters not to judge of estates in the 17th, and 18th, centuries in Westchester County, large or small, by the values of, either the early, or the latter part of the 19th century.

[1] The "West Patent."
[2] The Middle Patent.
[3] The "East Patent."

[4] See in Part 13, ante, p. 135.
[5] See ante, p. 886.

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

A.

Abraham Vosburgh Post, 511.
Abrahamson, R., 123.
Academy of North Salem, 133.
Accommodation, Plan of, 273.
Adams, S., 198.
Addresses, etc., to Inhabitants of Cortlandt, 219.
Address to King, 231.
Advertisements, 172, 183.
Advowson, 93.
Agricultural Products, 522, 660.
Agriculture (See Indians) of settlers, 30, 178.
Aid Societies, 504.
Algonquins, 10.
Allison, A., 1.
Allen, J., 323.
Allodial (See Land), 8.
Alsop, J., 341.
Amsterdam, Bank of, 58.
Andros, 162.
Anthony's Nose, 5.
Archbishop of Canterbury, 107.
Archer, Jno., 776.
Arrow Heads, Indian, 14.
Art, 690.
Assembly, General, 223, 234, 640.
Assessors, 98, 99.
Association of Cortlandt Manor, 220.
Autochthonic Theory, 9, 35.
Axe, Indian, 15.

B.

Badeau, J., 635.
Baird, H. M., 638
Baird's "History of Rye," cited, 4.
Baird, Chas. W., 620.
Banta, M., 562, 563.
Barrett, J., 629.
Bartow, Rev. J., 169, 170.
Bartlett, W. H. C., 621.
Bartram, N. B., 492.
Bathgate, J., 592.
Beal, Wm. R., 833.
Beach, W. A., 559.
Beavers, 13.
Beecher, H. W., 627.
Bench and Bar, 526.
Benson, E., 348.
Bigelow, J., 623.
Bill of Rights and Grievances, 229.
Bills of Sale (See Deeds).
Bixby, S. M., 832
Blake, J., 192, 324.
Blind Brook Creek, 5.
Block, A., 2, 22, 37, 38.
Blommaert, S., 49.
Blue Bell Tavern, 472j.
Boats, Indian, 14.
Bockland, 80.
Bolton R., 607.
Bonner, R., 635.
Books, 175.
Booth, Jonathan, 325.
Booth, Joseph, 326.
Boston Port Bill, 189, 190.
Boulder, 9.
Boundary—
of Westchester County, 2, 113, 114.
between New York and Connecticut, map of, 3.
agreement as to, 4.
settlement of, 5.
Bounty Bonds, 505.
Bout, J. E., 68, 69.
Bow, Indian, 15.
Brewster, J. B., 700, 701.
Bronx, Herr, 23.
Bronx River (See River), 769.
Brouckland, map, 769.
Brown Bluffs, 324.
Brom, Nehemiah, 528.
Bucktails, 485.
Budd, G., 301.
Burghers, 59.
Burials, Mohegan, 16.
Burke, 225.
Burr, A., 539.
Butler, J., 173.
Butler, W. A., 629.
Byram River, 4.
Lake, 5.

C.

Camp, Hugh N., 834.
Canon Law, 65.
Cantantonit, 17.
Capitulation (See Dutch).
Carlton, D., 2.
Carpenter, J., 609.
Carpenter, W. J., 598.
Cauldwell, W. 624.
Cemeteries, 738.
Ceremonial Stone, Indian, 15.
Charles II., 3, 87, 103.
Charles Lawrence Post, 514.
Charters, 2.
Chatterton Hill, Attack of, 440, 441.
Cheltenham Manor, 97.
Christiansen (See Corstaensen), 2, 37.
Church (See Advowson, Connecticut, Dutch, Land, Parish, Government), 98, 107.
of England, Establishment, 100, 104, 107.
Support, 163, 164.
Influence, 173.
Churches—
of Early Times, 472c.
of King's Bridge, 756.
of Mamaroneck, 870.
of Morrisania, 823.
of New Rochelle, 692.
of Pelham, 707.
of Scarsdale, 665.
of West Farms, 836.
of Westchester Town, 809.
of White Plains, 723, 732.
Civil History, 639.
Civil List, 646.
Civil War, 490.
Clergy (See Church).
Clerks, 653.
Clinton, De Witt, 484.
Clinton, G., 168, 223, 484.
Clothing—
Indian, 13.
of Settlers, 30, 176.
Cobb, L., 638.
Cobbling Stone, 8.
Coffee, Rev. W. S., 634.
Coffin, O. T., 550.
Cole, Rev. D., 630.
Colegate, R., 765.
Colen Donck, 66.
Collation, 107.
Colonial Assembly, 647.
Period, 161.
Commissaries, 107.
Commissioners, 654.
Committee on Conspiracies, 341, 374.
County, 266.
District, 289.
of Correspondence, 182, 188, 233.
of Fifty-one, 186.
of Inspection, 238.
of Observation, 215.
of One Hundred, 274.
of Safety, 297, 404, 648.
of Sixty, 215.
on Government, 382.
Commons, 59.
Companies and Regiments, 507.
Congress (See Continental Congress, Provincial Congress).
Connecticut—
Boundaries between, and New York, 2, 16, 641.
English and Dutch Claims to, 3.
Grant to, 3.
Connittelsock, 2.
Constitution, 643, 644.
Constitutional Commission, 649.
Conventions, 648.
Continental Congress, 204, 212, 270, 277, 294, 320, 355, 356, 364, 651.
Cooper, J. F., 608.
Copyhold (See Land).
Cornbury, Lord, 105.
Cornell, B., 675.
Corstaensen, 37, 38.
Counties, Division of Province into, 112.
County Organization, 111.
County-seat, 644.
Cortlandt Manor, 96, 109, 115.
Manor-House, 127.
Court-House, 720.
Court Leet, 87, 91, 92.
Courts, 108, 642, 643, 651.
Cozzens, F. S., 629.
Cromwell, D., 740.
Cromwell Post, 515.

Digitized by Google

Cromwell, C. T., 552.
Cross, John, 26.
Cross Lake, 5.
Croton Aqueduct, 796.
Croton Lake, 5.
River, 6.
Crown, English, 107.
Grants, 96.
Cultivation, Indian, 13.
Culver, C. E., 637.
Currency, Continental, 478f.
Curry, Rev. D., 620, 621.

D.

Davenport, John, 25.
Davidson, M. O., 835.
Dawson, H.B., 612.
Declaration at White Plains, 248.
Declaratory Act, 236.
Deed, 67, 71.
De Lancey Family, Genealogy of, 862.
De Lancey, Rt. Rev. Wm. H., 867.
De Lancey, J., 91, 130.
De Lancey, S., 133, 169.
De Lanceys' feud with Livingstons, 264.
Delaware Chief, 32.
Family, 33.
De Luet, D., 32.
Democracy—
De Tocqueville on, 1.
Alison on, 1.
Depew, C. M., 557.
De Rasieres, I., 43.
Dermer, Capt. Thomas, 39, 40.
De Tocqueville, 1.
De Vries, D. P., 68.
Dishrow House, 856.
Discovery (See Hudson), 20, 745, 768.
Right of, 35.
Dissenters, 25.
District Attorneys, 653.
Doctors, 568.
Domesday Book, 86.
Dongan, Thos., 156.
Dongan, T., 104, 127, 161.
Doughty, E., 72.
Doughty, F., 70.
Doughty, M., 70.
Dowling, Rev. J., 75.
Downing, Sir G., 74.
Draft Riots, 499.
Drafted Men, 508.
Drake, G., 299, 334.
Drake, J., 164.
Drake, J. R., 616.
Drake, S., 329.
Draper, J. W., 635.
Dress of the People, 461, 462.
Drunkenness, Indian, 17.
Duane, J., 193, 202, 203, 213.
Dutch—
Capitulation, 76.
Charters, 2.
Church, 620.
East India Company, 2, 21.
Government, 57, 68.
Grants, 38, 83.
Religion, 64, 77.
Settlements, 2, 22, 24, 37, 100, 640, 715, 745.
States-General, 58.
States Provincial, 58.
Tenures, 63.
War with Indians, 19.
War with Spain, 21.
West India Company, 2, 18, 22, 25, 39, 41, 45, 63, 68, 75, 640.
Dutcher, W., 298, 299.
Dyckman family, 764.
Dyckman, J. O., 533.

E.

East India Company, 2, 21, 37.
Eastern State Journal, 498.
Eaton, Theophilus, 25.
Education, 525.
Elkins, Henry, 39.
Elections (see Politics), War, 109, 110, 124, 125, 126, 239, 644.
Emancipation, 30.
Embargo, 484.
English (See Church).
Equivalent Tract, 4, 113, 161.
Eunice, 291.
Evans, Oliver, 469.
Evans, W. W., 699.
Ewen, J., 767.
Exports, 53.

F.

Families, 168.
Faneuil, P., 711.
Fairs, 111.
Farm, 95.
Farmer, A. W., 216, 256.
Farnsworth Post, 513.
Fellows, E. B., 842.
Ferguson, G., 700.
Ferries, 748, 772.
Feud (see De Lancey's).
Feudal System, 23, 62, 80, 81.
Finances, 524.
Findlay, Andrew, 843.
Fire Department, 738.
Fire Ships, 390.
Fisher, G. J., 581.
Fishing, 12, 265, 706.
Flagg, L. W., 587.
Flax, 30.
Flushing, 29.
Folcland, 80.
Fordham, 772.
Fordham Manor, 96, 159.
Fordham and the Ferries, 772.
Forestalling, 322.
Fort Independence, 753.
Fort William, 167.
Fountain, H., 584.
Fountain, J., 577.
Fowler, H., 164.
Fox, George, 28
Fox, W. W., 845.
Franchises, 92.
Francis, S., 184.
Franklin, B., 171.
Free Bridge, 748.
People, 67.
French War, 167.
Freedoms and Exemptions,—
First plan of, 46.
Second plan of, 54.
Third plan of, 57.
Summary of, 60.
Freeman, N. K., 591.
Funeral, 472b.
Fur Trade, 21, 44.
Furnace Brook, 6.
Furniture, Indian, 13.
Furniture of 1776, 466.

G.

Galloway, J., 209, 210.
G. A. R., 509.
Garrison, F. S., 487.
Gavelkind, 83.
Gedney, B., 743.
General Assembly (see Assembly).
Gentleman in Trade, 180, 182.
Geology, 6, 521.
Gifford, Silas D., 532.
Glebe Lands (see Lands).
Glover, Col., 417.
Godyn, Samuel, 49.
Gould, J., 635.
Government (see Church)—
Dutch, 57.
English, 78.
Indian, 10.
Grand Army Posts, 509.
Gravesend, 28.
Greeley, H., 626.
Griswold, R. B., 597.
Gymnasium, 697.

H.

Haines, Godfrey, 291.
Hall, E., 563.
Hall, H. B., 836.
Hamilton, A., 604.
Hammer stones, Indian 15
Hand, N. H., 741.
Harlaem, 394.
Harlem River, 795.
Harlem River, Bridges of, 796.
Harrison, General, 35.
Harrison, John, 29.
Harrison, town of, 30.
Hasbrouck family, 585.
Haskin, J. B., 561.
Hastings, 518.
Hatfield's Tavern, 245.
Havemeyer, F. C., 817.
H. B. Hidden Post, 514.
Head Dress of Ladies, 463, 464.
Heathcote, Caleb, 95, 100, 526, 152, 153.
Heathcote Hill, 864.
Henry II., 27.
Henry IV., 27.
Henry VIII., 25.
High Sheriff, 109.
Highways (see Roads).
Hoe-Cake, 13.
Hoe, Richard M., 832.
Hoffman, A. K., 588.
Holland (see Dutch).
Home Guards, 501.
Horatio Seymour Post, 515.
Horton, A., 333.
Horton, G., 301.
House of Good Hope, 2.
Houses, Indian, 13.
Howe, Lord Admiral, 429.
Howe, 367.
Hudson, H., 2, 9, 17, 18, 21, 31. 37 745, 768.
Hudson Park, 759.
River, 5, 33.
Huguenots, 22, 27, 692.
Huguenot House, 691.
Street, 686.
Hulst, P. E., 42.
Huntington, H. K., 595.
Huntington, C. P., 818.
Husted, J. W., 126.
Hutchinson, A., 19, 2
Hutchinson River 6.
Hyatt, E., 331.
Hyatt, J., 714.

I

Imports, 53.
Indians (see Sales).—
Origin, 9.

Digitized by Google

Divisions and Government, 10, 31, 32.
Names, 11.
Numbers and Food, 12.
Cultivation, Dress, Homes, 13.
Implements, 14.
Medicine, Burials, 15.
Religion, 16, 35.
Intercourse with Whites, etc., 18, 23, 24.
Disappearance, 20.
Language, 32.
Villages, etc., 34.
Title, 35.
Indian Hill, 20.
Induction, 93.
Inns, 472j.
Institution, 93.
Instructions, 103, 104.
Internal Duties, 475.
Iron, 12.
Iroquois, 10.
Irvington, 518.
Irving, W., 610.

J.

James I., 2.
James II., 104.
Jay family, 582.
Jay, J., 195, 215, 239, 347, 536.
Jay, J. C., 583.
Jay, W., 529.
Jessup, Edward, 18.
Johnson, I. G., 767.
Johnson, S. W., 564.
Judges, 652.

K.

Katskill, 67.
Keskeskick, 67.
Kieft, Governor, 23, 68.
Kieritt's Hoeck, 2.
King's Bridge, 517, 744, 748.
Kissam, B., 272.
Kitchawanes, 11.
Kitching Post, 510.
Knives, Indian, 15, 16.

L.

Lampo, Jan., 43.
Land Ownership, Indian, 11.
Land Tenure,—
Allodial, 80, 90.
Copyhold, 97.
of Duke of York, 79.
of Glebe, 98.
of Farmers, 179.
of Patroons, 62.
Socage, 82, 89.
Wished by Colonists, 45.
Larkin, F., 557.
Law (see Canon, Roman, York).
Lawyers, 526, 549.
Lee, C., 304, 324, 333, 336.
Legislature, 112, 124, 649.
Leisler, J., 27, 162.
Lester, S., 698.
Letter, Revolutionary, 216.
Lewis, Dio., 638.
Library, 697.
Lincoln, A., 489, 491.
Lindsley, Chas. E., 694.
Literature, 598.
Livingston, G., 327.
Livingston, P. R., 223.
Livingston, P. V., 237.
Livingstons (see de Lanceys).
Long Island, Battle of, 395.
Louis XIII., 27.
Louis XIV., 27.
Lovatt, E. T., 567.
Lovelace, Gov., 104.

M.

Macomb's Dam, 758, 797.
Mails, 170, 171, 681.
Maine on Manors, 85.
Maize, 9, 13, 30.
Mamaroneck, 4, 521.
River, 5.
Mamaroneck, Early Records and Petitions of, 849, 850, 851.
Mamaroneck, First Survey of, 149.
Mamaroneck, Town of, 846.
Manhattans, 11.
Manhattan Island, 22, 40, 44, 68.
Manners and Customs, 457.
Manufactures, 178.
Manors,—
Courts, 87, 91, 92.
Derivation of Word, 87.
English, 85, 92.
Grants, 96, 124.
Lords, 108.
New York, Incidents, etc., 90, 93.
Origin and History, 31.
Order of Erection, 108.
Relation to County, 108.
Saxon and Norman, 86.
Westchester, Six, 91.
Mapes, Daniel, 841.
Mapes, Leonard, 841.
Maps,—
Boundary between New York and Connecticut, 3.
Bronckslaud, 769.
Verplanck's, 131.
White Plains, 727.
Marble, 7.
Manufactures, 178, 523, 661.
Marriage, Mohegan, 16.
Massacre, 755.
May, Captain, 22.
May, Cornelius Jacobsen, 39, 42.
McDougal, A., 200.
McKeel Post, 512.
Medical Profession, 568.
Society, 569.
Memorial, 232.
Menhaden, 13.
Merchants and Traders, 181, 182.
Meeting in the Fields, 201.
Michaelius, John, 22, 65.
Militia, 276.
Military, 109, 276.
Mills, Powder, 335.
Ministry Act, 100.
Minuit, Peter, 19, 22, 43, 44.
Mohansic Lake, 5.
Mohegan Lake, 5.
Indians, 10, 33.
Montcalm, 167.
Morell Post, 512.
Moody, Lady Deborah, 28.
Morris, A. Newbold, 828.
Morris Family, 826.
Morris, G., 188, 268, 603.
Morris, Lewis, 826.
Morris, L., 165, 166, 244, 365.
Morris, L. G., 828.
Morris R., 169.
Morris, W. H., 828.
Morrisania Manor, 96, 157, 529.
Morrisania Town, 822.
Mortars, Indian, 14.
Mott, Jordan L., 830.
Mount Misery, 19.
St. Vincent, 760.
Music, 609.

N.

Names, 111.
Nappeckamak, 9.
Native Americans, 487.
Naval Battle, 389.
New Amsterdam, 3.
New Rochelle, 520.
New Netherlands (see Manors).
New York,—
Boundaries between, and Connecticut, 2, 22, 37, 42, 53, 60, 73, 78.
Capture of, 402.
City, 77, 516.
Post Boy, 172.
Province, 78, 106, 112, 176.
New York City and Northern Railroad, 481.
Newspapers, 172, 179, 303, 471, 482, 684, 738.
Neperhan River, 6, 68.
Nepperhaem, Patent for, 71.
New York and Harlem R. R. (see Railroad).
New York and Hudson River R. R. (see Railroad).
New York and Northern R. R. (see Railroad).
Negroes (see Slavery), 29.
Netherlands, history of, 58.
New Rochelle, 28, 685.
Nicholson, 161, 162.
Nicolls, Col. R., 3, 75, 76, 109.
Nobles, 59.
Non-Intercourse Law, 485.
Nook-hill, 13.
Nordquist, C. J., 588.
North, 234, 236.
North Pond, 5.
North Salem (see Academy).

O.

Oakley, I., 244.
Orth, 170.
Oblong, The, 4, 113, 161.
Occupations of Settlers, 30.
Old Pelham and New Rochelle, 709.
Olliffe, W. M., 744.
O'Neale, H., 71.
Oysters, 12.

P.

Paine, Thos., 602.
Parishes, 98.
English, in Westchester County, 99.
Parton, J., 623.
Patroons (see Tenure), 23, 46, 52, 57, 61.
Patroonships,—
Colen Donck, 66.
Patent,—
Nepperhaem, 71.
Rykes, 123, 126.
York's, 78, 79.
Patents, 96, 687, 703, 776, 877, 884, 885, 887.
of Confirmation, 84.
Patuxet, 39, 40.
Paulding, J. K., 616.
Paupers, 659.
Pauw, Michael, 51.
Peach Lake, 5.
Peale, C. W., 466.
Peat, 6.
Peekskill, 121.
Creek, 6.

Digitized by Google

Pelham, 520, 701.
Battle of, 417.
Manor, 96, 156.
Pell, T., 25, 27.
Pell, J., 27, 113, 162, 163, 164, 168, 526.
Pendleton, E., 360.
Pequots, 10.
Petition, 232.
Philipse, F., 24, 72, 113, 169, 245, 370, 379.
Philipseburg, 72.
Philipsborough Manor, 91, 96.
Pillory, 472i.
Pinkney, P., 300.
Pipes,—
Indian, 15, 16.
Plymouth Company, 2, 36.
Pocantico River, 6.
Politics, 179, 482, 662, 756.
Political and General History, 1783 to 1860, 473.
Population, 522.
Pork, 333.
Poe, E. A., 617.
Poe, E. A., House, 619.
Popham, family, 672.
Powder (see Mills).
Powell Post, 512.
Presentation, 93.
Prime, S. I., 606.
Primogeniture, 83.
Probationary Act, 4.
Protestant Petition, 164.
Protestantism, 102.
Province, Origin of Word, 106.
Provincial Congresses, Members, 648.
Provincial Congress,—
First.
Call for, 251.
Organization, 267.
Membership, 268.
Organizing of Militia, 277.
Arrests, 286.
Dissolution, 303.
Second.
Meeting, 318.
Organization, 320.
Dissolution, 337.
Third.
Organization, 338.
Resolution as to Independence, 339.
Committee on Dangers, 341.
Resolutions as to Arrests, 343.
Resolutions as to Committee on Conspiracies, 349.
Resolutions as to Disarming, 353.
Adoption of Resolutions of Continental Congress as to Independence, 358.
Answer to Virginia Resolutions as to same, 360.
Resolutions as to same, 361.
Agreement as to Letter, Resolutions, 362.
Order as to Arms, 364.
Elects Brigadier-General, 366.
Disbanding, 367.
Fourth.
Meeting, etc., 371.
Resolution of Independence, 372.
Direction to Sheriffs, 374.
Changes Name to "Convention," 375.
Arrests, 376.
War Measures, 381, 385.
Committee on Government, 382.
Provincial Convention, 250, 647.
Provisional Order, 69.
Provisions, 424.
Public Works, 478.
Pumpkins, 13.
Punderson, Rev. E., 94.
"Purchase," The, 29.
Purdy, S., 558.
Puritans, 25.

Q.

Quakers, 28, 166.
Quia Emptores, 85, 88.
Quit-Rents, 84, 95, 96.
Quohog, 15.

R.

Railroads—
New York and Harlem, 6, 478.
New York and Hudson, 6, 479.
New York and Northern, 6, 481.
New York, New Haven, etc., 480.
New York City and Northern, 481.
Rangers, 124.
Rasieres, Isaac de, 43.
Reformation, 25, 27.
Regiments, 507.
Reinfelder, M. L., 596.
Relations of County to Colony, 175.
Religion (See Indian, Dutch, Stille).
Remonstrance, 2, 68, 73, 231.
Rensselaer, Van (See Von Rensselaer).
Rents, 83, 84, 94, 95, 124.
Restless, 21.
Return of Volunteers, 506.
Returning Officers, 238.
Revere, P., 191.
Revolution, 177.
Richardson, John, 18.
Richbell, Jno., Confirmation of, 146.
Petition of, 149.
Indian Deeds to, 849.
Burying-Place of, 861.
Ridgefield Angle, 5.
Ridings, 112.
Riots, 499.
Rivington, J., 303.
Riverdale, 759.
Rivers, 521.
Bronx, 5, 6, 519, 657, 658.
Byram, 4, 6.
Croton, 5, 6.
Hudson, 5.
Hutchinson, 6.
Maharness, 6.
Mamaroneck, 6.
Neperhan, 6, 68.
Pocantico, 6.
Saw-Mill, 6, 68.
Stamford Mill, 6.
Roads, 473, 479, 682, 731.
Robertson, W. H., 530.
Rochelle, 28.
Roman Law, 42, 57, 65.
Rushmore, Thomas L., 861.
Ryan, Rev. J., 72.
Rye (See Baird), 521.
Commission at, 4.
Meeting, 295.
Parish, 93, 99.
Pond, 5.
Territory, 29.
Ryke's Patent, 123, 126.

S.

Sachem, 10.
Salem, 350.
Sales, Indian, 18, 23, 24, 25, 34, 44, 49, 51, 67, 71, 718.
Santon, 161, 162.
Saw-Mill River, 6, 119.
Saybrook, 2.
Sands, D. J., 589.
Scarsdale, 657.
Manor, 95, 96.
Tennis Club, 684.
Station, 683.
Schepens, 59.
Schmid, H. E., 588.
Schools, 474, 525, 660, 695, 707, 723, 737.
Schout, 59.
Schout Fiscaal, 43, 66.
Schuyler, P., 223.
Scott, J. M., 268, 269.
Scribner, G. H., 564.
Scribner, J. W., 592.
Scrugham, W. W., 544.
Seabury, Rev. S., 303.
Sears, Q., 184, 304.
Secor, F., 678.
Senasqua, 12.
Serpentine, 7.
Settlement of Westchester County, 20.
By Dutch, 22.
By English, 25.
Shell Heaps, 12.
Sheriff (see High Sheriff).
Sheriffs, 653.
Siege of Fort Independence, 753.
Sieva Bean, 13.
Sing Sing, 519.
Sint Sinks, 11.
Sisters of Charity, 760.
Siwanoys, 11.
Skin-Scraper, Indian, 16.
Slavery, 29, 63, 64, 477, 487, 497, 650.
Slevin, Rev. T. C., 73.
Sloughter, 163.
Smith, C., 566.
Smith, J. M., 560.
Smith Family, 317.
Smuggling, 181.
Socage (see Lands).
Societies, Aid, 504.
Societies of White Plains, 739.
Society for Propagating Gospel, 175, 303.
of Mechanics in Union, 358, 359.
Soil, 521.
South Pond, 5.
Southworth, E. D. E. N., 639.
Spanish Settlements, 20.
Spear-heads, Indian, 14.
Spuyten Duyvel, 517, 759.
Squanto, 39.
St. John's Church, 736.
St. Thomas' Church, 873, 874.
Stages, Early, 472.
Stamford Mill River, 6.
Stamp Act Congress, 176.
State of Grievances, 229.
States-General (see Dutch).
States Provincial (see Dutch).
Steamboats, Early, 470.
Steatite, View of Drilled Piece of, 14.
Steenrood, C., 322.
Stewart, L. S., 77.
Stewart Hart Post, 513.
Stille, Opinion of Colonial Religion, 102.
Stockbridge Indians, 755.
Stocks, 472h.
Stone Weapons of Indians, 14.
Stuyvesant, Gov. P., 3, 24, 68, 76.
Succotash, 13.
Sugar Bill, 165.
Sumter, 491.
Sully, Thomas, 465.
Supervisors, 109, 645.
Supervisors, Signatures of, [illegible]

Digitized by Google

Superintendents, 654.
Supreme Court, 651.
Surrender, Dutch, 76, 78.
Surrogates, 652.
Swift, S., 593.
Swinburne, J., 605.

T.

Tables, 31.
Tallmage, Benjamin, 437.
Tammany, 485.
Tankitekes, 12.
Tappan Bay, 5.
Tarrytown, 518.
Taverns, 472f.
Taxes, 474, 475.
Tea, 182, 183, 341.
Tea Sets, 459.
Tecumseh, 35.
Ten Broeck, A., 225.
Tenure (see Land), 79.
Texas, 487.
Thomas, 91.
Thomas, J., 228, 266.
Three Years' Volunteers, 493.
Throckmorton, J., 25, 639.
Throgg's Neck, 406.
Tibbitt's Brook, 6.
Tibbitt, G., 72.
Tienhoven, C., 68, 69.
Tilden, S. J., 554.
Tilford, J. M., 742.
Title, Indian, vesting of, 35.
Tobacco, 9, 13.
Todd, Rev. J. A., 623.
Toll Gatherer, 111.
Topography, 5.
Tompkins, D. D., 671.
Totem, 10, 32.
Townsend, M., 267.
Townships, 115, 135, 136.
Trade, 169.
"Transport," 50, 51.
Trapping, Indian, 12.
Treason, 355, 356.
Treasurers, 109, 654.
Treaties, as to Boundaries between New York and Connecticut, 3.
Travel, 172, 681.
Tremont Meeting, 500.
Turner, Nathan, 25.
Turneur, Daniel, 774.
Two Years' Volunteers, 492.

U.

Union, American, Alison and De Tocqueville on, 1.

V

Van Bursum, 120.
Van Cortlandt, A., 594.
Van Cortlandt, F., 278.
Van Cortlandt family, 761.
Van Cortlandt Park, 68.
Van Cortlandt, Philip, 276.
Van Cortlandt, Pierre, 146.
Van Cortlandt, S. (See Manor), 24, 113, 115, 118, 122, 127, 130.
Van Couwenhoven, J., 68, 69.
Van der Donck, A., 23, 24, 66.
Van der Huyghens, 68.
Van Dincklagen, 68.
Van Elslant, C., 771.
Van Rensselaer, K., 50, 66.
Van Rensselaer People, 89.
Van Rensselaer, W. P., 553.
Van Schelluyne, D., 66.
Van Twiller, 2.
Van Wyck, P. C., 594.
Van Curler, Arendt, 66.
Varian, W. A., 584.
Verplanck, P., 124, 125, 131.
his Map, 131, 133.
his Survey, 134.
Vestrymen, 98.
Volunteers, 492, 493, 506.
Von Rensselaer (see Van Rensselaer).

W.

Waccabuck Lake, 5.
Wagons, 30.
Walloons, 22, 42, 45.
Wampum, 15.
War, Indian and Dutch, 19, 702, 770.
Civil, 490.
Dutch and Spanish, 21.
of 1812, 665, 689.
Revolutionary, 177, 664, 688, 705, 725, 749.
Ward, A., 487.
Ward B. Burnett Post, 575.
Wardens, 98.
Wardrobes of 1776, 463.
Washington, G., 384.
Waterbury, 325.
Weckquaesgeeks, 11, 745, 768.
Weddings, Early, 472b.
Wells, E., 552.
Wells, James L., 843.
Wentz, C. W., 5.
Westchester Bay, 6.
Chasseurs, 492.
County of To-day, 516.
Creek, 6.
Town, 768.
Town, Churches of, 809.
Town of To-day, 908.
Town, Natural Characteristics of, 802.
Town, Political History of, 801.
Town since the Revolution, 908.
West Farms, 836.
West India Company (see Dutch).
Wetmore, T., 209.
White family, 962.
White Plains, 714.
Whittaker, F., 636.
Wilkins, I., 231, 232, 245, 254, 601.
William I., 80.
William III., 4.
William and Mary, 116.
Williams, Isaiah T., 547.
Williams' Bridge, 323.
Winthrop, Governor J., 25, 76.
Wood, J., 628.
Working Men, 262.
Woodhull, N., 227.
Woodhull, Captain, 272.
Wright, Green, 679.

Y.

Yonkers, 18, 23, 66, 517.
Herald, 502.
York, Duke of, 75, 78, 162.
his Laws, 84.
Young, J. W., 742.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

DEC 14 1938

Digitized by Google